

Cambria Will Not Yield  
Volume 1: August 3, 2019 – July 31, 2021

TABLE OF CONTENTS

A Blood Faith is Forever - July 31, 2021 .....	2
Community of the Blood - July 24, 2021 .....	5
The Seal of the Living God - July 17, 2021 .....	7
Wrought by the Devil - July 10, 2021 .....	9
The Grace of the King - July 3, 2021 .....	12
Furnace and Guillotine - June 26, 2021 .....	15
To Comfort All That Mourn - June 19, 2021 .....	17
Even to the Edge of Doom - June 12, 2021 .....	20
Systemic Satanism - May 29, 2021 .....	23
Mystic Europe - May 22, 2021 .....	26
Pharisaical Hatred - May 8, 2021 .....	30
Which Is Given Unto Us - May 1, 2021 .....	33
The United States of Baal - April 24, 2021 .....	36
The Liberal Swine Hate the Good Shepherd - April 17, 2021 .....	38
The Lamentations of the European People - April 10, 2021 .....	41
The Heart of Hearts - April 3, 2021 .....	43
Orphans - March 27, 2021 .....	45
The Dualism at the Heart of Europe - March 20, 2021 .....	48
We Cannot Barter Our Souls - March 13, 2021 .....	51
The Tears of God - March 6, 2021 .....	54
We Shall Not Kneel to the Liberals' God - February 27, 2021 .....	57
The Sanctuary of the Heart - February 20, 2021 .....	60
The American Kingdom of Hell on Earth - February 13, 2021 .....	62
The Demons of Liberalism - February 6, 2021 .....	65
Military Junta - January 30, 2021 .....	67
Through the Valley of the Shadow of Death - January 23, 2021 .....	72
The Deed of Death - January 16, 2021 .....	75
As Lambs to the Slaughter - January 9, 2021 .....	78
The Satanic Unmasking - January 2, 2021 .....	81
Remembrances X: What Child Is This? - December 19, 2020 .....	84
They Hate Him Whom We Love - December 12, 2020 .....	105
We Must Hate the Devil and His Minions - December 5, 2020 .....	107
Shall Satan Rule Unchallenged? - November 28, 2020 .....	110
Unmitigated Evil - November 21, 2020 .....	113
It Shall Not Be Business As Usual - November 14, 2020 .....	117
It Will Be Now - November 7, 2020 .....	120
Which Is In Christ - October 31, 2020 .....	122
Our God Has Sent His Angel - October 24, 2020 .....	125
We Must Regress - October 17, 2020 .....	127
According to Thine Own Heart - October 10, 2020 .....	129
Armageddon - October 3, 2020 .....	131
The Shadow of Satan - September 26, 2020 .....	134
White Privilege - September 19, 2020 .....	136
The Great Religious Talk Show - September 12, 2020 .....	138
The War That Has Been Thrust Upon Us - September 5, 2020 .....	141
The Cruel Gods of Liberalism - August 29, 2020 .....	143
Cannon Hinnant - August 22, 2020 .....	147
Epistles of the Living God - August 15, 2020 .....	148
Christian Europe is His Word Made Flesh - August 8, 2020 .....	151
Up Off Our Knees - August 1, 2020 .....	153
The Light Beyond Rationalism - July 25, 2020 .....	155
Caliban or Christ - July 18, 2020 .....	158
The Anaconda's Coil - July 11, 2020 .....	160
Recrossing our Spiritual Rubicon - July 4, 2020 .....	162

Back from the Dead - June 27, 2020 .....	165
The Iniquity of Negro Worship - June 20, 2020 .....	168
Our God and Our People Matter Most of All - June 13, 2020 .....	170
Amid the Encircling Gloom - June 6, 2020 .....	173
Our Miracle Culture - May 30, 2020 .....	175
Sweet Fields Beyond the Plague of Rationalism - May 23, 2020 .....	177
A Different Realm - May 16, 2020 .....	180
Shall Malice Bear Down Truth? - May 9, 2020 .....	182
Out of the Shadows - May 2, 2020 .....	185
Demon-crats - April 25, 2020 .....	188
Clinically Unproven - April 18, 2020 .....	190
Emmaus - April 11, 2020 .....	193
St. Paul and Anders - April 4, 2020 .....	195
The Pestilence That Walketh in Darkness - March 28, 2020 .....	197
Our Hope in Ages Past - March 21, 2020 .....	199
Liberalism Is the Virus - March 14, 2020 .....	201
The Evil of What Seems - March 7, 2020 .....	203
Festering Lilies - February 29, 2020 .....	206
By the Grace of God - February 22, 2020 .....	208
The Fear of the Devil and his Minions - February 15, 2020 .....	210
The Liberals' Utopian Hell - February 8, 2020 .....	212
Our Common Hope Is Not the Noble Savage - February 1, 2020 .....	214
The False Gods of Liberalism - January 25, 2020 .....	217
Our History is a Fairy Tale - January 18, 2020 .....	219
Liberalism Confounded - January 11, 2020 .....	221
O Holy Child of Bethlehem - January 4, 2020 .....	223
Remembrances IX: Those Who Mourn - December 14, 2019 .....	225
For Unto You Is Born - December 7, 2019 .....	249
The Love That Frees Us from Satan's Power - November 30, 2019 .....	251
Forgive Us Our Trespass - November 23, 2019 .....	254
Rejecting the Liberals' Ghostly Bargain - November 16, 2019 .....	256
Lost - November 9, 2019 .....	258
A Place Beyond Science - November 2, 2019 .....	260
The Beasts of Liberalism - October 26, 2019 .....	263
Love's Own Light - October 19, 2019 .....	265
The People without a Heart - October 12, 2019 .....	268
The Fruits of Compromise - October 5, 2019 .....	271
The Liberals' Orphanage of Horror - September 28, 2019 .....	274
Sacred Tears - September 21, 2019 .....	276
Not of the World - September 14, 2019 .....	278
All Through the Night - September 7, 2019 .....	280
Who with Me My Burden Shares? - August 31, 2019 .....	283
And Make Ourselves a Realm - August 24, 2019 .....	285
Endeared with All Hearts - August 17, 2019 .....	287
The Great Denial - August 10, 2019 .....	289
Doubt and Faith - August 3, 2019 .....	291

---

## A Blood Faith is Forever - July 31, 2021

The South had its American Exceptionalists — Thomas Jefferson was the worst — but the South that had to be destroyed was the South that was rooted in European civilization, a civilization that had a blood tie with the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. A propositional faith and a propositional nation can be discarded quite easily for a new propositional faith and a new propositional nation, but a blood tie is forever. The willingness with which 'conservatives' denounce their blood ties to old Europe, of which the Old South was an exemplar, shows their willingness to make peace with the devil. Which brings us back to Origen and his belief in the conversion of the devil. —CWNY

---

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal

of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth. —*Under the Crust*

---

When a nation, such as the United States of America, which is really a non-nation, has institutionalized blasphemy against the living God, it's hard to call any one liberal overlord the most blasphemous liberal overlord of them all, but when one of the Pope-esses of Liberalism, Mika Brzezinski, steps forward and says that anyone who does not get vaccinated is not Christian, then I think we must give the title, Most Blasphemous of Them All, to Mika Brzezinski.

Has Mika the liberal Pope-essa, ever, in her long career as a blasphemer, supported anything Christian? No, she has not. In point of fact, and I use the word 'fact' because the liberals claim to love facts, she has consistently supported everything that is satanic – Black Lives Matter, Hillary Clinton, Joe Biden, sodomy, legalized abortion, transgenderism, the extermination of the white race, and the list goes on and on. It is clear whom Mika serves: she serves the devil, who is and always shall be, "a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it." Mika, like all liberals, is a murderer and a liar, because she worships the devil in and through the sacred negro. So when Mika speaks ex cathedra from the holy liberal pulpit of MSNBC, we must listen to what she says, not as our doctrine, but as a revelation from her master, the devil. And we see in the great Mika's condemnation of the non-vaccinated the truth behind the COVID-19 'crisis.'

COVID-19 was created by the American medical-scientific establishment and the Chinese government to kill and control white Europeans and destroy the economies of the white European nations. The fact that blacks were and are particularly susceptible to COVID-19 did not and does not bother the liberals in the slightest. The liberals do not care about individual blacks; if they did they would follow Christian policies similar to the old South and apartheid South Africa. Those societies more than any other societies actually tried to elevate, morally and economically, blacks to a higher level of existence in which they were something other than beasts. As it stands now, the liberals worship blacks in the abstract because they need them to justify and sanction all the blasphemies and depravities of Liberalism. So long as Black Lives Matter reigns supreme, Satan shall reign supreme.

The COVID-19 virus was used to destroy Trump, who was unique among American Republican presidents in that he actually wanted white people to be part of America, but the virus was not concocted solely to destroy Trump. European nations that never had a Trump are using COVID-19 for their own ends, and the liberals are keeping the COVID-19 'crisis' going in this country even though Trump has been disposed of. So what is the reason for COVID-19? Isn't it obvious? COVID-19 is a very useful tool in the hands of the malevolent liberals. They can use it to further solidify and perpetuate their kingdom of hell on earth. "All must be vaccinated" is liberal double-speak; what they mean is all whites must obey all the dictates of liberalism. And all the dictates of Liberalism can ultimately be summed up by one prime directive. "The white Christ-bearing race must be exterminated."

It is not a case of COVID-19 being a hoax. I live in a multi-generational household in which every member of my household, with one exception, caught the virus.<sup>(1)</sup> Thankfully no one in my household died or had to be hospitalized, but it was a serious illness. And I know of many other people who have contracted the illness, but this illness, this thing called COVID-19, has been treated differently than other illnesses that plagued our people in the Christian and Christian-fumes eras of our history. The liberals deliberately created, in league with the Chinese communists, COVID-19; they fought tooth and nail to prevent people from recovering from the illness, and they are doing everything possible to keep the illness alive in order to consolidate their power over the American people. Why do they need power? Because too many white Americans – Trump's election in 2016 was a warning to the liberals – will not go willingly to the gas chambers. So through COVID-19 and other 'crises' that will be coming down the liberal pike, the liberals hope to complete the extermination of the white race, always exempting themselves, of course, who have gone beyond whiteness ("I'm black inside," intones Chris Cuomo).

It is not a good sign that America has 'achieved' a 70% vaccination record. That is a terrible thing to contemplate, because it indicates that Americans still, despite the fact that the medical-scientific community worked hand in glove with the Chinese government to create COVID-19, believe in Science writ large. To oppose Science is to oppose the liberals' Holy Ghost, and just as opposing the Holy Ghost is the unforgivable sin in Christianity, so is opposing Science the unforgivable sin in the liberals' satanic inversion of Christianity. Through abstract reason, the sacred negro, and holy science, the liberals promise redemption for all the members of a universalist community of men and women of color, and, of course, the desouled illuminated whites who have elevated themselves to a 'higher' level of existence than the 'racist' Europeans of the past.

It is not, unfortunately, that the 30% of unvaccinated Americans are unvaccinated because they are Christian Europeans getting ready to rise and ride against Liberalism in the name of Christ the King. The unvaccinated remain unvaccinated for a myriad of reasons, most of which have nothing to do with Christianity. Quite the contrary, most of the professed

Christians in the ranks of the moderate liberals are pro-vaccination. And that is understandable since the moderate liberals, the conservatives, do not look on liberalism as institutionalized Satanism. This vaccine crisis is part of a very old gambit of Satan that he has used time and time again: “Intelligence is science, and science is truth,” Satan tells us. And who wants to be stupid? Isn’t abstract reason the first person of the liberals’ trinity? We are back with Balzac who skewered the decadent intelligentsia of Paris: “In Paris, when they say a man has a good heart, they mean he is as stupid as a rhinoceros.” The unvaccinated do not have complete trust in the medical-scientific establishment, and that mistrust is the beginning of wisdom, a wisdom that could lead – but it is by no means written – to the foolishness of God.

In that magnificent novel, *Shane*, Marian Starrett laments the existence of guns. She yearns for the day when there will be no guns in the valley because then, she fantasizes, there will be no more killing. Shane very gently disagrees. He tells her that a gun is just a tool, no better or no worse than the man who wields it. So it is with reason; it is a tool, no better or no worse than the heart that wields it. But the moderate liberals do not regard reason as a tool of the heart; they regard it as an independent deity that can solve all of man’s problems. The problem of mad-dog liberalism can be solved, the conservatives believe, by reference to the deity of reason. But the mad-dog liberals cannot be swayed by the deity called reason. They use reason to serve the passion in their hearts, the hatred of Jesus Christ and the Christ-bearing race. You cannot, as the conservatives in church and state maintain, reference pure reason in order to bypass the evil passions of the human heart. By doing so you will leave Satan and his passionate followers triumphant in the lists without any Christian challengers, because there can be no knights of charity without passionate hearts connected to His passionate heart. Banning passion and appealing to pure reason as an antidote to evil passions partakes of the same gun-banning wish of Marian Starrett; you must support the good passion, the Christ-centered passion, in order to defeat the passionate followers, through the sacred negro, of Satan. Hugh McGee’s advice to his son is always apropos: “And think with passion, it’s the only kind of thought that is worth anything.”

On a weekly basis, I receive letters from ‘conservatives’ urging me to give money to and vote for Republican candidates. If I don’t, they warn me, very bad things will happen: “It will be the end of our Republic.” Shouldn’t the conservatives address the problem of the rhinoceros in the bedroom before they continue to urge the white grazers to get out there and support the Republican Party? We had a presidential election in this anti-nation in which the man who recorded an astounding majority of the votes was not allowed to win the election because some of his policies were not sufficiently anti-white and anti-Christian to please the liberal cabal that rules our anti-nation. If the conservatives want me to send funds to the protestors who went unarmed against the brutal, sadistic Capitol Police on January 6th, I will gladly send them funds. If they want me to join them in an effort to free Derek Chauvin, I will send them funds. But I have nothing but contempt for moderate liberals who think more liberalism is the cure for liberalism. Satan is the font of liberalism, and he is and always shall be a murderer and a liar. The conservatives who urge us to seek redemption through the democratic process urge us to seek redemption from the satanic founder of the democratic process. “Crucify Him,” and then, “Crucify His people,” will always be the battle cry of the men and women in charge of the demon-cratic process. Pure reason will not put a stop to such evil.

How does a demonic creature such as Mika Brzezinski dare to use Christianity to defend her demonism? She is permitted to do so because of the conservatives in church and state have shifted from a faith in our Lord and Savior who rose from the dead on the third day to a faith in a ‘Judeo-Greco-Roman-Celtic-Christian tradition.’ Conservatives in the twentieth century affirmed God, a God of many faiths and many peoples, but they did not affirm the one true God of one particular people. Burke was very specific about what should be conserved – it was Christian Europe. He did not want to preserve a propositional faith in a generic God who was all things to all people. Christ cannot be blended with a messianic faith in the nation state of Israel or in a pantheon of gods, consisting of the sacred negro, Muhammed, and the gods of the Amazon Rain Forest. He is either our Beginning and our End, or He is a useful tool of the liberals, to be pulled out of the closet every time they want to put the moderate liberals on the defensive. Why do the conservatives, the type of people who send me letters instructing me to defeat the mad-dog liberals by voting Republican, always respond to the aggression of the liberals by ceding the high ground to the liberals? When Derek Chauvin arrested a black criminal and that criminal died of a heart attack while resisting arrest, the ‘conservatives’ met the liberals’ war cry of ‘racism,’ with a cowardly betrayal of Derek Chauvin: “Most cops are good, just Derek Chauvin is bad.” When a brave band of protestors charged the liberal barricades on January 6th, the conservatives responded to the liberals’ charges of treason with, “Most of the protestors were non-violent.” Pontius Pilate lives and thrives in the ranks of the conservatives. And Pontius Pilate seemed to have more remorse than our modern conservative Pontius Pilates because he could not pour the balm of, “I am not racist,” over his soul.

Dickens closed his masterpiece, *A Christmas Carol*, by enjoining all of us to keep Christmas in our hearts as the repentant Scrooge kept Christmas in his heart: “May that be truly said of us and all of us!” Let it be truly said of us, the European remnant, that we are racist as the Dream of the Rood Christians of old Europe were racist, that we love our own with a passion that is grounded in the love of our Savior whose love passeth the understanding of ‘pure’ reason but enters and dwells within the heart that loves.+

---

(1) The medical-scientific community does not even understand the intricacies of the human body, so why on earth should we allow them to dictate to us on all things spiritual as well as physical? Despite living in close quarters with members of my family who had COVID-19, I did not contract the virus. I think it had something to do with my blood type, which differs from the rest of my family, but I'm not really sure why I didn't contract the virus. But of course our medical-scientific experts are sure about everything. And they are particularly sure that the dead do not rise again. We, the last Europeans, hold to the contrary: Christ did indeed rise from the dead on the third day, and He has prepared a place for us in His house of many mansions. That is what the COVID-19 crisis is all about, Charlie Brown, it is about the eternal war between Christ and the devil. We dare not, we must not, be found wanting in the great battle.

---

## **Community of the Blood - July 24, 2021**

O momentary grace of mortal men,  
Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!  
Who builds his hope in air of your good looks  
Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast,  
Ready, with every nod, to tumble down  
Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

—*Richard the Third*

---

Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. — John 8: 43-45

---

The moderate-liberal Ann Coulter, with the emphasis on liberal, recently included in her criticism of Black Lives Matter a condemnation of the 'racists' of the Old South. Coulter's attempt to maneuver away from the extreme left while pandering to a non-existent moderate left by condemning the 'racist' Europeans of Christian Europe is all too typical of the moderate-liberals who pollute the print and internet mediums with their liberal conservatism. What are the moderate liberals trying to conserve? They want to conserve a liberalism that is three-quarters of the way to hell. But at the vital center of liberalism is Satan. He doesn't want three-quarters of what was once Christian Europe, he wants it all. And he shall get it all if the only resistance to his reign is conservatives who want to stay slightly to the right of the mad-dog liberals as they progress to that final leap off the cliff with the swine. The first wave of swine plunging off the cliff will be the mad-dog liberals, and the second contingent will be the conservatives who will squeal out, "We are not racist," as they plunge into oblivion right behind their swinish brethren, the mad-dog liberals.

The moderate-liberals are continually appealing to some unknown God that is rational, democratic, and a civil rights advocate. They want that God to intervene in human affairs and explain to the mad-dog liberals that their moderate brethren are not racist, they are not irrational, and they are not against science. Then, the unknown God will place the mad-dog liberals in subordinate positions to the oh-so-smart and oh-so-non-racist moderate liberals, and all will be well. Why don't the moderate liberals, many of whom profess to be Christian, try to please a God who made Himself known to us, who took flesh and dwelt among us, rather than an unknown God who supports liberalism? The answer to that question can be found in an article by Allen Tate in which Tate made an analysis of the sickness of the West and decided, quite correctly, that rationalism was the root cause of the decline of Western civilization. But then Tate went on to conclude that what rationalism had caused, the demise of Western civilization, rationalism could cure. That is a conclusion that was penned in hell. Rationalism is a spiritual sickness, it cannot be cured by another, stronger dose of rationalism any more than cancer can be cured by injecting more cancer cells into the infected, diseased area of the body.

The moderate liberals refuse to accept what Burke said about liberalism — "The first liberal was the devil." They, like Adam and Eve, like the mad-dog liberals, have succumbed to, "Ye shall be as gods." If the moderate-liberals accepted Burke's assessment of liberalism, that it is from the devil, they would have to forsake their rationalism, they would have to rely on a heart connected to His heart in order to overcome the wickedness and snares of the devil. "No," the moderate liberals proclaim: "We propose and we dispose, let God stay away from the affairs of men." But St. Paul tells us that, "Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good." If we do not abhor liberalism because within Liberalism are the political talk shows in which we can dazzle the world with our good, rational solutions to the problems caused by bad rationalism, and such punditry is worth the world to our egos, then we will not serve the good, we will serve Satan.

I am struck, whenever I read St. Paul, how deeply St. Paul's Christ-imbued vision of existence penetrated the heart and mind of Edmund Burke. St. Paul's injunction that we should, "Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good," was

echoed many years later by Edmund Burke when he enjoins his countrymen to oppose the Jacobins: “They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate.” The moderate liberals do not hate liberalism, they do not abhor evil, but they do hate the antique Europeans and their Christ-centered civilization — they hate “that which is good.” Coulter’s hatred of the Christian South lays bare the rotten core of what passes for conservatism. So, I ask again, if you are not striving to conserve that which is good, because that which is good is deemed ‘racist,’ then what are you striving to conserve? The ‘conservatives’ are striving to conserve a liberalism that stops just short of going off the cliff with the swine. But that is not possible, because the swine are possessed by the devil. Only the Christ of old Europe, who was the Christ of the Southern people who took European civilization to these shores, can stop the European people’s plunge off the cliff of liberalism. But we must believe that liberalism is of the devil. If we don’t, we shall not call on Him who saves, and we will be damned.

Once everything Satanic has been institutionalized in a nation, a European Christian cannot be conservative, he must be a counter-revolutionary. Need I go through the list of institutionalized perversions? Legalized abortion, sodomy, feminism, transgenderism have all been institutionalized under the mantle of the liberals’ one true God, the sacred negro. You can’t plead for a milder, gentler form of negro-worship than the type of worship advocated by Black Lives Matter. Once you have accepted the premise that liberalism is good, you must accept whatever the liberals’ savior commands. The black gods have no mercy, not a dram; if Coulter and her ilk want liberalism, then they must accept Black Lives Matter.

If we turn from the vomit of liberalism, be it moderate or mad-dog, we can see another way to face existence. Before his son Edward went off to war to face off against the Jacobins of the North, Hugh McGee gave his son the essence of his faith:

“The way I’ve been obliged to see it is this: our ideas and instincts work upon our memory of these people who have lived before us, and so they take on some clarity of outline. It’s not to our credit to think we began today, and it’s not to our glory to think we end today. All through time we keep coming in to the shore like waves—like waves. You stick to your blood, son; there’s a certain fierceness in blood that can bind you up with a long community of life.”

“I never forget you, Father,” Edward said.

“Your father wouldn’t know what the world was without that. And think with passion, it’s the only kind of thought that’s worth anything.”

—*So Red the Rose*

The South had its American Exceptionalists — Thomas Jefferson was the worst — but the South that had to be destroyed was the South that was rooted in European civilization, a civilization that had a blood tie with the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. A propositional faith and a propositional nation can be discarded quite easily for a new propositional faith and a new propositional nation, but a blood tie is forever. The willingness with which ‘conservatives’ denounce their blood ties to old Europe, of which the Old South was an exemplar, shows their willingness to make peace with the devil. Which brings us back to Origen and his belief in the conversion of the devil. Can such things be? Is it only necessary that we affirm God, even if that God is the devil?

I agree with Walter Scott who said that the true historians are the bards. Homer was the great historian of the ancient Greeks just as the anonymous bard who wrote the Dream of the Rood, William Shakespeare, Charles Dickens, and Walter Scott himself were and are the historians of old Europe. And in our history as a people there is a recurring theme: The European people are constantly reenacting the Christ story. The villains imitate the Jews who crucified our Lord; the cowardly individuals who ultimately side with the Christ-haters, the Pontius Pilates of the world, are present as well — they are called ‘conservatives.’ And then there are the Christian heroes who follow in His train. There is an incredible scene in Charles Dickens’ Nicholas Nickleby in which the sublime beauty of a Christ-imbued hero comes to the forefront and gives us a glimpse of “that charity of honor.” Unable to watch the continual torture and degradation of a helpless, wretched man-child at the hands of the sadistic schoolmaster, Wackford Squeers, against his worldly, material interests, Nicholas steps forward and stops the torture by beating the schoolmaster. Later, when Nicholas is alone with the wretched Smike as his companion on a road bound to nowhere, the wretched outcast says to Nicholas Nickleby, “You are my home.” Yes, “In my house are many mansions.” The European, the Dream of the Rood European, the pre-Civil War Southern European, and every European who has not bent his knee to the liberals and the liberals’ gods, has only one home. Wherever His mercy and His charity dwells is “home” for the European. We are part of a community that goes all the way back to the stable in Bethlehem. If we sever our connection to that community, we are worse than nothing, we are the people who have chosen to follow Satan. And that terrible betrayal cannot be glossed over by a pathetic, blasphemous attempt to blend Satan and Christ in one universalist, Babylon state consecrated to the sacred negro.

In Shakespeare’s *Richard III*, Buckingham has lied, cheated, and murdered to help Richard obtain the crown. But when he balks at killing the two young princes, the true heirs to the throne, Richard turns on his hitherto loyal lieutenant:

I will converse with iron-witted fools  
And unrespectable boys; none are for me  
That look into me with considerate eyes.  
High-reaching Buckingham grows circumspect.

The moderate-liberals must not waver, they must not stop at civil rights, they must go on to the worship of the sacred negro; they must not stop at first trimester abortions and no federal funding for abortions, there must be abortion-on-demand and federal funding; they must not stop at the condemnation of the racist Europeans of the past, they must consent to the extermination of all whites as a reparation for the past. And on it goes. Will the moderate liberals suffer the fate of Buckingham? I don't think the pundits such as Coulter and the News Maxers will; they will shift ground and join the mad-dog liberals. It is the unwashed whites in the rank and file, like the individuals who charged the Capitol on January 6th, who will be exterminated. Those people still, and that is truly remarkable in this day and age, retain some heartfelt beliefs that run counter to liberalism. And unlike the conservative pundits, they are not about to abandon their beliefs because the principalities and powers of this world are against them. So they did what the conservative pundits were too 'wise' to do, they attacked the liberal leviathan armed only with a fierce hatred of liberal tyranny and a love for the last remnants of grace in a country committed to Satan. (1)

The COVID-19 vaccine is now killing more people than COVID-19, and there are more and more reports that the vaccine itself does not prevent COVID-19. Yet we are inundated with threats from the vaccine police: "You must be vaccinated." Isn't it obvious that the COVID-19 crisis is just the start of an escalating series of liberal-manufactured crises that will be used to ensure that Satan shall rule in perpetuity over the European people? I do not deny that COVID-19 exists. Like most viruses it hits some people harder than others. I have known people who threw it off quite easily and others who had to be hospitalized because of the illness. But the liberals are not interested in ending COVID-19, they are only interested in using the virus to further terrorize the European people. To what end? To consolidate their power, which is the power of Satan, over the European people.

The most damning indictment that can be made against the moderate liberals is that they do not hate the mad-dog liberals. They do not look at what the mad-dog liberals have wrought and "cry havoc and let loose the dogs of war." Eventually they will be completely absorbed by the mad-dog liberals, and they will, "having entered hell, feel no flame," because they will have become unmen without any soul to call their own. The 'progress' of liberalism is about desoulment. If a man has achieved desoulment, if he has severed his blood ties to that community of souls connected to the Suffering Servant, he can rest content with all things satanic, and he will seek to conserve Satandom so long as Satan agrees to couch his evil in high-sounding phrases such as 'liberty, equality, and fraternity,' which are all covered under the sacred canopy of "Black Lives Matter." What good does it do a man to gain the whole world if he loses his soul? "What soul?" the modern European responds. "Show me the soul." I can't put the soul in a computer printout, but I can point you to that long blood line of Europeans who believed in the Word Made Flesh. Let us cleave unto them and kneel before Him who is our home.

+

---

(1) When Satan rules a nation, through the sacred negro, it is not possible to remain Christian and still stay connected to modern Europe. But the great unwashed whites are not going to seek out that which has been lost, in dusty, discredited tomes of ancient lore. Modernity is their world, and they must make the best of it, so when a Trump comes along, a man who doesn't want them, the despised white under-class, to be exterminated, they cling to him. I honor Trump for showing concern for the downtrodden whites and I honor them for at least showing some dissatisfaction with liberalism. My people are the antique Europeans, but I still have that in my heart which is sorry yet for the persecuted and condemned white grazers who are more sinned against than sinning. The great washed, the conservative pundits, will survive because they will keep shifting their ground, they will never take their stand. But the great unwashed, who are my people to the extent I have any people left, will not be able to shift their ground, because they will be unable to swallow liberalism whole. As a consequence, they will be exterminated. It is up to the antique European, the man connected to His Europe, to say, "Stop! This must not go on!"

---

## The Seal of the Living God - July 17, 2021

And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals. And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof? And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof. —Revelations 5: 1-5

---

There was, even in the Christian centuries (pre-twentieth century) of the European people, differences between Christian sects regarding the importance of the Bible. Still, I do not think an objective historian would deny that the Bible was the most influential book in Western civilization prior to the 20th century. But during all the Christian centuries of Europe, a

different book, an underground book, was being written. This book was never put into one printed volume, but it exists as an ongoing work in progress, which is being written, under Satan's direction, by men and women who hate the living God, whose story was imparted to us in that other book, the Holy Bible.

The beginning of the Book of Liberalism is contained in the Old and New Testaments. There we see Adam and Eve's rebellion, instigated by Satan, their punishment, and the eventual redemption of mankind through Jesus Christ. And in the Pharisees' hatred of Jesus Christ we see liberalism writ large. The subsequent history of the European people consists of the conflict between the Europeans who took the Word of God into their hearts and acted according to that faith within, and the Europeans who rejected that faith and took Satan into their hearts. That second story, the story of Satan's people, is the story that has gained the upper hand in this, the 21st century, the century of Satan.

It should be noted, but it has not been noted by the conservative-moderate liberals, that the liberals have turned another page in the Book of Liberalism and started a new chapter. In the last chapter, the liberals used democracy to conceal their Satanism. But in the new chapter, which is part of Satan's work in progress, the liberals no longer see the need to camouflage their Satanism. After years and years of liberal dominance in church and academy, the liberals feel that the white Europeans will not resist naked force. They think, and it seems like their assessment is correct, that they can impose their will upon a people who have no stomach for a fight to the death with the liberals and all the powers of hell. The capitulation of the European people to the liberals is a worldwide phenomenon, but it is particularly manifest in the United States, which had less of a European tradition to start with. What are some of the signs of the new chapter in the Book of Liberalism? Let's turn the page from the 'Christian fumes' culture that was surviving on the fringes of Satandom to the new chapter in which the 'Christian fumes' culture has been eradicated.

The COVID-19 "crisis" was a landmark event that showcased the liberals' new chapter, "The End of the Christian Fumes Culture." In the previous chapter of the book of Satan, the liberals were not so blatant about their desire to kill white people. But in the new chapter, they murdered whites by creating a deadly disease, spreading a deadly disease, thwarting a cure for the deadly disease, and using the deadly disease to shut down the economy in order to destroy the white-working man. The liberals did not care about angering whites because they knew the moderate liberals in church and state would advise the whites to be nonviolent and to trust in the democratic process. They, of course, were right.

The second sign of the new chapter was the fraudulent election. The liberals did not even do a good job, they were quite transparent when they rigged the election. But they had the backing of the Supreme Court, which is the supremely satanic Court, and they once again had the backing of the moderate liberals who were quick to condemn anyone who challenged the fraudulent election. Which brings us to another sign of the new chapter of liberalism – the throwing of all whites who still want the 'fumes of Christianity' culture to the wolves.

The January 6th protestors were thrown to the wolves because they were "violent." How charging unarmed against armed police constitutes "violence" is unclear to me, but nevertheless they were "violent," so the moderate liberals, who want to remain in the Book of Liberalism and make that book a more moderate, less satanic book, called the protestors violent and threw them to the wolves of Liberalism. And Trump himself was thrown to the wolves of Liberalism by Amy 'The Liberal' Barrett, Brett 'The Coward' Kavanaugh, and the other sycophants of liberalism on the supremely satanic Supreme Court. Likewise, Pence and his Republican partners in crime, who make the Cowardly Lion look like a hero, threw Trump to the wolves in order to ensure that they would not be thrown out of the book of life, which is, in their warped, sick minds, the Book of Liberalism.

On page 561 in the Book of Liberalism, it says, "The European people will now proceed into the future without leaving a place for the whites who want to live in the 'Christian fumes' culture of the mid-20th century." Trump wanted to turn back to page 550, which read, "We must allow for a few Christian fumes lest we stir up the few remaining die-hard Europeans." That was Trump's huge mistake. You can't turn back the pages of Satan's Book of Liberalism. The preceding chapter, the 'Christian Fumes' chapter, is closed. We must leave Satan's book entirely or else we will become part of Satan's story and be, "lost, lost, lost." We needn't, if we see with the interior eye, wait until the final chapter of Satan's work in progress is written. We know how it ends, it ends in hell.

The apostle John, when he was a prisoner on the Isle of Patmos, was vouchsafed a vision of the living God that we ignore at our peril. Christ Himself tells John that, "I am he that liveth, and was dead; and behold, I am alive for evermore. Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death." That is how Christ's book ends: He comforts the apostle John, who remained at the foot of the cross when all the others fled. Christ tells John not to despair because, "the lion of the tribe of Judah" can and shall open the book of the seven seals. The Christian European has now been isolated on his own spiritual Isle of Patmos; every cultural remnant of Christian Europe has been taken away from him. But there is St. John's vision of the Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world. Do we want to be part of that story which ends with the triumph of the God of love and mercy? Or do we want to be part of the devil's work in progress? How does his story end? The devil's story ends in hell, a hell where there is no love, no mercy, and no humanity; there are only beasts that "prey upon each other like



monsters from the deep.” Isn’t that hell already upon us? Under the mantle of Black Lives Matter every aspect of the European people’s lives have been Satanized. The COVID-19 “crisis” is just the beginning of the new chapter of Satan’s story. He has ordered his minions to proceed with the final crackdown; through “Black Lives Matter” he intends to completely eliminate the image of God in man.

Toward the end of his life, Francois Mauriac explained why he had spent a lifetime writing novels when so many literary critics told him his novels were worthless. He said that he felt, despite so many contrary opinions, that he was called by God to write his novels. I feel the same way about my writing; I feel that I have been called by God to bear witness to the ‘image of God in man’ culture of the antique Europeans. If I am wrong, our Lord will tell me so at the Last Judgement. But until that time, I must, like Posthumus in Cymbeline, follow that inner vision.

The ‘image of God in man’ culture is Rembrandt, it is Handel, it is Shakespeare, it is Dickens, it is Scott, but it so much more. It is my great uncle, a coal miner, singing, “All Through the Night,” at a family reunion, it is millions and millions of such “simple fools” who kept faith with the “Lamb of God.” What is the end result of our lives if we keep faith with that ‘image of God in man’ culture that Satan and his liberal minions are so determined to eradicate from the face of the earth? We will see, like St. John who remained steadfast at the foot of the cross, a vision of the living God who broke the seal of the book of the seven seals. We must, now that we have been left on our own Isle of Patmos, stay with that vision even as Satan, through Black Lives Matter, attempts to tear the living God from our hearts.

I have more than just a little affection for those men and women, such as Trump and his supporters, who want to hold onto the Christian fumes culture of the mid-20th century. But we must see that such a fusion of liberalism and Christianity is not possible. We must see liberalism for what it is – the ongoing story of Satan’s counter-culture to Christian Europe, his ‘image of the beast in man’ culture. So long as ‘conservative’ means slightly to the right of the mad-dog liberals, so long as conservatives only want to be part of Liberalism by claiming, “We are not racist, we do not support racist Europe” – which means they are opposed to white pietas and the ‘image of God in man’ culture that was formed by white pietas – the ‘conservatives’ will be overwhelmed by the mad-dog liberals and they will become part of Satan’s story.

The “Black Lives Matter” chapter of Satan’s book of death is intended to be the last chapter in his book. Once Black Lives Matter is triumphant, once all whites bow down to the image of the beast, Satan will have completely obliterated God’s image in man. All whites will sing the litany, “We are not racist, we are not violent.” And there will be more tests of white subservience. “All must be vaccinated” will only be the start. Everything evil will be ‘mandatory’ and everything good will be proscribed. Will there be any resistance to the final satanic advance of liberalism? It doesn’t seem like there will be any resistance, but we do not know what can happen when our interior eyes are focused on the Christ of Old Europe. Quite possibly the same elder who spoke to John will speak to us: “Weep not; see, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, He who came from David, has won the right to open the book and its seven seals.” Why should we beg, “We are not racist,” for a place in Satan’s book when we can see what John saw and be comforted as John was, by the Lamb of God? That is our consummation, that is what we must devoutly wish for. Let us walk out of Satan’s work in progress into the Christ story; let us be, once again, the people who saw a great light.

Over 70 million people, most of whom were white, voted for Trump. That means over 70 million people were dissatisfied with some aspects of liberalism. I’m sure that less than 1% of those 70 million want, as I do, a return to Christian Europe while the rest still believe in most of the liberals’ agenda. But there’s the rub – the liberals will no longer brook any opposition. No one will be allowed to accept ‘most’ of the liberals’ agenda; the liberals must have, in the final chapter of liberalism, complete obedience. So from their perspective, they need to eliminate 70 million people. And they will not use gentle persuasion. No life is safe so long as Black Lives Matter is the dominant religion of the white race. We can rally around the Lion of the Tribe of Judah, or we can crawl on our bellies in front of the sacred negro. Is there any moral beauty in the liberals’ faith? Is there any charity, mercy, or love? Then why must we adhere to the liberals’ faith and forsake our ancient faith? Yes, we have been exiled to Patmos, but Patmos is our salvation, for it is there that we shall see, if we seek Him in our hearts, the Lamb of God who broke the seal on the book of the seven seals and revealed to us a vision of God’s love that will defeat Satan and his Black Lives Matter kingdom of eternal night. +

---

“And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life...”

---

## **Wrought by the Devil - July 10, 2021**

“Antioch, farewell! For wisdom sees, those men  
Blush not in actions blacker than the night

Will shun no course to keep them from the light.”

—Pericles, Prince of Tyre

From the dunest pit of hell Biden comes forth to instruct the world, according to the dictates of his master, the archangel Lucifer. But tyrannicide is not an option, because Biden represents a cabal that is legion. His life is safe because he is merely a spokesperson for that legion. If he disappears tomorrow, another member of the legion from hell will assume his place. No government official can say, “a personality dwells here,” because there is no humanity in liberalism; the liberals are unmen who have given their souls to Satan.

Biden recently spoke to some of his denizens and pulled out a card on what was (he claimed) the death toll of the coronavirus pandemic. He had the satanic temerity to say his heart bled for the 600,000+ victims of the illness! This from the man who was a member of the liberal cabal that was unalterably opposed to any restrictions on trade or traffic with communist China. This from the man who was a member of the cabal that did everything they could to restrict the use of the hydroxychloroquine drug because Trump had suggested it could help in the treatment of the disease. Whatever is the actual number of deaths from COVID-19, is there any doubt that Biden and his liberal partners in Satanism deliberately, with malice aforethought, wanted to kill as many Americans as possible with the virus in order to stop Trump from winning re-election? No, there is no doubt. And yet the bloody monstrosity, a creature from hell, stands before the American people and claims he weeps over the people he helped to murder. One is reminded of the carpenter in Lewis Carroll’s tale who weeps over the oysters he has just eaten. And that is all actual humans are to the liberals: something to be eaten by the liberal leviathan.(1)

What Burke said about our elective affections being an infallible indication of what was in our hearts was and is true. My elective affections are with the Dream of the Rood Christians of Old Europe. Outside of my own family and a few other men and women, whom I only know through the internet, I do not know any Dream of the Rood Christians. But I still retain a certain affection for those in the moderate liberal camp who have not abandoned all the values stemming from the Dream of the Rood culture. That is where I break with the neo-pagans who see no difference between Trump and Biden, and some of whom even prefer Biden. Trump and his followers had and have more than just a “dram of mercy” in their souls, and Biden and the creatures that voted for him have no “dram of mercy” in their souls. How can a Christian European be indifferent to the contrast? The blended Christianity of Trump makes him blind to the satanic essence of liberalism, it makes him weak on so many issues, such as negro worship and the deification of the unrepentant Jew, but that dram of mercy in his soul also made him try to actually mitigate the effects of the coronavirus, to oppose the communist Chinese, to help Americans maintain their jobs, and to keep our Southern border under control. Those are not little things that a Christian should treat with an Olympian, philosophical indifference.

All that having been said in defense of Trump and his followers, the sad fact remains that the fusion of Christianity and liberalism, which is the essence of Trump’s movement, results in the triumph of Satan. Why? As oft this stage we have shown – Christ cannot be blended and still be the Son of the living God. Christ cannot reach our hearts if He is a co-redemptorist forever united to the sacred negro, a subordinate God to the nation state of Israel, or an end product of a syllogism. He must stand alone as the King of Kings and the Lord of Lords. We who are about to die need the unblended suffering Servant who has redeemed us from sin and death.

After the death of Robespierre, there was a large contingent of moderate English liberals who thought that an honorable man could make peace with Republican France. Burke pointed out to those moderate liberals that every single member of the Directory had signed on to the death of the King. He was adamant in his continued opposition to the spirit of liberty, equality, and fraternity that was destined, if unchecked, to destroy all of Christian Europe. Of course it was unchecked and it did destroy Christian Europe. And America? The framers of our Constitution, Franklin, Madison, and Jefferson, were religious atheists, and our great military hero, George Washington, rallied the troops by quoting from the most pernicious, evil European man who ever walked the earth – Thomas Paine. When the South rebelled against American Jacobinism, the Southerners claimed, “We did not sign on for this.” The modern Jacobins said, “Yes, you did.” And the Northern Jacobins were right. Negro worship is implicit in any nation that is founded on the proposition that nature and nature’s god shall rule. For what is nature, in the propositional sense? It is man’s reason, it is Thomas Paine’s logic, which preaches that Christ be not risen and the natural savage is our God. The South had no Christian King, no Alfred, so the South lost the war. They only held the enemy at bay when they had a fighting Monarch, Nathan Bedford Forrest. We are a hierarchically endowed people – “I serve the King, and the King serves Christ,” must be our battle cry.

The moderate liberals in Burke’s England were like unto the Trumpers; they were – and the Trumpers are – Origenists, who believe in the conversion of the devil:

The October Politician is so full of charity and good nature, that he supposes, that those very robbers and murderers themselves are in a course of amelioration; on what ground I cannot conceive, except on the long practice of every crime,

and by its complete success. He is an Origenist, and believes in the conversion of the Devil. All that runs in the place of blood in his veins, is nothing but the milk of human kindness. He is as soft as a curd, though, as a politician, he might be supposed to be made of sterner stuff. He supposes (to use his own expression) “that the salutary truths which he inculcates, are making their way into their bosoms.” Their bosom is a rock of granite, on which falsehood has long since built her strong hold. Poor Truth has had a hard work of it with her little pickaxe. Nothing but gunpowder will do. –  
*Letters on a Regicide Peace*

It is worth nothing that Origen, the theologian who believed, contrary to the Gospel, that the devil could be converted, emasculated himself. Isn't that what our moderate liberals have done? Haven't they spiritually emasculated themselves before the sacred negro? Trump, an alpha male in so many respects, would not act during the summer of 2020 as the violence in the streets escalated. And why didn't he act? He didn't act because Antifa used Black Lives Matter as their shield. The murderer of Aaron Danielson was killed because he stepped away from his black shields, while all other Antifaers, who kept their sacred shields, rioted and murdered with impunity. Some Democratic governors who defunded their police forces are now making some efforts to refund their police, and the moderate conservatives are applauding their efforts, albeit with a few, “I told you sos” thrown in. But the amount of police and funds is not the central issue. You can increase the police force tenfold in numbers and funds, but that will not stop our cities and towns from becoming crime-ridden hell holes. It is not numbers and money that we need. You could cut every police force in half, in terms of numbers and money, and still put a major dent in violent crime if you empowered your police departments to fight, to actually fight, against black barbarians. So long as white policemen have been spiritually neutered, so long as they are trained to believe that crime is not crime if it is done by the sacred negroes, you will not have any police forces, you will have servants of the sacred negro who are hired to keep white citizens from defending themselves. Look what six black jurors and six white jurors did to Derek Chauvin. They sentenced him to a lifetime crucifixion because he took action against a black criminal. If you believe in the salvation of the devil, then you will never fight the devil's own, the liberals and their colored gods.

The moderate liberals, who do not believe that the liberals are the devil's own, have “nothing but the milk of human kindness” in their hearts when it comes to the sacred negroes and the mad-dog liberals, but they have made throwing their own people to the wolves a ‘conservative’ tradition. The police officers who stopped Jacob Blake from harming black children were thrown to the wolves, Derek Chauvin who arrested a drug-soaked criminal that died of a heart attack while resisting arrest, was thrown to the wolves, and every white man or woman who even suggests, let alone acts in self-defense, that whites should not commit racial suicide is thrown to the wolves, or should I say, the hellhounds of Liberalism. Conservative Origenists cannot lead a counterrevolution, but they can lead a mass suicide movement based on their belief that a man can be saved by the devil once he rejects the extremism of white pietas.

Let me offer a counter-proposal to the moderate-liberals' proposal that we can convert the devil if we are civil, polite, and rational. Let me state the obvious – the devil hates Christ because the devil is evil and Christ is good. The devil cannot be redeemed. We are called, as Christians, to hate the devil and all of his works. And what is the proudest work of the devil? It is the liberals; the devil cannot create a human being, but he can refashion what was wrought by God into something so hideous, so evil, that it becomes the work of the devil. Burke put it quite well when he wrote that the Jacobins could not strike God out of heaven, but they could obscure Him from our sight by “defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.” The major indictment of modern Liberalism, and most particularly of our own “land of liberty,” is that the modern liberals have gone further than any people at any time in history in blotting out the image of God in man. And the European people were once the people who championed the image of God in man in defiance of the heathen world. “Oh, what a falling off was there.” Now, a Christian of the old stock must champion Christ in defiance of the new Europe, a post-Christian Europe, infinitely worse than any heathen nation ever was. And the moderate liberals tell us that we can redeem such a nation if we support civil rights, free enterprise, and the salvation of the devil. For shame, for shame, eternal shame if we make such a compromise with the devil and his minions.

Western civilization was founded on the belief that Christ rose from the dead on the third day. Modern Europe, the Europe we see before our eyes today, was founded on the belief that Christ be not risen, He is not the Son of the Living God. That is why Burke labored so manfully to warn us about the French Revolution. The civil wars between rival claimants to Christian thrones were very sad affairs, but such wars did not constitute a change in the ruling faith of the nations involved in the civil wars. The French Revolution did constitute a change from Christ is risen to Christ be not risen. And in our anti-nation Thomas Paine's hatred of Christianity was institutionalized through the seductive lure of, “you can keep your religion if it remains a private thing, but the serious business of our nation is the promotion of liberty, equality, and fraternity, independent of that great imposter, Jesus Christ.”

St. Paul told the Jews, with great sadness because they were his people, that he would take his message, that Christ was the Son of the living God, to the Gentiles and they would hear him. And our people did hear him. God bless them for it. But what has happened to the European people? Why have they hardened their hearts, like the stiff-necked Jews that St. Paul condemned, against the living God? Let us look to Acts 28: 26-29 for the answer to that question:

Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

St. Paul told the Jews and he tells us that our understanding of God comes from the heart: “and understand with their hearts, and should be converted, and I should heal them.” The medieval scholastics and the Protestant scholastics who followed in their train, who bid us understand God with our minds while eschewing our heart’s passions because those passions are evil, left us bereft of our shield against the wickedness and snares of the devil, who can manipulate our reason to believe his lies. Our shield and strength was and is a heart connected to His heart, through and in our people who saw, in their hearts, the Word made flesh, and who believed in their hearts.

Most of the giants of religious atheism, Rousseau, Paine, Darwin, Freud, and Marx, were products of the 18th and 19th centuries. The 20th century liberals such as Shaw and Einstein merely parroted their atheist forefathers. We, the Europeans of the 20th century and the 21st century, inherited either the mad-dog liberalism of the religious atheists or the moderate liberalism of the English moderates whom Burke fought against. My parents were moderate liberals and their moderate liberalism, which they bequeathed to me and my siblings, turned my sister into a mad-dog liberal. There is free will; my sister was sent to a private ‘religious’ college where she was exposed to intellectual Christianity as a buttress against atheism. But she went the way of mad-dog liberalism for the same reason her contemporaries went over to mad-dog liberalism: Intellectual Christianity did not touch her heart, but the wickedness and snares of the devil did touch her heart. I pray for her conversion while condemning, with all my heart, her evil religion that is devoid of all mercy and all charity. Liberalism is the synthesis of all evil; we cannot be demur and moderate in the face of that evil. Is there any heart left in the bowels of what was once Christendom who hates the image of the beast in man culture of Satan enough to rise and ride in defense of His Europe? In one of his Christian hymns, the singer Glen Campbell asks, referencing his own death, “Who will sing one song for me?” Every time I hear that song, I reply, “I will.” And that is all we can do for our Lord when He asks us who shall stand with Him in the last great battle: “I will,” is our answer, and then we will rise and ride in defense of Christ’s Europe. +

---

(1) Burke and Taine added cannibalism to the sins of the Jacobins because they drank the blood of the guillotined aristocrats. So do our modern Jacobins consume the blood of aborted babies in facial creams and beauty products while feasting, through their black gods, on the blood of slaughtered whites.

---

### **The Grace of the King - July 3, 2021**

There shall be the song of angels, the delight of the blessed; there shall be the dear face of the Lord brighter than the sun for all the happy ones; there shall be the love of friends; life without death; a glad multitude of men; youth without age; the glory of the heavenly hosts; salvation without sorrow; rest without strife for those who did right; the glory of the blessed; day without darkness, radiant, full of splendor; gladness without griefs; peace henceforth without dissension between friends happy in heaven; love without enmity among the saints. There shall be neither hunger nor thirst there, sleep nor grievous sickness, nor the heat of the sun, nor cold nor care; but the band of the blessed, the most glorious of hosts, with the Lord of heaven shall ever enjoy there the grace of the King.

– from “Christ,” an old Anglo –Saxon poem

---

**I** understand the mad-dog liberals. Their hatred for Jesus Christ and the people who once loved Him has placed them with Shylock, outside the ken of humanity:

I am sorry for thee, thou art come to answer  
A stony adversary, an inhuman wretch,  
Uncapable of pity, void and empty  
From any dram of mercy.

But I do not understand the News Max conservatives and the Breitbart conservatives. These people seem to have retained some “dram of mercy” in their souls, and yet they try to dialog with liberals who have no “dram of mercy.” Portia sees past Shylock’s formal protestations of “justice, justice,” to what is in his heart, the hatred of Jesus Christ and His people. And she, because she has become a stand-in for our Lord, does what is needful. She offers him a chance for mercy:

Therefore, Jew,

Though justice be thy plea, consider this,  
That, in the course of justice, none of us  
Should see salvation. We do pray for mercy,  
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  
The deeds of mercy.

Shylock does not repent, and he is forced to pay the consequences of his satanic opposition to Christ's reign of charity:

Tarry, Jew:  
It is enacted in the laws of Venice,  
If it be prov'd against an alien  
That by direct or indirect attempts  
He seek the life of any citizen,  
The party 'gainst the which he doth contrive  
Shall seize one half his goods; the other half  
Comes to the privy coffer of the state;  
And the offender's life lies in the mercy  
Of the Duke only, 'gainst all other voice:  
In which predicament, I say, thou stand'st;  
For it appears, by manifest proceeding,  
That indirectly, and directly too,  
Thou hast contrived against the very life  
Of the defendant; and thou hast incurr'd  
The danger formerly by me rehears'd.  
Down, therefore, and beg mercy of the Duke.

—*Merchant of Venice*

It is not wrong to point out the history of the Jews' opposition to Christ's reign of charity. But we must see that the European liberals have become like unto the Shylockian Jews: they have become Christian apostates, who have no mercy or charitable impulses, not a dram; they have only a maniacal hatred for Jesus Christ and the people who once championed Him. Can we dialog with such creatures? Of course we can't. And yet the conservatives bid us dialog with them. So, I repeat, I do not understand the conservatives.

Let me make a distinction between the unmen such as Romney and Pence and men like Trump. Romney and Pence said things that theoretically placed them in the moderate liberal-conservative camp, but then when they felt the political winds were shifting, they moved over to the mad-dog liberal camp. Their ilk we shall always have with us:

Is like a villain with a smiling cheek,  
A goodly apple rotten at the heart.  
O, what a goodly outside falsehood hath!

Trump, to his credit, actually believed in a fusion of Christianity and liberalism. And when he obtained office, he remained true to his stated faith. Trump's faith is the same faith as the News Maxers' and the Breitbarbers' faith; it is not wholly incompatible with Christianity nor is it wholly incompatible with liberalism. And that is the rub. Our God is a jealous God. You can't be part Christian and part liberal. And the liberals' God, the sacred negro, is a jealous god; you can't retain even the fumes of a Christian culture if you want to have a place in Liberaldom. It seems as if the liberals and the moderate liberals should not be at odds. Don't they both support civil rights, economic prosperity, and the four freedoms? No, they do not. The mad-dog liberals do not want civil rights for the negro, they do not want equality. They want the negro as a God: all whites must worship the sacred negro. The conservatives are always trying to show the mad-dog liberals that they love Martin Luther King Jr. and that they are for the full enfranchisement of blacks. They are not 19th century Southerners nor are they 1950 segregationists. But that is not enough. The liberals and their black minions have even developed a new doublespeak for the worship of the sacred negro; that doublespeak is "equity." It is supposed to mean that when blacks have been suppressed for over one thousand years, it is not enough to make them equal, they must be more equal. That is right and fair, isn't it? "No, it isn't right and fair," the moderate liberals say. They stick to equality. But they fail to see the religious zeal behind the liberals' "equity." Equity means the worship of the sacred negro. You must reject equality and the enfranchisement of the negro if you really want to put an end to equity, which is the worship of the sacred negro and all the perversions that follow in the wake of that satanic religion. But it would be undemocratic to oppose the enfranchisement of the black race. It would place a man back with the evil empire, the land of Forrest and the pre-Civil War white Europeans of the South. Yes, it would. The old South was not an aberration that sprang from hell in the midst of Liberaldom, it was a land connected to His Europe. To be Southern, in the best sense of the word, was to be a Walter Scott European. The South was the last bastion of the code of the white men in North America. Equality and equity are one and the same; the mad-dog liberals have grasped that fact, the moderate liberals have not. Hence the moderate liberals

blather on about their love for Jackie Robinson and Martin Luther King Jr. and do not understand why the liberals continue to hate them.

The result of a conservative leadership that does not understand the evil of liberalism, that wants to dialog with the devil, has been the massacre of the innocents. All the babies murdered in the womb had to die because the conservatives refused to see that you cannot dialog with liberals. The whites who are murdered in the streets by black barbarians, the whites who stormed the Capital unarmed on January 6th and are now being tortured in prison are all victims of a conservative leadership that bids their followers be non-violent and democratic in the face of a satanic enemy that is violent and totalitarian. The mixture of a messianic belief in the democratic process and a disbelief in the demonic origins of liberalism is a recipe for disaster we should no longer follow.

My efforts to understand the moderate liberals is still a work in process. During the days preceding the 2020 Presidential election and after the military coup that subverted the election, I went out of my way to speak to Trump supporters. Was there one common denominator among them that distinguished them from the mad-dog liberals and the antique Europeans? Yes, there was. The Trumpers, who are called conservatives by the mad-dog liberals, did not and do not believe that whites cannot be part of Liberalism because they are irredeemably racist as the mad-dog liberals maintain. They do not use the n-word, they support civil rights, they honor Martin Luther King Jr., and they repudiate the racist Europeans of the past, so why do the liberals condemn them? They feel they are being treated unfairly by the liberals. And of course they are being treated unfairly, but the liberals are not committed to anything remotely resembling fairness. They are committed to their mystery religion which must have a savior, which is the sacred negro, and which must have a devil, which is the unenlightened white, most particularly the unenlightened white male. The Trumpers are forever on the defensive, trying to prove they are not racist, while the liberals are always on the offensive, asserting the impossibility of redemption for the unenlightened white. And 'enlightenment' is always defined as the complete acceptance of the evil of everything the antique Europeans considered to be virtuous – chivalry, charity, and pietas. And that is where the Trumpers break with the antique Europeans. The antique European wants to rise and ride in defense of Derek Chauvin, who is being crucified because he did what was chivalrous and honorable – he fought for the right against black barbarianism, while the Trumpers seek to distance themselves from his 'racism.' When the antique European hears of a woman in Greece who was raped by an Afghan and then raped by three Pakistanis to whom she went for aid, he does not want to vote against the rape of white Greek women, he wants to kill the perpetrators of the crime and drive the rest of their tribe out of Greece and off the face of the earth. The white grazers, the conservatives, are the only people on the face of the earth who will not act instinctively, according to their hearts, when their people are brutalized, tortured, and murdered by colored barbarians within and without their nation. Their "elective affections" are not with their own people because they do not believe they are a people. That is regrettably and tragically what separates the white grazers, the News Max conservatives and the Breitbarbers, from their Christian ancestors. And that separation is what keeps all those who follow the "conservatives" in the liberals' hell on earth. "And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us that would come from thence." – Luke 16: 26

Two authors, one English, one Southern, who were still writing in the early part of the 20th century but who personally adhered to and 'romanticized' the 19th century code of the white man, which was under attack in the 20th century, show us the transition from the whiteness of "bred in the bone Christianity" to the darkness of an intellectual affirmation of the Christian God, which is blended with an elective sympathy with the heathen gods of liberalism. Just as Solomon affirmed his faith in the God of Israel while paying homage to the heathen gods of his wives, so do the modern conservatives give lip service to the Savior while they give their hearts to the heathen gods of color. Page writes of a Christian gentleman who deliberately loses a horse race rather than risk injuring a man who has fallen off his horse during the race. A witness to the scene says that he couldn't have planned such a chivalrous act, it must have been by accident. "No," a wise observer replies, "It was no happy accident, his action was 'bred in the bone.'" And Thomas Nelson Page's European counterpart, P. C. Wren, concurs; he depicts the living faith, that charity of honor, which is bred in the bone of the white man, in his novel *Beggar's Horses*. The hero, "the bravest of the brave," who has killed in the name of "that charity of honor," is given the highest tribute that a Christian gentleman can give another man: "I'll take your word on it, Ganesh. For you're the best and whitest man God ever made." Yes, there is the gulf between our modern world, which the conservatives bid us accept, and the old world, Christian Europe, which we must cling to and champion. Whiteness is not evil in that old world, it is our earthly connection to His kingdom come, because it is through pietas, which is our whiteness, coupled with the charity of honor, that we remain connected to the heart of our Savior.

When our people bent their knees to Christ, they did so, not as the conquered but as the conquerors. They remain the only people, as an entire people, who adopted the religion of the people they conquered. Why? Because they saw that Odin and other hero gods were forerunners of the one true Hero God. The Savior did not ask them to renounce the code of heroes such as Gunnar:

He that lavished rings in largesse,

When the fight's red rain-drops fell,  
Bright of face, with heart-strings hardy,  
Hogni's father met his fate;  
Then his brow with helmet shrouding,  
Bearing battle-shield, he spake,  
'I will die the prop of battle,  
Sooner die than yield an inch,  
Yes, sooner die than yield an inch.'

-from the Icelandic story in *Burnt Njal*, retold in Trevelyan's *History of England, Volume 1*

Christ called upon them to take the warriors' code to a higher level, to that charity of honor which He and He alone can impart to human hearts. The unyielding battle hymn of Hogni's father, Gunnar, became, once it was purified by Christ the Lord, the Dream of the Rood. And the defense of all the values stemming from the Dream of the Rood, faith, hope, and charity, constitutes the code of the white man that sustained our people in all the Christian centuries preceding the 20th and 21st centuries. The democratic ethos, the American way, call it what you will, is no substitute for the code of the white man.

The Europeans' belief in fighting hero gods prepared them for their eventual faith in the one true Hero God:

The Nordic religion was not a religion of dread, or of magic formularies to propitiate hostile powers. Instead of covering its temples with frescoes of the tortures of the damned, it taught people not be afraid of death. Its ideal was the fellowship of the hero with the gods, not merely in feasting and victory, but in danger and defeat. For the gods, too, are in the hands of fate, and the Scandinavian vision of the twilight of the gods that was to end the world showed the heroes dying valiantly in the last hopeless fight against the forces of chaos—loyal and fearless to the last. It is an incomplete but not an ignoble religion. It contains those elements of character which it was the special mission of the Nordic peoples to add to modern civilization and to Christianity itself. —History of England

But something happened to the people who saw Christ as the Hero of heroes and the King of kings. That something was the rationalist dragon. When I was in Crete, I went through the cave that was supposed to have been the labyrinth that Theseus went through when he encountered the Minotaur. And since I believed that the myth was grounded in fact, I was thrilled, even though it was just in my imagination, to relive Theseus' heroic encounter with the Minotaur. What the great scholastics did — quite possibly they were well intentioned — was to eliminate that journey through the labyrinth of the human heart because they wanted to spare us the encounter with the Minotaur. But what if the Christian must encounter the Minotaur in order to get past the Minotaur to that other door, the door where buried love doth live? St. Thomas set barriers up, where reason and science were not supposed to go, lest those two entities should destroy faith. But what if reason and science will not stop, what if they will break the barrier behind which faith dwells and start to dissect faith until there is no faith left? What force on earth shall stop the dissection of God and man in the name of reason and science? The Christian hero will stop them, the man who, like St. Paul, has a heart connected to His divine heart. If we must eschew the labyrinth of the human heart because we might be killed by the Minotaur of evil passions, how will we have the good passion, how will we have the heart to defeat the liberals who are the great dissectors of man and God?

Without the hero who is not afraid of the labyrinth of the human heart, we have only mad-dog liberals intent on destroying all things white and Christian through the unholy trinity of reason, the sacred negro, and science, and moderate liberals, the white grazers, who want to keep reason and science as the first and third part of the modern trinity while keeping Christ and the sacred negro as co-redemptorists. That can never be; we are not men of reason or science, we are men possessed with an interior poetic vision which sees the God above reason and science. And such men do not do homage to the sacred negro, they see only one God, the heart of hearts, and the one True Hero God. When white men believe in their whiteness, in that charity of honor which connects them to the Savior, the liberals' day will end. Until that re-ensoulment of the white man occurs, Satan, through negro-worshipping liberalism, will rule what was once the green and pleasant land called Christian Europe. +

---

## **Furnace and Guillotine - June 26, 2021**

Now if ye be ready that at what time ye hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, psaltery, and dulcimer, and all kinds of musick, ye fall down and worship the image which I have made; well: but if ye worship not, ye shall be cast the same hour into the midst of a burning fiery furnace; and who is that God that shall deliver you out of my hands? Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, answered and said to the king, O Nebuchadnezzar, we are not careful to answer thee in this matter. If it be so, our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and he will deliver us out of thine hand, O king. But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up. Then was Nebuchadnezzar full of fury, and the form of his visage was changed against Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego: therefore he spake, and commanded that they should heat the furnace one seven times more than it was wont to be heated. —Daniel 3: 15-19

---

How must we feel, if the pride and flower of the English Nobility and Gentry, who might escape the pestilential clime, and the devouring sword, should, if taken prisoners, be delivered over as rebel subjects, to be condemned as rebels, as traitors, as the vilest of all criminals, by tribunals formed of Maroon negro slaves, covered over with the blood of their masters, who were made free and organized into judges, for their robberies and murders? -Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

---

One of my all-time favorite movies is *A Miracle on 34th Street* (1947), and my favorite television show is *Leave it to Beaver* (1957–1963). I love the movie and the show because they are both wonderful representations of the ‘Christian fumes’ culture of the middle half of the 20th century. They portray people who still behave according to that charity of honor practiced by our Lord when He walked this earth. But, alas, I realize when viewing the movie and the television show, that the fumes of Christianity are not going to sustain me in the war against the liberals. The Achilles heel in the ‘Christian fumes’ culture is quite evident in *Miracle on 34th Street* and in *Leave It to Beaver*. In the movie, Kris Kringle is only against amateur psychologists trying to practice psychotherapy, he is not against the scientific dissection of man and God so long as it is practiced by a licensed psychologist. And we hear much about the spirit of Christmas in the movie, but nothing about the Babe in the Manger, who is the reason for Christmas. Likewise, in *Leave it to Beaver*, Ward and June are wonderful parents – they have a Christian ethos – but they are moderate liberals, with a Norman Rockwell view of God as the benevolent Father of American democracy who stays in the background while Americans march ever onward to... I prefer the worlds of *Miracle on 34th Street* and *Leave It to Beaver* to our modern world, but the fumes’ culture, once it has been destroyed, cannot be resurrected any more than the burnt-out coals of a charcoal fire can be turned into a raging fire again. We must go back to the live coals that started the original fire.

There is so much for us to learn from the story of Prometheus, who stole fire from the gods of Greece and gave it to men, because he had compassion for them. We all know his punishment – he was tied to a rock where eagles pecked at his entrails. Is that story a presentiment, through a glass darkly, of our redemption through Jesus Christ? The true fire was not an actual fire, it was the fire in our hearts that was ignited by Christ’s bold act of divine charity. When the divine heart makes such a sacrifice, how can human hearts fail to respond? Our people did respond to Christ’s loving embrace, and the evidence of that response is contained in our history, not the history told by statisticians, but our history as told by the European bards. If you read that story with the inner eye of the heart, you will see something of “great constancy; but how so ever, strange and admirable.”

I feel myself to be part of a long line of people who were constant and unyielding in their love of Him who died on the cross. I don’t see how we can part from those people and still be connected to the God who comes to human hearts. Obviously, the modern Europeans think I am wrong. The churchmen tell me that I must not feel connected to a particular people who loved much, they claim that I need only be connected, through their minds, to an abstract God who does not impart to human hearts, He only imparts to an elect group of human minds. And the secular counterparts of the churchmen tell me that the culture of those dear old folks of long ago was racist, sexist, and homophobic and that I need to be, I must be – or they will destroy me – connected to the culture of the true god, the sacred negro. And that is what is at the heart of all the political and ecclesiastical wars of the latter part of the 20th century and the 21st century. Now that even the fumes of a Christian culture have died out, will there be any Europeans who will fight to go back, not to the ‘Christian fumes’ culture of *Miracle on 34th Street* and *Leave It to Beaver* but to the culture of the antique Europeans? It doesn’t seem likely. But then it didn’t seem likely back then, in ancient times, that the European people would see beauty on the cross and embrace that cross. But they did.

There was a man who lived up the street from me in the town where I grew up, who was an alcoholic. He was a sad case, because he left behind a wife and five kids when he died prematurely of liver cancer. When he was given less than a month to live, he kept planning vacations and other activities that he envisioned taking place many, many months after his date with death. Everything was business as usual in Mr. \_\_\_\_\_’s mind, not because, “I’ve got to keep going right to the end,” but because he didn’t even want to consider his death. The conservatives have taken the same stance vis-à-vis reality as my neighbor of long ago. They spent a year prior to the presidential election urging Americans to vote against the liberals’ agenda by voting for Donald Trump. And the majority of Americans did just that; they voted for Donald Trump. But the liberals, following in the footsteps of Joseph Stalin who said, “It doesn’t matter how many people vote, only who counts them,” nullified the election of Donald Trump. What should be the reaction of the conservatives who urged us to vote our troubles away? They should tell us we should give up on the democratic process and look to such exemplars as Alfred the Great and Nathan Bedford Forrest. But of course, the conservative sons of Martha did not tell us to rise and ride. Instead they told us to sit tight and vote Republican. “Fifty-one percent of the American people are against LGBTQTA, and sixty-one percent are against transgender bathrooms,” the conservatives intone. “So vote Republican and all will be well.” All will not be well if we vote Republican. The only Republicans that can be elected are Republicans that do not challenge the status quo of liberalism. If any Republican shows himself to have a genuine desire to return to the fumes of a Christian



culture – to combine Christianity with liberalism – they will be cast out of the political arena. The democratic way is the demon-cratic way; it must be discarded.

I only just learned – mea culpa, mea culpa, I did not do proper homage — that this past month has been LGBTQTA month. All of our major institutions have celebrated the beautiful wonder and magnificence of sexual perversion. In one of the two instances in the Old Testament in which God came down in person to condemn and warn mankind of their sins (the tower of Babylon was the other instance), He came down to earth to condemn the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah. What do we think of a civilization that institutionalizes and lauds the depravities of Sodom and Gomorrah? Do we think that we can dialog with the rulers of that civilization? Do we think that we can form a community with the citizens of that anti-civilization who support such practices? What are the conservatives trying to conserve? Why do they bid us seek redemption from the devil through the demon-cratic process? Is it because they do not believe there is a devil who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls? If that is the case, then we must conclude they also do not believe in the devil's antagonist who does not prowl about the world seeking our ruin but who asks us to let Him into our hearts so that He can impart to us that charity of honor, which is more than a match for the wickedness and snares of the devil.

Let us be clear about the linchpin of the liberals' theocracy. It is the sacred negro. He is their savior, to whom they look to uphold all the evils that stem from their black mystery religion. Legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, feminism, transgenderism, and the systematic destruction of the white race are made possible through and in the worship of the sacred negro. And it has now become so blatant that a white European has to be in a moral coma, he has to be a mesmerized devotee of the sacred negro not to see the soul-killing satanic essence of the liberals' faith. Witness the reverent call for silent devotion to the infamous George Floyd in the Senate, witness the call for prayers for Jacob Blake by the great 'conservative' Mike Pence at the Republican Convention, and watch the faithful, the white faithful, gather around the gigantic statue of George Floyd in Newark, New Jersey. Is such a religion worthy of our support? Can we bow to the sacred negro and still call ourselves Christians? Can we call ourselves human beings? No, we can't, because no pagan has ever stooped as low as the European who bends his knee to the sacred negro. It is all or nothing for the white European. Either he will be a European, a Dream of the Rood Christian, or he will be the lowest form of life, he will be a liberal.

To be a liberal or not to be a liberal is the great question. The whites who voted for Trump are not all of the same ilk, they voted for him for a variety of reasons, but they all were dissatisfied with some aspects of liberalism. That is not enough. You can't rearrange hell to make it more comfortable, more compatible for humanity, for the simple reason that there is no room for humanity in hell. Hell is the absence of humanity. The reason our churchmen have been of no use to us in the battle against the liberal leviathan is because they have supported a gnostic Christianity, which denies the possibility of an incarnational culture. If there is no such thing as a heart of flesh, if all that is good emanates from the mind of God and is then disseminated to the minds of a few great men, then all that is human, all that stems from the human heart, must be regarded as evil. But what about our people's loving response to Christ's incredible act of divine charity? Is that response an illusion that creatures such as I cling to in sinful defiance of the great men of intellect? There are so many evil manifestations of the liberals' absolute tyrannical control, with the tacit consent of the Christian clergy, of the European people. I recently read that a Christian organization, which professed to adhere to Biblical principles, was denied tax exempt status by the IRS. The reason for the denial was simple – the IRS said that since people who had Biblical principles voted Republican, anyone who professed such principles was not eligible for tax-exempt status. Everything seems to be going to hell so quickly now, but there has been only a façade of a real civilization for the past fifty years. Behind that façade was a satanic presence waiting to emerge, under the auspices of the sacred negro, and make life on this earth an extension of hell.

"Beauty is truth, truth beauty,—that is all ye know on earth, and all ye need to know," was Keats' assertion. But we still must decide what is beautiful. Keats saw beauty in a Grecian urn and the French Revolution. The modern Europeans see beauty in the sacred negro. And our churchmen see beauty in their syllogisms. I see something different. I see a civilization in which the penultimate of truth and beauty was the Savior who bled and died for us. That Christ is the grave where "buried love doth live" was the heartfelt faith of the antique Europeans. I do not see how we can forsake that faith for the liberals' mystery religion, which is grounded in their fervent faith in the sacred negro and the perversions that accompany that faith. What is truth, what is beauty? Christ is Truth, Christ is beauty. That was the faith of our people when they were a people. All the 'conservative' think tanks and 'conservative' political action groups cannot put European civilization back together again unless they embrace the Christ-centered culture of the condemned, 'racist' Europeans of long ago. That was our hope in ages past and our only hope in this age of decadence and desolation. My original question remains: When the Divine Heart makes such a sacrifice, how can human hearts fail to respond? +

---

**To Comfort All That Mourn - June 19, 2021**

The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn. Isaiah 61: 1-2

---

In the 1700s, Burke warned the European people that they were spending, in their passion for liberty, equality, and fraternity, the “unbought grace of life.” In 1950, Herbert Butterfield stated that the European people were living off of the fumes of Christianity. Now what is left to us? There is nothing left to us from that culture of God’s grace. What started out as a small cabal of demonic creatures called liberals became a large, militant army that purged the unbought grace of life from the hearts of the European people. Nothing good will follow in the European drama without the unbought grace of life that we have cast aside.

Liberalism, like Christianity, is a revelatory faith; it is not a philosophy. When you try to make it a philosophy, you kill it. Even though the liberals profess to be adherents of pure reason, reason is only the first person of their trinity. They must be true to their inner dynamic, to their mystical core, which is the sacred negro, if they want to maintain their faith. The advocates of pure reason without reference to the sacred negro within the boundaries of Liberalism are like unto the scholastics within the bowels of Christendom. They are harmful parasites because they seek to pluck out the mystery which sustains the faithful; in the case of liberalism – the mystery of the Man-God, the Sacred Negro, and in the case of Christianity, the scholastics seek to pluck out the mystery of the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

We must go back in time and see with the inner eye – with that eye we see the failure of Greek rationalism. It was the mystery religions that had captured the hearts of the people at the time that Christ entered human history. He did not defeat Mithras and Cybele because He offered mankind a rational alternative to the irrationality of the mystery religions. Oh no! He revealed, in His divine humanity, a mystery greater than Mithras and Cybele, He revealed to us God in Man and Man in God. Christ’s triumph was not a triumph of reason over unreason, it was a triumph of charity over the ecstasy of cruelty and unbridled sexual license.

Liberalism represents the return of the mystery religions, through the sacred negro. The liberals, in their mystery religion, worship cruelty and sexual license; they cannot be reasoned out of their religion. They have rejected the Light of the World; all things are lawful once that rejection becomes your religion. “No light reaches eyes which regard blindness as clear-sightedness; no remorse affects a soul which erects barbarism into patriotism, and which sanctions murder with duty.” (Taine)

In 2016, when the liberals were taken by surprise by Trump’s victory, they revealed, without the usual subterfuges, the essence of their faith. They openly, through Black Lives Matter and Antifa, and through the COVID-19 virus, sanctioned the murder of whites. And they were unopposed. They successfully painted Trump as a real mean man who was opposed to the light of liberalism, but he was no such man. Trump was and is a liberal who wants to reinstate a few Christian fumes into the body of liberalism. That might have been possible in 1960, but not now. Satan goes forward; he does not go back. The moderate liberals have latched onto an auxiliary doctrine of liberalism, which is demon-crazy, and made it the sum total of their religious faith. That is why they continue to blather on about voting the scoundrels out, even after the scoundrels have shown they do not believe in ‘one man, one vote’ democracy. They believe that a vote that does not serve mad-dog liberalism is not a vote. The mad-dog liberals adhere to the satanic essence of their faith; they will not be deterred by outward forms. They will use the Constitution and the demon-crazy process only so long as they serve their faith; when such outward forms no longer serve their faith, they will discard those forms. Obama’s election was allowed to take place because his election served liberalism. Trump’s election did not serve liberalism, so he was barred from being re-elected. That is always the way it shall be in Liberalism. The liberals’ revelatory faith is directly opposed to the Christian faith. The two entities cannot peacefully co-exist. When conservatives turn all their faces away from the January 6th protestors, when they bid us recite the litany, “We are not racist, we are non-violent,” they bid us accept the rule of the liberals and their satanic gods in perpetuity.

Do the moderate liberals, the News Max type of conservatives, really oppose liberalism? They differ with the liberals on many issues, but do they oppose the onward march toward Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth? No, they do not. Where your treasure lies, so lies your heart. If a gang of murdering barbarians attack my house, seeking to put my family to the sword, and my neighbors say, “We are against robbery and murder, but we will not fight against robbers and murderers. We will wait until an election comes up, and we will vote against robbers and murderers, and we will abide by the elections’ results, even though the robbers and murderers are the people counting the ballots,” then I know what my neighbors are – they are moderate liberals who “may be used for wrong, but are useless for right.”

It’s a truly disgusting spectacle to see ‘conservatives’ continuing to dialogue with their liberal brethren who are feasting on the blood of white people. By the rules of the conservatives’ blasphemous, demon-crazy religion – that what is right is determined by a majority vote – the liberals do not have a right to rule, but still the conservatives continue to conserve demon-crazy and condemn all those who oppose demon-crazy. Burke refused to recognize the regicide Jacobins as the legitimate rulers of France. We should also refuse to recognize the regicide liberals as the legitimate rulers of our nation.

Nation is a moral essence, not a geographical arrangement, or a denomination of the nomenclator. France, though out of her territorial possession, exists; because the sole possible claimant, I mean the proprietary, and the Government to which the proprietary adheres, exists and claims. God forbid, that if you were expelled from your house by ruffians and assassins, that I should call the material walls, doors and windows of \_\_\_\_\_, the ancient and honourable family of \_\_\_\_\_. Am I to transfer to the intruders, who not content to turn you out naked to the world, would rob you of your very name, all the esteem and respect I owe to you? The Regicides in France are not France. France is out of her bounds, but the kingdom is the same...

This example we shall give, if, instead of adhering to our fellows in a cause which is an honour to us all, we abandon the lawful Government and lawful corporate body of France, to hunt for a shameful and ruinous fraternity with this odious usurpation that disgraces civilized society and the human race. –*Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Even if Biden had won the majority of votes in a fair election as Obama did, the election would have been an invalid election. All American elections are invalid for the same reason that there are no valid elections in France or in any of the European countries. They are invalid because democracy is demon-cracy; it is from hell. The liberals hold that any government that is not a demon-cracy is not a legitimate government, but the exact opposite is the case. No government that is not grounded in pietas, which is part of the “unbought grace of life,” is a valid government. All the nations of Europe were once grounded in pietas, and our own anti-nation once had a small European remnant that took their stand against the liberal leviathan in the name of pietas—the love of their own in and through the Savior.

I suppose now that typewriters have gone the way of the horse and buggy, the phrase, “he didn’t adjust the typewriter,” has gone out of our vernacular language. But I still use the term to describe my failure to adjust to the changing times. I have failed to adjust the typewriter during the transfer from the ‘fumes of Christianity’ culture in which I grew up to the ‘death of the fumes of Christianity’ culture and the institutionalization of Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. In the ‘fumes’ culture of the 1950s and 1960s, liberals were not as blatant about their intent to destroy every last remnant of white Christian Europe. But as the fumes died out, the liberals dispensed with their subterfuges because they no longer feared any opposition to liberalism. All resistance to liberalism has ceased; that was made abundantly clear when the conservatives accepted the verdict of the fraudulent election. It’s difficult to comprehend, to adjust the typewriter, but that is the current state of the European people: they have been desouled by the ‘image of the beast in man’ culture of liberalism.

The greatest danger to the European people is not the mad-dog liberals, it is the moderate liberals in church and state. And by greatest danger, I do not mean that the moderate liberals – the conservatives – are as morally reprehensible as the mad-dog liberals. Far from it, the moderate liberals are not, as the mad-dog liberals are, outside the ken of humanity, they have many humane and noble instincts. But that is why they are so dangerous. They mix some Christian fumes into their liberalism, and we are tempted, because we are lonely, to settle for their moderate liberalism. But the Dream of the Rood Christians ultimately must recoil in horror from the moderate liberals just as we would recoil in horror from a reptile lover who tells us we can sleep with venomous, poisonous snakes without being bitten. The dialogues with liberals, the great talk shows, are predicated on the assumption that we can all be snake charmers, we can mesmerize deadly cobras with our incredible, superior reason. Or, to put it in Shakespearean terms, “You bid me seek redemption from the devil.”

Lincoln said it all when he made his Gettysburg address. He joined America with regicide, Jacobin France when he spoke of a nation, “conceived in liberty” (liberty from God) and, “dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal” (but some, the sacred negroes, are more equal than others, because such men are gods who point us to the ‘image of the beast in man’ culture of the archangel Satan). Our forefathers cannot be the men Lincoln references – the Jeffersons, the Franklins, and the Paines. Our forefathers are the men with the Dream of the Rood in their hearts; they are the antique Europeans, and they are the apostles and St. Paul, who bid us adhere to His word and keep His image, not the image of the beast in man, before our eyes.

The great enemies of Christian Europe were and are the liberals, but the liberals’ allies in the war against the ‘image of God in man’ culture takes us, at first, by surprise. The ‘Christian’ clergy have always been the enemies of the Europeans’ Dream of the Rood. Why? They have stood and still stand in opposition to Christ’s Europe because they do not believe the light of Christ’s love penetrated to the core of European culture. They believe, with St. Augustine, that there is the city of God, which consists of the structure called the Church and the parchments put out by Church officials, and there is the city of man, which is the city of sin and desolation. But doesn’t such a theology assume that God’s grace is an illusion? If Christ’s love cannot turn human hearts to Him, what are we doing here on earth? Are we only supposed to know God through the computer printouts of the clergymen? Small wonder that the liberals have triumphed over the Christian Europeans. The liberals have a savior while the European people have... What do they have? They want to cling to a few Christian fumes while maintaining a place in Liberaldom. But the liberals’ gods are jealous gods. They do not want to share their place in the liberals’ trinity with Jesus Christ. There cannot be, there must not be, two redeemers. The liberals have overmanned the conservatives because the conservatives want to serve two masters. It can’t be done. It is Christ or the negro. The liberals have taken their stand while the conservatives have taken no stand, and by taking no stand they have made their choice – they serve the sacred negro, and through the sacred negro they serve Satan. The minstrel in the old hymn asks

Mary if she knows that, “When you kiss your little Baby, you kissed the face of God?” We need to ask the men with the great minds in the ranks of the clergy and the conservative pundits, “Do you know that when you reject His Europe, the people with the hearts of flesh, you reject Christ?”

A few years after I got out of college, I stopped at the house of a professor I had become friends with during my college years. During the course of our, “what have you been doing over the last few years” conversation, I mentioned that I had gone over to the ranks of the men and women he considered his enemies – the Christian Europeans. I knew that such news would not delight him, but I was very surprised at his vehemence. He eventually asked me to leave his house. Before I left, there was an exchange between the militant atheist, my former professor, and the Christian European, myself, that I shall never forget. He wanted to turn the existence of God into a philosophical debate. He brought up all the false defenses of Aslan he had heard during the course of his career, the Thomistic apologetics and other such ‘Christian’ explanations of the ways of God. I agreed with all his criticisms. And my agreement only increased his hatred. How could I agree with his refutation of Christian apologetics and still adhere to the Christian faith? I took my stand with Alyosha Karamazov and pointed to the mysterious stranger, the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

Rational, democratic man has rejected the mystery of the God-Man who promised us a different liberty, a liberty diametrically opposed to liberalism:

And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. –Luke 4: 16-19

Liberalism in all of its many guises, clerical, moderate, and mad-dog, must be rejected because it is an ideology forged by Satan to destroy Christ’s people. The unbought grace of Christ’s Europe has been spent. The fumes of Christianity have disappeared — never to return? The head says never again, but the heart seeks His Europe and only His Europe. It is the mystery of Christ’s God-Manhood that shall sustain us in our battle with the liberal leviathan. In that mystery, charity and manhood are united. What Burke called the charity of honor is what sets the European culture on a different level from all the pagan cultures and our modern satanic culture. Achilles dragged the body of Hector three times around the walls of Troy after he had triumphed over him in battle. Achilles had the honor of a pagan, but he lacked charity. Prince Hal honors his foe, the noble Hotspur, after he has defeated him in battle because he has that charity of honor. And the modern liberals? They do not have the pagan’s honor or the Christian European’s charity. They are treacherous, immoral monsters of dire cruelty and evil. It is difficult to stay united to the dead, nay, it is an impossibility if we do not love much. The charity that never faileth, the charity that the God-Man imparts to us will keep us bound to our honored dead and to the Savior who rose again on the third day. Never, never shall we forsake the Europeans’ Dream of the Rood, because that Dream is Truth, it is the vision of the Divine Charity, of the God-Man, who draws us to Him in defiance of the hell of liberalism.+

---

## **Even to the Edge of Doom - June 12, 2021**

To My Readers —

I was unable to post on June 5th because of internet problems beyond my control. I do not believe that computers are intrinsically evil; if I did I would never use them. But on the whole I do not think the computer age has been a blessing. The great mistake made by the computer enthusiasts in the ranks of the conservatives, men such as George Gilder, was the mistake of assuming that technical advances were good in and of themselves, independent of the human beings using the technologies. As the European people regressed morally, they became a post-Christian people with advanced technology. The result has been a tyranny unequalled in the less technological ages. The internet tech giants are able to exercise a leftist tyranny over the European people that makes Stalin and Hitler look like benevolent dictators.

I will not cease my attack, via the pen, against the liberal leviathan until God calls me home. So if you don’t see a post on a given Saturday, it means I have shuffled off this mortal coil or I am, once again, having internet problems.

As regards this week’s post – I once, in my student days, shared a train seat with an Englishwoman in her mid-forties who was doing a one-year stint in the United States for an English company she represented. In the course of a long conversation, mainly about her native land, she confided to me that in all her travels throughout Europe and the United States, the American people were the only people who got upset if you told them you didn’t want to be a citizen of their country. She didn’t understand the American exceptionalist mentality, which was anti-pietas. I told her there once had been a segment of Americans in the old South who loved their nation simply because it was “their own, their native land,” but on the whole, she was right: Our people loved a utopian ideal, not a homeland. In spite of all that we have become, our ‘conservatives’ still refuse to reject American exceptionalism. They are still American Undines. When will ensoulment take place? When we see His Europe and say, “This is my own, my native land.”

~~~~~  
You do me wrong to take me out o' the grave.  
Thou art a soul in bliss; but I am bound  
Upon a wheel of fire, that mine own tears  
Do scald like molten lead.

—King Lear

---

The conservatives have latched onto new evidence, provided by scientists, that tells us the COVID-19 virus was and is a man-made virus that the Chinese communists cooked up in their laboratories in Wuhan in order to kill as many Americans as possible. My reaction to that report is the same as Horatio's reaction to Hamlet when Hamlet tells him what his father, come back from the grave, has told him:

Ham. There's ne-er a villain dwelling in all Denmark—  
But he's an arrant knave.

Hor. There needs no ghost, my lord, come from the grave  
To tell us this.

I need no scientists to tell me that the Chinese communists are evil.

If you believe that communism is an evil ideology, if you believe the historical record of nations who hold to that ideology, you should not need scientific evidence to convince you that the Chinese communists were and are involved in germ warfare. All things are lawful to those who believe there is no God, so why should we doubt for one moment that the Chinese communists are evil men with evil intentions? We will doubt that obvious piece of history if we are religious atheists, if we are liberals who believe in the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science.

If we turn to the liberals' Holy Ghost, which is science, to refute the liberals' narrative of the good, the pure, and the beneficent Chinese communists, we will fail to refute the liberals. We will fail, because there is no truth in science — she is a whore who will serve whomever pays her. The leftist liberals can come up with their own scientists to refute the moderate liberals' scientists. Pilate asked Christ, "What is truth?" and then consented to the crucifixion of The Truth. The liberals are the embodiment of the Jews who sought to crucify The Truth, and the moderate conservatives are the embodiment of Pontius Pilate who consented to that crucifixion because he needed empirical, scientific evidence before he could believe in The Truth enough to oppose the very real 'this world only' power of the Sanhedrin. But what is our faith if it can be seen with the empirical eye? It is not faith, it is a reed for every new scientific wind that blows.

The scholastic era in the Church marked a great shift in the interior eye of the European Everyman. Prior to the scholastic era, the high Middle Ages, the Dream of the Rood was the vision of the European people. Christ was above the natural world, He was our Savior and He was our kith and kin.

Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.

There He tasted death; yet God rose up again with His mighty power to help men. Then He ascended to heaven; hither again will the Lord Himself make His way to this world to seek mankind on the day of judgment, Almighty God and His angels with Him, when He who has power of judgment will judge each one according as he merits in this fleeting life. No one can be without fear there at the word the Lord says: He will ask before the multitude where the man is who for God's sake would taste bitter death, as He aforetime did on the cross; but then they will be afraid, and think little of what they begin to say to Christ. No one need be terrified there who erstwhile bears in his breast the best of signs, but each soul which desires to dwell with the Lord must through the cross seek the kingdom which is far from earth.

—*The Dream of the Rood*

When the inner eye ceases to behold the vision of the Dream of the Rood, but instead is overcome by the outer eye which looks upon nature and nature's god, the Holy Ghost is rendered obsolete, He becomes nothing. It did not happen overnight, the worship of science as the true comforter, but it did come about. The two democratic revolutions, the American Revolution and the French Revolution, codified that reordering of the Europeans' spiritual vision. When God is scientized, when He is studied with the empirical eye, He becomes an impersonal God, a remote God that people turn to as they turn to a philosophical construct or a self-help book. But He is no longer the God whom St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus. And that God is the only God who can sustain us in this world and give us eternal life in the next world.

Communism is a derivative of American and French Jacobinism, and they are derivatives of the scientizing of God. When God is scientized, man becomes scientized, because man is created in the image of God; thus, a false view of God gives us a false view of man. And the men of science, acting on the false view of God, can proceed to analyze, categorize, and dissect “poor, bare unaccommodated man” out of existence. The conservatives tell us that we should resist communism. Why should we resist communism? The answer always is: it is a bad economic system and it is opposed to liberty. But democratic capitalism is a bad economic system, and it is opposed to liberty as well. Let me digress. My great-grandfather on the Welsh side of my family came over to this country when he was a baby. Obviously, he didn’t have any say in the matter, he came over to the land of liberty with his parents. At eight years of age, he became a breaker boy in the mines, and he worked six fourteen-hour days a week from age eight until his death at age sixty. Now, in those years between eighteen and sixty, he married, fathered children, and had Sundays off, so his life was not unmitigated misery. But if we are looking at the entity called capitalism, which is an offspring of the democratic way that American conservatives are always touting, is the misery index of Russian communism and of American capitalism that different? I would prefer the life of a Russian peasant under communism to the life of a coal miner, but I would prefer the life of a factory worker in the U.S., as miserable as that might be, to life under communism. And yes, American capitalism was humanized, the work hours were shortened for the laboring classes, and a middle class came into being. But still, we can’t leave the issue of the scientizing of man. There is a pernicious evil behind American democracy; it is a system of government and economics that is opposed to the European people’s Dream of the Rood.

If we are picking the greater evil, it seems that the iron fist of communism, which is the Jacobinism of Robespierre, is worse than the seductive, veiled evil of American demon-crazy, which is the Jacobinism of the French Directory after the fall of Robespierre, but both systems are evil manifestations of a material-based view of a man and God, which makes science the new Holy Ghost. Are we permitted to choose the lesser of two evils? No, we must cleave to the Dream of the Rood and forsake communism and demon-crazy.

In our country, we can see the fatal consequences of choosing the seemingly lesser of two evils. The ‘lesser’ of two evils can shift ground, the seductive veil can be removed to reveal an iron fist. Whenever the liberal demon-crats feel that their empire is being challenged, they become hysterical, like an evil woman who finds that her feminine charms no longer charm, and they resort to the iron fist. This happened in America in 1860 through 1877, and it happened again in 2016 through 2020. And the white grazers always allow the leftist demon-crats to go back to the seduction, even though the demon-crats have shown them the evil behind the demon-cratic façade. I recall seeing an old gangster movie (there is a great deal of practical wisdom in the B-Westerns and the gangster B-movies) in which a wounded gangster sought refuge in a hideout for gangsters run by a gigantic female gangster. The Amazon Ma Parker started to strangle the wounded gangster, but when she found out that he did not have the money from his robbery on his person, she stopped strangling him and tried to behave like Florence Nightingale. Of course the wounded gangster did not believe in the sudden transformation of the Amazonian gangster. He waited for the right moment and then eliminated her. That was the wise and prudent thing to do, but the gangster had a great advantage: he did not have a mystical faith in the goodness of all Ma Parkers who ran a refuge for gangsters. “Yet though you slay me, still I shall trust in thee,” is the faith of the white, moderate liberals as regards the mad-dog liberals.

When the Southern people were sufficiently ‘reconstructed’ and allowed back into the Union, upon what terms were they allowed to come back into the Union? They were allowed to come back into the Union under the original demand of the Northern Jacobins – “You must accept the enfranchisement of the negro.” And of course what was implicit in that enfranchisement of the negro was the worship of the negro as the second person of the new Trinity. The mini-rebellion of 2016 was not a full-blown counterrevolution, as was the case in 1860; it was a small protest against the liberals’ blatant leftism, but it was put down with fire and sword because the liberals, having obtained absolute power, were not going to allow even a slight digression from ‘the truth and the way,’ which is their kingdom of hell on earth.

It is a tragic spectacle when the conservatives blather on about the demon-cratic way and our great star-spangled-banner-American heritage while the liberals enjoy the fruits of an uncontested, fraudulent election victory and openly canonize black criminals while crucifying all the white policemen who try to prevent black savagery. But that shall always be the American way so long as the American way is opposed to the European people’s ancient customs and manners. Those customs and manners were grounded in Christ’s love for his people and their response to His love.

There was, until the 20th century, great resistance to the new world order which bid us turn to the new Holy Ghost of science instead of the Holy Ghost of Christianity. The lay of the European minstrels (see Nineteenth Century Way to God and The Sacred Heritage) told us of another world of charity, honor, and love that could only be abandoned at the cost of our souls. We will always believe a lie if we think that His charity of honor, the charity that never faileth, can be relegated to the historical archives, while ‘real’ history, the history of the beloved sacred negroes and the onward march of leftist feminists, sexual perverts, and mass murderers (abortionists), is applauded and lauded in our public ceremonies as part of the fabric of our nation.

We cannot resist the onward leftist march of the mad-dog liberals by appealing to our leftist American heritage. That heritage is not a heritage, it is a base betrayal of our sacred heritage, our Christian European heritage. Why are the men and women arrested on January 6th for trying to stop a leftist military coup being tortured in prison without a conservative outcry? Why was Derek Chauvin crucified without a conservative outcry? Why do the conservatives insist that we must not be racist and we must be non-violent? The answer to all those questions is that the conservatives are not conservative, they are the members of the Jacobin Directory who signed on to the murder of Louis XVI but finally opposed Robespierre when he came after them.

When Thomas Molnar reviewed Russell Kirk's book *The Conservative Mind*, he said that Kirk had proved there were some conservatives in America, but he had failed to prove that they ever had any influence. When has our government ever taken the side of Christian Europe against the Jacobins? During the French Revolution we supported the Jacobins. In the Civil War our Jacobin government destroyed the Christian South. In World War I we supported the side of the anarchists who struck at the last Christian empire in Europe. And in World War II, we chose to support the Russian communists, when a Christian nation would have fought Nazism and communism. Didn't we finally get it right in Korea and Vietnam? No, we didn't, because we didn't fight communism in the name of Christ, we fought it in the name of demon-cratic capitalism. It is not possible for a man of honor to cling to the anti-Christian, anti-European star-spangled myth of American demon-crazy. That is why the liberals have worked so hard to destroy the white man's code of honor. If you demonize honor, chivalry, and charity, all the virtues stemming from the white Christians' code, you will place the Europeans under the mantle of science, and science has no honor. In the trinity of the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science, we have seen Satan placed on the throne of Europe. He cannot be humanized, he can only be dethroned. And a dethroning will only take place when the European people return to their first love, the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

My own struggles to come to terms with the liberals' new Holy Ghost mirror Dostoyevsky's experience. The forces of modernity seemed to be correct: An intelligent man, a man of reason and science, could not believe that Christ was the Son of the Living God. But still, there was that "radiant personality of Christ." My dream, my inner eye, saw Christ and only Christ standing between me and all the "heart-ache and the thousand natural shocks that flesh is heir to." Beyond cold reason, beyond the sacred negro, and beyond science, is the God-Man, who has left us a comforter infinitely greater than science. Do not our hearts burn within us for something more than the demonic forces of Jacobinism-communism and demon-crazy? I cannot believe that Satan can completely eradicate, through the new trinity, our love for the God-Man. "If this be error," if Satan can kill all longing for the God-Man in the hearts of the European people, still, I shall hold onto my Dream of the Rood, "even to the edge of doom."

Ever since the Garden of Eden, Satan has prowled about the world, seeking the ruin of souls. Through ideology, by making God and then man an object of the natural world to be studied and dissected, Satan has achieved his greatest success. I once, while teaching Shakespeare's *Romeo and Juliet*, which is not even my favorite of Shakespeare's plays, became so overcome with the charity of heart that could see all our faults and still love us with an overwhelming love, that I wept uncontrollably in front of a stunned group of adolescents. Shakespeare's unflinching faith that our humanity was linked to a charity that surpasses pure reason, is the faith that brings us to the divine humanity of our Lord and Savior. When we are connected to the culture of His divine humanity, the condemned, racist culture of old Europe, we feel something stir within us that makes us recoil from modernity and cling to that vision we see with the interior eye of the heart. Something momentous is occurring in the European nations. Satan is consolidating his power, and it seems there is nothing left in the European people's souls that can help them resist Satan. We are bound upon a wheel of fire that our own "tears do scald like molten lead." Only the Dream of the Rood, our European vision, can put out that fire and dry our tears. +

---

### **Systemic Satanism - May 29, 2021**

While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's house certain which said, Thy daughter is dead: why troublest thou the Master any further? As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe. And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James. And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly. And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, arise. And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment. — Mark 5: 35-42

---

There has always been and always shall be a segment of religious tough-guys in both the Protestant and Roman Catholic churches, who try to make themselves more religious than thee and me by emphasizing mankind's disgusting, creeping, crawling sinful nature in contrast to the magnificence of God's nature, which is in direct contrast to our disgusting, creeping, crawling, sinful nature. But there is a problem with the Puritanical-Jansenist emphasis on God's magnificence

and man's sinfulness: Why, if man is irredeemably evil, did God send His only begotten Son to redeem us from sin and death? How can irredeemably disgusting, creeping, crawling, sinful creatures inherit eternal life? No, we must adhere to what the Bible tells us, that we are created in the image of God, and we must adhere to what the reality of life tells us:

The web of our life is of a mingled yarn, good and ill together: our virtues would be proud, if our faults whipp'd them not; and our crimes would despair, if they were not cheris'd by our virtues. –Shakespeare, *All's Well That Ends Well*

In Hawthorne's masterpiece *The Scarlet Letter* he depicts a woman who has committed adultery, Hester Prynne; the Reverend Dimmesdale, who is her partner in sin; and Roger Chillingworth, who is the wronged husband. Hawthorne does not, as the moderns would do, try to claim that Dimmesdale and Prynne are not sinners, but in the course of the novel, he shows us how a man, Roger Chillingworth, who sees himself as without sin and who continually dwells on the sins of others, can become like unto the Pharisees and become the enemy of the God of mercy and charity and place himself in the hands of the devil. In his master work, *The Woman of the Pharisees*, Francois Mauriac depicts a woman who zealously seeks out, in the name of her Jansenist God, the sins of others while refusing to look at the mingled yarn of her own life. Mauriac observes: "Some people choose God, but God does not choose them."

I bring up what might seem like an antiquated religious dispute because the Puritan-Jansenist vision of God is very much with us today in modern liberalism. I remember many years ago hearing an Elvis impersonator describe himself as "more like Elvis than Elvis." I thought that was quite an amusing advertisement, but the liberals who are more puritanical than the Puritans and more Jansenist than the Jansenists are not amusing. They are not amusing because they are deadly serious about their religion, and they have imposed their fanatical religion on the people of Europe.

The new religion of the modern Puritanical-Jansenist liberals is as follows: There is an original sin – it is whiteness. Are all whites damned? Yes and no? Most whites are damned; there is nothing they can do to avoid eternal damnation. But a few whites can be saved, the illuminated whites who have achieved, through the power of their illuminated minds, blackness. That seems like a contradiction – how can whiteness be unredeemable on the one hand, and yet liberals can, on the other hand, be redeemed? "It's a mystery," the liberals assert, "You, the unredeemed, cannot understand such things." During the COVID-19 pandemic, we saw the liberals' mystery religion in practice. The illuminated whites, such as Gretchen Whitmer of Michigan, went to all sorts of outings and parties, at which they were unmasked as they frolicked and played on the fields of Liberaldom. But the unredeemed had to wear masks, and they were not permitted to frolic and play in the fields of Liberaldom. So it shall always be with the liberals. They do not see our lives here on earth as a mingled yarn with good and evil running through every human heart, they see an unmingled yarn with evil in whiteness and all good in the black race and in the liberal race (they believe they are a new Gnostic race), which has gone beyond the evil of whiteness to the pure good of blackness.

The failure of professed Christians in the ranks of the moderate liberals to attack and repudiate the liberals' new-old religion is the reason that Biden and company rule America. Trump, like Louis XVI, did not believe in the evil of the Jacobin liberals. Louis XVI believed that if the Jacobins' issues with the French monarchy were addressed they would cease their attacks on the monarchy. But the Jacobins did not want to negotiate with the King, they wanted to destroy him because he represented Christian Europe, which they hated with their whole heart, mind, and soul. Trump tried to dialogue with the modern Jacobins; he tried to show that he was like unto them, in that he too loved the sacred negro. But there was nothing Trump could do to appease the liberals, he was a leftward-leaning, moderate liberal trying to survive in a world that had moved on to extreme leftism. Trump stood up to the Chinese by defunding the WHO and he kept the border under control by threatening to withhold financial aid to Mexico if they didn't stop the illegal aliens on their side. Countless white American lives were saved by his actions. But all his efforts were then thrown away when he failed, like Louis XVI, to do what was necessary to maintain his regime. When Black Lives Matter attacked, Trump surrendered his government to the liberals. Why? He capitulated because he believes in the sacred negro. You cannot attack negroes who march against "white privilege," because they are the saviors in the new trinity of the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science.

The moderate liberals are like unto the Jacobins who opposed Robespierre's Puritanical-Jansenist Jacobinism. The moderate liberals want to broaden the gate and allow more whites into the circle of the illuminati. Hence they protest against the Black Lives Matter and liberal charge of systemic racism. "We are not systemically racist," the moderate liberals cry. But still salvation comes only to an elite, even under the canopy of the moderate liberals, because they damn all the Europeans of the past, the real systemic racists. What would happen if white people actually banded together and proclaimed, "Yes, we are racist, we love our own and hate those people who attack our people and our culture"? Of course that won't happen so long as the Europeans believe that the negro is sacred and Christ be not risen.

Let us see how the conservatives' moderate negro worship plays out in the political arena. They go to our Texas border and do an expose, interviewing a few Republican congressmen in order to show us, "the real people," who are the true kings, through the ballot box of the American experiment in demon-crazy, what is happening under the new 'come one, come all'



policy of the Biden administration. After reporting on the horrific carnage, they conclude their report with the statement, "Biden better do something." Why should Biden do something? Isn't the destruction of the white race the desired end of Biden's religion? And haven't the conservatives signed on to the consequences of that religion by refusing to challenge the religion of the sacred negro?

It is the same with the issue of the police. The conservatives tell us that no one wants to be a policeman anymore because they will be thrown into jail if they use violence against the sacred negroes. For some reason, they can't find enough men who want to stand around while Antifa and BLM scum shoot at them. The conservatives claim they are pro-police, and they deplore the fact that we will now have to scrap the bottom of the barrel in order to recruit police. But how can you call for prayers for Jacob Blake (as Pence did) and acquiesce to the imprisonment of Derek Chauvin and still claim to be pro-police? The conservatives love the theory of police, but they are unwilling to defend actual policemen who do what has to be done if this country is ever going to be a nation: aggressively arrest and kill, if necessary, the black savages who roam about the country seeking the blood of whites, and who, when they are unable to find white blood, turn on each other. The beasts and cannibals amongst us are not gods, they are not noble savages; they are ignoble, savage predators whom we worship at our physical and spiritual peril. And the latter peril is the greater peril. What good will it be if we obtain a portion of the liberals' material wealth by worshipping the sacred negro if by doing so we lose our soul?

Once systemic Satanism takes root in a nation, every public official who goes against that systemic Satanism will be crucified as Christ was crucified. It matters not to Satan if the public official wants only a slight digression away from Satan's rule, that public official will be crucified. That is what was and is behind the crucifixion of Derek Chauvin. He acted against the sacred negro, who is the lodestar of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth, so he had to be crucified. Trump and his followers tried to escape crucifixion by selling out 'racist' whites in the present, such as Derek Chauvin, and by selling out whites from the past, such as Nathan Bedford Forrest and Enoch Powell (see his "River of Blood" speech). There is systemic racism in America and the nations of Europe; it comes from Satan, who is a systemic racist who hates the white race because he hates the God-Man, Jesus Christ, and he lives in fear that the European people will step away from their Babylon captivity and become, once again, the Christ-bearing race.

The great purveyor of Satan's systemic racism are the liberals, both mad-dog and moderate, and the blacks. They fight and quarrel amongst themselves, but they are united in their hatred of white 'racists.' And who is a white racist? A white racist is whomever loves his people in and through Jesus Christ. The conservative News Maxers and Breitbarters can drone on from now till doomsday, but they will not deter the mad-dog liberals from implementing Satan's final solution for the problem of racism, which is the extermination of the white race, unless they repudiate their systemic Satanism, their desire to seek redemption from the devil through the worship of the sacred negro. The greatest systemic racist of them all is the archangel Satan; he hates the white race.

We have repeated, in our new nation conceived in Satanism and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created in the image of the beast, the sins of the Pharisees. Whatever is Christian, whatever is noble and good, whatever stems from His divine charity, is scorned. When Trump tried to give us hope that the COVID-19 illness did not have to be a death sentence by interviewing people who had survived the illness by taking the drug hydroxychloroquine, he asked the press surrounding him if he was doing wrong. The press, like the Pharisees, "held their peace."

And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had a withered hand. And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him. And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth. And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace. And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other. And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him. -Mark 3: 1-6

The scorn of the Pharisees for Christ's charity is the mark of the liberals. What is behind their scorn and their mockery? It is Satan. Why should the people that loved the God-Man who raised Jairus's daughter and who gives us, through His crucifixion and resurrection, the promise of eternal life, be mocked and scorned as sinful, crawling, wretched racists? Why should the new Puritan-Jansensists of Liberalism be permitted to rule in a kingdom of systemic Satanism? We must hurl the same defiance at Satan's liberal minions that Satan hurled at the Lord God - "We shall not serve."

Is George Floyd our God? If he is not our God, we cannot traffic with the devil through his liberal minions. The first step back, the most important step back, will take place within that kingdom of the human heart. If we reject demon-crazy and the worship of the sacred negro, we will find that other world - the world of light, of love, and of eternal life. If we keep denouncing all that was good and honorable in old Europe and lauding all that is ignoble and base in this world, His kingdom come will become a fantastical fable in the minds of the moderate liberals and it will become an evil relic of our racist past in the minds of the mad-dog liberals. But what if there is still something in our hearts that rejects the systemic Satanism of the liberals? If we cling to Him in and through our people, we will not be overcome by the devil and his liberal

minions. In chapter three of St. Mark's Gospel, the scribes and Pharisees accuse Christ of casting out devils because He is a devil: "He hath Beel-ze-bub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils." Christ points to His acts of charity and asks, "How can Satan cast out Satan?" And then He warns us that:

Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme: But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation. –Mark 3: 28-29

The Holy Ghost is the Comforter who tells us, in the kingdom of the heart, that we are something more than creeping, crawling, sinful creatures; we are created in His image and we can be redeemed if we reject the systemic Satanism of Liberalism and return to Christ's Europe. +

---

## **Mystic Europe - May 22, 2021**

But now all is to be changed. All the pleasing illusions, which made power gentle and obedience liberal, which harmonized the different shades of life, and which, by a bland assimilation, incorporated into politics the sentiments which beautify and soften private society, are to be dissolved by this new conquering empire of light and reason. All the decent drapery of life is to be rudely torn off. All the superadded ideas, furnished from the wardrobe of a moral imagination, which the heart owns, and the understanding ratifies, as necessary to cover the defects of our naked, shivering nature, and to raise it to dignity in our own estimation, are to be exploded as a ridiculous, absurd, and antiquated fashion. –Burke, *Reflections on the Revolution in France*

---

Right from the beginning of the French Revolution, Burke saw with astounding clarity and vision what the French Revolution was and what its consequences would be. It seems, as we look back on his prophetic witness to the truth, that Burke was vouchsafed a vision of the living God acting in the history of His people and that our Lord called upon him to bear witness, before the European people, of that vision. Edmund Burke did not, like Jonah, try to avoid his prophetic mission. He bore witness to the European Ninevites. Tragically, the European people, unlike the Ninevites, did not heed the warnings of the prophet, and their subsequent history has been a history of a people who are, "lost, lost, lost."

What was Burke's vision? He saw a Europe which was grounded in the Dream of the Rood:

The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines. The whole of the polity and economy of every country in Europe has been derived from the same sources. –Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Of course Roman Catholic and Protestant scholastics who made and still make the ceremonies and subordinate doctrines of Christianity into the whole of Christianity would dispute Burke's assertion that the nations of Europe prior to the French Revolution had the same Christian faith. But the truth will out; it is in the blood. The history of our people, the history of their elective affections, tell us that Burke, not the scholastics, is right. There was a Narnia, there was a race of people who took the Christ story into their hearts and built their nations upon that rock: The European people became the Christ-bearing race.

The ways of God are not the ways of men. When the Israelites left the path of righteousness, God did not send a multitude of experts to show the people the way back to the true path. Instead he sent one prophet – Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Isaiah, etc. And finally He sent the fulfillment of the prophecies, His only begotten Son. All prophetic witness after the fulfillment of the prophecies must be a prophetic witness that calls the people of God, the Europeans, back to the ways of righteousness, to the truth of God in Man and Man in God. Burke saw with blinding sight that Jacobinism was not a regime change, it was the devil's ultimate gambit against the living God:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him "with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength." He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. –*Regicide Peace*

"Yes, yes," the bulk of the European intelligentsia said after Robespierre's bloodletting became too blatant to ignore, "Burke was right about Robespierre, but he goes too far when he equates democracy and Jacobinism. That borders on obsession, and obsession is wrong." But all the prophets were obsessed with their people's apostasy from the living God. And that is what the acceptance of demon-crazy entails, the acceptance of a system of government established by the mind of Satan to ensure that the liberals' 'image of the beast in man' culture replaces the 'image of God in man' culture of the antique Europeans.

When the European people disengaged from the customs and manners of old Europe, they disengaged from the living God. Once virtue consists of a man's adherence to the democratic process, he can abandon outmoded virtues, such as honor and chivalry, which were virtues stemming from Christian Europe. In fact, the democratic man can become a coward without honor and still hold his head high in the new democracy in which honor and chivalry are relics of undemocratic Europe. Burke's defense of Marie Antoinette and his condemnation of the new democratic/Jacobin ethos that made a virtue of her torture and execution still speaks to us today. The modern demon-crats are one with the Jacobins, and the entire unilluminated white race is being prepared for the guillotine:

It is now sixteen or seventeen years since I saw the queen of France, then the dauphiness, at Versailles; and surely never lighted on this orb, which she hardly seemed to touch, a more delightful vision. I saw her just above the horizon, decorating and cheering the elevated sphere she just began to move in,—glittering like the morning-star, full of life, and splendor, and joy. Oh! what a revolution! And what a heart must I have to contemplate without emotion that elevation and that fall! Little did I dream when she added titles of veneration to those of enthusiastic, distant, respectful love, that she should ever be obliged to carry the sharp antidote against disgrace concealed in that bosom; little did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour, and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honor, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness. —*Reflections*

We cannot live in this democratic hell, we cannot live in this land without charity, without honor, and without chivalry. The shadow men, the conservatives who want to conserve a milder Jacobinism, do not want a return to His Europe. I recently saw a News Max conservative condemning two Biden recruitment ads, one with a lesbian telling us to join the Army, another with a homosexual male telling us to join the Army. Certainly the ads were insults against everything decent and honorable, but so was the News Max response. With the moderator were two female commentators who insisted that the Army should be color-blind, sex-blind, and value-neutral. That was and is the American way, the two women intoned. That may be the way of the shadow conservatives, but it is not the way of a Christian European. A Christian European does discriminate; he builds an army of the men of his own race and faith, and he defends his racial hearth fire where his women folk live and thrive. He does not send them to war in the name of equality and/or equity. And sexual orientation does matter. You can't build the esprit de corps necessary if open faggotry is permitted in the armed forces. But of course that is the traditional wisdom of the old European culture of honor and chivalry. Such things are now verboten in the age of diversity, equity, and inclusion.

The conservatives routinely drink from the fount of cowardice and dishonor when they defend the police as an aggregate — “99% of the police are good!” — while condemning actual policemen who defend the white race by arresting black criminals — “All police are good except the one bad policeman in Minnesota.” You can regularly appease the principalities and powers of this world if you abandon that ‘charity of honor’ culture that Burke spoke of and accept the ideals of democratic Jacobinism. Solzhenitsyn, in his master work *The Gulag Archipelago*, observed that Lady Macbeth would have slept quite soundly if she had had an ideology to justify herself. Without an ideology she eventually succumbed to the “compunctious visitings of nature” and was unable to live with what she had done. Modern liberals and their conservative brethren are made of sterner stuff. They do have an ideology — it is demon-crazy — and they can support every evil under the sun and denounce all that is good and noble under that evil banner of demon-crazy without ever feeling one single pang of conscience.

The idea that reason and science is truth and what emanates from the moral sentiments of the heart is false first took hold in the Christian churches, the whited sepulchers of the false Aslan, and then was disseminated throughout Christendom. The storybook faith in Christ the Lord went underground along with the moral sentiments, such as chivalry, honor, and pietas, that accompany a faith in the storybook Christ. Burke wondered why ten thousand swords did not leap from the scabbards of chivalrous Frenchmen determined to defend their Queen. Well, as we have seen over the past two European centuries, rational scientific men do not fight in the name of irrational and unscientific codes such as chivalry and that charity of honor. But it is my contention that nothing but evil will come from the contending parties of moderate liberals and mad-dog liberals, because both parties are contending for bragging rights in hell: “We are more enlightened and scientific because we love the sacred negro more than thee,” both contending parties claim. But why is the ‘beast in man’ culture of the sacred negro more enlightened and scientific than that dear, dear land of storybooks, Christ's Kingdom Come? Precisely because it is a ‘beast in man’ culture is the reason the modern liberals and modern conservatives believe that we must be democratic. Men who think, contrary to the word of God, that nature and nature's God should be our touchstone of reality will always choose to be ruled by the devil rather than Christ.

The devil has taken great pains to present the European people with two paths that seem to diverge in the woods, but which end in the same place, in Satan's kingdom of eternal night. The monstrous entity of liberalism has two satanic

factions. The first is the Robespierre faction. That faction is represented by Biden and company, who come right at the white race and tell us they intend to eradicate all things white and Christian, and then they proceed to do just that. Then there is the second faction, the moderate liberals, who are incorrectly called conservatives. They are like unto the Jacobins after the death of Robespierre: they want the same democratic utopia as their liberal brethren, but they do not think it is necessary to eliminate the entire white race in order to bring about a democratic utopia on earth. Charlton Heston, in his farewell speech to the NRA, summed up the moderate liberals' back-door Jacobinism. He cited Washington, Jefferson, Madison, Adams, and Thomas Paine as providing the ideological underpinning of our great republic and bid us be faithful to that heritage. I loved Charlton Heston's movies when I was growing up, and I admired his real life courage in standing up to the mad-dog liberals. But we cannot, if we are white Christians, take the path recommended by Heston and the 'conservatives.' We must hew out a third path in the woods, the ancient path. The true path has been covered with thorns and buried under a mountain of liberal granite, but it is the only path for the European people. If the only culture in which Christ dwelt, in which true charity, the charity grounded in His divine charity, was supreme, is to "be exploded as a ridiculous, absurd, and antiquated fashion," and racist and sexist as well, then we have descended below the level of the beasts, because they will have retained more humanity than the modern Europeans, the subhuman, desouled Undines of the shadowlands.

The demon-cratic spirit is grounded in hell; it is a celebration of the virtues of unrestrained demonism. "Let joy reign supreme," Satan decrees, and the enlightened Europeans scream, "Amen!" Satan's will-be-done has been presented to Europeans in the form of utopia, and the Europeans have responded to Satan's slick sales pitch with the same enthusiasm with which a pig eats his swill. In the name of a future in which the pig swill of liberty from God and liberty from faith, hope, and charity constitutes our brave new world the liberals proceed with their leftward march into hell –

It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls "the compunctious visitings of nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. –Reflections

Every evil ever conceived by the mind of Satan has been institutionalized in the United States of Babylon. But in point of fact Babylon was a godly state compared to the American republic of Satan. Why should we fly the Masonic flag of the stars and stripes, which is only a mildly leftward-leaning flag. Why don't we fly a flag with Satan's image emblazoned on it? That would reflect the inner reality of our satanic nation.

The utopians from hell always win because their enemies, the antique Europeans, were not perfect. The utopians can point to invented imperfections, which is the case 98% of the time, but they can also point to real imperfections. No Christian father, no Christian king can stand up to a utopian critic. If all Christian fathers and all Christian kings can be deposed because they are not perfect, then what father and what king can stand? They can't stand, and it is Christian fathers and Christian kings who upheld the European culture of honor, charity, and chivalry. There is no honor in a democratic culture that bids us betray our own people. There is no charity in a democratic culture that permits the slaughter of the unborn and the massacre of the white race. And there is no chivalry in a democratic culture that recruits women to fill up the ranks of the military in foreign wars and allows them to abandon their domestic hearth fires at home.

Can we proceed, as the News Max conservatives tell us we must, into the future without that charity of honor that Burke saw at the heart of Christian Europe? Sir Walter Scott was a passionate defender of Burke because he saw the Europe that Burke saw. It was, at its spiritual core, a mystic fairy land presided over by a Shakespearean clown, a man who seemed to be fool but who was wiser than the worldly-wise, because he saw life feelingly. Who was and is that mysterious figure walking in and out of our European storybooks? He is Christ the Lord, the King of Kings. Scott's first epic poem was *The Lay of the Last Minstrel*. The last minstrel of Christian Europe was Edmund Burke. He sang us a lay of charity and honor, a song of old Europe, and he refused to yield to the sophisters, economists, and calculators that sought to destroy that world. Endlessly reciting, "We are not racist, we are non-violent," is a pathetic capitulation to the liberals' new world devoid of charity, honor, and love. My heart is in the coffin with old Europe where buried love doth live! +

---

### **The Strange Mutations of Liberalism - May 15, 2021**

But who comes here? My father, poorly led? World, world, O world!  
But that thy strange mutations make us hate thee,  
Life would not yield to age.

---

In my mid-twenties, some forty years ago, I was very involved in what was called the pro-life movement. Now, looking back, I can see that the movement should have been called, 'Seeking redemption from the devil.' Legalized abortion was the inevitable consequence of a system dedicated to the new trinity of the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science. You cannot combat a satanic evil by working within a system designed by Satan.

During the past election year, I felt like I was back with the pro-lifers (and many Trumpers were pro-lifers). Trump was vehemently opposed by the liberals because they saw him as a regression on the road to a liberal utopia, which, from a Christian standpoint, is the road to hell. The only rule that the liberals played by was – Trump must lose. The violent riots during the summer, the liberal and Chinese-backed coronavirus, were all designed to defeat Trump. The liberals succeeded because the pro-Trumpers committed the same error as the pro-lifers: They sought redemption from the devil. Instead of declaring war against the forces of Antifa and Black Lives Matter, Trump appealed to the democratic process – "I support federalism" – which was the equivalent of an appeal to the devil. The devil laughed Trump to scorn while his minions cavorted and rioted in the mean streets of America. We needed a hero in authority, not a Constitutional expert: "Down these mean streets a man must go, who is not mean himself and is neither tainted nor afraid." The election was decided in the mean streets. The moral cowards on the Supreme Court were not going to go down the mean streets because they, like the Trumpers, were tainted with liberalism, and they were afraid.

Forty-nine years ago, the pro-lifers drew a line in the sand – "Thou shall not legalize abortion." And the liberals crossed that line. "We'll fix you," the pro-lifers declared, "We'll take it to the courts." And the courts backed the liberals. What comes next? The pro-lifers had nothing left, they had shot the one arrow in their quiver, the democratic arrow. The same thing happened this fall. The conservatives drew a line in the sand – "Do you want continual riots, do you want a COVID-19 police state where everybody who snuffles is locked away in a COVID-19 concentration camp, and do you want to live in slavery to the Chinese communists?" "Hell, no," the white grazers said. "Then vote for Trump," the conservatives decreed. And then came the fraudulent election. Did the conservatives, who drew the line in the sand, tell us to get our guns and storm the Capital? No, they told us to, "Take it to the courts." Isn't that déjà vu? Isn't that what the pro-lifers said 49 years ago?

God will judge the souls of the conservatives, He will decide whether they were invincibly ignorant or in actual league with the devil, but in either case we dare not follow their path; we dare not, we must not, seek redemption from the devil. Which leaves the Christian European with Hamlet's dilemma: "The time is out of joint; – O cursed spite, That ever I was born to set it right!" Like Hamlet, like Mason's Harry Feversham, and like Conrad's Lord Jim, we feel called upon to do something besides voting and protesting through democratic channels. We feel that a democratic, non-violent response to the violence of the enemy is cowardice in the face of the enemy.

The only response, outside of democratic channels, to the evil of liberalism, has been a neo-pagan response. The neo-pagan shooters have sought to combat the horror of liberalism with their own horror, the indiscriminate murder of the enemy, making no distinctions between civilians (women and children) and combatants. That can never be the Christian, European way. But neither can the conservatives' litany, "We are not racist, we are non-violent," be the way of the Christian European. We have lost that charity of honor that was and is the sole possession of the European who remains connected to Christ through his racial hearth fire. Every successful liberal 'progression' in the 19th, 20th, and 21st centuries was pushed forward with the sacred negro at the forefront of the movement. The Unitarian North crushed the Christian South, waving the banner of the sacred negro. The legalization of abortion was not violently opposed by professed pro-lifers because their assumption was that because the liberals championed civil rights, which translated to the worship of the sacred negro, they could not be evil. They were only misguided, because the only true evil was and is racism. Thus the fear of racism makes cowards of the white Christians. So long as the liberals, following Engels' advice, march leftward under the banner of the sacred negro, they will be able to march onward to hell completely unopposed by white Europeans. Trump allowed the federal police to shoot the murderer of Aaron Danielson because that Antifa creature from hell stepped away from his black shields. But Trump did not act against the murdering, rioting, Antifaers en masse because most of them kept their black shields in front of them.

A young man is not a coward if he does not step forward and charge the liberal leviathan. Great counterrevolutionary movements come from a people. When that entity no longer exists, when white pietas has been intellectualized out of existence in church and state, the individual white man, the European, does not feel he has a spiritual homeland, a people, to fight for. Alfred, Forrest, and Havelock had a Christian base; we, their descendants, do not have any Christian ground upon which we can "make our stand." That is a tragedy of Shakespearean and biblical proportions.

The legalization of abortion in this nation in 1973 made explicit what was implicit in our nation from its foundation – the United States was and is a republic dedicated to the proposition that, "Christ be not risen, let us look for a new God and a new government based on that new God." Man's abstract reason became the new God, and the new Savior became the sacred negro, and the new Holy Ghost became science. Whenever the liberals thought their new trinity was being seriously challenged, they responded with violence in order to protect that trinity. The Christian South was struck down in the

1860s, and Trump and his followers were struck down in 2020. Trump's protest seemed quite mild compared to the counterrevolution of 1860, but the liberal leviathan of 2020 was much more advanced than the leviathan of 1860. What was once acceptable then is no longer acceptable. It is now glaringly apparent that the unmitigated evil of liberalism, which has spawned legalized abortion, negro worship, transgenderism, homosexual marriage, and every other evil under the sun is not going to be eradicated democratically. But it is also clear that the white grazers refuse to believe that liberalism, and the demon-crazy created to advance liberalism, is evil.

If we reject the moral cowardice of the 'conservative' purveyors of more demon-crazy to defeat their liberal brethren, what do we do? "How should we then live?" Well, as I mentioned previously, we certainly do not do what the neo-pagan shooters have done, we do not grab semi-automatic rifles and start blazing away. There has never been a successful counterrevolution against a liberal oligarchy launched by one or two individuals who hope to advance their pagan cause by killing a great number of people in one big shooting spree. There have been successful counterrevolutions against liberal oligarchies when a large segment of a Christian people will no longer tolerate the rule of Satan. The American people have not reached the stage of counterrevolution; they do not believe the liberals are satanic. We always come back to race: The white grazers do not believe that people who love the sacred negro can be satanic. But the liberals are satanic, they have replaced Christ with the sacred negro. Nothing good will happen in our anti-nation until white Europeans bend their knees to Christ and forsake the sacred negro.

At the end of *King Lear*, Edgar, who has gone from a man who, "is so far from doing harm that he suspects none," to a man who faces unmitigated evil in the person of his evil bastard brother and kills him, has this to say: "The weight of this sad time we must obey; Say what we feel, not what we ought to say." Shouldn't we always speak what we feel, not what we ought to say? Yes, we should. But when our society is healthy, when the unbought grace of life is far from spent, our social structures can stand a certain amount of verbiage that is the mainstay of politicians and academics. But when all that is sacred has been undermined by Satan's minions working within the fabric of our culture, we dare not lie, we dare not indulge in Emersonian platitudes. We must, like Edgar, speak what we feel, not what we ought to say. The word is father to the deed. If we speak the truth about the liberals, that they are pure evil, if we speak the truth about negro worship, that it is blasphemy, we will be preparing the ground for the counterrevolution that our people are so unwilling, at this point in their history, to fight.

The tragedy of Shakespearean and biblical proportions in the great drama of the European people can be seen before our eyes in *King Lear* and *Genesis*. We, the European people, have, like *King Lear*, turned our kingdom, which was given unto us by Christ the Lord, over to evil ministers. And they are wreaking havoc on us while we stand by, refusing to believe that the evil ministers are evil. And the *Genesis* part of our story is like unto *King Lear*. We have returned to Eden in order to enact a second fall of man. We have denounced our filial connection to the Lord God, and we have returned to the worship of our own intellects. Lear starts his journey back through the narrow gate of humility which he finds in a hovel:

O, I have ta'en  
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;  
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,  
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them,  
And show the heavens more just.

And we can reclaim our hope, our only hope, through humility as well. We can accept our dependence on the Babe in the manger:

And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.  
And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

We are so far away from the Christ story that was once at the center of our people's history. However, we still have rights of memory in old Europe. I see a people lost in Liberaldom. But it is up to old men who see past Liberaldom to point to the star of Bethlehem and bid their people return home. +

---

## Pharisaical Hatred - May 8, 2021

What direction the French spirit of proselytism is likely to take, and in what order it is likely to prevail in the several parts of Europe, it is not easy to determine. The seeds are sown almost every where, chiefly by newspaper circulations, infinitely more efficacious and extensive than ever they were. And they are a more important instrument than generally is imagined. They are a part of the reading of all, they are the whole of the reading of the far greater number. There are thirty of them in Paris alone. The language diffuses them more widely than the English, though the English too are much read. The writers of these papers indeed, for the greater part, are either unknown or in contempt, but they are like a battery in which the stroke of any one ball produces no great effect, but the amount of

continual repetition is decisive. Let us only suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, and he will become our master. –Burke, *Further Reflections on the Revolution in France*

---

The myth of American democracy and of all democratic governments is that there is no need for leaders – no need for Kings, clan chieftains, aristocrats, etc. There is no need for men who have been bred to rule and lead their people, because in a democracy every man, through the power of the ballot, is his own king, his own clan leader, and his own aristocracy. He is all leaders in one through the sacred ‘will of the people.’ All that the people need is pundits, mere purveyors of the news, who enable men and women to exercise their supreme authority by voting, based on the information they receive from the pundits.

In actual practice democracy is the rule over many, by the will of a few. The best example of democracy in action takes place in the New Testament. The followers of Christ were unorganized and ill-prepared for the Sanhedrin-manipulated election. “Give us Barabbas!” was the cry of organized Jewry, and the truth was crucified. Likewise in Jacobin France, it was not the will of the people to kill their Christian king, but it was the will of a small cabal of revolutionaries led by a demonic madman that was able to control and dominate the people of France through the mythic entity called ‘the people.’

It is truly extraordinary to see how the democratic myth can still hold the white grazers in check even after the myth has been exposed as a lie. In this past election, for example, Trump defeated his opponent, but that was not the result our ruling liberal oligarchy wanted. So they changed the ‘will of the people’ to what they wanted – their will is the will of the people. And despite the fact that the liberals’ did not even make a very good job of it – they were very inept – the results of the fraudulent election were allowed to stand. Recently, the ‘conservative’ News Max station apologized to Dominion Voting Systems for saying the election was rigged by them. Now, many of us must tactically lie in this liberal kingdom of Babylon lest we be fired and/or imprisoned – this is not the Land of the Free – but if you are in a position of leadership, if you are a purveyor of the news that enables, under the rules of democracy, the making of each man a king through his vote, then you dare not, you must not lie. You have replaced the traditional leadership of the European people, so if you lie you are a traitor. The election was rigged, the American people should take up arms against the liberal oligarchy; to continue to lie, to continue to urge more democracy, more voting, more peaceful protests is treason against the European people, it is aiding and abetting white genocide.

When Lou Dobbs called Derek Chauvin a murderer in order to appease the liberals, who were not appeased, when News Max apologized for stating the truth about the election, when William F. Buckley Jr. agreed not to criticize the Jews in his magazine *National Review*, and when Pence called for prayers for Jacob Blake at the Republican convention, they all justified their lying treachery by telling themselves that by strategically avoiding the white genocide issue they could still serve “the people” on many other issues. But aren’t they acting the part of the witches in *Macbeth* when they become that type of leader?

But ‘tis strange;  
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,  
Win us with honest trifles to betray’s  
In deepest consequence.

The honest trifles about tax reform and less government pale in contrast to the issue of deepest consequence the conservatives ignore: Buried deep within the hearts of the antique Europeans, their white hearts, was a passionate, intense love for Jesus Christ. The sole purpose of liberalism is to destroy that passionate, intense love in the hearts of the modern Europeans. Are we going to maintain our ancient hearts or are we going to become one with the liberal leviathan which has a thousand mind-forged eyes of reason and no room for that one essential eye – the eye of the human heart? In *Brothers Karamazov*, Dostoyevsky’s Father Zossima tells Alyosha what hell is. He tells him that hell consists of those people who have lost the capacity to love. Yes, that is correct. The first liberal, who was Satan, sought to separate Adam and Eve from God by urging them to know God through the eyes of reason rather than through the eyes of their hearts. That was, is, and ever shall be the essence of liberalism – to kill the passionate heart and deify man’s abstract reason.

The race issue is the issue of deepest consequence because our race contains our spiritual, passionate affections that connect us to the living God. And I stress, The Living God. We can be mentally connected to the lifeless God of Theology, to a scientized nature-God, but we can only be connected to the Living God through the channels of grace that flow through the blood and heart, through our human affections which are inextricably linked to our racial hearth fire. The liberals will not feel the flames in their next world, which is hell, because they have already ceased to love in this world. They hate their own people and yearn for all things connected to Satan. The moderate liberals, who want to conserve the anti-pietas kingdom of Liberalism, are killing the European people with honest trifles that deceive them in deepest

consequence. We must love our own in and through Christ or else we will cease to have hearts that love, and we will not feel the flame.

The mad-dog liberals no longer feel the flames, they live quite comfortably in hell; so long as they can spew out their venom on all things bright and beautiful, everything stemming from Christian Europe, they are happy. But the moderate liberals are in a different place. They still are a bit uncomfortable with the intense heat of hell. Still, they do not want to leave hell, they do not want to fight the devil and his minions. They want to negotiate with the devil and his minions – “Couldn’t you please turn the heat down just a little bit? We will worship the negroes, but can’t we please keep Christ around for Sundays and holidays? We will not put a stop to any sexual depravity, but can’t we, pretty please, be allowed to prance around with signs protesting legalized depravities?” The conservatism of the moderate liberals is grounded in a lie, the lie that Satan is really not such a bad guy, he can be civilized if he is democratized. My belief, which is what my ancestors believed, is that Satan is not a good guy. Satan has no heart, he is pure, unadulterated mind. And that mind hates Christ and His people.

The sad story of the Europeans’ descent into hell is always before us in the horrific spectacle of negro worship. Whenever the moderate liberals, who believe in the salvation of the devil, want to criticize their extremist liberal cousins, they make the claim that it is they, the mad-dog liberals, who are racist. The moderate liberals find a ‘good black’ who accuses the liberals of being the real racist plantation owners with their system of welfare. The Breitbart-type news outlets also try to play the reverse race card by accusing the mad-dog liberals of racism. The ‘you are the real racist’ game underscores the anti-European underpinning of the modern conservatives. They don’t want to conserve the ‘racist’ culture of old Europe, which was Christian, they simply want whites to be allowed a place in Liberaldom, which is hell. But the Trump debacle should have served as a warning to the conservatives. Satan will not compromise, he will not humanize hell. You must either become one with Satan, as the mad-dog liberals have become one with him, or you must oppose him. You cannot, as the white grazers who voted for Trump, attempt to keep one foot in His kingdom come and one foot in hell. If you do that, you will be cast into limbo, too lukewarm for hell and too timid for heaven. It is only the violent, the passionate hearts, who shall bear it away.

The clown in Shakespeare’s *All’s Well That Ends Well*, like most of Shakespeare’s clowns, is a man of great perception. He sees that a man cannot traffic with the devil. He cannot, like the moderate liberal, play court to the devil in this world and hope for salvation in the next:

I am a woodland fellow, sir, that always loved a great fire; and the master I speak of ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the prince of the world; let his nobility remain in’s court. I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter. Some that humble themselves may; but the many will be too chill and tender, and they’ll be for the flow’ry way that leads to the broad gate and the great fire.

That is the wisdom of our ancestors, which we forsake at our peril. All the conservative blather about racism, ‘it is thee, not me, who is racist,’ is part of Satan’s kingdom, it is the politics of the great fire. The Bible burnings in Oregon are the most accurate representations of the endgame of liberalism. We cannot compromise with these creatures called liberals. Before the election and even more so after the election, I made an effort to associate with pro-Trumpers. That contact was better than the alternative – contact with mad-dog liberals – but ultimately the white Trumpers were a depressing lot. While amongst them, I was conscious of the fact they did not feel the flames of liberalism. They felt slightly overheated, they wanted to cool the liberals down, but they did not want to destroy Liberaldom. I had to leave their presence, because I did not want to be consumed by the great fire.

The assumption of all conservatives in the age of demoncracy is that what is good, what is noble in men is a given. They feel that all men share a universal heritage that can be appealed to within a democratic framework. But that is a lie. What is good in man comes from one God, Lord Jesus Christ. When the people who made that God the center of their culture are dismissed because they were ‘racist,’ because they loved their own, you have nothing noble, decent and good to build on. You have a thousand points of satanic light in your mind-forged world, but you have lost the light of His love that was a life-sustaining presence in that ancient European culture. The light emitting from white hearts connected to Him sustained European civilization and all non-European civilizations as well. There is no rational argument a man can make that will make the white grazers realize they will be consumed by the great fire if they do not repudiate the blending of negro worship, demoncracy, and Christianity. A man can only love His Europe and hope that the light from that love will ignite other human hearts. That doesn’t seem very likely, does it? But that is how the devil wants us to feel. He wants us to die in despair, without a vision of His divine love. The one thing necessary then is that we keep to what we know in our white hearts: There was a Narnia, it was Christian Europe, and we should take the narrow gate to that kingdom while forsaking the great fire called Liberaldom.

In the United States of Baal we have been moving, for many years, to the enthronement of Satan. But the final enthronement of Satan became obvious during Trump’s presentation of men and women who had been healed after



getting COVID-19 by taking the hydroxychloroquine drug. The liberals, like the Pharisees who condemned Christ for healing on the Sabbath, took no interest in a drug that could prevent the death of over a half million of their countrymen. All they wanted was to destroy Trump, so they launched a vicious smear campaign against the drug and prevented the emergency use of it until after Trump left office. Are these people, people who can hate as the devil hates, but are incapable of loving anybody or anything, most especially not their own people or anything connected to old Europe, people with whom we can form an incorporate union? No, we cannot do such a thing. We are bound to Him in and through our people; that is our indivisible union, not the liberals' union with Satan. +

---

### **Which Is Given Unto Us - May 1, 2021**

Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections. –Edmund Burke

---

But king Solomon loved many strange women, together with the daughter of Pharaoh, women of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Zidonians, and Hittites; Of the nations concerning which the LORD said unto the children of Israel, Ye shall not go in to them, neither shall they come in unto you: for surely they will turn away your heart after their gods: Solomon clave unto these in love. And he had seven hundred wives, princesses, and three hundred concubines: and his wives turned away his heart. For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect with the LORD his God, as was the heart of David his father. For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. And Solomon did evil in the sight of the LORD, and went not fully after the LORD, as did David his father. I Kings 11: 1-6

---

**My** elective affections are not with the police as a generic aggregate. Quite the contrary — when the laws of your nation are satanic, the police, nine times out of ten, will be at odds with white Europeans. But my elective affections always go out to the white police officers who have maimed or killed black criminals who were resisting arrest. Going all the way back to the Rodney King arrest, I have only heard of one instance in which I thought the white officer was in the wrong when dealing with a black criminal. That one instance was the female officer's accidental use of a gun instead of a taser. And even in that case it was criminal negligence, not murder.

The moderate liberals, the conservatives who support the police in the aggregate, always end up selling out the white policemen who actually try to do real police work by arresting black criminals. Lou Dobbs, for example, who used to be a conservative on Fox News before Fox News went over to mad-dog liberalism, immediately, before any facts in the case came out, condemned Derek Chauvin as a murderer. And so it is with all the white conservatives. They condemn the white policemen who maim or kill black criminals such as Jacob Blake or George Floyd while lauding the “99% of good officers” who do not maim or kill black criminals. But let me insist on something that should be so obvious I shouldn't have to say it — There is no such thing as an immaculate arrest when the man or woman being arrested resists arrest. Immaculate arrests only take place when there is no resistance to the arrest. When criminals resist arrest, the police must use force. That is why we call it, in the aggregate, a police force. The vast majority of violent crimes in our nation are committed by blacks. If the police cannot use force to arrest blacks, of what use are our police forces? They are of no use, they are harmful; after the lynching of Derek Chauvin it has become abundantly clear that the police will only be allowed to arrest whites. So why should whites support ‘our police’ who are not our police? We live in a police state, but the real state police are Antifa and Black Lives Matter. They are the liberals' storm troopers.

When the liberals decided to dispose of Trump as president, they used their storm troopers to ensure there would be no opposition to the fraudulent election. (1) When the liberals wanted a guilty verdict against Derek Chauvin to ensure that there will never be any opposition to the liberals' religion, the worship of the sacred negro, they called upon their storm troopers again. The reason the liberals use violence is because violence works. The moderate liberals who call themselves conservative can be “used for wrong, but are useless for right” because they will not fight liberalism so long as the liberals hold to the worship of the sacred negro. They all, from Trump on down to the rank and file white grazers, are afraid of being racist. Nothing good will come from any conservative group, and there are always new ones starting up, which does not make the restoration of white pietas and the dismantling of negro worship its primary purpose.

The liberals have a blood faith: they believe in the sacred blood of the negro. Through him, they commune with their god, who is Satan. The white grazers do not have a blood faith; their clergymen have told them that a blood faith is forbidden to whites. But men must have a blood faith, so the white grazers do what Solomon did when he destroyed the Kingdom of Israel — they go whoring after foreign gods. In the Catholic Church, they blend Islam, Buddhism, Judaism, the rain forest gods, and the sacred negro into a Christ-hating Christianity. And the evangelicals blend Judaism and negro worship into a Christ-neutralizing religion. Behind the white whore-mongering, the desire for non-Christian gods, is the prohibition in

the white ‘Christian’ churches against a blood faith. Scott describes in *The Lay of the Last Minstrel* a man who does not have a racial and familial hearth fire:

Breathes there the man, with soul so dead,  
Who never to himself hath said,  
This is my own, my native land!  
Whose heart hath ne’er within him burn’d,  
As home his footsteps he hath turn’d  
From wandering on a foreign strand!  
If such there breathe, go, mark him well;  
For him no Minstrel raptures swell;  
High though his titles, proud his name,  
Boundless his wealth as wish can claim;—  
Despite those titles, power, and pelf,  
The wretch, concentred all in self,  
Living, shall forfeit fair renown,  
And, doubly dying, shall go down  
To the vile dust, from whence he sprung,  
Unwept, unhonour’d, and unsung.

Our homeland is our race and our faith. We cannot love in the aggregate. If we are not allowed to say, “these are my people and Christ is the God of my people,” we will go whoring after other people and other gods. We will love the sacred negro, we will love the Jews, we will love the Moslems, while we denounce our own people and our God because they are ‘racist.’

What Allen Tate stated straight out, that the problems caused by rationalism could be cured by rationalism, was implicit in all the ‘death of the West’ books published in the 20th century. From Spengler through Weaver, the basic assumption of the conservative thinkers was that the Europeans could find a magical, rational talisman that would save them from their downward spiral to oblivion. But there is no such magic talisman; just as the alchemists were never able to transform base metal into gold, so were the rationalists unable to dispose of the God who comes to human hearts and replace Him with the God who comes to illuminated minds, without creating a rift between God and man. “Man proposes, man disposes,” has replaced, “man proposes, God disposes.” The living God cannot and will not bend His will to man’s will, because man’s will, divorced from the heart of God, becomes Satan’s will. (2)

A few years back, the blog called the Daily Kenn showed a horrific video of a bunch of noble black savages watching another noble black savage drown. They made no attempt to save the poor man because contrary to the liberals’ narrative, the noble black savages are not noble. They don’t care for George Floyd or any other black man shot by white police, they care about black power; hence they riot when the police act against black criminals. The more they riot, the more timid the police, who work for the liberals, become. The blacks do not understand why the liberals worship them, but they do understand that the liberals will cede everything to them so long as they keep screaming ‘racist.’ And they shall continue to murder, rape, and burn so long as whites have souls so dead that they will not fight for their own people.

Let us place an unilluminated white in that same body of water where the black drowned, much to the delight of his fellow noble savages. The liberals stand by on the shore and push the white victim back into the water while shouting, “Racist!” at him. The creatures of color throw things at him while they laugh and scream, “Drown, whitey, drown!” And what do the moderate liberals, the conservatives, do? They hold a meeting of the minds. One pundit says, “I think he is guilty of racism, we had better let him drown. If we don’t, the liberals will say we are racist.” Another ‘conservative’ – I believe it was Amy Coney Barrett – says, “There might be riots if we try to save him, and besides, I am very busy doing my devotions to George Floyd, so we must – it is a moral imperative – let him drown.” As the drowning white man tries, for the 20th time, to pull himself to the shore, Amy, assisted by Father Moderate Christian, steps on his fingers and pushes him back into the water. One conservative pundit is somewhat troubled by Father Moderate Christian’s actions: “Father, why are you pushing him back into the lake to be drowned? Isn’t it incumbent on us as Christians to try to save him?” Father Moderate Christian replies, “I think we must see the larger picture here. It is better that one man should die than the church of Christ should be deemed racist.” The conservative pundit replies, “Yes, I understand. But I still think we should meet here again next week to discuss the need for guard rails around the lake. After all, a black might drown in the lake, and that would be disastrous.” “Yes, I agree,” says the treacherous Amy Coney Barrett, “We must keep the blacks from drowning in the lake.” So the unilluminated white drowns, to the unmitigated glee of the liberals and the noble black savages, and with the passive, self-serving approval of the moral cowards, the moderate liberals.

“Behold, I show you a mystery.” It is through our mysterious human relationships with our kith and kin that we come to an understanding of the mystery of Christ’s incarnation, His divine condescension on the cross, and His resurrection from the dead. If we shun those human relationships, we shall never understand the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. Why have our churchmen allowed the liberals to co-opt the term ‘humane’? Why is the worship of the ignoble black

savages who have no humanity considered the beginning and the end of the Christian faith? If Christ is indeed the God-Man shouldn't we know Him through what is good, what is noble, and what is humane? The liberals' devotion to the sacred negro allows them to love what is evil, what is ignoble, and what is inhumane. Francis William Bourdillon expressed all this quite well:

The mind has a thousand eyes,  
And the heart but one;  
Yet the light of a whole life dies  
When love is done.

Satan rides triumphant throughout the European nations because the European grazers have been seduced by abstract reason, which has a thousand eyes for that which is evil but no heart for the divine love which passeth the understanding of abstract reason. Philosophical, theological Christianity tells us that we need not climb to the top of the mystical mountain nor go through the dark and foreboding wood in order to encounter and defeat the fire-breathing dragon. Instead, the great minds tell us we need only steep ourselves in superficiality, in Emersonian platitudes, which always tell us that we must love the sacred negro with our whole heart, mind, and soul. Is it just a coincidence that our churchmen have come up with the same theology as the secular liberals? No, it is no coincidence, because when you forsake your people, "love is done," and you will seek to renew what you have lost through the heathens of color. It can't be done; how can we be united with the Divine Love when we cling to the noble black savage as our god?

Solzhenitsyn once observed that the most striking thing about the West was the decline of courage. What causes a decline in courage? I think the cause lies in the human heart. When a man has nothing he loves enough to fight for, when his kith and kin are not his people but are instead part of the large aggregate called humanity, a man will become fearful of displeasing the principalities and powers of this world, and he will embrace Satan because Satan is seemingly more powerful than Christ. (3) The Supreme Court justices who refused to hear the fraudulent election cases feared the wrath of Antifa and Black Lives Matter. And so did and does Trump fear the BLM/Antifa creatures from hell. And likewise the judge and jury who convicted Derek Chauvin. They all are white Undines who fear their own shadows because their shadows might reveal their white features. They have gone beyond love and hate to that statistical world of universal humanity, in which there is no such thing as "my own people," there is only the sacred negro who inspires the Europeans to... What does the sacred negro inspire the Europeans to do? He inspires them to hate their own and court favor with the wicked. It is of eternal moment, it is all in all, that the wicked, the liberals and their colored minions, shall not root out the image of God in man from the face of the earth. If we love much, if we love our people in and through Christ, we will still have hope, because we will see His image in man: "And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us." +

---

(1) When revolution has overturned all the old norms, and the fraudulent presidential election was such a revolution, it is immoral to still proceed as if nothing evil has occurred:

The faction is the evil spirit that possesses the body of France; that informs it as a soul; that stamps upon it's ambition, and upon all it's pursuits, a characteristic mark, which strongly distinguishes them from the same general passions, and the same general views, in other men and in other communities. It is that spirit which inspires into them a new, a pernicious, and desolating activity. Constituted as France was ten years ago, it was not in that France to shake, to shatter, and to overwhelm Europe in the manner that we behold. A sure destruction impends over those infatuated Princes, who, in the conflict with this new and unheard-of power, proceed as if they were engaged in a war that bore a resemblance to their former contests; or that they can make peace in the spirit of their former arrangements or pacification. Here the beaten path is the very reverse of the safe road. -Burke

(2) The liberals have the clarity and determination to carry the day because they have committed, heart and soul, to Satan. The white grazers do not have a clear commitment to God or the devil. Hence they are cannon fodder for the liberals:

It is a dreadful truth, but it is a truth that cannot be concealed; in ability, in dexterity, in the distinctness of their views, the Jacobins are our superiors. They saw the thing right from the very beginning. Whatever were the first motives to the war among politicians, they saw that it is in it's spirit, and for it's objects, a civil war; and as such they pursued it. It is a war between the partizans of the ancient, civil, moral, and political order of Europe against a sect of fanatical and ambitious atheists which means to change them all. -Burke

Such is the war that the moderate liberals will not fight – a war against "a sect of fanatical and ambitious atheists which means to change them all."

(3) Only one apostle had the courage to stand by our Lord and Savior at the foot of the cross, when it appeared that the principalities and powers of this world had triumphed over Him. That apostle was John, the same apostle who laid his head on Christ's sacred heart at the last supper. "Perfect love casteth out fear."

## The United States of Baal - April 24, 2021

And they built the high places of Baal, which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my mind, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin. –Jeremiah 32: 35

---

“You are the moderate man, the invaluable understrapper of the wicked man. You, that moderate man, may be used for wrong, but are useless for right.” –The Confidence Man by Herman Melville

---

About two weeks before the Presidential election, which turned out to be a non-election, I went to a shooting range with three of my sons. While my sons shot, I roamed around the range, talking to the white, pro-Trumpers at the range. It was nice to be among men who hated Biden and company, but it was very disturbing to learn that the pro-gun Trumpers had no plan B if Trump lost. All their hopes were in the American democratic process, and they didn't believe that process would let them down. And then about three weeks after the election, I went to a local pro-Trump rally (see Unmitigated Evil). At that rally, I found the same refusal to believe that the democratic process was an instrument of evil. The Trumpers at the rally all believed that the Supreme Court would rectify the injustice of the election.

The white Americans who voted for Trump constitute the opposition to the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth. And their opposition is a non-opposition because they still believe that the democratic process and the grace of God are one and the same. To oppose demoncracy is to oppose God, such is the belief of the white American grazers. They are currently in a democratic coma because they are unable to reconcile their faith in demon-cracy with what has happened in America in the months before the election and in the months after the election. They are like a character in a Kafka novel who has been dragged out of bed in the middle of the night and lined up before a firing squad without knowing why he is about to be executed.

Louis XVI and his family were executed because they were royal, they represented Christian France, which was an anathema to the Jacobins. So it is with the white grazers: They are being executed because they represent, in the liberals' minds, Christian Europe. Even though the white grazers have shown themselves willing to repudiate Christian Europe, to the extent that they even know there was such an entity, the liberals will not let the white grazers into Liberaldom. Why? The white grazers cannot be part of Liberaldom because they still retain, even though they have repudiated Christian Europe, some tiny remnants in their souls that stem from our Christian European heritage. One grazer might balk at transgenderism, another might balk at homosexual marriage, but they all, the white grazers, have a slight issue with some aspect of the liberals' brave new world. And even the slightest hesitation, the slightest opposition to the liberals' entire agenda, marks a man for extermination. In Shakespeare's Richard III, Buckingham has done everything the bloody tyrant Richard III has commanded, he has murdered all those who blocked Richard's path to the throne. But he balks at the prospect of killing the young princes in the Tower, the sons of Edward. That slight hesitation costs Buckingham his life. Richard III must have complete obedience, there can be no turning back once you have given your soul to Satan. So it is with our mad-dog liberals. The moderate liberals are quite willing to acquiesce to almost the entirety of the liberals' agenda, but that almost has damned them. The liberals can't trust them. The incredible fervor with which the liberals support every new leftward perversion is the result of their fear that their fellow liberal jackals might place them in the ranks of the unilluminated, if they, like Buckingham, show the slightest hesitation in supporting the ever leftward march toward utopia.

The recent guilty verdict against Derek Chauvin, the verdict demanded by the left and their colored minions, highlighted the moral bankruptcy of the white grazers. When you jettison your past, you jettison your soul. Derek Chauvin was not guilty of any crime whatsoever. (1) His only 'crime' was whiteness. All the moderate liberals who never, never condemn the black barbarians for anything, but instead spend all their time and energy condemning our white European heritage because of 'racism,' are guilty of blasphemy against the living God who is at the heart of 'racist' Europe, and they are guilty of the murder of the white race. There is no democratic answer to the blasphemous, murderous, merciless reign of the negro-worshipping liberals. No European nation has ever sunk as low as this nation, called the United States of America but which should be called what it is – the kingdom of hell on earth.

This latest liberal atrocity is like unto the election fraud of last November, but it is much worse. Derek Chauvin's conviction was a horror, it was an attack on a completely innocent man, because of what he represented – a white man trying to prevent a black savage from practicing black savagery. Some white conservatives have expressed relief because they think the conviction will prevent a race war. Such people are moral cowards devoid of all humanity. And the moderate liberals' cowardice will not, as they hope, save them. How long do you think you will survive, Mr. White Grazer,

when you announce to all the world that you will not fight for your own people, that you will give them up to the liberals who will place them on the sacrificial altars consecrated to the merciless, black barbarians?

Can we say with Macbeth that we have “supped full of horrors”? No, we can’t; the crucifixion of Derek Chauvin is just the beginning of horrors. Now the slaughter of whites will increase tenfold, and there will be no opposition. It makes one wonder if there ever was a white race. Perhaps there never was a Narnia? Yes, there was. We still have souls to save, so we must, even though the liberals have enthroned Satan through and in the sacred negro, continue to cleave unto His Europe while defying the liberals’ kingdom of hell on earth. But let there be no more discussions and debates with liberals. That is the greatest blasphemy of all — we cannot dialogue with Satan.

On the same day that the liberal Sanhedrin condemned Derek Chauvin to death by way of crucifixion, the Republican Party sent me a fundraising letter. Did I want to stop the leftist agenda? Well, all I had to do was send them money. When has the Republican Party or any of their ‘conservative’ allies ever addressed the central issue? When have they ever condemned the worship of Satan through the sacred negro? When have our churchmen, who also send me fundraising letters, ever condemned the worship of Satan through the sacred negro?

There is the image-of-the-beast-in-man culture that is liberalism, and there is the image-of-God-in-man culture of the antique Europeans. “I shall not serve,” was Satan’s response to our Lord. Shouldn’t that be our response to Satan? The mock elections that are predetermined in favor of the liberals, the mock trials that are designed to punish whites who oppose the sacred black gods of the liberals, make up the essence of American demon-crazy. If a man has a soul he will oppose that satanic entity with his whole heart, mind, and soul. If he doesn’t have a soul? Then he shall not feel the flames and he shall dwell in Satan’s kingdom forever.

Prior to the Supreme Court’s decision to validate the fraudulent election, a whole host of conservative pundits sat around discussing the superb case Trump had. Surely, since the evidence was on his side, he would win. After all, we are a nation of laws. It was the same before the Derek Chauvin verdict: Surely, the conservatives maintained, there couldn’t be a verdict of murder. The conservatives, who are not conservative, think that law is some objective, rational entity out there, outside of the human heart, that we can refer to in order to solve all the serious problems of mankind. But that is a false concept of law. Our laws stem from our religious faith. When we were a Christian people we sought to make our laws conform to Christ:

The quality of mercy is not strain’d.  
It droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven  
Upon the place beneath. It is twice bless’d:  
It blesseth him that gives and him that takes.  
’Tis mightiest in the mightiest; it becomes  
The throned monarch better than his crown.  
His sceptre shows the force of temporal power,  
The attribute to awe and majesty,  
Wherein doth sit the dread and fear of kings;  
But mercy is above this sceptred sway;  
It is enthroned in the hearts of kings;  
It is an attribute to God himself;  
And earthly power doth then show likest God’s  
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, Jew,  
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,  
That, in the course of justice, none of us  
Should see salvation. We do pray for mercy,  
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  
The deeds of mercy.

*-The Merchant of Venice*

When a police officer kills a white woman trying to seek justice from the liberal overlords who have consecrated themselves, through the sacred negro, to Satan, he is doing good. That is why no charges were filed against the officer who murdered Ashli Babbitt. But when a white police officer tries to arrest a black barbarian in the act of committing a crime and that black barbarian dies of a heart attack while resisting arrest, the police officer is condemned to life imprisonment. Derek Chauvin’s failure to understand the liberals’ state religion has made him a sacrificial offering on the altar of the liberals’ black gods. No one will defend him, because there is no one left in the United States of Satan who believes in that other God, the God who once took flesh and dwelt among us, the God of mercy and love.

White Europeans are doomed to extinction so long as there is no European right wing. Conservatism is liberalism if the conservatives seek to conserve demon-crazy, and that is the case in America. A man of the right seeks to conserve his

people and their ancient faith; he does not seek to conserve an ever-leftward marching, militant, atheist government dedicated to Satan. It is truly amazing and disgusting to witness the capitulation of the conservatives to militant leftism. The conservative News Max channel regularly has the leftward-leaning Alan Dershowitz as one of their leading pundits! Small wonder that the white grazers live in a Kafkaesque nightmare when mad-dog liberals are now considered conservative. (2)

Is there a way out of this nightmare? Yes, there is. It seems like the end of everything because we have elevated man's reason above God's word, His word made flesh. What did our Lord tell the apostles on the road to Emmaus? He told them of the Scriptures, of the great prophets who gave them hope in the coming of the Messiah. He did not tell them to place their hopes in a new government of the people and for the people. Nor did St. Paul enjoin us to place our hopes in the scientized minds of clever theologians, he told us to search the Scriptures with our hearts. In the Word made flesh we shall find the story of a people who come to ruin every time they abandon the Divine Love to serve Satan. The liberals have made it strikingly clear that they are one with Satan, and they maintain an intimacy with that reptilian deity through their black gods. The bizarre ritual in the houses of Congress, when our government officials knelt in reverence to George Floyd, the black fire god, marked the union of Satan and the apostate white Europeans. Every nation of Europe should renounce the United States of America if those nations intend to be European nations, and every white European within the satanic United States should not take the sword from his hand until the government dedicated to the proposition that Satan is our lord and master has been destroyed. Is it so hard to take up arms against evil? Must we crawl on our bellies before the serpent in this world and share eternal hell with him in the next world? The Psalmist gave us hope, and our people once embraced that hope:

I will hear what God the LORD will speak: for he will speak peace unto his people, and to his saints: but let them not turn again to folly. Surely his salvation is nigh them that fear him; that glory may dwell in our land. Mercy and truth are met together; righteousness and peace have kissed each other. Truth shall spring out of the earth; and righteousness shall look down from heaven. Yea, the LORD shall give that which is good; and our land shall yield her increase. Righteousness shall go before him; and shall set us in the way of his steps.

-Psalm 85: 8-13

Liberalism is the folly of rational man defying the Word made flesh. There is faith, hope, and charity in that other world – the fairy tale land of old Europe. That is our world, and the Crowned King of that world bids us rise and ride in defense of that world, and in defiance of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth, which has come to a terrible fruition in the United States of Satan. +

---

(1) Derek Chauvin is facing life in prison because he failed, when growing up, to learn about the United States of America. Our nation is governed by Satan, in and through the sacred negro. You cannot arrest a black in commission of a crime, because blacks, by liberal fiat, do not commit crimes. Only white people commit crimes. If Derek Chauvin had confined his arrests to white people and white people only, he would be a free man today. Pray for that poor young man who trusted in American demon-crazy.

(2) Dershowitz has not even, as Horowitz did, expressed any repentance for his leftism. He has not changed any of his leftist views. He was and is a mad-dog liberal. But the liberals have gone past mad-dog liberalism. To what? They have gone from mad-dog liberal to maniacally satanic. "Tis the times' plague when madmen lead the blind." Is Alan Dershowitz now the conservatives' resistance to liberalism? That is not resistance, that is surrender. Nietzsche longed for the coming of the Übermensch, the man of the future who was beyond good and evil. I long for a hero, a European from the past, who knows the difference between good and evil. Our people and our culture once belonged to Christ. This, our modern un-culture, and the liberals who govern us belong to Satan. We must see them for what they are and deal with them as European heroes once dealt with such creatures from hell.

---

## **The Liberal Swine Hate the Good Shepherd - April 17, 2021**

And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. –Matthew 8: 28-32

---

The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters. He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me. Thou preparest a table before me in the presence

of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever. –Psalm 23

---

When I was a young man who read the conservative publications such as National Review, I was alarmed at the conservatives' assumption that the "American people" constituted an unchanging aggregate that would always be 51% against legalized abortion, socialism, homosexual marriage, etc. How, when liberals completely dominated the universities and had almost total dominance in the lower grades, could the "American people" stay constantly at 51% against all things evil? Of course they couldn't. Each generation was more liberal than their parents, and the ground shifted. What was unthinkable to a majority of Americans 45 years ago has become acceptable to the majority in 2021. The conservatives never "took their stand," they simply moved slightly to the right of the ever leftward marching mad-dog liberals. So long as they stayed to the right of the liberals, the conservatives felt that they were fighting the good fight. When the liberals preached abortion on demand, the conservatives preached abortion up to six months and no tax-funded abortion. When the liberals preached gay marriage, the conservatives preached the right of heterosexuals to marry. When the liberals preached transgender bathrooms, the conservatives held out for different sex bathrooms. And on it goes, the liberals advance, and the conservatives make a mild protest, and then they move on to another issue. But the conservatives are running out of ground to stand on. When the liberals have gone to the extreme left, when they have built hell on earth, what issue will be left for the conservatives? When every institution in our country is satanic and every coin has only two left sides, how can anything noble and honorable, how can anything Christian survive? We have arrived at that pass. There is no longer any non-liberal spot of ground on which a Christian can take his stand.

Now that we are at the end of the American experiment in demon-crazy, we can see what demon-crazy was and is all about. It is about the expenditure of "the unbought grace of life." At first when there is still an abundance of God's grace in the culture, it doesn't seem to matter to the general Christian populace whether the government is founded on the principle of 'Christ be not risen,' but it does matter. Unlike the French Jacobins, who guillotined Christians, our government permitted Christians to worship Christ in private. But why have American conservatives buried our anti-Christian history? Jefferson rewrote the New Testament in order to eliminate all the fairy tale elements from that "fantastical tale." Christ became Socrates in Jeffersonian democracy, and the American 'conservatives' claimed Jefferson as their limited government exemplar. Over time the secular, 'Christ be not risen' ethos of our government became the reigning faith in our culture. And now nothing that happens in this nation can proceed according to Christian principles.

Let us take the recent COVID-19 'crisis' as an example. When there was still something of the Christian ethos (I won't say the Christian faith) left in America in the 1950s and early 1960s, a virus such as COVID-19 would not have been politicized as it has been. Democrats and Republicans would have wanted to know the truth about the virus. And the medical people would have still had something inside of them, some tiny remnant of God's grace that would have made them tell the truth about the virus, about its causes, about its true danger to the national health, and about the best drugs and vaccines to be taken or what ones were unnecessary to take. But now who can the non-medical lay person trust? The mainstream scientific-medical community tells us that whatever the liberals say is true. And the pagan libertarians come forward with their experts telling us the whole thing is a hoax. When Christ has been banished from a people's culture, and He has been banished from our culture, there is no truth. That does not faze the liberals in the slightest, because their utopia, which is a dystopia, is founded on untruth and unreality.

Dr. Michael Yeadon, a former vice president and scientist for Pfizer, one of the vaccine manufacturers, recently wrote an article in which he stated that the liberals are going to use the COVID-19 vaccine to murder Americans. He said that by constantly requiring booster shots, they would gradually poison millions of people. Of course the liberals have damned such accusations as 'conspiracy theory,' but I neither believe nor disbelieve something because it is a conspiracy theory. There are bogus conspiracy theories, and there are factual conspiracy theories, and we must determine the truth of any conspiracy theory based on our perception of "what is truth." I do not know with metaphysical certainty that what Yeadon says is true; I tend to believe what he says though, because I do know that the liberals are totally evil. They hate mankind as the devil hates mankind, and they have shown they will stop at nothing to destroy the 'image of God in man' race, the white Europeans. But won't illuminated liberals and non-whites be killed by the vaccine as well as unilluminated whites? Yes, they will, but during the 2020 election liberals said it was better that millions upon millions of people should die of COVID than Trump should be re-elected, so why should they care about the collateral damage of the vaccine? Nothing means more to them than their hatred of Jesus Christ, whom they strike back at by destroying the Christ-bearing race. And that is why I believe that Yeadon is telling us the truth about the COVID-19 vaccine.

Burke placed liberalism in its proper context when he said that the first liberal was the devil. Liberalism takes many forms because the devil is a very clever fellow. Melville's *The Confidence Man* is a very depressing read because we are never introduced to the devil's antagonist, but Melville does give us a very accurate description of the subtlety of the enemy of mankind. In our experiment in demon-crazy the devil was seductive: "You can run your nation on sound rational principles and you can have your God, your pie in the sky, for private use." But if reason is truth and private faith is

irrational, why shouldn't the government destroy those private, irrational, and racist (white pietas is always deemed racist) yearnings in the hearts of white people? The ruling liberal oligarchy of the United States that conducted the murder, rape, burn and pillage attack on the South in 1860 through 1877 made explicit what had always been implicit in America: our ruling ethos was and is satanic. The unbought grace of life which had taken root in the hearts of Southern people had become, in the minds of the Northern Jacobins, too intrusive. The South represented a major obstacle to the Northern Jacobins' onward march off the cliff with the swine. So the liberals of the North abandoned the great seduction and applied naked force. When they decided that the South was properly subdued, they returned to their "land of liberty" seduction. I was very sad when the heroic moderate liberal, Rush Limbaugh, passed away. And I was even more saddened when I learned that his favorite hymn was the blasphemous "Battle Hymn of the Republic" which he asked to be sung at his funeral. The moderate liberals, the conservatives, are always trying to seek redemption from the devil. It can't be done. Origen was wrong: the devil cannot be redeemed, and we should stop trying to redeem him. The devil will always be about his business, which is the destruction of the unbought grace of life that once was predominant in European culture. We should not want to conserve democratic America, we should want to destroy that America and return home to our racial hearth fire consecrated to Christ the Lord.

After Trump's electoral victory in 2016, the liberals, as in 1860, switched from the seductive mode of Jacobinism to the naked-fist mode of Jacobinism. For four years they threw away the façade of democracy and attacked Trump and the white grazers with their fangs fully bared. The election of 2020 marked the successful conclusion of the liberals' violent assertion of their right to exterminate the unilluminated white grazers. But unlike the men and women of the Old South, the modern unilluminated whites did not respond as Forrest and his people responded to violent, overt Jacobinism. The liberals have now returned to the seductive mode of Jacobinism, and the white grazers have returned to the pastures of Liberalism in order to await their democratic execution.

Trump and his followers were nowhere near in spirit and blood to the Southern people in 1860. But ever leftward means that as the liberal juggernaut advances it shall never go back. That is why the liberals decided that Trump had to be violently crushed: he represented a slight regression on the liberals' road to hell. They shall never sound retreat as they trample out the culture and the lives of the European people. They can be defeated, but not by moderate liberals who seek redemption from the devil. They can only be defeated by Europeans who do not try to balance science and reason with faith.

Now with zeal we must search our breasts shrewdly, the vices within, with the eyes of the heart. With the other eyes, the jewels of the head, we cannot at all see through the spirit of the thought, whether good or evil dwells beneath, so that it may be pleasing unto God at the dread time.

The police officer who shot and killed an unarmed woman in the protests, not riots, on January 6th, is not even being charged with a crime. The police officer who tried to arrest the man-god George Floyd, who died from a drug-induced heart attack, is being tried for murder while Black Lives Matter and Antifa scum are dictating what the verdict must be by holding their usual rape, burn, and pillage outrages in the streets of Minnesota. And meanwhile, the protestors from January 6th are being tortured in their prison cells. The liberals believe in violence: there is 'bad' violence, which is done in defense of His reign of charity, and there is 'good' violence, the murder and the torture of unilluminated whites who oppose any part of the liberals' satanic agenda. Is it possible that we still do not see through the spirit of the liberals' thought? Why can't the white European grazers see what the liberals are? They are committed heart and soul to Satan. If we peacefully protest against liberal outrages, we are aiding and abetting the liberals. The violence of the liberals in defense of Satan's reign of cruelty can only be met with violence by men who still believe in that charity of honor. Perhaps there are no such men left in the European nations. Is there any liberal outrage that could make an "intelligent man, a European," say, "this must not go on"? Or are we, as a people, doomed to fade into the Babylonian night, chanting, "We are not racist, we are non-violent," before the liberals and their black gods?

Behind the nonresistance to evil of the white Europeans is the notion that intelligent thinking men do not do things according to a blood faith. They believe that the good Christian eschews the wisdom of the blood for the science of theology. But what if all true wisdom comes from the blood, from a heart connected to the Savior? There is no dogmatic theology in the Gospels or in the epistles of St. Paul, but the churchmen, past and present, insist that we must submit to rational theology designed to subvert the Son of God. Christ left us a comforter, who can be found in the human heart, and they, the theologians, bid us deny the comforter and seek out the men who believe that divine love can be confined within a syllogism.

The white grazers, the American conservatives who believe in demon-crazy, believe that the Shylockian liberals are well-intended. The conservatives do not believe that the Shylockian liberals hate all things Christian with a maniacal fury that can only be violently opposed, it cannot be appeased. Neville Chamberlain has been eternally damned for "appeasing" Hitler, but what can we say about the modern conservatives who appease the liberals, who are infinitely worse than Hitler? George Fitzhugh, that magnificent man of the Right, said that the Southern people should only be law-abiding so



long as their government was conservative; when their rulers ceased to be conservative, no man, if he was Christian, could serve the government. We are a people in exile, or more accurately, we are a people in bondage. Our comfort and our hope lies within. We need to take our stand on the only ground left to us, a heart connected to Christ, through the Holy Ghost. The American experiment in democracy has been exposed for what it is – a demon-crazy consecrated, through the sacred negro, to Satan. If we believe that the Lord is truly our shepherd, we will make what is now Satandom conform to that which was once within the hearts of our people, the Grace of God. What was good in our people was of God, the God who enters human hearts. The land of the European storybooks was and is His land. We have forgotten the story of the littlest angel, who responded to the divine love with a burning, all-consuming love of his own. The pure in heart shall see the face of God, they shall see Jesus Christ and they shall refuse to kneel to the liberal swine. +

---

There was a breathless pause, and then the rough, unsightly box of the Littlest Angel began to glow with a bright, unearthly light, then the light became a lustrous flame, and the flame became a radiant brilliance that blinded the eyes of all the angels!

None but the Littlest Angel saw it rise from its place before the Throne of God. And he, and only he, watched it arch the firmament to stand and shed its clear, white, beckoning light over a Stable where a Child was Born.

There it shone on that Night of Miracles, and its light was reflected down the centuries deep in the heart of all mankind. Yet, earthly eyes, blinded, too, by its splendor, could never know that the lowly gift of the Littlest Angel was what all men would call forever

“THE SHINING STAR OF BETHLEHEM!”

---

### **The Lamentations of the European People - April 10, 2021**

How doth the city sit solitary, that was full of people! how is she become as a widow! she that was great among the nations, and princess among the provinces, how is she become tributary! –Lamentations 1:1

---

The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up. –Matthew 4: 16

---

What D. P. Duguauquier described in 1959 was an exact description of what happened in the United States in the summer and fall of 2020:

The year 1959 was a constant example of the futility of mediation against force. The political leaders in the Congo used the threat of riots as a weapon to oblige the Belgian Government to concede immediate Independence. From a vague future promise in January 1959 it became reality for July 1960, eighteen months later.

The majority of the American people voted for Trump, but their votes were not counted because the Supreme Court Justices and the legislators, even those who were not in complete sympathy with the violent rioters, were afraid of the violent rioters. So they sided with the liberals against the white Americans who voted against their own extermination. That is a very depressing fact. But it has been made more depressing by the conservatives who refuse, in the wake of the liberals' military coup, to abandon demon-crazy and fight back. The conservatives are still proceeding as if the electoral defeat can be reversed by more demon-crazy. They tell us what Biden and company are doing on our borders, in our schools and universities, and about what they are doing to the economy. And then they tell us to vote, completely ignoring the fact that we did vote and to no avail. Even if we had lost the election legally, we should not, we could not, as Christians, accept such horrors as legalized abortion and white genocide just because a majority voted in favor of those evils. But isn't it even more obvious that we must fight when the liberals have made it clear that they will proceed with their Satanic agenda with or without the consent of the majority of their countrymen? Back when abortion was made legal, the clergymen told us not to fight, they told us to win the baby killers over to the good side by gentle persuasion. That was very successful, wasn't it? And now the conservatives tell us we must win the Christ-hating, white-hating liberals over to the good side by gentle persuasion, through the same democratic process that has brought us legalized abortion and white genocide.

The conservatives responded to the liberal sanctioned violence in 2020 with the unreality of Emersonian platitudes – “There is nothing good or bad but thinking makes it so.” The conservatives decided that if they just thought that the liberals would give them fair play, the liberals would give them fair play. Trump, instead of declaring martial law up to and through the elections in order to stop the violence in the streets and to ensure honest elections, simply talked wistfully of appealing to a few honest judges. We saw how that turned out. Why can't the conservatives see what is obvious? The liberals mean what they say. They have told us they are going to destroy whiteness and everything that whiteness

represents, which is everything that is even remotely connected to Christian Europe, so why must we continue to vote in elections that have no meaning and non-violently stand by while our people are slaughtered and our culture is eradicated?

The depression I feel after the liberals' military coup in 2020 is not because a democratic tradition died. That 'tradition' needed to die because it was contrary to our Christian European heritage. My depression stems from the fact that the conservatives refuse to acknowledge that there has been a military coup that demands a response from white people which is genuine and heartfelt. You can't fight evil by pretending there is no such thing as evil. After the Christian Spaniards were defeated by the Moslems in 770, they went to the caves and secret places and took the vow, "To the knife." It took them 700 years to drive the Moslems from Spain, but they did it. We must make a similar vow. The liberals will not be deterred from what they feel they must do – they must destroy the Christ-bearing race. It is fight or die. But of course a man can't and won't fight the liberals if he is part liberal himself. The moderate liberals, the 'conservatives,' will not fight the liberals because they do not believe that liberalism is intrinsically evil, that it is rooted in Satan's hatred for Jesus Christ. The conservatives' differences with the liberals are only managerial; they think they are better qualified to run a liberal government than their mad-dog liberal cousins. Hence the conservatives are still doing all the liberal, democratic things, urging Americans to vote after voting has been proven to be useless. And they are urging the white grazers to be non-violent after the mad-dog liberals have proven the effectiveness of violence. The conservatives still do not understand that the democratic process is designed to destroy the image-of-God-in-man culture of the white Christian Europeans, so they can never be our leaders; we must look elsewhere:

In a mass we cannot be left to ourselves. We must have leaders. If none will undertake to lead us right, we shall find guides who will contrive to conduct us to shame and ruin. –Burke

We have no leaders because we have no true conservatives in church or state. A European, if he is a Christian, should not look to conserve a particular theology or rite, he should seek to preserve the European people's mystical, blood connection to Jesus Christ. He should enjoin his people to search the Scriptures with their hearts and to stay connected to Christ in and through their people. When the churchmen preach Athenian philosophy, they become as sounding brass and a tinkling cymbal, they become nothing; they are grist for the liberals' mill. Likewise the secular conservatives, who are not conservative; they seek to preserve a man-made abstract system of government that is not grounded in the blood faith of the European people, just as the churchmen want to jettison the blood faith of the European people in order to conserve their mind-forged abstract theologies.

What are the conservatives talking about when they speak of 'preserving our democratic way of life'? I suppose if you forced a conservative to explain his love for democracy, he would talk about the four freedoms – freedom of worship, freedom of speech, freedom from want, and freedom from fear. And what do those freedoms, enunciated by Franklin D. Roosevelt and illustrated by Norman Rockwell, amount to? We have the freedom to worship Satan through the sacred negro, we do not have the freedom to criticize liberalism, we do not have freedom from want because we must always be subject to the economic policies of the liberals which are designed to impoverish whites, and we do not have freedom from fear because we live in constant fear of our cruel liberal overlords. Is such a society worth conserving? No, it is not. We should work with might and main to destroy the liberals' kingdom of hell on hearth. From the first freedom, the freedom to worship, stems all the other freedoms. And that so-called freedom to worship is the great blasphemy of the American experiment in democracy. We cannot have a state consecrated to Satan, through the noble black savage, and then claim there is freedom to worship so long as you pay homage to the state's gods. Our God is a jealous God, and that is right and proper, because it was our God and only our God, the God of the white Europeans, who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. Certainly He died for all, but only one race has ever championed the God of mercy and love. Try and picture a world without the Christ-bearing race. Such a world would be an absolute horror. And yet that is the world the liberals are building. They have 'illuminated' themselves beyond whiteness through their mystical connection to the noble black savage. Is that a 'nobility' we should seek? Such a 'nobility' forbids the worship of the God of mercy, forbids us to speak of or defend the antique Europeans who worshipped the God of mercy, denies us our daily bread if we do not worship at Satan's altars, and bids us fear the liberals who keep their kingdom in order through violence and terror. Will we ever be men again? Only if we see His blood upon the rose and respond to that vision with the passion of men and women who have forsaken moderate liberalism and intellectual Christianity for the Dream of the Rood.

The conservatives will only be allowed 'fair' elections when liberals are convinced the white grazers will vote the way the liberals want them to vote. The white grazers voted the wrong way in 2016, they did not vote for their own extermination, so they were not permitted to vote in 2020. If the liberals can manage to completely flood the United States with Africans, Moslems, Mexicans, and Chinese in the next four years, they might allow the white grazers to vote, but of course their votes will be overwhelmed by the colored majority. What has happened in South Africa will be the new status quo in America. The blood-red colored tide will envelop the white grazers, and they will write a new page of American history that shall be called the Lamentation of the White Grazers:

Remember, O LORD, what is come upon us: consider, and behold our reproach.

Our inheritance is turned to strangers, our houses to aliens.  
We are orphans and fatherless, our mothers are as widows.  
We have drunken our water for money; our wood is sold unto us.  
Our necks are under persecution: we labour, and have no rest.  
We have given the hand to the Egyptians, and to the Assyrians, to be satisfied with bread.  
-Lamentations 5: 1-6

What Burke told his fellow Britons — that what was happening in Jacobin France should be the concern of every European — is what must be said of what has happened and is happening in the United States. The United States has taken the democratic gambit of Satan further than any European nation has ever taken it before. But even the Eastern European countries that now seem like bastions of peace and tranquility compared to the United States and the wealthier nations of Western Europe have the liberal infection. They have universities in which liberals dwell, and they all claim to be democracies. As the wealthier nations of Europe become third world nations, the demon-hordes of color will look to the Eastern European nations. Democratic platitudes will not stop the hordes; only a Christ-centered people can put on the whole armor of Christ and defeat the colored barbarians from without and the liberals from within. And the latter danger, the liberals from within, is the greater danger. If you do not purge the liberals from within your nation, you will eventually become like unto the United States — a kingdom of hell on earth.

I frequently watch the European vignettes of the “Voice of the Globe,” the New York based actor James Fitzpatrick, who did a series of travelogues from the 1930s through 1950. I view the travelogues in much the same spirit that I reread Scott and Dickens: I will never, in the flesh, live in a Christian society, so I live in such societies through the stories of Scott, Dickens, and the European travelogues of James Fitzpatrick. In several of his European travelogues Fitzpatrick praises the white race, which is now verboten to do, but in some of his finest pieces, such as the short glimpses he gives us of rural Holland and rural Denmark, Fitzpatrick attributes the many virtues of those communities to democracy. Au contraire, the Holland and Denmark of 1949 seem like white paradises because they are ethnically and racially homogenous, and because the people living there are still living on the capital of the Christian faith. In less than 20 years those white paradises will become diverse, and they will sicken and die, because of the demon of democracy.

Burke tells us that, “Nation is a moral essence, not a geographical arrangement, or a denomination of the nomenclature.” The Dream of the Rood Europeans saw the divine charity bleeding on the cross and they made that divine condescension their faith. If Christ is scientized, He becomes like unto all the false, man-made systems. That is what theology in the churches and democracy in government does — theology scientized God and democracy scientized man. The mystical core of our faith is in our spirit and blood connection to our people in and through Christ. That was St. Paul’s faith, and it was the faith of the Europeans who came to Rome as conquerors but who still bent their knees to Christ, not as slaves, but as free men who saw in Christ the Lord a hero God greater than Odin, Thor, and all the principalities and powers of this world. That faith must still be our faith. We must, like Simon the Cyrenian, take up the cross of Christ. Simon was forced to carry the cross, but we shall willingly take it up. We can no longer allow the divine love to lie bleeding in the prison of liberalism. Ever since the satanic conception of the “Land of Liberty,” Americans have replaced pietas with “city on a hill” blasphemy. Now this American city of Satan can serve as a warning to white Europeans here and throughout the world. Liberalism is the greatest heresy of them all, because it is the synthesis of all heresies. All the heresies — Orientalism, Islam, Judaism, and negro worship, which differ from each other in many ways, are united by one great passion — the hatred of Jesus Christ. And that is and always shall be the one great passion in hell.

If we can’t find it in our hearts to oppose the passion of liberalism with a passion like unto the divine passion, we are no longer Europeans. I can’t believe, I refuse to believe, that the people who once saw a great light will continue to accept the reign of Satan. The realization of what we have lost will sustain us in our battle to become, once again, the Christ-bearing race. +

---

### **The Heart of Hearts - April 3, 2021**

And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. —Luke 24: 28-29

---

Samuel Beckett was one of the premier existentialist novelists and playwrights of the mid-20th century. In one of his later plays he depicts two men taking cover in the midst of a massive bombing raid. They see a small child in an open field who will surely be killed if one of them does not save him. One man says, “We have got to save him.” The other replies, “Leave him there, it just doesn’t matter.” The second man was right; if God does not exist, nothing really matters. Whether we live 100 years or one year, it all amounts to the same thing: Nothing really matters. The existentialists did us a great service by pushing the ultimate question in our faces: Did Christ rise from the dead on the third day? They, the existentialists, said, “No, Christ did not rise from the dead on the third day.” But the existentialists did not think that was good news. They

responded to their discovery that Christ be not risen with despair, which is how we should respond to that terrible news. The liberals' reaction was different from the existentialists' reaction; they were and are delighted with what they claim their scientific brains have discovered – that Christ be not risen. Now joy can reign supreme if only we can get rid of whiteness and become black, pure black inside. Of course, those who will not become black, pure black inside, must be eliminated. That includes thee and me.

Every denominational branch of Christian Jewry has denied the Holy Ghost. In Dostoevsky's *Brother Karamazov*, the Grand Inquisitor hurls two charges at Jesus Christ. Both charges seem to be unanswerable. First, the Grand Inquisitor tells Christ that He thought too much of men; He should not have given them free will, because they don't want it. They simply want material guarantees that they will have security in this world. And secondly, the Grand Inquisitor tells Christ that He is a liar: He said He would return to earth and set all things right, and He did not return. He left mankind bereft, He left them orphaned. In his original notebooks, Dostoyevsky had Christ give a rational answer to Ivan's Grand Inquisitor. But he changed his mind, and in the final manuscript Christ simply embraces the Grand Inquisitor and kisses him. Unfortunately the churchmen could not resist the temptation to give a rational explanation to the Grand Inquisitor. Every Christian sect has given us their rational explanation to the Grand Inquisitor's accusations against Christ, and every Christian sect's rational explanations have driven their followers into the arms of Satan. The answer to the Grand Inquisitor can only be found in the human heart, where the Holy Ghost resides. If you bypass the human heart, because it can lead men astray, and bid them look to pure reason, you have left them without the Comforter, who tells us, through the mystical, undefinable virtue of charity, why Christ has not left us bereft and why He has not thought too much of us in giving us the freedom to choose heaven or hell.

There is a third charge that Ivan, stepping away from his Grand Inquisitor persona, makes against Christ. Ivan rejects Christ because of human suffering. A loving God, if He was a merciful God worthy of our love, would not permit such suffering. That is Ivan's contention. And Alyosha has no rational answer for him; he merely points to Christ on the cross. Did I say merely? That merely is all in all.

Liberalism has spread as our scientific knowledge has expanded. Christ did not come back as He said He would, nor has He alleviated human suffering, despite the fact that He claimed to be a God of mercy and compassion. That is the liberals' seemingly unanswerable charge against Christ. So the liberals demand that we hand our wills over to them so that they can give us what Christ cannot or will not give us, the alleviation of our physical suffering through science and the alleviation of our emotional and 'psychic' ills (they no longer use the term 'spiritual') through the science of psychology. And for the ecstatic moment, the sense that we are in direct contact with the divine? The liberals have given us the sacred negro. What more could a man want out of life?

The churchmen have responded to the liberals' assault against Christ as the false comforters responded to Job. They were defeated, their rational apologetics are no match for Ivan Karamazov, so now they just say "amen" to whatever the liberals put forth. It is a pathetic spectacle. But our people, the antique Europeans, did not cave in to liberalism despite the fact that they suffered much while they looked for His return. Why did they believe? God has sent us a comforter who has given us the answer to that question. There is nothing more comforting, more uplifting, than that passage in St. Luke in which he describes the walk the two disciples took with Christ on the road to Emmaus and their subsequent reaction to His divine presence at the Inn: "Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the Scriptures?" Christ has not broken His promise to us and He never will. Search the scriptures with your heart, and you will find Him.

And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread. And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. –Luke 24: 33-36

Let me share, in closing, four quotes from the heart of Christian Europe that have become part of me. If you are a regular reader, you will recognize the passages because I have used them often.

First, there are the lines from *The Wind in the Willows*. Ratty's love for his river describes my love for Christian Europe. I don't care about any nation outside of that nation.

'I beg your pardon,' said the Mole, pulling himself together with an effort. 'You must think me very rude; but all this is so new to me. So—this—is—a—River!'

'THE River,' corrected the Rat.

'And you really live by the river? What a jolly life!'

'By it and with it and on it and in it,' said the Rat. 'It's brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It's my world, and I don't want any other.

Secondly, there is Thomas Nelson Page's response to all those who attack our European kith and kin:

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth. —*Under the Crust*

Thirdly, there is LeFanu's vision of the light that shineth even in the face of death:

Next day was the funeral, that appalling necessity; smuggled away in whispers, by black familiars, unresisting, the beloved one leaves home, without a farewell, to darken those doors no more; henceforward to lie outside, far away, and forsaken, through the drowsy heats of summer, through days of snow and nights of tempest, without light or warmth, without a voice near. Oh, Death, king of terrors! The body quakes and the spirit faints before thee. It is vain, with hands clasped over our eyes, to scream our reclamation; the horrible image will not be excluded. We have just the word spoken eighteen hundred years ago, and our trembling faith. And through the broken vault the gleam of the Star of Bethlehem. — *Uncle Silas*

And finally, there is the Gentle Bard of Avon, who tells us about the living God who transcends our and Horatio's philosophy:

SONNET 31

Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,  
Which I by lacking have supposed dead;  
And there reigns love and all love's loving parts,  
And all those friends which I thought buried.  
How many a holy and obsequious tear  
Hath dear religious love stolen from mine eye,  
As interest of the dead, which now appear  
But things remov'd, that hidden in thee lie!  
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,  
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,  
Who all their parts of me to thee did give;  
That due of many now is thine alone:  
Their images I lov'd I view in thee,  
And thou (all they) hast all the all of me.

-William Shakespeare

Christ Has Risen!

Indeed He Has! +

---

### Orphans - March 27, 2021

Sleep, my child and peace attend thee  
All through the night;  
Guardian angels God will send thee  
All through the night.  
Soft, the drowsy hours are creeping,  
Hill and vale, in slumber sleeping,  
I my loving vigil keeping,  
All through the night.

While the moon her watch is keeping  
All through the night;  
While the weary world is sleeping  
All through the night.  
O'er thy spirit gently stealing,  
Visions of delight revealing,  
Breathes a pure and holy feeling,  
All through the night.

Deep the silence round us spreading,

All through the night;  
Dark the path that we are treading,  
All through the night.  
Still the coming day discerning,  
By the hope within us burning,  
To the dawn our footsteps turning,  
All through the night.

Star of Faith the dark adorning,  
All through the night;  
Leads us fearless toward the morning,  
All through the night.  
Though our hearts be wrapped in sorrow,  
From the home of dawn we borrow,  
Promise of a glad tomorrow,  
All through the night.

---

The liberals' war against the white race, called 'cancel culture,' has met little resistance within the ranks of the white grazers and their conservative leaders. Our culture is what we are as a people; it is our literature, our art, our music, our families, and our faith. If we allow the liberals and their colored allies to cancel our culture, what is left to us? What is left to the white person who is willing to allow his culture to be cancelled is nothing. He will attempt to show his liberal overlords that he is black, pure black inside, in order to prove that he has been illuminated, but illumination is hard to prove. There is nothing from white culture that will not ultimately be condemned as racist. How can a European completely divest himself of everything white and still remain in this world? He can't. First the grazers who want to retain something of white Europe in their liberalism will be eliminated, but in the end the liberals will have to eliminate themselves, because no one will be able to maintain the perfect purity of the un-white.

Whenever I talked to conservatives or white grazers during this past election year, I came up against a wall when I brought up the race issue. Whenever I said that the liberals could not be defeated unless white people faced the fact the liberals were bound and determined to eliminate the white race, the grazers and the conservatives, "turned all their faces away." I was bringing up the black rhino in the living room that we are all supposed to ignore, even though the black rhino gores all the white people that come near him.

Why am I not supposed to bring up the liberals' attack, through the noble black savage, on the white race? I am not supposed to bring that subject up because the white race has been brought before the liberal Sanhedrin and found guilty of racism, so now and forever white people must not fight against their cancellation as a people. They must walk softly, speak gently, and do penance for their racism by grafting their souls onto the black race. It is my contention that white people must not become pure black inside, they must be white, pure white inside. What was the horrendous crime that white people committed, the sin without pardon? Their sin, when they were a people, was that they took the Son of the Living God into the vital center of their culture. Ever since the Europeans' Dream-of-the-Rood moment in time, the liberals, at first on the outer fringes of Christian Europe, now at the center of liberal Europe, have been stand-ins for Caiaphas. They are forever condemning the Christian Europeans to death. And it is 'racism' that allows the liberal Sanhedrin to cancel the white Europeans' culture and their lives with complete impunity.

After the murder of a white this past summer by a noble black savage, I heard a conservative commentator say that the shootings and the riots in our country are not a race issue, they are a "human issue." We should be against murder and riots because such things are "inhumane." Of course murder is inhumane, but the murders throughout our nation are a racial matter. The liberals permit and encourage the murder of whites because they hate the humane God, the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. If we do not support the 'racist' culture of the antique Europeans who believed that individual human beings were created in the image of God and not in the image of the beast, on what grounds can we oppose the murder of white people in our nation or anywhere else in the world? If we are all statistical aggregates, belonging to nature, and whites are the defective spores of nature's statistical aggregate, why should we care when white people are 'cancelled'? The liberals do not care, they want to see whiteness eliminated from the face of the earth. And they will get their wish if white 'conservatives' keep hiding under the bed every time the liberals scream, 'racist.' (1)

That the race war, which only one side, the liberal side, is fighting, is a religious war is so obvious that I shouldn't have to say it. But it is not obvious to the willfully blind conservatives, so I will state the obvious: All that is good, not only in the European nations, but in the non-European nations as well, stems from the fact that the antique Europeans believed that love came down from heaven in the person of Jesus Christ. That is why the murder of whites throughout our nation is a race issue. If we are not 'racist,' if we are not white Christians who love and hate with hearts of flesh, what are we? We are liberals, and liberals are not opposed to the murder of white people because they are the evil ones, who once believed in

the God that opposes all things liberal – abortion, sodomy, negro worship, etc. Moderate liberals who appeal to the liberals' humanity do not understand liberalism. And they do not understand liberalism because they are divided against themselves. They want some liberalism, but not all of it. So they close the eyes of their heart and refuse to acknowledge what the heart of a European Christian can see: The liberals are pure evil; they hate Jesus Christ. The Christian European is one with the Psalmist: "Lord, how long shall the wicked, how long shall the wicked triumph?"

The wicked triumphed in this last election because they were willing to use violence in order to impose their will on a confused majority coalition that believed in the sacred, democratic litany: "We are non-violent, we are not racist." And what does non-violence in the face of evil result in? Are human lives saved? No, because when the good will not fight the wicked, evil flourishes. The Chinese communists once again can deal out death at the head of a death squad called the World Health Organization, and the colored hordes can once again bring death and destruction to white Americans at our open-door borders. All that amounts to nothing in comparison with what the white conservatives think they have gained by not fighting – they are able to say, "We are non-violent, we are not racist." But if we have hearts, if we are Europeans, we should be violent and we should be 'racist': we should love our own in and through the Savior, and we should fight for our own in His Holy Name.

What happened in America in 2020 already occurred in the European colonies throughout Africa and Latin America. Under liberal guidance the colored races killed and murdered the whites in order to gain 'independence':

Just punishment was to be meted out to the perpetrators of violence. Indeed, the Belgian public prosecutor wasted no time in attacking a European who had shot a Congolese in the very act of raping his wife and although he was not sentenced his action was criticized. He should have first mediated with the offender before passing to acts of violence. Mediate against violence. The fundamental error committed by all sensitive consciences since colonialism went out of favor. Against primitive force one can only employ force. Mediation is a sign of weakness and will be assessed as such...

The year 1959 was a constant example of the futility of mediation against force. The political leaders in the Congo used the threat of riots as a weapon to oblige the Belgian Government to concede immediate Independence. From a vague future promise in January 1959 it became reality for July 1960, eighteen months later. –*Congo Cauldron*, D. P. Dugauquier

I am against slavery, not because slavery is bad for blacks; on the contrary, slavery was very good for blacks, particularly in the old South. They never knew charity until they were treated, by the white slave owners, with Christian charity. I am against black slavery because of what Agnes McGehee says in Stark Young's novel *So Red the Rose* when she laments all the white blood that was shed on behalf of the negro. Whenever white nations take a colored minority into their midst, there will always be a contingent of liberals – the Christ-haters – who will use that colored minority as a weapon against the white Europeans. That is why racial purity is so important. Without their colored minions, liberals lose their sword. They still must be fought, because liberalism is pure evil, but without their colored minions, without their noble black savages, the liberals lose their savior and must fight against an enemy who no longer fears them because they don't have their terrible swift sword called 'racism.'

If wishes were horses, beggars would ride. I wish I could send all the colored tribesmen in the European nations back to Africa, but that is not going to happen. So how do we deal with the terrible swift sword of the liberals, the noble savage? First we must see him for what he is, an ignoble savage:

To come to the point at once, I beg to say that I have not the least belief in the Noble Savage. I consider him a prodigious nuisance, and an enormous superstition. His calling rum fire-water, and me a pale face, wholly fail to reconcile me to him. I don't care what he calls me. I call him a savage, and I call a savage a something highly desirable to be civilised off the face of the earth. I think a mere gent (which I take to be the lowest form of civilisation) better than a howling, whistling, clucking, stamping, jumping, tearing savage. It is all one to me, whether he flattens his hair between two boards, or spreads his nose over the breadth of his face, or drags his lower lip down by great weights, or blackens his teeth, or knocks them out, or paints one cheek red and the other blue, or tattoos himself, or oils himself, or rubs his body with fat, or crimps it with knives. Yielding to whichever of these agreeable eccentricities, he is a savage—cruel, false, thievish, murderous; addicted more or less to grease, entrails, and beastly customs; a wild animal with the questionable gift of boasting; a conceited, tiresome, bloodthirsty, monotonous humbug.

Even if the noble black savage is not noble, we should not mistreat him, the black apologist asserts. I agree, and so does Charles Dickens:

To conclude as I began. My position is, that if we have anything to learn from the Noble Savage, it is what to avoid. His virtues are a fable; his happiness is a delusion; his nobility, nonsense. We have no greater justification for being cruel to the miserable object, than for being cruel to a William Shakespeare or an Isaac Newton; but he passes away before an immeasurably better and higher power than ever ran wild in any earthly woods, and the world will be all the better when his place knows him no more.

Which brings me to the second part of our 'should not' – we should not let the liberals cancel our culture because of our white ancestors' alleged mistreatment of the noble black savages. The myth of mean whites mistreating blacks is only true

when seen with the utopian eyes of the liberals' intellects. But when we see them, our white ancestors, through the eyes of the heart, something quite extraordinary happens. We see the only people in the history of the world who treated a savage, captive race with charity and mercy. If you wish to see what that "charity of honor" looks like when it is practiced, I suggest you read Stark Young's *So Red the Rose*.

The two utopian powers, the intellectual Christians and the secular liberals, have joined forces to destroy the white European people by separating them from the incarnational culture of old Europe. Our people with the hearts of flesh were once connected in blood and spirit to the living God. The intellectual Christian sees imperfections in the antique Europeans, he sees wars, lust, envy, and every sin proscribed by our Lord, so the intellectual Christian damns the Christian Europeans and looks to a purer Christianity as practiced by the Chinese, by the Mexicans, by the negroes, or by the Indians of the Amazon rain forest. But in casting his lot with the purer Christians of color, the intellectual Christian has cancelled our spiritual base. If we can't stand with Christian Europeans who knew the Savior in their hearts, then we have nothing firm and solid on which to stand in the day of battle. We will be overwhelmed by the secular utopians, the liberals, while the Christian utopians join the army of the secular utopians against the Christian Europeans, who must be cancelled because what they consider pietas, the love of their own, the Christian and liberal utopians call 'racism.'

The reason there is never a Christian response to the evil that is liberalism is because the hearts of the Christian churchmen have waxed cold. They should be against the liberal utopians because the liberal utopians support everything that is against Christianity, but still the intellectual Christians support the liberals. They use 'racism' as an excuse for their abandonment of the Christ-bearing race. However, is that really the reason they hate whites and love the noble savages of color? No, it is not. The churchmen have left the faith that is bred in the bone and the blood behind for a faith in their own intellects. They fantasize that the new Christians, the people of color, will follow the clerical Atticus Finches to a new land, a utopian land, where all white Europeans have been cancelled except the exalted ones, the clerical Atticus Finches. The secular liberals have other ideas. They will use the apostate clergymen for their own purposes, and then they will exterminate them as well.

The Greek philosophers' religion of pure mind gave way to the mystery religions. People wanted direct contact with the deity, without the mediation of reason. But the mystery religions had no moral content; the gods of those religions had no love for individual men and women. It was Christ, who was and is the Love which visited earth, who gave us the personal, ethical, and loving contact with the living God. The churchmen, over time, turned the love which passeth the understanding of pure reason into a philosophy. That is why the first half of the 20th century gave birth to the death-of-God existentialist writers. Christ's resurrection was not rational, and yet man needed a loving God. Hence, the despair of the existentialists who could not see anything greater than man's reason. But something developed in the latter half of the 20th century which was much worse than the despair of the existentialists. The existentialists said, "Christ be not risen, so all is cheerless, dark and deadly." The new age liberal, the heirs of the French and American Jacobins, said, "Christ be not risen, isn't that wonderful! Now we can once again have our own mystery religion. We can have direct contact with our god – the sacred negro." The reason the George Floyd ceremony in Congress resembled some strange religious ritual was because that is what it was – a strange, bizarre, satanically-inspired religious ritual. St. Paul told us what the true mysticism was and is in 1st Corinthians 13. We come in direct contact with the one true God in and through our people, who loved Him. Charity never faileth. Why should we deal peacefully with the liberals who have declared war on that "charity of honor" culture of the antique Europeans? And why should we be moderate liberals who seek a place for whites in the kingdom of hell on earth rather than evicting the liberals and their colored minions from what was once Christian Europe? Whoever tries to cancel the culture of the antique Europeans, be they theologians, mad-dog liberals, or managerial conservatives, sins against the living God. If you take the mystical core away from our culture, you take away Christ. It is His culture, so magnificently described by Handel, that we will celebrate on Easter Sunday. That is the culture of life everlasting, which is in direct opposition to the liberals' culture of death and darkness. Cancel our culture? No, in the name of Christ, thou shall not cancel our culture. We shall, in His name, cancel your culture.+

---

(1) The conservative Quakers tell us that the murder of Asians in Atlanta occurred because we do not discourage violence. No, such indiscriminate, unjustified violence occurs when you support the image-of-the-beast-in-man culture of the liberals. Why is it that the only violence of white people in recent years is the wrong kind? It is because white people are not immune to the new cultural influences – the culture of the liberals' beast-in-man. We will either have the religion of Jesus Christ, or else we will have the religion of the devil.

---

## **The Dualism at the Heart of Europe - March 20, 2021**

For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire. –2 Peter 2: 21-22



The strange voice, exalted, oracular in mad inspiration, drew nearer in the darkness until Dr. Fu Manchu appeared in the circle of light. His mask-like face was transfigured, his eyes glittered like jewels. He was a seer, a prophet, a man set above human laws.

-Sax Rohmer

---

I was quite fond of the Dr. Seuss books when I was growing up. In later years he became an environmentalist and an anti-nuclear activist, but still, in his prime, he took us away from the Dick and Jane books and gave us some wonderful, imaginative stories. My favorite Dr. Seuss book was *King Stilts* in which the Patrol Cats of the Kingdom of Binn have a climactic battle with the Nizzards. Another favorite of mine was *And to Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street*. In that story, a small boy is bored with the horse and cart he sees every day on Mulberry Street, and he imagines a whole panorama of people and scenes that he sees on his imagined Mulberry Street. One of his imagined scenes has “A Chinese boy, Who eats with sticks.” That one line with the accompanying picture of a Chinese boy with chop sticks got the book taken off library shelves in America. *Fifty Shades of Grey* can be on the shelves, but not *And to Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street*. If Marco (that is the child’s name) had seen an LGBTQTA parade on Mulberry Street, his book could have stayed on the library shelf, but he had to be Oriental-phobic and see a stereotypical Chinese boy, hence he and his book must be cast into outer darkness.

I’m not going to go into the liberals’ laundry list of children’s books from ‘racist’ Europe or the great literary works and other artworks that are now banned. Instead I want to focus on what the Mulberry Street book ban represents. It represents the alliance of the two most Satanic forces in the world – liberalism and Orientalism. The liberals worship the intellect of man divorced from the Christian heart, because they have rejected Jesus Christ; they hate Him. And because they hate Him, they hate the white Christ-bearing race. The Orientals also hate the white race because of the European’s connection to the God of charity and mercy. To the cruel, diabolical minds of the Chinese, St. Paul’s assertion that “knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth” is an anathema. They, the Chinese, do not even have a word for charity in their language. And the liberals are laboring with might and main to eliminate the people who once championed the God of charity and mercy.

The Chinese openly brag that the 21st century is their century. That certainly seems to be the case if we are talking about the principalities and powers of this world. The Chinese disposed of Trump by inflicting a virus on the West that destroyed the economies of the European nations, and they have reestablished themselves as the head of the World Health Organization. So long as liberalism is the religion of the European people, the Chinese will rule the European people, because the liberals’ hatred of Jesus Christ is in line with the Chinese’s hatred of Jesus Christ; hence, the liberals will always ally with the Chinese against the white Europeans, the Christ-bearing people, when they were a people.

Again, we see the significance of the Trump electoral defeat. Trump was a moderate liberal, which now passes for a conservative – he wanted to go back to the blending of liberalism and Christianity. But the liberals wanted purity. They wanted pure, unadulterated Satanism. So they looked to the Orient, to the masters of cruelty and demonism to help them avoid the horror of a return to moderate liberalism. The Chinese are not evil because they are communists, they are communist because they are evil. The mystical core of their culture was demonic well before they became a communist nation: “Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia” (Acts 16:6). (1)

The liberals who scream ‘racist’ when a European speaks of the demonic, mystical core of the Oriental cultures and describes the European people as the Christ-bearers, still believe in the mystic of the Orient and the Christ-bearing white race; they have simply reversed the mystic. They believe the Orientals are good, because they worship the intellect of man divorced from the heart, and they believe the antique Europeans and those who follow in their train were and are evil, because they think with the passion of a Christian heart, they believe in the Word made flesh, which is an anathema to the Gnostic minds of the Orientals and to the liberals of the West as well.

The stated purpose of the pro-life movement in this country was to procure legal protection for the unborn. If we keep that goal in mind we must state that the pro-life movement was a colossal failure. That does not mean that there was not something noble, something called charity, in the hearts of many pro-lifers, but it does mean that something was lacking in the movement. The same can be and must be said about the Christian European missionary movements. There were many well-intentioned missionaries. And just as the anti-abortion movement saved some babies, so did the missionary movements save, through the power of Christ working within the movements, some heathen souls. But the Europeans did not Christianize the heathen nations as a whole. The mystical core of the heathen nations remained heathen – Mexico stayed Aztec, the Africans stayed with their gods of blood and sacrifice, and the yellow races stayed with the diabolical arts of Fu Manchu.

Now we come to the Europeans, the people who took the Word made flesh into their hearts and placed Christ at the mystical core of their culture. They dreamt the Dream of the Rood because they saw with their eyes and heard with their ears and understood with their hearts. From that moment on, the visionary moment, the word ‘European’ meant Christian. In the movie *The Mask of Fu Manchu*, based on the novels of Sax Rohmer, the evil Oriental genius, Fu Manchu, repeatedly refers to the “detested white race” as the Christ-bearing race. Yes, that is correct. An Oriental who becomes a Christian, and there are some, must go against the mystical core of his nation. In contrast, a European who goes over to the enemies of Christ must go against the mystical core of Europe, which is Christian. If enough Europeans become liberals, can the mystical core of Europe change? Can the European people become one with the enemies of Christ? The reason the mysticism of the East became so popular in the West in the 1960s and beyond is not because the East became Christian but because the West became anti-Christian.

The European people could never be defeated from without when they were a Christian people. They are not now the slaves of the Chinese because they were defeated by the Chinese; they are now the slaves of the Chinese because they no longer believe in themselves as the Christ-bearing race. They detest their ancestors, the white Europeans, with a greater intensity than the colored races detest the white Europeans. So long as that hatred of whiteness prevails in the West, the Chinese will rule the West. The answer to the question of whether the mystical core of Europe can be changed if enough Europeans become liberals, is yes. The mystical core of Europe can and has been changed. There is now a dualism at the heart of Europe. There is the old Europe, the Christ-centered Europe, which has given way to the new Europe that belongs to Satan. But we, the European people, have in our history, in our racial memory, something of infinite value: our people once knew the Savior — we once shared our tears with and gave our hearts to Him who saves. That is why the liberals must reframe their new faith in Christian forms; they must, unlike the Orientals, have a triune God; they must have the sacred negro to replace Christ as the second person in their new trinity. Will that need for a secular savior ultimately bring them in conflict with their Oriental masters who do not need the sacred negro? Quite possibly it will. The devil’s kingdom of hell on earth will not be harmonious. But that should not be our main concern. We, the remnant band of European Christians, shall remain with our first love — the Europe grounded in the love of the Word made flesh, which is an anathema to the liberals of the West and to the men of the East as well.

When faith in Jesus Christ becomes theology, when He becomes the end product of reason, our faith waxes cold, as cold as the Orientals’ faith in their cruel, detached rational gods. Christian Europe was not exceptional because Europeans were smarter than the other races, Christian Europe was exceptional because the God whom the Europeans championed was a God with a heart of flesh. Christ was not the cloud of unknowing, He spoke to our ancestors and He speaks to us now, if we hear and see with our hearts, through the Holy Ghost.

The terrible slaughter of whites at our borders, the triumph of the Orient over the Occident in our culture and our economy is the result of the European people’s descent into rationalism. The conservative-liberals are currently involved in an endless debate with the mad-dog liberals in which the one thing necessary is not even subject to debate. The one thing necessary is that we, the European people, should reject rationalism and return to the passionate, blood faith of the antique Europeans. Moderate liberalism is lukewarm, it becomes vomit; we shall never be able to combat the demonism of the liberals and the Orientals with the rational vomit of moderate liberalism. The modern shadows of the liberals, the conservatives, advocate rational vomit as a solution to all our ills. They want to show the liberals that the destruction of the white race and complete economic dependence on communist China is irrational. But are the liberals irrational? No, they are not. All decisions that we make, for good or evil, are made in our hearts. The liberals’ hearts belong to Satan; they hate Jesus Christ. So it is quite rational for them to want to be ruled by the Chinese rather than by a moderate liberal such as Trump. Reason is a sword wielded in defense of our heart’s deepest yearnings. The liberals yearn for all things opposed to His reign of charity: legalized abortion, sodomy, transgenderism, feminism, negro worship, and religious egalitarianism, with the exception of Christianity. The moderate liberals want, in their hearts, a lukewarm Christianity, so they use their reason to defend a Christian presence in Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. But Christ will not support such a kingdom; He wants our whole heart, He wants us to rely on Him and Him alone. The tragic blending of intellectual Christianity and liberalism has left the European people defenseless against the liberals’ noble black savages and the Oriental gods of merciless cruelty.

Dostoyevsky’s inability, when he was a member of a revolutionary cabal, to repudiate in his heart, “the radiant personality of Christ,” mirrored my own experiences as a young man. I could not reconcile the irrationality of Christ’s resurrection from the dead with reason and science. But was there something greater than reason and science? Why did I profess a non-belief in Christ, but still say my prayers in Jesus’s name? We must try to understand God as St. Paul enjoined us to understand Him, with a “heart of flesh.” Why is the human heart, which our Lord and St. Paul always referred to as our link to the living God, constantly derided by ‘Christian’ theologians and liberals? The theologians deride the heart because the passions we find therein can lead a man to heaven or hell. “There must,” the theologians tell us, “be an easier route to heaven.” There isn’t. But there is a sure route to hell — it is by way of the human mind abstracted from the wellspring of existence, the human heart connected to His sacred heart. The liberals deride the sentiments emanating from the human

heart, because they fear such sentiments might lead to Him. So they preach reason in order to cloak what is in their hearts – the hatred for Christ and His people.

During my struggle to come to a Pauline understanding of God, I had numerous conversations with a teacher, a former Catholic priest who was now a religious agnostic, which is more than a bit of a contradiction, but he was one. My teacher-friend could not reconcile faith in Christ with the rational apologetics that he believed in. He was right, by his lights. The compatibility of faith and reason – reason as defined by the philosopher and the theologian – cannot give us the blessed assurance of the prophets and St. Paul. But is not man more than reason? Is he more than a piano key? Dostoevsky's inability to renounce the "radiant personality of Jesus Christ" brought him to believe in the God who transcends our reason. That became my belief as well. My teacher, the lapsed Thomist, needed a strong dose of the poetic of our people – their belief in the God-Man whose love for us reaches into the secret chambers of our heart and gives us the heart to understand what the philosophers and theologians can never understand – the Word made flesh.

Christ is a stumbling block to the Jews and foolishness to the Athenian philosophers, but He is the morning star to the poet of the absolute, our apostle, St. Paul. We must see Christ as St. Paul saw Him and as our people saw Him – he and they held the living God in the "fleshy tables of the heart." The sword of the spirit is the word of God. What then is the sword of Satan? It is reason detached from the heart of Christ. The liberals and the Chinese wield that sword. Must we surrender to them, who are the principalities and powers of this world? Our Supreme Court does whatever they say.<sup>(2)</sup> And our church men loudly proclaim the compatibility of Christ and liberalism in the hopes that the terrible swift sword of Satan will descend on the non-illuminated whites instead of on them. We have only that charity of honor to keep us upright in this, the evil day, Satan's day. But that 'only' is everything. "This must not go on" comes from a heart of flesh, a European heart that belongs to Christ and His people. The evil of moderate liberalism, which is modern conservatism, is that it tells us we do not have to make the Dostoyevskian choice – we do not have to decide between Christ and the devil. But we do have to decide about the "radiant personality of Christ." Was He the Son of the living God or was He a false God, a charlatan? The liberals and their Chinese allies have made their decision. Let us leave the vomit of moderate liberalism and stand with the people who were not afraid to embrace the foolishness of the Cross of Christ. +

---

(1) I once read an account written by a European missionary to China of the first time he told the Christ story to a group of Chinese. He was delighted when they listened with intense interest to the story of Christ's crucifixion. But then they promptly went out and crucified a group of white Europeans traveling through China. Whatever is good in the colored races was the result of the white Europeans' refusal to accept the colored races' cultural values. Now that everything stemming from old Europe is deemed 'racist' and everything emanating from the colored races is deemed good, we are witnessing the enthronement of Satan in the European countries.

(2) Brett Kavanaugh was one of Trump's appointees. He returned that enormous favor by betraying Trump. He was one of the Supreme Court 'Justices' who refused to hear the election fraud cases because he was afraid of the Left and wanted to court their favor. The self-serving Amy Barrett was one with Kavanaugh. Both 'justices' remind me of Pip's sister in Great Expectations. After Orlick beats her into imbecility, she always is very concerned to please him, because she does not want another beating. Kavanaugh and Barrett both took a liberal beating at their confirmation hearings. Barrett, because of her sex, might avoid another beating, but Kavanaugh's moral cowardice will not help him. Biden and company are still going after him. He deserves his fate. If you won't stand tall, if you won't leave the vomit of moderate liberalism in order to fight the mad-dog liberals, you deserve the place to which you came – the kingdom of hell on earth. Biden and his legion of devils have the hellish audacity to tell us that their policy of white genocide is the kinder and gentler policy. Kinder to whom? Sympathy for the devil has become the worship of the devil. Everything that is anti-Christian, everything that is satanic, has been enshrined into law in the United States of Satan.

---

## **We Cannot Barter Our Souls - March 13, 2021**

Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a law? They gather themselves together against the soul of the righteous, and condemn the innocent blood. But the LORD is my defence; and my God is the rock of my refuge. And he shall bring upon them their own iniquity, and shall cut them off in their own wickedness; yea, the LORD our God shall cut them off. –Psalm 94: 20-23

---

The wheel has come full circle; our people who once championed the Word made flesh no longer, "see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart." They have decided that Christ be not risen, and they must look for another savior to preside over another realm. Christ's reign of charity must give way to Satan's reign of merciless cruelty. That is the decree of the new Sanhedrin, the Sanhedrin of Judaized Europeans – the liberals. – CWN

---

History does not tell us whether Louis XVI regretted his decision not to use violence on the bloodthirsty mob who stormed the palace of Versailles. He died nobly, refusing to receive absolution from the apostate priests who presided over his execution. But did he regret that his benevolence to the Jacobins resulted in the massacre of the Swiss guards who fought so heroically in his defense? Did he regret what he must have known was coming after his execution – the murder of his

wife and children, and the murder of the French aristocracy? We do not know for sure what went on in the inmost soul of that king who was so far from doing harm himself that he could not see the satanic depths of his Jacobin enemies. Is it possible that even at the hour of his death he did not see the pure evil of the Jacobins and the terrible part he played in the destruction of Christian France by his failure to act against them? Yes, it is quite possible, because once a man's soul is tainted with liberalism, his heart constricts and he cannot see clearly. Louis XVI was a noble king, but he had caught the disease, the sickness unto death, which is liberalism.

I bring this up because of an article I saw in a conservative publication in which a conservative pundit recommended that we, the people who did not vote for Biden, should fight "non-violently" against the liberals who defrauded us in the recent election. His advocacy has been and is the stance of Trump and his followers, so let us examine the conservatives' faith in non-violence. Their faith is based on the assumption that liberalism – democracy, civil rights, liberty, equality, and fraternity – is good. So all those who profess a belief in liberalism cannot be pure evil. And you cannot use violence unless your enemy is pure evil. Is there such a thing as pure evil in the conservatives' eyes? Yes, of course there is. White racism is pure evil, so you can and should use violence against white racists. Such violence is 'good violence.' The conservatives are always on the defensive, trying to show that they are not racist, while the liberals are always on the offensive, engaging in a war to exterminate white racists.

Let us hope that Trump and his family will not be executed as Louis XVI and his family were executed, but it is crystal clear that Trump has repeated the tragic mistake of Louis XVI because of his inability to see the unmitigated evil of liberalism. He did not order the Federal troops to fire on the black rioters during the summer of 2020 because he did not believe his liberal opponents who supported the rioters were pure evil. He believed, in part, in the justice of the liberals' cause because they believe in the noble black savage, so he refused to act against the Black Lives Matter rioters and murderers. And the Supreme Court justices took note. The left let it be known that they would not tolerate a Trump victory, they would violently oppose a second term. Trump, on the conservative side, let it be known that he and his followers would be non-violent, they would not fight against any enemy that flew the Black Lives Matter banner. The United States did not have to become a vassal state of the Chinese communists; it did become a vassal state because the conservatives, who are not conservative, are Quakers, and the mad-dog liberals are violent Jacobins. The kingdom of heaven is taken by violence, and the kingdom of hell on earth was and is made possible by 'good people' who oppose the violence of the liberals with aggressive non-violence.

The liberals obtained a crushing victory in 2020, and they will remain ensconced in power, free to murder non-illuminated whites through legal channels, because they are willing to violently defend their satanic kingdom while the conservatives are unwilling to violently oppose them. And a non-violent response to violence is a surrender to violence. We can't gnostically defeat liberalism. Evil is done by flesh and blood men at the instigation of Satan. We have to fight those flesh and blood minions of Satan as flesh and blood human beings must fight, with our whole heart, mind, and soul. If we fight gnostically, we are not really fighting. The non-violence of Trump and his people is the equivalent of a video game battle – it has no basis in reality.

The American conservatives are not conservative as Burke was conservative. Burke wanted to conserve Christian Europe against the Jacobins. The American conservatives want to conserve Emersonian superficiality: "There is nothing good or bad but thinking makes it so." They want the great American talk show, with the devil as the host, to go on forever. And the debate is always the same – who can best serve the sacred negro? "We are not racists," the conservatives tell their mad-dog brethren, "Our economic policies help the sacred negro while your policies hurt the sacred negro." The liberals and the conservative-liberals only differ over the means, they are in agreement about the end: to build a new world order grounded in the noble black savage, which has nothing to do with the old world order, Christian Europe.

The United States is the crowning achievement of the new world order liberals. It has evolved into a state which has institutionalized all things satanic – sodomy, transgenderism, feminism, legalized abortion, negro worship, and the integration of every non-Christian religion into a religious unity opposed to the Christian faith of the antique Europeans. Why should we conserve such a nation? How can we justify our 'non-violence' in the face of such a Babylonian monstrosity? Are we human beings or are we liberals? We can't be both. If we still regard ourselves as human beings created in the image of God, we must violently oppose the liberals who are determined to violently eliminate the image of God-in-man culture of the European people from the face of the earth.

Why did the liberals have to destroy Trump? Why did they and why do they still react so hysterically whenever his name is mentioned? Trump, like Louis XVI, is a moderate liberal, who thinks that Christianity and liberty, equality, and fraternity are compatible. And if they are compatible, there is no reason to exterminate the white Christ-bearing race. But the liberals, the Jacobins, know that Christ's reign of charity is not compatible with Satan's reign of merciless cruelty. They must, and they shall, eliminate whiteness from the face of the earth. The liberals' kingdom is much worse than pagan Rome because the post-Christian is worse than the pagan, but pagan Rome and Liberaldom are alike in one essential: both kingdoms could and can tolerate all religions, save one. Christ's outlandish claim that He was the Son of the living God

could not and cannot be syncretized into a multi-religious, diverse Roman empire or a diverse multi-religious liberal empire such as the United States. Christ and His followers had to be and must be purged from both empires.

Robespierre used the term 'purge' to describe what had to be done in order to purify France of Christians. The modern liberals, like Robespierre, are always purging their realms of white Christians. That is the essence of all modern demonocracies – the white race must be purged because it was the Christ-bearing race. And in order to ensure that they, the liberals, won't be purged from their utopian hell, they must show that they have gone beyond whiteness. (Chris Cuomo recently told a black newscaster on CNN that he, Chris Cuomo, was black in his soul.) That is why the white liberals are even more anti-white than the white-hating noble black savages. The liberals must prove that they are not white so they can preside over the purge of the non-illuminated whites.

Satan is not concerned with the intellectual Christianity in the organized churches. He can and does use the Emersonian superficiality in the churches to serve his kingdom of hell on earth. But he is concerned about cultural Christianity, the epistles-of-the-living-God Christianity that St. Paul spoke of: "Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men: Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart." (2 Corinthians 3: 2-3) Satan does not want any part of the people who took Christ into their hearts. That is why he has centered his attack on the spirit and blood culture of the antique Europeans rather than on organized Christian Jewry. He persuaded the Christian churchmen to defend their corporate, organizational church governments and let those 'insignificant' cultural entities, the epistles of the living God, who were and are the Christian Europeans, be consigned to the demonized dust heap of history. But let me ask the conservatives in Church and State a question: Why, if the 'racist' and 'sexist' culture of the antique Europeans is so evil, is it attacked by Satan's minions? Shouldn't you, the conservative churchmen and the conservative politicians, be against transgenderism, feminism, sodomy, legalized abortion, and negro worship? Shouldn't you be alarmed to find yourself in the same camp as the liberals, who advocate such things? Or does the fact that the liberals worship the noble black savage wash all their other sins away? Apparently it does.

Is there a reason why we must stand by while all the art works from the Christian era of our people are either banned outright or accompanied by severe lectures by illuminated, satanic liberals? Are we still a people if we permit liberals to demonize our heritage? Of course we aren't. During the election-fraud protest, an unarmed white woman was murdered by the Federal police, and there was no investigation of her murder. Ten months ago a black criminal died when a white police officer tried to arrest him, and the entire legal establishment, conservatives and liberal, have banded together to ensure that the white police officer is convicted of murder. The murder of the white protestor, the upcoming show trial of the white police officer, the daily sacrificial offerings of whites in our major cities to noble black savages, all are the result of whites' refusal to defend their cultural heritage for fear of being called racists. If you allow the liberals to demonize your past they will take that demonization to the next stage. They will demonize you in the present, which means the non-illuminated whites must pay for the past evil of the white race with their lives. The liberals and their black shock troops look on themselves as exterminating angels; they must and they will destroy the white race. They will kill without mercy and without pity because they are the anointed ones; they must purify their realm of white Christians.

Let us go back to the summer of 2020. Why did Trump fail to counter the violence of the Antifa, Black Lives Matter murderers and rioters with violence? Why did he permit them to set up their own government in direct opposition to his government? If we grant that Trump was not afraid to act against Antifaers who stepped away from their black shields, we are still left with the question of why Trump felt unable to act against Black Lives Matter. Was it because Trump lacked courage? No, that was not the reason. Trump has the courage of his convictions. His failure to act was because of his convictions. You can't defeat the liberals when you are part liberal yourself. I would have ordered every single rioter, Antifa and BLM, shot on sight had I been president (but of course, I could never be elected president), not because I am more courageous and decisive than Trump, but because I believe that the liberals and their colored shock troops are totally evil. I believe they are hell-bent on murdering my people and destroying every last vestige of our sacred Christian European heritage. Believing that, how could I do otherwise than respond with violence against the liberal-black violence? Everything depends on what we see in our hearts when we look at the liberals and the world they have created. Trump's faith is not my faith. His conversion from mad-dog liberalism to moderate liberalism was a sincere conversion. But is that enough? Can we stop along the path to the liberals' hell on earth? No, we can't. It is all or nothing; we can't be a little bit liberal and a little bit Christian. The liberals proved that when they carried the day on November 3, 2020. Now the liberals have it all, and the white grazers have nothing. But what do they have? They have hell on earth. And we have, at least we should have, moral clarity. The liberals are united in their hatred of Christ and his people; we cannot, nor should we want to, peacefully co-exist with them. Even if we wanted to, they would not permit it. They, like the giant in the fairy tale who wants the blood of an Englishman, want the blood of all non-illuminated whites, and that rather large majority consists of thee and me.

The pro-life movement in the 1970s was a dress rehearsal for the defeat of the Trumpers in 2020. The liberals at that time decided they could violently terminate the lives of the infants in the womb without facing any serious resistance from

organized Christian Jewry. And they were right. The “pro-lifers,” the moderate liberals, kept screaming, “We must be non-violent, we must rely on the courts.” Isn’t that what Trump kept saying? – “Be non-violent, we must rely on the courts.” From whence comes this mystical belief in the courts? It comes from sinful man’s reliance on abstract reason divorced from the heart of God. Our democratic system is not grounded in the heart and blood faith of the European people; it is not connected to the “tears of God” culture of the antique Europeans. Our laws stem from the man-made abstractions of liberty, equality, and fraternity. Such abstractions are antithetical to Christ’s reign of charity, in which the law serves Christ rather than Satan. How can we expect justice, how can we expect respect for the Christian hearth-fire virtues of old Europe from law courts that are based on the principles of the Jewish Sanhedrin? Christ stood before the Sanhedrin and He was condemned to death because He refused to deny His divinity.

But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? And Jesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses? Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death. And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesy: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands. –Mark 14: 61-64

We can’t place ourselves outside of the condemnation the Sanhedrin pronounced upon Christ. We can’t tell the liberals who constitute the modern Sanhedrin that we do not know the Christ of old Europe, because we are afraid to be cast out of Liberalism for being racist. We cannot share in His resurrection if we do not share in His crucifixion. The blending of Christ with Judaism, with Islam, the gods of the Amazon rain forest, and the sacred negro is an ignoble attempt to court favor (pun intended) with the new-old Sanhedrin of the liberals. What do we gain when we kneel to the liberals’ Sanhedrin? Our lives? No, they want our blood; we won’t save our lives by kneeling before them. But we will lose something of infinite value – we will lose our souls if we continue to bow down to the gods of Liberalism. We will lose the promise of 1 Corinthians: “In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.”

Shall we stay with Emersonian superficiality, with a gnostic blend of intellectual Christianity and liberalism, or shall we return to the epistles of the living God – to our people when they believed that the “trumpet shall sound and the dead shall be raised”? Let me end with one final example of the contrast between the old European world of “charity never faileth” and our brave new world of demonic superficiality. About fifteen years ago I purchased a paperback copy of The Epistles of St. Paul because I wanted to make notes in the margins and underline certain passages, which was something I did not want to do in the family Bible. I found the following commentary in the introduction:

Paul stayed in touch with his converts through formal letters that covered clarification of the doctrine, the impact of Jewish law on Christianity, heresy, personal intercession, corrections concerning earlier letters, and a review of previous letters to the church. One of those letters (1 Corinthians) included a controversial statement about women, “Let your women keep in silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the law.”

Is not that liberal editorial the essence of modern liberalism? Paul’s sublime paean to charity and his incomparable, heartfelt assertion of our resurrection through Jesus Christ is reduced to nothing because he was sexist? That is the world that the conservatives tell us we must accept. Never! +

---

### **The Tears of God - March 6, 2021**

Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, And said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see. Jesus wept. –St. John 11: 32-35

---

The British good ol’ boy, Boris Johnson, spoke for all liberals around the world and throughout America when he congratulated America for getting “back on track” with Biden. It seems, from my perspective, the height of insanity to earnestly desire to get “back on track,” on a train bound for hell. But of course the liberal swine are possessed by the devil, so when they get “back on track,” they are simply heading home. And they have been heading home for quite some time. In the name of utopia, they are progressing to a world where there is no humanity, which translates to – No Whiteness – to a world of purified Undines:

They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at

their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. –Edmund Burke

Our Lord, in the midst of mortal pain on the cross, said, “Forgive them, Lord, for they know not what they do.” But can the same be said of the modern liberals? They have almost two thousand years of Christian history before them, they have seen the Word made flesh in their people, and they have rejected the Word made flesh. They have become like unto the Jews who would not listen to the word of God as preached by St. Paul:

Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. – Acts 28: 26-28

The wheel has come full circle; our people who once championed the Word made flesh no longer, “see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart.” They have decided that Christ be not risen, and they must look for another savior to preside over another realm. Christ’s reign of charity must give way to Satan’s reign of merciless cruelty. That is the decree of the new Sanhedrin, the Sanhedrin of Judaized Europeans — the liberals.

I agree with the liberals on the point of contention, but I do not agree with their conclusion. The point of contention is: Did the European people get it right? Was there, at the vital center of their culture, not in the form of a syllogism but in the spirit and the blood, the answer to the riddle of our existence here on earth? I am one with the antique Europeans on that essential question: I believe that the Christ of old Europe, the Christ of the Gospels, was and is the Son of the living God. The liberals came to a different conclusion – they claimed and still claim that Christ did not rise from the dead on the third day. So all that stemmed from that belief must, of necessity, be discarded as false.

In the early 20th century, a whole cabal of writers, the existentialists, arose to lament the fact that we were alone in the universe without a God to call our own. But by the latter half of the 20th century, the liberals had found a new god for the European people. They discovered, so they maintained, a magic deeper than the false magic of Christianity. They discovered cosmic rationalism, which encompasses the new trinity, consisting of the intellect of man, the sacred negro, and science. However, to use the language of Narnia, is there a deeper magic than the liberals’ deep magic, which is the magic of the white witch? Ah, there’s the rub! The philosophers and theologians cannot provide us with a magic deeper than the magic of the white witch. But the European people, the people with hearts of flesh, knew the deepest magic; they knew the Mysterious Stranger who created a realm in ancient Europe. And they knew Him because they understood Him as St. Paul enjoined them to understand Him, with their hearts. St. Paul came to us because he knew we would hear him. What has closed our hearts, in this, the century of European apostasy, to the Savior, the only begotten Son of the Father?

The two greatest proponents of cosmic rationalism were Albert Einstein (see Einstein on *Cosmic Religion and Other Opinions and Aphorisms*) and George Bernard Shaw (see *Back to Methuselah*). It was their contention that mankind had three religious stages. The first stage is the primitive, superstitious stage – fear of lightning as emanating from the gods, and fear of all naturally occurring disasters as emanating from the gods that must be appeased by sacrifice. The second stage is an extension of the superstitious stage with a certain added ethical component. That was mankind’s Christian stage. And finally there is the cosmic stage of religion, which can be attained by men of pure intelligence, men such as Albert Einstein and G. B. Shaw. I’m not making this up, those two incredibly superficial, incredibly vain, egotistical maniacs actually believed they had achieved a higher level of existence than our people with the hearts of flesh. And the modern liberals, most of whom have never read Einstein’s or Shaw’s incredibly superficial theories on the new cosmic religion, have absorbed the superficial faith of Einstein and Shaw. We are reminded of Karl Barth’s assessment of Feuerbach, who was also a cosmic rationalist, when we read Shaw and Einstein: ‘We have heard Feuerbach speak, and we have heard something that is nauseatingly, disgustingly trivial.’ Yes, it is superficiality and triviality that keeps Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth in order. If all that is trivial and superficial was not codified into law, there might be an outbreak of depth, and that would be a terrible blow to our new world order in which there must be no depth of thought or feeling.

What is institutionalized superficiality? It is the idea that the new God the Father – man’s abstract intellect (boldly stated in the first Star Trek movie: “We are our creator”), the new Savior – the noble black savage, and the new holy ghost – science, can give us a sustaining vision of God and man that can replace the antique Europeans’ vision of Christ the Lord. What is implicit in the new religion, that the cosmic man of science does not need the Suffering Servant, was made explicit in one of America’s national anthems – “Thine alabaster cities gleam, undimmed by human tears.” Really? Can we so construct our world, our brave new utopian world, that there is no need for human tears? That can only become possible if we build a superficial world in which there are only abstract human beings who belong to nature and nature’s God, the noble black savage. There is no need to weep if a mathematical entity, an infinitesimally small particle of a statistical aggregate, disappears and returns to nature, what we once called death. But there is a great need for tears in the face of death if human beings are created in the image of God. In all of the Gospels, is there any more moving account of Christ’s

divine charity, of His loving concern for His people, than that moment when He wept before the tomb of Lazarus? When our tears are joined with the tears of God, we shake Satan's kingdom of hell on earth to its very core, because in our grief we have torn away the veil of liberal superficiality and touched the heart of the living God, the God who bled for us and who weeps with us.

The culture that our modern conservatives defend is a culture of superficiality presided over by a cabal of sophisters, economists, and calculators, who have no "compunctious visitings of nature" that can deter them from their maniacal quest to destroy every last human being even tangentially connected to the tears-of-God culture of ancient Europe. The liberals must destroy whiteness because they must destroy the Europeans' faith, their belief that Christ redeemed our tears. Such a faith is heresy to the liberals. They are building a perfect world of alabaster in which there is no need for human tears, and no need for a God of mercy who bled for us and weeps with us; 'through Him and in Him' is an anathema to the liberals.

Trump has holed up in Florida and is talking about running again in 2024. Why, if the liberals do not put him in jail before 2024, should we expect a different result than in 2020? Trump and his followers are still so "far from doing harm that they suspect none." So, again, why should we expect a different outcome if Trump runs in 2024? If we take into account the fact that the liberals are now codifying the process by which Trump was defrauded in 2020, it seems insane to expect good results from elections. But Americanism is a form of insanity.

Almost half of the American populace have given their support to Satan and his minions. They have completely, with malice aforethought, rejected the tears-of-God culture of the antique Europeans. And the rest of the Americans, the timid and confused majority, want to incorporate a new Christ into the cosmic religion of the liberals. They want the abstract intellect of man, the sacred negro and Christ, and they want science. What is wrong with that trinity? It is not a Trinity. You can't have Christ and the sacred negro as co-saviors. Trump and the white grazers who supported him will always lose to the mad-dog liberals because the mad-dog liberals have an integral faith; they have given their heart, mind, and soul to Satan. They are committed, through the sacred negro, to the kingdom of hell on earth. When you fight to conserve that kingdom by supporting "our troops" who defend the devil's disciples in the Capitol building, when you defend the rights of Planned Parenthood by condemning the men who bomb their headquarters, and when you condemn white pietas as racism, you are the devil's own; you are conserving that which must be opposed with fire and sword.

Let me reference two music videos that illustrate the tragedy of the white grazers who try to blend Christianity and liberalism. The first is the Hank Williams Jr. video in which he tells us that "A Country Boy Can Survive." At first our hearts soar when we hear him issue what appears to be a defiant rejection of liberalism – "We say grace, and we say Ma'am, and if you ain't into that we don't give a damn." He praises young white men who wear Confederate belt buckles and can "skin a buck and run a trout line." And when he contrasts the decadence of New York City to the country by comparing his friend's life in New York City with his life in the country: "My grandpa taught me how to live off the land, And his taught him to be a businessman," we begin to think that finally we have a fitting apologia for the white man. But wait – "Oh what a falling off was there!" When Mr. Williams shows us how his friend in New York City met his death at the hands of a mugger, the mugger is depicted as a white man. Now, one can make the case that there are vicious, murdering whites, and I would agree with you. But are white muggers really the great danger in New York City or any of our cities? No, the video loses all its impact, it fails at the moment of truth, by failing to confront the major heresy of our times – the worship of Satan through the noble black savage. So long as white Christians accept the liberals' heresy that blacks can do no evil because they are sacred, those selfsame whites will be half-Christian, and half-liberal, and they will never, never be able to defeat the demon-possessed liberal swine.

In another music video called "The Long Black Train," Josh Turner echoes the half-way house Christianity of Hank Williams Jr. The song, reminiscent of Hawthorne's short story, "The Celestial Railroad," depicts a beautiful, long, black train that beckons one and all to take a glorious ride. But of course that long, black train is destined for hell; we dare not take a ride on it. At first, as in the Hank Williams Jr. video, our hearts soar. What a magnificent depiction of the struggle between good and evil that can only be resolved by recourse to our common hope, our Savior Jesus Christ. But there is a tragic sinking in the video. As the train pulls up to two women, one black and one white, the white woman gets on board the train while the black woman remains behind, steadfastly rejecting the devil's temptation, and then the train speeds on. Now, again, you can make the case that there are blacks who stand with Christ and reject Satan while there are many, many whites (they are called liberals) who reject Christ and embrace Satan.<sup>(1)</sup> So what is wrong with the video? Why did I know, with metaphysical certainty, when I first saw the video, that the white woman, and not the black woman, would go to the devil? Even in the good whites, the Christians, there is more than just a touch of negro worship, which represents weakness in the face of the enemy. And the liberals always exploit that weakness to destroy every last vestige of the tears-of-God culture of the antique Europeans.

Why won't the European grazers, who are part liberal and part Christian, go the whole way? Why won't they stand with the antique Europeans and look on Christ as the beginning and the end, the first and the last? They are in the grip of the



white witch, they fear that her deep magic of the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science is deeper than Christianity. Her magic, which is the liberals' magic, is deeper than the wisdom of the theologians. But Christ was not a theologian, Christ wept before the tomb of Lazarus. And St. Paul was not a theologian; he bid us follow the foolishness of God, which is wiser than the wisdom of men. If we place our hopes in theology, we shall fail. If we place our hopes in elections we shall fail. But if we place our hopes in charity, in the tears of God, we shall touch the heart of God and we shall obtain the peace of God in our hearts, the peace that passeth the understanding of pure intelligence. There is a world beyond the superficial empire of Liberalism. That is our world; we must cling to that world with all our heart, mind, and soul. +

---

(1) If the Josh Turner video had two white women facing the temptation of the long, black train, and one woman succumbed to the temptation and one did not, the religious message would have been entirely Christian – some reject Christ for the devil and some choose Christ over the devil. But instead we are given a very different message – Christ and the sacred negro are co-redeemers. That is blasphemy, and we must reject such an unholy blending of Christ and the noble black savage.

---

#### A Prayer Request

The woman who goes by the name of the Vanishing American has published a blog for many years now. She consistently writes from the heart about our Christian European hearth fire. She is a wonderful and rare woman. Now, she tells us that she is quite ill. I have always included her in my prayers at night, but now I must pray all the more fervently for her recovery. I commend her to your prayers as well. These are indeed sad times when a good deal of our friends are people we have never, and will never on this earth, see face to face. But we have the tears of God to unite us, and that is more, much more, than a small consolation.

---

#### We Shall Not Kneel to the Liberals' God - February 27, 2021

We are bound in the sanctuary of the heart to Him who gave us our human nature. –Edmund Burke

---

“We must prepare to meet with Caliban.” –Prospero in *The Tempest*

---

This February has been the most horribly black-infested month in our nation's history. There is no safe refuge from 'black history.' In our schools – preschool, kindergarten, grammar school, junior high, high school, and all through college – the message is clear: white is evil, black is good. And our 'churches' are one with the academy: whiteness is ungodly, blackness is godly. The sports' programs are all about black athletes who have been 'mistreated' by whites, and the Illuminati of the press – television, newspaper, and internet – all speak with one voice: blackness is good, whiteness is evil. If you make a lonely trek to the North Pole, determined to go where there is no black history, you will discover, in the headlines of the old newspaper that you wrapped your coffee tin in, the liberals' narrative: blacks are sacred, whites are evil. In the old television show, *Branded*, Chuck Connors was told, “Wherever you go, for the rest of your life, you must prove, you're a man.” Wherever a white man goes in the European world, he must prove he is illuminated by denouncing the white race and bowing down before the noble black savage.

The George Floyd ceremony in the joint houses of Congress last summer was a horrific, barbarous religious rite. If we countenance such rites, in which the liberals worship Satan through the sacred negro, by our silence or by our participation in those rites, we are guilty of blasphemy against the living God. Blasphemy is something that the European people once took seriously, because when they blasphemed they were in league with the devil. But now the devil is a good guy – he is not a racist, nor is he homophobic, Islamophobic, transgender-phobic, he is only white-phobic, which is a good thing. And how does Christ, the Christ of the European hearth fire, stack up against Satan? Christ is a racist, he is homophobic, Islamophobic, etc., etc. He must be sent to the liberals' hell and forced to bow down to the liberals' god, the archangel Lucifer. But Christ shall never kneel to Satan:

Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.  
Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.  
Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

And that refusal is what fuels the liberals' satanic hatred. If Christ won't kneel to them, they shall make His people kneel to them. In the name of the sacred negro, who is the liberals' link to Satan, they will force Christ's people to kneel down before Satan. That is what 'black history' month is all about. It is a satanic imitation of an old-fashioned European Christmas in which the birth of the Christ child was celebrated for twelve days. In this case, the noble black savage, who is

the second person in the devil's trinity, is given a whole month. That is right and proper — shouldn't the liberals' savior, the noble black savage, be honored instead of the Christ of old Europe?

Black history month, which has replaced the Christmas season as "the most wonderful time of the year," is a month in which the lie of the noble black savage reaches its zenith. It is a lie put forward by the father of lies, for it is indeed a lie that whites, particularly the whites of the old South and of apartheid South Africa, mistreated blacks. What is true is that when whites treated blacks with mercy and charity, when they tried to elevate them to a world in which they were something other than predatory beasts consecrated to bloody gods of sacrifice, the blacks responded to the whites' charity and mercy, in the main, with base ingratitude and barbarous savagery. They were and are Calibans:

Pros. Thou most lying slave,  
Whom stripes may move, not kindness! I have us'd thee,  
Filth as thou art, with human care, and lodg'd thee  
In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate  
The honour of my child.

Cal. O ho, O ho! would 't had been done!  
Thou didst prevent me; I had peopl'd else  
This isle with Calibans.

Pros. Abhorred slave,  
Which any print of goodness wilt not take,  
Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee,  
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee each hour  
One thing or other. When thou didst not, savage,  
Know thy own meaning, but wouldst gabble like  
A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes  
With words that made them known. But thy vile race,  
Though thou didst learn, had that in't which good natures  
Could not abide to be with; therefore wast thou  
Deservedly confin'd into this rock,  
Who hadst deserv'd more than a prison.

It was only when whites stood firm in their faith, when they accepted their duty as the Christ-bearing race and kept the colored races in benevolent servitude, that the black Calibans became something other than beasts of prey –

Cal. I'll be wise hereafter  
And seek for grace. What a thrice-double ass  
Was I, to take this drunkard for a god  
And worship this dull fool!

That "seek for grace" will only be heard from blacks who have learned what mercy is and forsaken the gods of bloody sacrifice. The God of mercy was at the heart of 'racist' Europe. The gods of merciless cruelty are at the heart of modern Liberalism. Who is served by the lie of black history, that the whites who championed the God of mercy and love were evil because they tried to bring Christ to the savages of color without becoming absorbed by the savages of color? I repeat: who is served by that lie? It is the father of all lies. Black history month is a special celebration of all things satanic. And at the satanic center of this special month and our entire anti-civilization is the myth of the new suffering servant – the noble black savage.

Trump's failure to win re-election was the direct result of his failure to challenge the central tenet of the liberals' faith, their faith in the noble black savage. Trump never acted against the unmitigated evil of the liberals because he did not believe that anyone who was right about that which is essential – the belief in the nobility of the black savage – could be completely evil. Trump's differences with the liberals never reached, on his part, the level of an outright war because he felt himself to be at one with them on the first article of their faith, which was and is their belief in the noble black savage. Then why didn't the liberals make Trump one of their own? Why did they wage an unrelenting war against him? It was the subordinate doctrine to negro worship that brought Trump down. If you truly love the noble black savage, you must hate the white race. Trump, in the liberals' eyes, was not really one of the Illuminati, despite what he said and did in support of the noble black savages; the liberals did not accept his stated faith because he did not hate whiteness. And the liberals were right to suspect Trump's sincerity. If you do not hate the devil and all his works – and whiteness is the work of the devil in the liberals' theology – then your love for the noble black savage must be questioned. In everything he does, the devil parodies Christianity. You must love the noble black savage and you must hate whiteness in Satan's kingdom of hell on earth, because that theological construction is in direct contrast to Christ's kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven. Trump had a trace of white pietas in his soul, which prevented him from signing on to the destruction of the white race. In

the liberals' eyes, he was and is an apostate who must be burned in the fires of the inquisition after being tortured. In my view, you might as well be hung for a sheep as for a lamb – I wish Trump would denounce the noble black savage and support the Christ of old Europe, the God of our ascending race, but a man must go with the faith that is inside him. Trump sees a blended Christ, and as long as he sees that blended Christ, he will be part liberal and part Christian. And the liberals who are united in their purity of faith, who are 100% puritanical Satanists, will always be more than a match for halfway-house Christians such as Trump, who see with one eye fastened on the noble black savage and one eye fastened on Christ.

At the heart of this religious war, a war that Christians are losing, is this thing called culture. The triumph of scholasticism in the organized Christian churches allowed Satan, who was the driving force behind speculative, philosophical theology, to turn our Christ-centered revelatory faith – from His heart to our hearts – into a faith handed down from one great mind to another great mind. That 'great mind' faith does not need a culture composed of Christian hearts. Hence, both Protestant and Catholic Illuminati dismissed the blood faith of the European people as 'mere culture' and proceeded to follow the secular liberals into the brave new world devoid of flesh and blood Christians who believed in the Man of Sorrows with all their heart, mind, and soul. In the new Christianity all the theologians required was an intellectual assent from the feeble-minded laity to their purified, intellectual version of Christianity. The decline of the 'cultural Christianity' represented by Handel and Rembrandt did not and does not disturb the theologians because they never did like the beastly, unseemly, and philosophically unsound longings and passions in the human heart. Their minds are a much surer guide. But can the theologians' assertions about the impracticality of the human heart stop the yearnings in our heart for something or someone over and above theology? Satan is and was audacious. He walked right into the main citadels of Christendom and revived the original sin. He preached speculative knowledge of God as the truth and the way, because he knew that speculative knowledge of God is not knowledge of God, it is the path to Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. Our culture of hearts bound to the sacred heart of Christ was replaced by Satan's anti-culture of hearts committed to Satan through pure intelligence, the sacred negro, and science.

If we proceed as "God's spies" in this prison of Liberalism, we can see how we, as a people, became imprisoned by Satan's minions. The devil came at the European people in the same manner that he attacked Uncle Silas:

Of my wretched uncle's religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zig-zags and parallels.

If you cut the cord to a man's affections, his love for his kith and kin, and redirect his affections to an intellectual construct of God, haven't you severed that man's connection to the living God? At every turn of the utopian wheel the devil made promises based on the original sin in the Garden of Eden: "You shall be as gods." Liberty, equality, and fraternity – liberty from the living God, equality with Satan who permits infanticide, sodomy, and every other perversion known to man. And what is the devil's fraternity? It is fraternity with the savages of color who have never abandoned the purity of their faith in the gods of sex and blood. It is those gods that the European people desperately cling to in the hope that they can be restored, through them and in them, to the blood faith that they lost when they abandoned their faith in the Dream of the Rood.

The evil seed of negro worship was planted by the devil in Europe's green and pleasant land in order to turn our green and pleasant land into a barren desert, devoid of human life. Everywhere we see the fruition of the evil seed of negro worship, which is devil worship. The European people have become characters without an author because their "mysterious human relationships" with their kith and kin have been proscribed and demonized as 'racist.' For how long will the Europeans cede everything to the liberals because of white 'racism'? You would think that a saturation point would be reached, that the European people would sicken from a steady diet of the sacred negro. But there seems, in this black-infested month of February, to be no end in sight. There are consequences if we fail to worship the negro. About twenty-five years ago I lost a job with a 'conservative' organization because of my 'racism.' So perhaps there are more Europeans out there who have sickened of the steady, unrelenting narrative of the liberals – 'the negro is sacred, the white race is evil' – but are afraid to openly acknowledge their rejection of the negro. But we owe it to our children to tell a different narrative. We can't allow the liberals to own our culture and hope that somehow intellectual Christianity, the Christianity of the false Aslan, will serve as a corrective to negro worship. St. Paul walked right into the citadels of the Jewish and heathen worlds and preached Christ crucified, Christ risen. He is our apostle and we must follow in his train.

Boris Johnson congratulated America for getting back on track with Biden. What track are we on? We are on the hell-bound train to a world without light, without honor, without love, and without charity. Let us pause there. We can now see, in the United States, what a world without charity looks and feels like. God took flesh and dwelt among us even though the Jews considered His incarnation a blasphemy and the Athenian philosophers considered it to be foolishness. If we do not challenge the worship of the sacred negro and seek Christ through our "mysterious human relationships," we

will continue to live among and be like unto the demonic liberal swine who are determined to go headlong over the cliff while squealing their anti-hymn of praise for the sacred negro.

The new transgender mandate, that there shall be no males or females, is the logical outcome of a religion that is grounded in the rejection of the antique Europeans and their Christ-centered culture. Once they are rejected, He is rejected. And if He is no longer the savior, then all the values that stemmed from Him must be rejected in favor of all the values that stem from the worship of the sacred negro. Why shouldn't we be sodomites, abortionists, and transgender creatures if He be not risen? And that is the driving force behind the anti-white movement. The liberals do not believe that Christ rose from the dead, they have no heart for our Savior because they do not believe He is the Savior who came into this world to save us from sin and death. If we love Christ in and through our people, our kith and kin, we will not be conservatives, seeking to conserve Satan's kingdom of hell on earth by dialoging with Satan's liberal minions. The counter-revolution starts in the sanctuary of the heart where He who is our beginning and our end dwells. +

---

### **The Sanctuary of the Heart - February 20, 2021**

Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections. –Burke, Letters on a Regicide Peace

---

I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. –John 17: 23

---

White people are the only people in the history of the world whose “elective affections” do not fasten on their own kind. (1) This was made strikingly apparent, once again, in the aftermath of the pro-Trump protest that the liberals called an insurrection. I listened with an anger beyond anger as the liberals called for Federal troops to protect them against unarmed citizens whom they had defrauded. And I listened with horror as the conservatives rushed to condemn the ‘rioters’ (they used the liberals’ term because the conservatives are liberal), and praise the ‘hero’ who died defending the Capitol. Let us pause there. Why is that man a hero? He died defending the greatest evil in the history of the world – the American liberals who inhabit the joint houses of Congress. I am sorry that the misguided young man chose to defend such evil creatures and I'm sorry he died, but I have no place in my “elective affections” for the young police officer. He has his mourners – Biden, his wife, and the conservative shadows of the liberals, have all hailed the man who defended the reptilian entities that inhabit the Capitol building from unarmed protestors as a ‘great hero.’ (2) My “elective affections” go out to the young woman who was shot by the ‘great hero’s’ partners in crime – and the other three protestors who died in the protest. Why was there, and why is there still, no investigation of the death of the woman who was shot by the Federal police? The whole nation was commanded to mourn the death of the criminal George Floyd, yet the brutal murder of a white woman has not been and will not be investigated.

Trump repudiated white supremacy without ever forcing the liberals to define white supremacy. You lose every debate you engage in if you allow the enemy to define the terms. Brutus tried to paint all those who opposed the assassination of Julius Caesar as traitors who supported tyranny. Anthony refused to accept that label and consequently turned Brutus's rhetoric against him: “Yet, Brutus says he was ambitious.” If Trump had challenged the liberals to define ‘white supremacy,’ what would they have said? We'll never know because Trump did not challenge the liberals, which is a terrible tragedy; it would have been quite useful to see what is implicit in liberalism made explicit. Trump could not be made out to be a segregationist, nor could he be accused of a sympathy for the chattel slavery of the old South. But what he could be accused of was a desire to see white people continue to live and thrive in the United States of America. That desire was in stark contrast to all the Presidents, Democratic and Republican, who preceded Trump. His predecessors all signed on to the destruction of the white race. And that is the real definition of a white supremacist – you don't have to be a segregationist or in sympathy with the old South, all you have to do is oppose the extermination of the white race. That makes you a white supremacist. Trump was, by the liberals' definition, a white supremacist; hence, all those who voted for him, and most certainly all those pro-Trump protesters, were also white supremacists. They all deserved to die. Nancy Pelosi had only one regret – she regretted that the Federal police were so easy on the ‘rioters.’

The hatred that the modern Europeans have for their own people is rooted in their religion. Modern whites believe in a cosmic religion of the intellect. In that religion, the more intensely you hate the old European religion of the God-Man and the people who placed their hopes in the God-Man, the more religious and enlightened you are. To hate evil, which is whiteness, and to love the good, which is all things opposed to whiteness, are the two main dogmas of the liberals' faith.

Yeats saw that the blood-red tide was loose in the European world because the best lacked all conviction while the worst were full of passionate intensity. The best were and are the white grazers who want to blend modernity – the worship of the abstract intellect of man, the worship of the sacred negro, and the worship of science – with Christianity. While the worst, the mad-dog liberals, want ‘perfection’; they want a cosmic religion that has been purged of white pietas because it was and is mankind’s link to an antiquated God opposed to the cosmic religion of the liberals. Once what is honorable, what is charitable, what is merciful, becomes what is stupid, racist, and sexist, the liberals feel they have free reign, a sacred duty, to stamp out the people of the white race, who once stood for honor, charity, and mercy. Before Yeats stepped forward to champion his occult solution to modern man’s loss of faith, Burke warned us about the brave new world before us:

But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more, shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiments and heroic enterprise is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honour, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness. –*Reflections on the Revolution in France*

Unlike Yeats, Burke did not see the occult sciences as the answer to the new world order. He made it clear that we had to cling to our old world order, in which white pietas was our link to the living God:

We are bound in the sanctuary of the heart to Him who gave us our human nature.

All civil society must be grounded in Him who is perfection if we are ever going to make even a “faint approach” to perfection. The Jacobins, the communists, and our modern ‘cosmic’ liberals view our “common hope” and the people who made Him their morning star, as the main obstacle to their perfect society. If a man’s elective affections are with those people who hate Christ and the Christ-bearing race, because they constitute an obstacle to the liberals’ utopia, then that man has made the descent into hell. Satan is his God.

It is in the “sanctuary of the heart” that we are bound to our kith, our kin, and our Lord. The devil, with an unrelenting maniacal fury, keeps attacking the Europeans’ “sanctuary of the heart,” so that we, the European people, will lose all memory of our connection to the living God. And the conservatives in church and state have gone along with the devil. They have told us, and they still tell us, to place our hopes in a fusion of a pure Christianity of the intellect with the pure liberalism of Satan’s disciples. That fusion is impossible. We cannot serve Christ and the devil. The hero in Disney’s Snow White says he has one heart and one love. In the sanctuary of our heart, whom do we love?

The Trump movement represented an undefined longing in the white grazers to return to a sanctuary of the heart – to once again feel that they are united through the love of their kith and kin to Him who is the author of their human affections. Christ is the beginning and the end of the longings of our heart; if we forsake those longings for the cosmic religion of the liberals and their conservative allies, we will be doomed, like the flying Dutchman, to man a ghost ship that can never land in a safe harbor.

The white grazers who supported Trump recited the litany, “We are not racist, we are non-violent,” but while they recited that litany, there was something in their hearts that ran counter to that litany. They still had a remnant of white pietas – they recoiled, in part, from the litany that their leaders required them to repeat over and over again. Do I see more in those grazers than is actually there? Perhaps I do. But I will not proceed under the assumption that our Lord cannot breach the wall that the devil, through his liberal minions, has placed around the sanctuary of the Europeans’ hearts. He can breach that wall. It might sound antiquated and foolish to believe that all which is needful to defeat Satan is one simple prayer, “Come, Lord Jesus, into the sanctuary of my heart,” but that is what is needed and what is necessary. His Holy Word, shorn of scholastic distortions, is the most powerful weapon we have in the battle against our ancient foe.

Is the devil our ancient foe? If you are a white man, if your faith is of the blood and of the heart, you will answer, ‘yes,’ to that question. But if your faith is not of the blood and the heart, you will, if you are a liberal, say that the devil is your God, and you will, if you are a conservative shadow of the liberals, say you are an ‘Origenist’ who believes in the salvation of the devil. After all, the devil is not a racist; there are no spiritual aristocracies in his democratic utopia, so he must be at least co-equal if not better than his spiritual antagonist, the God of the ‘racist’ Europeans. Such is the logic of our conservatives in church and state who desire to blend the worship of Satan, through the Sacred Negro, with a respectable, tepid intellectual affirmation of Christianity. It can’t be done; you cannot sup with the devil. And why should you want to?

Let us return to the crux of the matter, which was and is the European people’s hatred of their own kind:

The seeds are sown almost every where, chiefly by newspaper circulations, infinitely more efficacious and extensive than ever they were. And they are a more important instrument than generally is imagined. They are a part of the reading of all, they are the whole of the

reading of the far greater number. There are thirty of them in Paris alone. The language diffuses them more widely than the English, though the English too are much read. The writers of these papers indeed, for the greater part, are either unknown or in contempt, but they are like a battery in which the stroke of any one ball produces no great effect, but the amount of continual repetition is decisive. Let us only suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, and he will become our master.

“These papers” have become the internet, but they remain the “battery” that has pounded home, for more than a “twelvemonth,” the central theme of liberalism: “The white race must be destroyed.” And where does that leave the white grazer who longs for a racial hearth fire? It leaves him out in the cold. He must try to warm his heart by getting as close as he can to the hearth fires of the strangers, the people who are not of his own kith and kin. He warms himself by the Jewish hearth fire, by the noble savage’s hearth fire, while professing a generic love for all mankind. It is a terrible, terrible tragedy. I remember reading an essay by Allen Tate, one of the I’ll Take My Stand Southern agrarians. He correctly identified rationalism as the cause of the decline of the European people, but then he went on to say that what rationalism had created, the Europeans’ loss of faith, rationalism could cure. No, a thousand times no! Rationalism cannot cure us. If our hope is in ‘ $2 + 2 = 4$ ’ logic, we are of all people most miserable. Rationalism overturned the Dream of the Rood Christianity, it placed the European people back in the hands of the sophisters, economists, and calculators, the Athenians who saw the Christ story as mere foolishness and the Jewish scribes and Pharisees who saw the Christ story as a blasphemous, stumbling block. Rationalism kills faith. Let us return to that sanctuary of the heart and defend the yearning in our heart against all the world. We must love Him whom the liberals hate, in and through our kith and kin.

The liberals’ hatred for Christ and the Christ-bearing race cannot be defeated by a blended faith in intellectual Christianity and liberalism, because liberalism is rooted in the love of the devil. Why is it, that, as what was implicit in our anti-nation for the past century – that we are moving from a Christian ethos to Satan’s ethos – has become explicit, the white grazers see a greater need than ever to repeat their non-violent and non-racist litany? The European people must get up off their knees before the liberals’ Sanhedrin and reclaim their rights of memory. We belong to the God of our ‘racist’ fathers in the faith – the unblended God-Man of the European people, the God of our “ascending race.”

---

(1) The recent and successful attempt to murder the people of Texas through the “greening” process illustrates the reason that Trump’s electoral defeat was a tragedy. Trump did not want to exterminate the white race. The liberals do want to exterminate the white race. The Texas massacre is only the beginning. The liberals’ reign of terror will continue until the white grazers learn to hate the devil and his liberal minions.

(2) Now that the liberals have established the most satanic government in the history of the world, is it really morally tenable, is it Christian, to laud “our troops” and “our police” when they defend our satanic government? They are the liberals’ troops and the liberals’ police, and they will be used to protect and defend Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth.

---

Rest In Peace, Rush Limbaugh

I suppose I have no right to post a ‘Rest In Peace’ for Rush Limbaugh, because I was never an admirer of his American conservatism. But I prayed for him from the moment I heard of his illness and I wept when I learned of his death. I do not understand the appeal of Limbaugh’s Americanism. But like Trump, Limbaugh had more than just a sliver of Christian humanity in his Americanism. And for that reason, the liberals hated him. I mourn for him and I detest the liberal jackals who still want to pick at his entrails even after his death. We can’t compromise with such creatures.

---

## **The American Kingdom of Hell on Earth - February 13, 2021**

Bloody, avaricious, false, deceitful,  
Sudden, malicious, smacking of every sin  
That has a name.

–*Macbeth*

---

And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees’ excellency, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah. It shall never be inhabited, neither shall it be dwelt in from generation to generation: neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there; neither shall the shepherds make their fold there. But wild beasts of the desert shall lie there; and their houses shall be full of doleful creatures; and owls shall dwell there, and satyrs shall dance there. And the wild beasts of the islands shall cry in their desolate houses, and dragons in their pleasant palaces: and her time is near to come, and her days shall not be prolonged.

–Isaiah 13: 19-22

---

There is an ultra-religious contingent and an ultra-white-nationalist contingent in our anti-nation that took particular delight in Biden's victory: "It serves them right. They (the white grazers) didn't listen to us." I do not hold to that position, even though the white grazers did not listen to me either. And I do not hold to that position because there is redemption in the white grazers. Their religion is a confused mish-mosh of liberalism and Christianity, but they have not completely left their humanity behind as the ultra-nationalist, neo-pagans and the ultra-religious contingent have. I have a cousin who falls into the category which the ultra-religious and the ultra-white nationalists love to hate. She voted for Trump because she believed in his American blending of God, equality, and Mom's apple pie. She also had the courage to place a placard in front of her house that read, "All Lives Matter," for which she was reviled by many members of her family and her neighbors. My kindly, Trumpian cousin is one of those whom I have described as, "So far from doing harm that they suspect none." She genuinely cannot comprehend why "All Lives Matter" should be controversial; she does not understand why "Some are more equal."

After the military coup, my cousin asked me, "Why do they (the liberals) always win?" I told her to envision two boxers. One, the liberal, enters the ring knowing he is not as good as his opponent; in an equal match he will lose. So the liberal enters the ring with the determination that he will not fight by the rules. He will hit below the belt, he will punch in the clinches, and he will get in a few extra punches after the bell. And he knows he will get away with his dirty tactics because the referee is one of his cronies. Now, we come to the liberal's opponent, the white grazer. He enters the ring with the intention of fighting by all the rules and relying on the referee to ensure there is a fair fight. Whom do you think will win the fight?

The liberals successfully painted Trump as a real mean guy, an anti-democratic fascist, but Trump was a white grazer through and through. Beneath a gruff exterior he was Mr. Nice Guy inside. He honestly believed in the American heresy, which views our moral equality before the living God as a mandate to dispense with all the spiritual aristocracies which Christian men have established to support His reign of charity here on earth. Trump was a courageous man, who had the courage of his convictions. But unfortunately his convictions were part liberal, and those convictions did not allow him to act as a Christian leader should act towards the mad-dog liberals.

Even the liberals, now that the battle is over, have asked why Trump didn't have a Plan B. Why didn't he act to prevent the military coup that began in the summer with riots in the streets and ended with election fraud? Trump did not act against the Antifa and Black Lives Matter because he believed, in part, in the "some are more equal" heresy. Blacks are never in the wrong when they are violent. I know Trump used the excuse that he didn't want to violate states' rights by declaring martial law in the Democratic-controlled states that sanctioned the riots, but do you think the liberals, if the situation had been reversed, would have hesitated to violate states' rights? Wasn't our un-Civil War a complete violation of states' rights? Then there was the election. Do you think the liberals would have stood six feet away while all their votes were 'flipped' to their opponent? And finally, would the liberals have allowed the Supreme Court to ignore their pleas for justice? The liberals believe in the kingdom of hell on earth. The democratic process is just a means to their end. If that process does not support their desired end, they will discard that process. Trump and his people actually believe in the democratic process. They believe that the American way is synonymous with truth and justice. (1) But the American way is not synonymous with truth and justice, it is synonymous with the kingdom of hell on earth.

I do not think there ever was or ever could be a better man than Trump within the democratic process. We should not work for another Republican to assume the office of the Presidency; the traditional Republicans are either mad-dog liberals such as Mitch O'Connell and Liz Cheney, or they are moderate liberals such as Mike Pence. They are much further to the left than Trump, but Trump is not the man to lead us away from demon-crazy, because he believes in the democratic process. He is a good man, but he is a "city built upon a hill" American. We need someone who is more than a populist; we need a man of the right, a Eurocentric 'racist' who loves and hates with his whole heart.

In my mid-twenties I read a short treatise called, "A Reformation Debate," which was a debate between a Thomist and a Calvinist. And it struck me as I struggled through the debate that neither theology touched my heart. I understood the various arguments on both sides, but I had no desire to embrace either theology and say, "this is truth." In fact I was very troubled by the debate, but I would have been hard-pressed to explain why. It was only many years later that I finally understood why that "Reformation Debate" was so troubling. It was troubling because both men had made my faith in the God-Man into an intellectual construct that could be confined within the prison of a man-made theory. Despite theological differences, both theologians eschewed the blood faith of the European people. They had exchanged the God who comes to human hearts for the God who comes to the illuminated minds of clergymen. Neither the Thomist nor the Calvinist were atheists in the strict sense of the word. They professed to believe in the main tenets of Christianity, but they both had opened up the door to a speculative, philosophical faith that is a non-faith. The end result of theological speculation is liberalism. Faith is either revelatory, from the Divine Heart to human hearts, or it becomes a blended faith, which is the faith of the white grazers, or it becomes a scientific, nature-based faith in the Noble Savage, which is liberalism. The white grazer always loses to the liberals because the liberals have a purity of faith – they have emptied their hearts of all things humane and Christian. Their satanic 'purity' allows them to fight against their foes without pity, without mercy, and

without acknowledging any law other than their satanic will. The white grazers, such as Trump and his followers, cannot mount any real assault against the liberals because they are not whole-heartedly against them. They have adopted the blended faith that is condemned in the Book of Revelation; they combine negro worship, Judaism, and every other non-Christian faith with the Christian faith. That syncretic faith is no match for the liberals' straight-forward faith in Satan.

We must face this maniacal hatred the liberals have for Trump. (2) It stems from Satan. Simply because Trump wanted to keep Christ and the Christ-bearing race within Liberalism, he was, while he was in office, and is still, now that he is out of office, being attacked by the demon-cratic Republicans and the Demon-crats. Trump has never repudiated liberalism. He is a liberal, but he wanted the white grazers to be included in Liberalism. We have seen the result of that advocacy. Trump will be forever bound to the Promethean rock. And there is no redemption for Prometheus within the confines of liberalism. Prometheus needs a savior and so do we – a Savior who is something more than a lesser god in a pantheon of heathen gods. Our Savior is the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

The spirit of philosophical speculation that animated the Reformation debate was the same spirit that animated the governing body of the North in the 1860s. And it is that spirit which has reduced the European people to a level of superficiality that makes them an easy prey for the devil. The mind of man cannot comprehend God. When man seeks to confine God within a manmade philosophy, God becomes a superficial entity. He becomes a Noble Black Savage, or the sum of nature's many parts, but He does not resemble the God of the European people when they were a people. Rembrandt's Christ is not a blended Christ nor is He a noble black savage. At the core of our demise as a people is a change in the way we see. We no longer see life from the poetic depths of a heart that loves; instead we see with a mind that speculates. And what have we come up with in the age of speculation? Is this, our anti-culture of reason, the sacred negro, and science, the promised end? If that is all we are, mere philosophical shadows of men, then yes, this is our end.

Many people who saw Trump as the last Trump mentioned in 1 Corinthians 15: 52 have been devastated by his loss in November. But there may still be a Biblical significance in Trump's loss. The election did mark the end of the demon-cratic subterfuge. Some liberals in other countries have condemned the election fraud, not because they were Trump supporters, but because the Americans were so blatant in their demonism; they took away the democratic façade of the liberals' Satanism. But of course the old adage, "If a tree falls in a forest and no one is there, does it make a sound?" applies here. If the European-Americans have become morally neutered by centuries of philosophical trivialities, are they still capable of seeing Satan's "palpable device"? Can they see evil and act against it? It doesn't appear so. The conservative pundits are still responding to the military coup with their, "We are not violent, We are not racist" litany and the white grazers are still so far from doing harms – "We too are non-violent, We too are not racist" – that they suspect none. Though the liberals slay them, yet will they believe that truth and justice are united to the American, demon-cratic way. But is this, despite the fact that everything seems to be going on as before, the beginning of the end for the liberals? Did they need to crush Trump because he was not 100% liberal? They have sown doubt in the hearts of the white grazers. It is merely anecdotal evidence that I can point to, but I see something in the white grazers that was not there before. They have begun to hate. The liberals risked everything to destroy Trump and what have they gained? Like Melmoth the Wanderer, they have bought some time from the devil to wreak havoc throughout the world, but haven't they lost something as well? Haven't they lost, in the eyes of the white grazers, their claim to moral legitimacy? The Soviet empire fell when its people no longer believed in the regimes' lies. The American liberals' empire is going to fall apart because the immoral underpinning of the regime has been exposed to the light. "We the people" demon-crazy is a great lie conceived and maintained by the father of lies. The liberals' "last trump" has begun; it will end, for them, in hell. We dare not follow them and their conservative allies, we must follow Him who saves, for it is better we lose the whole world than lose our souls.

Artists such as Shakespeare, Rembrandt, and Handel were certainly extraordinary – their artistic gifts were much greater than ours. But was their poetic alien to us? No, it was not. Their vision of the living God, their vision of Him who is "the grave where buried love doth live," was the heartfelt faith of the European people. The new liberal Europe is a Europe in complete opposition to old Europe, in which Christ was the poetic center. The Biden-Harris regime is the synthesis of all the anti-European, and therefore, anti-Christian regimes that have been established throughout our people's history. The regime is Sodom and Gomorrah, the regime is Babylon, the regime is Jacobinism, the regime is communism, and the regime is negro worship. What force on earth can defeat such a synthesis of evil? There is no force on this earth alone that can defeat the American synthesis of evil. But our Lord told us that we had someone within us, the Holy Ghost, who could unite our humanity to His divine humanity, and that divine-human link created Christian Europe. When we see what the antique Europeans saw, we shall reestablish our connection to the living God and the institutionalized evil of liberalism will give way to His reign of charity.

We are a long way from such a consummation. In fact, we have never, as a people, been farther away from His kingdom come, on earth as it is in heaven, than we are now. We, the remnant band, are like Lear after his earthly kingdom has been lost: We must "take upon's the mystery of things, As if we were God's spies." So long as we have hearts of flesh, so long as we reject the philosophical speculation that leads to hell, we will remain connected to Him. And that connection will surely conquer the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth, which has come so forcefully to fruition in the satanic regime of Biden-



Harris. We are being told we must celebrate, all month long, the history of the Noble Black Savage. Shouldn't we celebrate, this month, and all year long, a different Savior? We once were the people who saw a great light, the light that shineth in darkness: Christ's Europe is our nation. +

---

(1) The 1950s Superman television show told us that Superman was fighting for "Truth, Justice, and the American way." There is no truth and no justice in the American way. It is time to fight for His truth and His justice instead of fighting for the father of all lies and all injustices.

(2) The attack on Trump is an attack on all those who are white and Christian – all those whites who are non-illuminated. The Republicans who voted to impeach Trump see themselves as part of the Illuminati. After they join with their Demon-cratic allies to destroy Trump, they will come for thee and me. We must see this hatred of Trump for what it is – the complete intolerance of Satan's minions for the slightest trace of Christian humanity in their kingdom of hell on earth. The liberals hate all things white and Christian because they belong heart, mind, and soul to the devil. We cannot dialogue with the devil's own, we can only fight them with our whole heart, mind, and soul.

---

## **The Demons of Liberalism - February 6, 2021**

"Listen," repeated Isidora, "is there no truth in the voice that speaks to you in tones like these? Alas! if there be no truth in religion, there is none on earth! Passion itself evanishes into an illusion, unless it is hallowed by the consciousness of a God and of futurity. That sterility of the heart that forbids the growth of divine feeling, must be hostile also to every tender and generous sentiment. He who is without a God must be without a heart!

C. Maturin

---

Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

---

I knew Trump's electoral victory in 2016 was a rear guard delaying action, not a genuine victory, but I still wanted to see it extended four more years. Even though it was only a sliver of Christian humanity that we saw during Trump's administration, that tiny sliver was worth something. Now that Trump is gone the leftward march of the Jacobins will continue onward at an accelerated rate. The only thing we can take out of this military coup that has any value, and it is not enough to make up for all the evils, is a certain moral clarity. We no longer need to play the democratic game. And in point of fact we must not play the democratic game, because it is the devil's game.

Recently, during a snow storm, I went out to one of my favorite hills at the edge of town and started running up and down it. A young man shoveling his walk obviously thought it rather odd to see an old man running up and down a hill in the middle of a snow storm, because he asked me why I was doing such a ridiculous thing. Since I do not hold political office or a job in academia, I told him why I was running up and down the hill: "I don't drink or take drugs, so this is my way of staving off the post-election depression." The young man's reply was quite interesting: "I hear you. Why don't we all just get our guns and blow the blankety-blank sons of blankety-blank away?" Why indeed?

The lines from Macbeth keep recurring to me: "Fit to govern? Not fit to live!" That describes the liberals in every branch of our government.(1) The violent overthrow of such creatures would certainly be a worthy and moral endeavor, but it would be immoral to mount a frontal attack, a traditional military counterrevolution, against the liberals from hell, because we would be wasting the lives of the good and true whites in an impossible cause. If Trump, as soon as he took office in 2016, had replaced the Obama military chiefs with his own people, and if he had worked secretly and diligently to strike quickly and decisively at the appointed hour – let us say on November 3, 2020 – to overthrow the demon-cracy of the liberals, by abolishing the satanic Supreme Court, by abolishing the House and Senate, and by abolishing the media and all the institutions of 'higher' learning, then we would have had every reason to support a counterrevolution, because it would have been right and proper and it would have had a reasonable prospect of success. But Trump was not a counterrevolutionary; he had no intention of overturning our demon-cracy and setting up a benevolent dictatorship, which is a great pity. Without the backing of a leader who has a large segment of the military on his side, as was the case with Franco and Pinochet, a direct military confrontation with the liberals, who own the army and the police, would be immoral, not because violence against the liberal Jacobins is immoral, but because the violence would be useless. The liberals would simply massacre the white counterrevolutionaries. And that is what I told the angry young man who wanted, understandably, to blow all the blankety-blanks away.

That having been said against direct military confrontations with the military junta, we must, if we are European Christians, do all we can to build up the heart to resist in our people. We must encourage them to fight for the Christian hearth fire values, for kith and kin. But we must be wise as serpents and gentle as doves. We must fight and kill in the name of the soft and gentle, the innocents in the womb and our people who are so far from doing harm that they suspect none, but we must fight with hearts of fire and wisdom. We need to have the rage of Lear in the storm – “I’ll do such things!” – but we also need to have the wisdom to know where and how to “do such things.”

There is a great white anger out there, but we need leadership, Christian leadership such as Nathan Bedford Forrest provided the South in those dark days after the Civil War. That leadership does not exist in the ranks of the men who have been incorrectly labeled conservatives. The history of American conservatism, with a few exceptions in the Southern United States, has been a history of the moderate branch of liberalism. There were the leftists, who were not moderate, who wanted to go very rapidly toward utopia, and then there were the moderate liberals, who wanted to move more slowly toward utopia. But the moderate liberals, who masquerade as conservatives, have never advocated a return to old Europe, to the right-wing values stemming from a Christian theocracy. Such a return would have been against the core values of liberty, equality, and fraternity. And what is missing in the conservative theories in the 20th and 21st centuries is that which is necessary: white pietas. I do not use the term ‘feudalism’ because it has medieval connotations, and Christendom is much more than just the medieval ages. Christendom did not die until the 20th century when the European people abandoned the God who enters human hearts for the God who enters human minds. When we lost our blood connection to the living God, we became Gnostic men without a real existence. The guerilla warfare, the midnight raids on the bastions of liberalism, will only come about when the European people begin to feel that they are a people, a people bound to each other and their Savior in spirit and blood. I don’t see that happening right now, but there is a white anger that has been unleashed by the military coup of 2020 that could be the start of something more than anger; it could be the first step on the road back to white pietas.

During the final days of the Trump appeals, I saw a News Max ‘conservative’ pundit interviewing one of the Proud Boys, the brave young men who go up against Antifa AR15s with baseball bats. The ‘conservative’ interviewer was giving the Proud Boy a chance to refute the liberals’ charges against the Proud Boys, but there was one question he kept coming back to: “You are not racist, are you?” And the Proud Boy would answer, “No, we are not.” That mini-liturgical ritual – “You are not racist?” and the reply, “No, we are not” – gives the lie to the conservatives. They are not conservative when they try to conserve the fusion of the noble black savage and Christianity. You cannot serve two masters: you cannot serve Christ and the sacred negro. At Christmastime the word ‘Christ’ is viewed as politically incorrect, but on Martin Luther King Jr. day all those who do not praise his name in the reverent tones once reserved for Jesus Christ are cast into outer darkness. Where your treasure lies, so lies your heart. If we treasure the noble black savage, if our greatest fear is the fear of being ‘racist,’ then we will never become a people again. The conservatives in church and state are the great enemies of the European people.(2) They are the other side of the liberal coin Satan has created to perpetuate his reign here on earth. He sends us two evils so that if we flee from one evil to the other, we will still remain in his camp. Americanism, Jacobinism, and communism all stem from the same root, which is hell. It is pietas – the love of our own in and through the Savior – that Satan fears. That is why he has attacked the European people through his champions, men such as Paine and Rousseau. And that is why we, the European people, live in captivity, a Babylonian captivity; we have lost our vision of the living God who comes to human hearts and replaced that God with an intellectual construct of an impersonal God called the noble black savage. That god will never and has never existed in reality. He only exists in the satanic minds of the liberals who have built their ‘utopia’ with the terrible swift sword of ‘racism.’ But it is only white racism that is evil because it is only white racism that is grounded in the pietas which must be destroyed and never revived, because such a revival would bring back His reign of charity. And that, from the devil’s standpoint, would be the ultimate horror.

I said that in the aftermath of the coup there is now moral clarity. Perhaps I should have said, there should be moral clarity, because I really can’t say I see any moral clarity in the conservative pundits. They are still telling atrocity stories about the demon-crats and telling us to vote and trust the demon-cratic process to wash all our troubles away. “Keep the faith,” they tell us, “and vote Republican.” Perhaps we should keep another faith – the faith of our Fathers. Chateaubriand tells us that Adam “sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that overpowered it.” The modern Europeans have gone back to the original sin. They have rejected the God who comes to human hearts in order to embrace the God who illuminates technocratic, inhuman minds. But that illuminated light is not from the God who took flesh and dwelt among us, it is not the light that shineth in darkness. The light of mental illumination comes from Satan. He bids us seek that illumination in order to plunge us into confusion, despair, and ultimately, into hell itself. The conservatives’ failure to see the hell that is liberalism, their willingness to sup with the devil and his minions, is something that makes a European Christian recoil in horror. We can’t make common cause with ‘conservatives’ who tell us to sup with the devil. Cortez did not sit and eat with Montezuma as he dined on the hearts of small children. Instead he personally tore down the altar of Quetzalcoatl and imposed his cultural values on the ‘natural, organic’ Aztecs. How is it possible to accept the liberals’ institutionalized Satanism without reacting as Cortez and his men reacted to the institutionalized demonic savagery of the Aztecs? It is only possible when the people whose ancestors took Christ into their hearts have left the

Dream of the Rood for the dream of a utopia of the Illuminati who dance around an altar consecrated to the noble black savage.

In Conrad's *Heart of Darkness*, the main character, Kurtz, who has made a descent into depravity and savagery, dies with the words, "the horror, the horror," on his lips. Conrad's alter ego, Marlowe, says of Kurtz, "it is something to have judged." Kurtz was not, at his end, without some moral discernment – he saw what he had become and he was horrified by that evil. Trump did win the election – he got the majority of the votes. But a very large minority – almost half the country – voted for Biden and Harris. And the 'conservatives' who didn't actually vote for the Biden-Harris ticket are advising us to deal demon-cratically with the new Biden-Harris regime. Do we see the depths of that tragedy? If we cannot see the horror, if we can actually accept and/or acquiesce to the liberals' horror, then we have truly gone where no European has ever gone before. We have embraced Satan without a qualm or a single look back at what we once were as a people.

In 1820 Charles Maturin, an Irish clergyman, wrote a novel called *Melmoth the Wanderer*. In the novel the devil gives the main character an extra 150 years on earth, but he must, in that 150 years, find someone to take his place or else he will be eternally damned. Maturin takes us through a labyrinth of evil, introducing us to some hideous people who seem to be beyond redemption. But in the end, they all reject Melmoth's devilish bargain. No matter what sins they are guilty of, they still, in the deepest recesses of their hearts, cling to their hope of redemption through Him who saves. They will not give up their souls to gain the world. So what starts out as a terribly dark novel turns out to be a story of redemption through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. That is not the case in the modern European nations. Writing in the latter half of the 18th century, Burke said that we were spending the unbought grace of life. And Herbert Butterfield, writing in 1950, said that we were barely surviving on the fumes of Christianity. When there are no Europeans left who will fight for His reign of charity, the link between His kingdom come and our earthly pilgrimage is severed. Without any remorse, with a satanic glee, the liberals are imposing their satanic will on the world. If the European people cannot see that horror, they will not fight it. In the name of our Savior, we must see the unmitigated evil of liberalism and we must, with the charity that is linked to His divine charity, combat the horror with our whole heart, mind, and soul. +

---

(1) I see that Liz Cheney has signed on to the impeachment of Trump. There is absolutely no difference between the Republican Demon-crats, the Democratic Demon-crats, and the robed demons on the Supreme Court. They all live in, and enjoy, the hell on earth they have created by giving their souls to Satan. "If, having entered hell you feel no flame, then you deserve the place to which you came."

(2) We must challenge the 'conservatives' in church and state who use their alleged concern for the noble black savage to attack Christ's reign of charity and defend Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. How can you base your religion on the hatred of your own people? When the European people loved their own, in and through Christ, they extended that love to the stranger. It does not work the other way around. You can't hate your own people and love the stranger, because he who hates his own people cannot love anyone or anything. The modern Europeans' alleged love for the noble black savage is grounded in intellectual pride and vanity. It pleases them to be the superior mind in charge of protecting the new suffering servant – the noble black savage. Never, never, never cave in to the blasphemy of the noble black savage.

---

## **Military Junta - January 30, 2021**

The nature of things requires that the army should never act but as an instrument. The moment that, erecting itself into a deliberative body, it shall act according to its own resolutions, the government, be it what it may, will immediately degenerate into a military democracy; a species of political monster, which has always ended by devouring those who have produced it. –Burke

---

The Illuminati, the liberals, have been at war with non-illuminated whites for over two hundred years, so what has really changed in this last election? What has changed is that the liberals no longer see the need to camouflage what they are doing. And when they no longer need to camouflage what they are doing, they can proceed with the destruction of the non-illuminated whites at an accelerated rate. The absence of a right-wing with men committed to a civilization grounded in pietas – the love of one particular people, those of your own blood, and the love of one particular God, Jesus Christ – has proved to be the downfall of the European people. Without white pietas they do not have the "passionate intensity" to combat the liberals' passionate, satanic hatred of the white race. –CWNY

---

## **Preface**

Without a predetermined intent I see I have relied very heavily on Burke in this week's post. But how could it be otherwise since I am writing about a leftist, military coup similar to the military coup in France in 1789?

The age of prophecy ended with the coming of Christ, who was the fulfillment of the prophets' vision. But during the Christian centuries of our people, God has always supplied us with men of vision who warned us what would happen if we abandoned Him who is our common hope. When Satan became incarnate in Jacobin France, God sent us a champion, Edmund Burke, to challenge the forces of

Satan's new order, in the name of Christ, the King. At first the 'best' men of Europe, men such as Walter Scott, championed Burke. But in the 20th century, the tide turned: the 'worst' prevailed. The philosophy of Satan – the philosophy of Thomas Paine and Jean Jacques Rousseau – became the new religion of the Europeans. And the linchpin of that philosophy was and continues to be the Noble Savage who has replaced the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

The European people must forsake nature and nature's god, the Noble Savage, before they can regain their humanity and become His champions instead of Satan's lap dogs. The religion of the 'enlightened' men, the Paines and the Rousseaus, makes men worse than beasts, it makes them philosophers, who reject all things human for all things satanic:

He melts with tenderness for those only who touch him by the remotest relation, and then, without one natural pang, casts away, as a sort of offal and excrement, the spawn of his disgusting amours, and sends his children to the hospital of foundlings. The bear loves, licks, and forms her young, but bears are not philosophers. Vanity, however, finds its account in reversing the train of our natural feelings. – Burke

Of course the question is – what violates our natural feelings? Is it natural that we should adhere to Rousseau's 'natural' philosophy of inhumanity? Or is it natural that we should love our own in and through the Savior, Jesus Christ? The conflict within the hearts of the Trumpers, who wanted to blend the love of their own with the love of an abstract philosophy with the noble black savage at its center, allowed the liberals to complete their conquest of the white race on November 3rd. Will that conquest be a permanent, irrevocable conquest? No, it shall not be permanent. Now that the "peace, that I deem'd no peace, is over and done," the "no peace" of demon-crazy, we can lift up our eyes unto the hills and fight the devil's minions, instead of democratically cringing and crawling before them.

For the peace, that I deem'd no peace, is over and done,  
And now by the side of the Black and the Baltic deep,  
And deathful-grinning mouths of the fortress, flames  
The blood-red blossom of war with a heart of fire.

Let it flame or fade, and the war roll down like a wind,  
We have proved we have hearts in a cause, we are noble still,  
And myself have awaked, as it seems, to the better mind.  
It is better to fight for the good than to rail at the ill;  
I have felt with my native land, I am one with my kind,  
I embrace the purpose of God, and the doom assign'd.

-Alfred Lord Tennyson

---

It is important, since language is sermonic, to call what happened November 3rd by its correct name: It was a military coup by a determined, violent, leftist army against a democratically elected President. Once that President was deposed, he was forced into exile with his family and a few of his followers. He is only in exile until the military junta currently in power can prepare their trumped up case (no pun intended) against him and bring him to trial. The outcome of that trial, like all trials in a leftwing, military dictatorship, has been predetermined: Guilty as charged! Trump will be imprisoned after the trial and possibly executed, but it is much more likely that he will die mysteriously of unknown causes while in prison. While Trump faces his fate, all those people who supported the former President will be purged from the new order. That is the way military coups work. Biden has already created a goon squad and given them their instructions: "All religious fanatics, nativists, and racists must be purged." And in order to ensure that the leftist cabal doing the purging is protected, an army of National Guard troops guards the capitol. That is also the way military dictatorships must go about their business. They have no moral legitimacy and no popular support, so they must rely on sheer force to maintain themselves in power. I am told that Biden's significant other gives the troops cookies in the hope such offerings will offset the fact that they must live in giant parking garages. Such 'peace' offerings would not make me guard the enemies of my God and my people, but Esau sold his birthright for a pot of lentils, so maybe the National Guardsmen will betray their God and their people for a few chocolate chip cookies. We shall see in the months ahead.

Up to the time of the French Revolution, many of the European Christian sectarians who placed an unholy emphasis on their particular form of church organization disputed Burke's claim that, "All the nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines." But we must, if we see European history through and not with the eye, concede that Burke's assessment is correct. If we try to understand our people's history with our hearts then we can see the living God acting in and through them. And because His image was clearly embodied in the culture of the antique Europeans, the devil made it his mission to destroy that image:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him "with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength." He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. -Burke

“That was then, not now — that was only Robespierre’s France, and Burke was an extremist,” is generally the response to any suggestion that the liberals’ march to utopia in all the European nations is grounded in Satan’s hatred of the living God, our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. But the overriding passion of all liberal, leftist revolutions is the hatred of Jesus Christ. Each revolution differs somewhat in their local strategies and their “subordinate doctrines,” but they are all united in that essential passion — they must attack Jesus Christ by destroying the Christ-bearing race. They must, at the behest of Satan, alternately seduce and compel the European people into abandoning their allegiance to Christ, “to break the behest which He uttered.”

All the modern European democracies are on the leftward road to hell on earth, but let us look at the two utopian leaders, America and France, in order to see how Christendom has become Satandom and why the United States has become the most completely satanic nation on the face of the earth. Let us get to the heart of the American experiment in demon-crazy by going to the poetic inspiration of the American Revolution — it was Thomas Paine, the religious atheist, the man to whom Washington always turned when he needed to rally his troops:

I do not believe in the creed professed by the Jewish church, by the Roman church, by the Greek church, by the Turkish church, by the Protestant church, nor by any church that I know of. My own mind is my own church.”

And then he proceeds to tell us about our faith in Jesus Christ:

Of all the systems of religion that ever were invented, there is none more derogatory to the Almighty, more unedifying to man, more repugnant to reason, and more contradictory in itself, than this thing called Christianity. Too absurd for belief, too impossible to convince, and too inconsistent for practice, it renders the heart torpid, or produces only atheists and fanatics. (1)

How does Paine, the atheist, justify his atheism? He is not, he tells us, an atheist; he believes in “nature and nature’s God.” And whom may that be? It is the Noble Savage of Rousseau who has been revealed to all mankind through the pure, deified reason of enlightened men such as Thomas Paine and Jean Jacques Rousseau.

The enlightened brain-trust of our experiment in demon-crazy decided to go with the seductive road to utopia. They cloaked their rebellion against the living God in the seductive garb of religious liberty and economic prosperity: “You can have your churches, you can keep what you earn, so long as you pay homage to our public God — which is nature, as defined by the minds of the enlightened ones.” Whenever the seduction was seen for what it was, a revolution against Christ’s reign of charity in order to install a satanic regime of merciless cruelty as was the case in 1860, the whistle blowers, in this case, the Southerners, were put to the sword by the non-seductive, masculine side of the liberal dragon. When the South was finally subdued in the 1950s, the softer, seductive Jacobinism resurfaced in our nation. Trump, who did not represent a counter-revolution but only a slight regression on the road to utopia, forced the liberals to return to the methods used in 1860, to violently impose their will on the recalcitrant, unilluminated whites. It seems, from my perspective, the satanic seduction of “We the People” demon-crazy was working quite well for the liberals. Was it really necessary to abandon the seduction by staging a military coup? After all, Trump did not oppose liberalism itself, he only wanted to keep the non-illuminated whites within Liberalism. But having once progressed to the ‘higher’ stage of illumination, the devil’s minions could not and would not go back. Will their intransigence, their abandonment of the seductive, democratic road to hell bring about their destruction? That is not something we know for sure. If the military coup is allowed to stand without a military response, then the liberals have successfully transitioned from the feminine side of Jacobinism to the masculine side, and then back to the feminine side. Like Talleyrand, they will have weathered all the political storms by being fully committed at all times to that which is expedient and satanic. They must always shun all things that ‘stink’ of self-sacrifice and Christian charity.

The French Jacobins started out with the direct approach — the guillotine for all non-illuminated whites — and then shifted to the seductive mode after Robespierre, but they never repudiated their regicide roots. Nicolas Sarkozy not very long ago affirmed France’s cruel, utopian *raison d’être* by asserting that France is a regicide nation. The United States never was fully European as France was; our nation was always implicitly satanic from the beginning — ‘Government for the People and of the People’ is a doctrine penned in hell. But “We the People,” democracy was the liberals’ seductive ploy, and the fact that they abandoned that ploy on November 3rd is significant. Is the blatancy of this military coup going to bring about a military reaction or have the European Americans been so beaten down and successfully propagandized that they will take all this without a whimper?

What are the parallels between the liberals’ revolution of November 3rd and the French Revolution of 1789? First, there was a weak Christian populace. The French clergy at that time had become more concerned with the outward forms than the inner spirit of faith. They didn’t care if the menfolk attended Jacobin gatherings all week so long as they sent their women to mass and attended mass for weddings and funerals:

I have no doubt that some miserable bigots will be found here, as well as elsewhere, who hate sects and parties different from their own, more than they love the substance of religion; and who are more angry with those who differ from them in their particular plans and systems, than displeased with those who attack the foundation of our common hope. These men will write and speak on the subject in the manner that is to be expected from their temper and character. Burnet says, that when he was in France, in the year 1683, “the method which carried over the men of the finest parts to Popery was this—they brought themselves to doubt of the whole Christian religion. When that was once done, it seemed a more indifferent thing of what side or form they continued outwardly.” If this was then the ecclesiastical policy of France, it is what they have since but too much reason to repent of. They preferred atheism to a form of religion not agreeable to their ideas. They succeeded in destroying that form; and atheism has succeeded in destroying them. I can readily give credit to Burnet’s story; because I have observed too much of a similar spirit (for a little of it is “much too much”) amongst ourselves. The humour, however, is not general.

The worship of the forms of faith over the substance, over He who is our common hope, became the whole of the religious formation of the European Americans. The syncretic Catholics – blending Islam, Judaism, feminism, negro worship, and environmentalism – and the syncretic Protestants – blending Judaism, feminism, negro worship, and Christianity – were unable to oppose straight-forward, unadulterated Satanism. Like Louis XVI, Trump was unable to oppose the liberals because he was part liberal himself. Trump did not want to suppress the violence in the streets this past summer because he feared to act against Black Lives Matter. When the police killed the murderer of Aaron Danielson, they did so because he had stepped away from his shield, the banner of Black Lives Matter. Was one black murderer or rioter ever brought to justice during the riots? No, instead white people who defended themselves were brought to ‘justice.’ When those in authority doubt their legitimacy – and all white Presidents, even Trump, the last and best President of our democracy, doubt their legitimacy – when they believe that ‘white privilege,’ whether the aristocratic ‘white privilege’ in old France or the ‘white privilege’ in the United States, is a sin, they will not be able to act in defense of themselves or their people. (2)

The courts always play an important part in maintaining a military dictatorship, giving the military regime an aura of legitimacy. Our Supreme Court consists of a cabal of puppets for Generalissimo Biden and his cohorts, just as the courts in Jacobin France were the puppets of Robespierre and company:

From the forced repentance of invalid mutineers and disbanded thieves, you can hope for no resource. Government itself, which ought to constrain the more bold and dexterous of these robbers, is their accomplice. Its arms, its treasures, its all, are in their hands. Judicature, which above all things should awe them, is their creature and their instrument. Nothing seems to me to render your internal situation more desperate than this one circumstance of the state of your judicature. Many days are not past since we have seen a set of men brought forth by your rulers for a most critical function. Your rulers brought forth a set of men, steaming from the sweat and drudgery, and all black with the smoky and soot of the forge of confiscation and robbery—ardentis massae fuligine lippos [“Blinded by the soot of the fiery mass”]—a set of men brought forth from the trade of hammering arms of proof, offensive and defensive, in aid of the enterprizes, and for the subsequent protection of housebreakers, murderers, traitors, and malefactors; men, who had their minds seasoned with theories perfectly conformable to their practice, and who had always laughed at possession and prescription, and defied all the fundamental maxims of jurisprudence. To the horror and stupefaction of all the honest part of this nation, and indeed of all nations who are spectators, we have seen, on the credit of those very practices and principles, and to carry them further into effect, these very men placed on the sacred seat of justice in the capitol city of your late kingdom. We see, that in future, you are to be destroyed with more form and regularity. This is not peace; it is only the introduction of a sort of discipline in their hostility. Their tyranny is complete, in their justice; and their lanthorn is not half so dreadful as their court. – Burke

Let us never lose sight of the fact that our Supreme Court and all the lesser courts are not courts of justice, they are the kangaroo courts of the liberal Sanhedrin. Their “fundamental maxims of jurisprudence” are dictated by what is expedient for their own survival and what is desirable to Satan, who is ultimately the guiding light of the American courts.

The key element, the satanic component that fuels and sustains the leftist regimes in this nation and all the European nations is the media, the Fourth Estate whom Burke called the pamphleteers. When our children hear nothing but leftist propaganda in the schools and churches, when our citizens hear nothing but ‘racism, racism, racism’ in every media outlet, is it any wonder the leftists were able to successfully conclude a military coup? And what do the conservatives, the shadows of the liberals, tell us we should do now that there has been a military coup? They tell us to continue doing what we did before the coup: We are to continue to listen to their atrocity stories and vote against the military junta. What world do the conservative pundits live in? No military junta has ever been voted out of existence. We can’t continue to recite the American litany, “We are not racist, we are non-violent,” and expect to move a militant, leftist cabal of demons to grant our petition to live and breathe in Liberaldom. All non-illuminated whites are guilty as charged, and they will be dealt with. The conservative pundits who tell us we can affect change by voting are asking us to believe a lie so that they can keep their jobs as conservative pundits.

The hierarchy of organized Christian Jewry is part of the propaganda apparatus of the American Junta. They will permit the churches to exist so long as the churches support the junta. The liberals are constantly telling us the pre-Vatican II popes and the Protestant ministers in Germany did not speak out against Hitler. That, of course, is a lie. But our current crop of clerical sycophants do not speak out against a far greater danger than Hitler. They do not speak out against a Babylonian synthesis of horrors that makes Hitler’s regime seem like a bastion of decency in comparison. And I say this

without any sympathy for Hitler's regime. But is there any doubt which regime is the greater evil? As Christians we are not permitted, in theory, to choose the lesser of two evils, but in practice we might have to make such a Hobson's choice if there are only two camps – the mad-dog liberals and the neo-pagans – who are doing the fighting. If all the 'Christians' side with the liberals because they are syncretic Christians, what will the European Christians do? They must fight, and they cannot fight with the mad-dog liberals and the syncretic Christians. Must they fight with the neo-pagans? No, they can't. They must fight alone, as the few against the many. The upcoming civil war will not be pleasant – wars never are – but it would be even more unpleasant, it would be horrific, if we accepted the military dictatorship of the demon-crats and their Republican allies. When the Christian Saxons lost to the pagan Danes at the battle of Maldon in 991 AD, their "old companion" Byrhtwold sought to rally them for future battles in the war that they had to fight and win:

Byrhtwold spoke; he grasped his shield; he was an old companion; he shook his ash spear; full boldly he exhorted the warriors: 'Thought shall be the harder, heart the keener, courage the greater, as our might lessons. Here lies our leader all hewn down, the valiant man in the dust; may he lament for ever who thinks now to turn from this war-play. I am old in age; I will not hence, but I purpose to lie by the side of my lord, by the man so dearly loved.' Godric, the son of Æthelgar, likewise exhorted them all to fight. Often he let fly the spear, the deadly dart, against the Vikings, as he went foremost in the host. He hewed and struck down until he fell in the battle; that was not the Godric who fled from the fight.

To date the non-illuminated whites can be described as men who fled from the fight, because the democratic process demands that men must flee from Satan and his minions. Wouldn't they, the liberal minions of Satan, be surprised if we suddenly turned in our flight and fought the liberal junta? +

---

(1) When I read Thomas Paine's vitriolic, venomous attack on the God-Man, Jesus Christ, I feel as if I am reading the contemporary writings of the mad-dog liberals and the neo-pagans. Both groups are united with Paine in their hatred of the Light of the World. Who would be married to hell? The Christian Europeans must stand alone against the liberal world, forsaking all ideologies that are in opposition to His reign of charity.

(2) Louis XVI did not believe in the entirety of the Jacobin's case against monarchal France, but he had been influenced by the pamphleteers, he was unable to see the satanic core of their rebellion:

But the spirit of ambition, now for the first time connected with the spirit of speculation, was not to be restrained at will. There was no longer any means of arresting a principle in its course. [136] When Louis the XVIth. under the influence of the enemies to Monarchy, meant to found but one Republic, he set up two. When he meant to take away half the crown of his neighbour, he lost the whole of his own. Louis the XVIth. could not with impunity countenance a new Republic: yet between his throne and that dangerous lodgment for an enemy, which he had erected, he had the whole Atlantick for a ditch. He had for an out-work the English nation itself, friendly to liberty, adverse to that mode of it. He was surrounded by a rampart of Monarchies, most of them allied to him, and generally under his influence. Yet even thus secured, a Republic erected under his auspices, and dependent on his power, became fatal to his throne. The very money which he had lent to support this Republic, by a good faith, which to him operated as perfidy, was punctually paid to his enemies, and became a resource in the hands of his assassins. –Burke

The Swiss Guard who fought and died to the last man defending the Crown would not have had to die, nor did Louis XVI and his family and the countless number of French aristocrats have to die, had Louis seen that the Jacobins represented unmitigated evil and acted as a ruler must act in the face of unmitigated evil. So it was with Trump. If he had not believed, in part, in the justice of the liberals' accusations of 'racism' against the white Europeans of the past, he would have acted forcibly against the rioters during the summer months prior to the November 3rd coup. Instead, he allowed them to assemble around the polling places in the battleground states and successfully intimidate the cowardly Republican shadows – shadows of the Demon-crats and shadows of men. When men in authority fail to act in defense of the good, the good are martyred, as the sainted Queen of France and the nobles of France were martyred:

What softening of character is to be had, what review of their social situations and duties is to be taught by these examples, to Kings, to Nobles, to Men of Property, to Women, and to Infants? The Royal Family perished, because it was royal. The Nobles perished, because they were noble. The Men, Women and Children, who had property, because they had property to be robbed of. The Priests were punished, after they had been robbed of their all, not for their vices, but for their virtues and their piety, which made them an honour to their sacred profession, and to that nature, of which we ought to be proud, since they belong to it. My Lord, nothing can be learned from such examples, except the danger of being Kings, Queens, Nobles, Priests, and Children to be butchered on account of their inheritance. These are things at which not Vice, not Crime, not Folly, but Wisdom, Goodness, Learning, [290] Justice, Probity, Beneficence stand aghast. By these examples our reason and our moral sense are not enlightened, but confounded; and there is no refuge for astonished and affrighted virtue, but being annihilated in humility and submission, sinking into a silent adoration of the inscrutable dispensations of Providence, and flying with trembling wings from this world of daring crimes, and feeble, pusillanimous, half-bred, bastard Justice, to the asylum of another order of things, in an unknown form, but in a better life. –Burke

The four martyrs on the day of infamy and the countless white lives that will be lost during the military regime of Biden and his cohorts were and will be lost because there were and are no leaders in European America willing to rebuke any movement that forsakes His reign of charity and places "Black Lives Matter" at the forefront of their movement.

## Through the Valley of the Shadow of Death - January 23, 2021

Nearer to Thee!  
E'en though it be a cross  
That raiseth me

-Sarah Flower Adams

---

And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.

—Revelations 13: 15-18

---

Early on in Shakespeare's *King Lear*, the evil, bastard son of Gloucester gives a fiery defense of bastardy and evil. In the margin of his volume of Shakespeare, Melville commented on Edmund's speech: "There is an energy to demonism that mere virtue often lacks." Therein lies the answer to Trump's electoral defeat and the demise of the European people in the nations that once belonged to them. The white-hating liberals are animated by the demonic energy of Satan while the white grazers are devoid of the spiritual force necessary to combat the liberals, despite the fact that in sheer numbers they outnumber the liberals. This is not only the case in America, it is the case in all the European countries. What started out as a tiny liberal minority has grown into a large minority, but still, even in our modern pigsty European nations, the mad-dog liberals do not constitute a majority of the whites. And that is why the liberals must continue to 'de-white' the European nations; they need to join with the colored barbarians in order to form a majority coalition against the whites who are not willing to embrace liberalism in its entirety.

The unique feature of the American pigsty is that the American liberals in this last 'election' found a way to dispense with building a majority coalition. The un-silent minority simply imposed their will on the majority by fiat. The American election fraud has been noted by the liberals in the other European nations. Now they see that they do not have to wait for majority coalitions to impose their will on the white grazers, they can simply declare themselves the victors in every election. Who will say them nay? Weakness is something you dare not show to a satanic enemy, and that is what the white grazers showed in the election of 2020. They allowed the liberals to steal the election and they did nothing. Appealing to the satanic Supreme Court is the equivalent of doing nothing; it is "seeking redemption from the devil." Now it is open season on the non-illuminated whites, because the liberals know they will not fight.

The Illuminati, the liberals, have been at war with non-illuminated whites for over two hundred years, so what has really changed in this last election? What has changed is that the liberals no longer see the need to camouflage what they are doing. And when they no longer need to camouflage what they are doing, they can proceed with the destruction of the non-illuminated whites at an accelerated rate. The absence of a right-wing with men committed to a civilization grounded in pietas – the love of one particular people, those of your own blood, and the love of one particular God, Jesus Christ – has proved to be the downfall of the European people. Without white pietas they do not have the "passionate intensity" to combat the liberals' passionate, satanic hatred of the white race.

Yeats saw that the "blood red tide was loose," because "the best lack all conviction, while the worst are full of passionate intensity." But Yeats sought to counter "the worst" with his occult theology. He believed the 'discredited' and 'obsolete' faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ, could not stand up to the demonism of "the worst." And he was right, to a certain extent: Intellectual Christianity cannot stand up to the satanic faith of the Illuminati because there is no true faith, the kind of faith that moves mountains, in intellectual Christianity. There is no blood and heart in intellectual Christianity, and faith, according to our Lord and His apostle, St. Paul, is of the blood and of the heart. Intellectual Christianity is grounded in a denial of the wellspring of faith, that still quiet voice in the human heart, which bids us seek our Lord and Savior. Can we give that still, quiet voice a name? Yes, we can. It is the Holy Ghost. And we are told by our Lord that the denial of the Holy Ghost is the one sin that shall not be forgiven.

In the Gospels the demons know who Christ is, and so does their master, the devil. But neither the demons nor the devil have any understanding of Christ because their demonic hearts are full of pride, envy, and fear of Christ. They do not love Him, they hate Him. But they can't attack Him directly, so they attack Him by attacking His children, those who believe in Him and love Him. In an old English poem from what the liberals call the Dark Ages – because the light of Christ's love shone in those 'Dark Ages' – is a poet's depiction of Satan rallying his demonic troops:



We must earnestly plan to satisfy our vengeance on Adam and on his children together with him, if ever we can, to deprive Him there of his desire, if we can in any way devise it. No longer do I look to regain that light, that happiness, which He thinks long to enjoy with the host of his angels. We can never succeed in appeasing the wrath of mighty God. Let us snatch it from the sons of men, that heavenly kingdom, now that we may not have it, cause them to abandon His allegiance, to break the behest which He uttered. Then He will be angry at them in His heart, dismiss them from His protection; then they shall seek this hell and these dread depths; then we can have them for our followers, the sons of men, in these firm bonds.

Satan sets forth:

Then God's foe began to prepare himself, ready in his trappings; he had a faithless heart. He set on his head a helmet which made its wearer unseen, and bound it full tightly, fastened it with clasps. He knew many speeches of wicked words. He winged his way thence, passed through the doors of hell; by the fiend's art the fire was cleft in two. He purposed to beguile God's followers, men, secretly by evil deeds, to mislead and allure them, so that they should grow hateful to God.

-“Genesis B.” in R. K. Gordon. *Anglo-Saxon Poetry*

We must see that the liberals have taken on the mantle of Satan. Everything they do is dictated by their hatred of Christ, whom they attack through His people. No European can be admitted into the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth unless he completely repudiates the Christ of old Europe. That is the conundrum of the white grazers, the non-illuminated whites who voted for Trump. They want so desperately to be part of the liberals' world, but they also want to retain some Christian things as well. So they attempt to blend Christ with liberalism. The Protestants blend Judaism, negro worship, and Christianity, while the Roman Catholics blend Islam, Judaism, negro worship, tree-hugging, Buddhism, and every other religion under the sun with Christianity. And the more syncretic an organized 'Christian' church becomes, the more evil it becomes. The Roman Catholics went 60% for Biden while the Evangelicals went 75% for Trump. But in the end every attempt to blend Christ results in either a complete embrace of the devil or a surrender to the passionate intensity of the devil and his minions. You can't be passionately for both the devil and for Christ. If you reject the Christ of old Europe, because the Europeans of the past were 'racist' you will end up in the liberals' camp. Yes, our ancestors were 'racist.' They were so racist that they loved their own people as Christ loved them. Without that love for our own people, in and through Christ, we are nothing, we haven't the passion to love or hate. And without that passion, without that spiritual intensity, a man or woman becomes the prey of the devil who roams the world seeking the ruin of souls. The weak majority without a passionate faith will always lose to the devil's own who have a strong, passionate, intense faith – the hatred of Jesus Christ. The white grazers love Christ with a diluted love – they want a non-Europe-centric Christ more compatible with liberalism. And the liberals want undiluted Satanism. Who wins when those two forces clash? Those who hate with the unadulterated hatred of Satan shall always win out over those who want a little bit of Christianity in their liberal churches.

Lincoln said that the Civil War in this country would determine whether a nation conceived by Satan could long endure. I know he used the term “conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal,” but the proposition amounts to the same thing – conceived and dedicated to Satan. Equality is the nice sounding catchword that the devil uses to seduce mankind. He promised Adam and Eve equality with God, and his minions promise mankind a utopian equality of swine if they will embrace liberty, equality, and fraternity. But equality never means what it should mean: instead of a moral equality before God, the devil wants to see men turned to swine. And he wants some swine to be more equal: the colored swine and the illuminated swine. Nothing is more reprehensible than watching the swine, Republican and Demon-crat, competing for the pig swill of this world while stopping any attempt to de-swine the swine, to turn them back into humans again. The 'conservatives' always seek to please the liberals by showing them they are non-violent and not racist, because they want to be part of the devil's Pigsquealia.

Why, if white pietas is evil, is the devil so passionately against it? The major weapon of Satan's minions is always the race card. Their friendly opponents, the non-illuminated white grazers, are always put on the defensive by accusations of racism. They plead, on their knees, that they are not racist while conceding that their ancestors were racist. But their ancestors were full-blooded, passionate Christians. If the modern white grazer wants to be part of Liberaldom he must, or so he thinks, repudiate the passionate, heartfelt faith of his ancestors, the European people, in exchange for a faith in the unrepentant Jew, the sacred negro, Islam, the people of the Amazon rain forest, and, bringing up the rear, Jesus Christ. Is that a faith that will defeat the devil? No, it is not.

In his concession speech, Trump said to his followers that they had started something. No, they didn't. If Trump and his followers still believe in demon-crazy after what has happened to them, then it would have been much better had Trump never run for the presidency. (1) The great value of Trump's defeat in 2020 is that it stripped away the masks from the liberals' faces and revealed their satanic visages. We can see clearly, if we have eyes to see, that democracy is demon-crazy. When we have elections, they are only meant to choose candidates who comply with Satan's will. If there is one single spark of Christian humanity in a candidate, then that candidate will be crushed as Trump was crushed. Our courts, particularly our Supreme Court, are satanic; our legislators, Republican and Demon-crat, are satanic; and our churches exist only to caution us against embracing the racism of the Christ-bearing, non-democratic Christians of old Europe. “We

must,” they tell us, “be democratic and inclusive,” and we must not be “racist and insular.” But we must be ‘racist’; we must love our own in and through Christ. If we don’t, we will be unable to love Christ and hate the devil, we will continue to be the slaves of the demon-cratic Democrats and their shadows, the Republicans, who both serve the archangel Satan.

I have always looked on Aeschylus’ play *Prometheus Bound* as a Christian play even though it predates Christ’s entry into human history. I view it as Christian because Aeschylus portrays the divinity of charity. Prometheus opposed the cruel gods of Mt. Olympus – he stole fire from them and gave it to mankind because he felt sorry for suffering humanity. And of course we know what his punishment was – he was bound upon a rock, with eagles pecking his entrails. Aeschylus’ vision of charity, that charity had to be the main attribute of a true God, was a prefiguration of the Christ story. All the truly great stories include the suffering servant. What was great in Trump’s story was that he was on Mt. Olympus with the Illuminati of Liberalism. He could have remained on Mt. Olympus and watched while his fellow gods tortured and destroyed the non-illuminated, the mere mortals who make up the ranks of the non-illuminated whites. But instead, he came down from Mt. Olympus in an attempt to give fire to mortals. Prometheus was a forerunner of the one true God, the Suffering Servant, who was tied to a cross instead of a rock while the scribes, the Pharisees, and the pagan Romans pecked at His entrails. What is noble in Trump was his charitable outreach to non-illuminated whites who had, until he ran for office, no-one to stand between them and the devil’s minions. And what was noble in Trump’s supporters was that they gave him their love because of his sacrifice for them. But where the whole Trump movement falls apart is at the vital heart of existence. All that we are as a people and as individuals is bound up with our racial hearth fire and pietas. If we deny our racial hearth fire, if we condemn white pietas, we will forever be the slaves of the devil who keeps his kingdom in order by making the living God into an intellectual construct. Without pietas we can have no blood ties to man or to God. We won’t be able to love and hate with all our hearts. And consequently we will lose all the major battles in life to the liberals, who are incapable of love but who hate with the passion and fury of Satan.

The moral zeitgeist belongs to the liberals — they have a purity of faith. That was glaringly apparent during this last election year. The liberals’ minions burned, looted, and murdered with impunity last summer while the white grazers recited their litany of non-violence and Americanism. And the conservatives would not accept a leadership role in a counterrevolution; instead they sought to conserve liberalism. They wanted to ‘humanize’ the devil instead of combating him. Why do they want to sup with the devil? Because the devil is a “very clever fellow.” As Hawthorne tells us in “The Celestial Railroad,” as Melville tells us in *The Confidence Man*, and as Josh Turner tells us in “The Long Black Train,” the devil always promises us something that Christ won’t give us – the kingdom of heaven on this earth. What that kingdom entails is different to different people. For a satanic Supreme Court Justice such as Amy Coney Barrett, it gives her the opportunity to have a blended, interracial family, to wear pontifical robes, and to use those robes as an excuse to sanction the devil’s rule. A conservative pundit needs the devil to guarantee that he can continue with his punditry on into eternity. If he attacks the devil’s system, if he calls democracy demon-cracy, then he will lose his pundit credentials. And on it goes – the Republican legislators prefer Biden because Biden supports an unadulterated reign of Satan without one single Christian glitch in Satan’s machinery, and the white grazers must ultimately go along with the ‘conservatives’ who conserve liberalism, because they also want something they think only the liberals can provide. And the word ‘think’ is the operative word. For where our treasure is, there will our heart be also. Religion has become, in the Western world, a thing of the mind. The liberals have taken Satan into their hearts, and they have advanced his cause in the intellectual arena – in academia, in the churches (which have become pathetic ‘Amen’ choruses to academia), and in all of our major media outlets. The white grazer hasn’t the heart to overcome that propaganda deluge. His resistance was his support for some humanity within Satandom, hence his support for Trump. And now that Trump has lost, the white grazers’ resistance is “my vote has been stolen” posters.

Forrest’s counterrevolution outlasted his lifetime; his people retained their culture into the 1950s before they completely surrendered to liberalism. Franco’s counterrevolution lasted for his lifetime and as soon as he died the Spanish people immediately embraced liberalism. And Pinochet, that brave and noble man, was forced to witness the return of his people to the pigsty of liberalism before his death. Each counterrevolution became weaker as the heart of those counterrevolutions became more economic than Christian in substance. We must be motivated by a blood faith in the God of mercy and the love of our own people, we must have “that charity of honor” in order to fight and win a counterrevolution and then sustain that counterrevolution. That is why it is Forrest and his Christian soldiers who must be our exemplars; their counterrevolution outlasted them because it was grounded in pietas and was sustained by pietas. When the liberals’ narrative prevailed – “the old South and Old Europe were racist” – the counterrevolution, the anti-Jacobin movement, failed.

You cannot mount a counterrevolution based on purely economic motives. It is completely legitimate to vote for the candidate with sound economic policies, but economics cannot be primary. We must love our Christian heritage, we must love as our ‘racist’ European ancestors loved. In that old hymn sung by those blessed Christian European heroes as they went to their deaths on the Titanic, having placed the women and children in the lifeboats – “Nearer, my God, to Thee! E’en though it be a cross That raiseth me” – we see what pietas is. To sing that hymn and to believe it, as those men who loved their own in and through the Savior did, is all in all.

We shall not put a dent in Satan's reign of terror, of which the good old USA is the leader and sustainer, until we have white pietas once again. How can we be nearer to God when He bids us take up our cross in order to follow Him? Our ancestors knew how that was possible, but the modern Europeans do not know how it is possible because they have forsaken their hearts in order to embrace all or part of liberalism. That still, quiet voice, the Holy Ghost, is still alive in our hearts. If we listen to His voice, He will point us to the vital center of old Europe, our Lord and Savior, who will sustain us in the counterrevolution that we must fight. +

---

(1) My extreme depression in the wake of this electoral defeat is like unto that of Jacob Marley in *The Christmas Carol*, who wants to interfere in human lives for their own good but cannot. I want to help my family members to weather this tragedy, but I must watch my women weep and my sons deprived of work through the COVID-19 'crisis' without being able to help them to the extent that I would like to help them. And secondly – I love Trump for what he tried to do for the non-illuminated white grazers. Now that he has no official standing, I fear for his family and for him, yet I can do nothing to help him. And thirdly, I cannot prepare the white grazers for what is coming upon them, because they still are "so far from doing harms that they suspect none." They still believe in demon-crazy and the benevolence of the liberals: "They are just misguided."

I take no pleasure in, 'I told you so.' Edgar is right: "Men must endure their going hence even as they are coming hither." But to observe the suffering of your loved ones and to be unable to alleviate that suffering is the hardest task given us on this earth. Yes, we must pray. When hope seems not just nearly gone, but completely gone, we still must pray because that is what our Lord, through the Holy Ghost, tells us we must do.

---

### **The Deed of Death - January 16, 2021**

Beyond the infinite and boundless reach  
Of mercy, if thou didst this deed of death  
Art thou damned.

-Shakespeare, *King John*

---

For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

Revelations 18: 5

---

I don't like the sci-fi genre in literature or movies, so I suppose I have no right to reference it, but Burke once quoted Bolingbroke even though he disliked his writings, so let me quote from the original *Star Trek* television show: "To boldly go where no man has gone before." On January 20th, the United States of America is going to go where no European nation has ever gone before: they are going to openly acknowledge that this country worships Satan. All the European nations under the guise of 'we the people' democracy have been trafficking with Satan for over one hundred years, but they never made it explicit because there were still many Europeans who needed the façade of Christianity to remain intact before they could wholeheartedly support demon-crazy. So the shadows of Christianity, Christian outward forms with weak marshmallow insides, such as 'prolife' movements and 'Christian' democratic parties, were allowed to remain in the Western world. But the prophetic fire has gone from the Christ-bearing people – the fire of men like Burke and Dostoyevsky, who warned the European people of the hellish world we would inhabit if we cast the Suffering Servant aside for our new manmade Jacobin systems of government. Will that fire ever return? We shall see, but as of now there is no indication that the spiritual fire of the prophets, which became part of the European people's soul when they embraced the embodiment of the prophetic fire, our Lord and Savior, will ever be seen in the European nations again.

What we have now in the European nations are little Christian marshmallow fires that are permitted to smolder so long as they do not threaten the larger satanic fire rapidly spreading throughout the European nations. What the Trump election, which became a non-election, represents is a declaration by the liberals that even the marshmallow fires shall be extinguished. There must be and there shall be no fire other than the one great fire – the all-consuming fire of the archangel Lucifer. The American tragedy is that we never had a right-wing. Without a right-wing, without men who are determined to conserve and defend a throne and altar consecrated to Christ, which is the guarantee that a people's Christian culture and traditions will be conserved, you do not really have a spiritual core in your nation worthy to defend. American 'conservatives' have always invoked our revolutionary founding fathers and our marvelous Constitution in their fight against their liberal brethren. They maintain that the American Revolution was not Jacobin in spirit, often citing Burke's opposition to certain unjust taxes that the British government imposed on the American colonies. But Burke never thought the American Revolution was a good thing. He told Benjamin Franklin he thought that America was much better

off as part of Britain, but he did not feel you could force the Americans to be part of Britain if they didn't desire to be part of it. And in point of fact, one-third of the Americans wanted to stay with Britain (a whole colony of those Americans settled in New Brunswick), one-third were indifferent, and one-third wanted to be 'independent.' Conservatives who like to claim our Revolution was a conservative revolution are like the conservative Catholics who constantly defend the Vatican II documents by claiming they can be interpreted in light of traditional church teaching. Oh really? Then why haven't they been interpreted in light of traditional church teaching? And conversely, why, at every step along our wonderful constitutional path to hell, have our courts interpreted the Constitution with an eye on what is leftward and 'progressive'? And why was the anti-Jacobin South unconstitutionally forbidden to leave the Union when she perceived that the Northern government was a Jacobin government? The Constitution is mere paper and ink; it is our faith and our race that defines who we are as a people and what we should fight to preserve. (1)

The liberals are anti-Christian, and because they are anti-Christian, they are anti-white. Trump's victory in 2016 was a rearguard defensive action that took the liberals by surprise. But neither Trump nor his followers looked on his election as a rear-guard movement that bought white people some time to lick their wounds and mount a counterattack against the liberals. They didn't do what a defeated people should do, because they did not see themselves as a defeated people. They saw themselves as one faction of liberals who had just won a victory over another faction of liberals. About a month ago I mentioned that there was no spirit of counterrevolution among the Trump supporters I had talked to. Nor, apparently, was there any spirit of counterrevolution among the Trump supporters in the big march on Washington. The liberals successfully depicted the protestors who breached the barricade as 'violent rioters,' but they were not. They were unarmed and determined to carry their nonviolent protest to the halls of Congress. The poor deluded souls did not realize that there is no justice or mercy in a nation consecrated to Satan.

Let us look, one more time as it fades into oblivion, at the Trump phenomenon. Who were the hard-core Trumpers? Why did, and do, the liberals hate them and Trump? And what is behind the Trumpers' pacifism and inability to see the demonic nature of their enemies? Everything in European culture is centered on Christianity. All the modern heresies, Jacobinism, Americanism, Marxism, millennialism, and negro worship are Christian heresies, and liberalism is the synthesis of all the anti-Christian heresies. In the United States the synthesis of all those heresies has reached its most advanced stage. What was tolerated 20 years ago can no longer be tolerated today, because the liberal express train to hell can never stop or turn back. The Trumpers accepted most of the liberal agenda; they were willing to worship a blended Christ who was not the Christ of old Europe, and they were willing to worship the negro, but they wanted white people to be included in the universal liberal aggregate. However, that could not be tolerated because the non-illuminated whites, the whites who would not condemn whiteness itself as the original sin, had to be purged. The non-illuminated whites did not want to be purged, which is why they supported Trump, but ultimately, because they are devout believers in liberalism, they could not make war against the liberals. They will go to their doom, reciting their democratic litany: "We are non-violent, we are not racist, we are non-violent; we are not racist, we believe in the democratic process; though the democratic process slay us yet will we have faith in it." (2) As they recite the litany, the Trumpers salute an American flag right before they line up to go into the execution chambers that have been prepared for them. Do I exaggerate? Unfortunately I do not. Every time two or three Trumpers are gathered together, you hear the litany of racial and religious suicide.

Our Lord tells us in Luke 12: 34 that, "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." What do the Trumpers treasure, where are their hearts? Ah, there's the rub. The Trumpers' hearts are imprisoned by intellectual theories of God and patriotism. In religion their God is an esoteric God created by a break-away Anglican cleric in the early 1830s who made Christ subordinate to the unrepentant Jew. And their patriotism? It is not grounded in pietas – "I will fight for those of my own blood" – it is grounded in the equality heresy – "My country, 'tis of thee, sweet land of liberty" – liberty from any blood connection to our kith and kin and our God.

Our prayer should be "His will be done on earth as it is in heaven." But who is the He whose will should be done? Is it the Christ of old Europe or is it the blended Christ of the new Europe? The blended Christ is subordinate to Satan, which is why the 'conservatives' fell all over themselves to condemn the 'violence' of the few: "most were non-violent." Do the liberals ever condemn the violence of their minions? No, they do not. Because they are on the right side, they belong to Satan.

Satan is not an original thinker. He parodies, in everything he does, the living God. Satan wants his will to be done on earth as it is in hell. And in hell there is no heart-to-heart communion among mortals and there is no heart-to-heart connection to the living God. The Trumpers want to maintain some remnants of humanity within the confines of hell. That cannot be. You must either resist the liberals' determination to go where no nation has gone before – to hell on earth – with all your heart and soul – which means "to the knife" – or you must acquiesce to the liberals and descend into Satan's hell on earth. January 20th will either be the beginning of the counterrevolution or it will be the final bonfire that shall completely consume the white Europeans in its flames. It seems like it will be the latter, but there is always the fairy tale ending: "When hope seems nearly gone, God's relief to us will surely come."

Will God's relief "surely come"? John 14: 14 is a very comforting verse, and it is also a very troubling verse: "If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it." What if we ask something in His name, and nothing happens? The unanswered prayer, particularly if it is a fervent heartfelt prayer, is a very great obstacle to faith. I don't have an adult answer to the unanswered prayer that would satisfy a philosopher. In pure philosophy there is no loving God, but is there something beyond philosophy, are there "more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in our philosophy"? As a young boy, I was sent to a camp for boys; the theory of such camps was that young boys could meet and do all sorts of 'fun' thing together. One of those 'fun' things at the camp I attended was a long canoe trip that entailed camping overnight in the woods – "Lions and tigers and bears, oh my!" On the second day of the canoe trip we were all supposed to canoe over what seemed, in my child's mind, to be very treacherous rapids. I'm sure they weren't really very treacherous, but in my mind's eye they were a death trap. Some of the boys felt as I did and refused to go. One of the counselors, with great disgust, had the "cowardly" boys take up their canoes and walk around the rapids. I was too cowardly to admit I was afraid, so I got to have the 'fun' of canoeing down the rapids. Again, I must stress that I thought the rapids meant death; I was afraid. But I had a child's heart that had been exposed to the Gospel of Christ. I had never heard of St. Thomas Aquinas or John Calvin, but I had heard of gentle Jesus who bids us take our cares and troubles to Him in prayer. I prayed to gentle Jesus and I lost all my fears. I never as an adult have ever been able to feel the complete security and confidence in God's grace and His loving personal concern for me that I felt then when I was still a child in my faith. In similar circumstances as an adult I would have said, "Plenty of people pray and their prayers are unanswered. Many good people suffer terribly and they pray. Many evil people do not pray and they flourish..." That and similar conundrums would occur to my 'adult' mind.

I prayed fervently for Trump's victory, and I know there were others, there were millions, who prayed fervently for Trump's victory. But there were also millions upon millions of Southerners who prayed for the victory of the South in that terrible civil war. And yet then, as now, the forces of Satan, won. We cannot comprehend the seeming indifference of God to our prayers unless we go beyond the magic of intellectual Christianity to the deeper magic, the magic of the heart-of-my-heart and blood-of-my-blood faith in Christ Jesus. This election should make us cast off demon-crac and fight evil as men, at least European men, were meant to fight evil. The Trumpers who will not fight do not know the Christ who is "the beginning and the end, the first and the last." They only know an ecumenical Christ who floats around in a universal aggregate of false gods – the gods of color, the god of the Jews, and the god of demon-crac, who is Satan. We cannot seek redemption from the devil. And isn't that what the Trumpers did by placing all their hopes in our supremely satanic Supreme Court? (3)

I have actually heard Trumpers say they were against the men and women who stormed the halls of Congress because they destroyed public property. Oh, the horror of sympathy for the devil and his minions! Those congressmen and women are the devil's own. If the bravados who breached the barricades had killed all the members of Congress who intended to vote against a reelection every single execution would have been meritorious. Those creatures from hell, those satanic, inhuman, congressional vultures from hell, with malice aforethought, intend to consecrate our nation to Satan on January 20th. But that is not as bad – horrors of horrors! – as destroying public property, is it? (4) It all comes down to this – Christians of the old European stock do not permit the rule of Satan. We must be blood and heart Christians. If we insist on being demon-cratic and intellectual Christians, we shall see Satan's banner over our nation for the rest of our natural lives, and those who honor that banner shall burn in hell for all eternity. That is not a consummation that I wish for, but then I do not understand the 'higher' religion of demon-crac, pacifism, and non-violence – non-violence on the white side and nothing but violence on the Illuminati's and the colored minions' side. If we see Him, our Lord Jesus Christ, with the eyes of a child, we will write a new chapter of European history; we will cast off the rule of Satan and live in the light of His Kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven. +

---

(1) "Throw our paper platforms, preambles and resolutions, guaranties and constitutions, into the fire, and we should be none the worse off, provided we retained our institutions – and the necessities that begot, and have, so far, continued them." (George Fitzhugh)

The necessity that has begot and continued our institutions is the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

(2) The 'conservatives' in the alternative news outlets such as Newsmax and Breitbart are still behaving like Hitler in the bunker who ordered non-existent troops to fight a war he had already lost. They are still giving us the 'news' of the liberals' atrocities so that we can vote the liberals out. But we did vote against the liberals. We voted against them in record numbers and our votes were thrown back in our faces. I look on that as a challenge to a duel to the death. The conservative pundits seem to look on the liberals' challenge as a mandate to grovel before the liberal Sanhedrin and recite the democratic litany over and over again: "We are not racist, we are non-violent, we love demon-crac." And the cowardly Republicans and the Democrats in the House and Senate are vying with each other to see who can condemn the 'rioters' more. None of them condemned Black Lives Matter or Antifa, but the 'rioters' must be condemned. On January 20th, the cowardly senators and representatives of Congress, Republican and Democrat, should all, while keeping their social distance, join hands virtually while they sing, to the tune of "Let's All Gather at the River":

"Let's all gather before the liberal Sanhedrin,  
The wonderful, wonderful Sanhedrin,

Let's all gather at the liberal Sanhedrin,  
That flows by the throne of Satan."

(3) Whatever his faults, Trump fought nobly for the disenfranchised white grazers. And because he fought for them, the liberals are still trying to send him to prison. It is not enough for them that he is leaving office, they must torture him and his family with the threat of jail. No one in the ranks of the Republican cowards will stand up for him. We can't deal with these satanic liberals peacefully. They don't want peace. They want to eliminate all things white and Christian.

I am frequently asked how I can admire Trump when he supports the American heresy. And I always answer the queries with, "For the same reason Sir Walter Scott supported the Georges who supplanted the Stewarts, while still admiring Bonnie Prince Charlie. Trump is at least a man; he has some remnant of Christian humanity in him. He is a lion among jackals and sheep. So is Curt Schilling, the baseball pitcher who will never be part of the jackals' Hall of Shame. Trump and Schilling may not have the whole integral Christian spirit we need, but the humanity and courage of men like Trump and Schilling is admirable. In an age when every single spark of humanity must be extinguished by order of the liberal Sanhedrin, it is not a little thing when some men who have a public voice speak out against the liberal Sanhedrin.

(4) There is a complete unreality about this election and its aftermath, a Gnostic unreality. The votes of flesh and blood people who voted for Trump became the computer printout votes of non-existent Gnostic people, all of whom voted for Biden, who ran a virtual, non-existent Gnostic campaign. Our Supreme Court made a non-decision, a Gnostic decision, to endorse the results of a Gnostic election. And our legislators, Republican and Democrat, endorsed the Gnostic results of the non-election. Now, I am told, there is going to be a virtual, Gnostic inauguration of a Gnostically elected president. But can the unreality of Satan's Gnosticism prevail forever? Real flesh and blood people voted for a man who looked on them as flesh and blood human beings. Will they be content to be Gnostically discarded into outer darkness? That is the question.

---

## As Lambs to the Slaughter - January 9, 2021

He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. – Isaiah 53: 7

---

As to me, I was always steadily of opinion that this disorder was not in it's nature intermittent. I conceived that the contest, once begun, could not be laid down again to be resumed at our discretion; but that our first struggle with this evil would also be our last. I never thought we could make peace with the system; because it was not for the sake of an object we pursued in rivalry with each other, but with the system itself, that we were at war. As I understood the matter, we were at war, not with it's conduct, but with it's existence; convinced that it's existence and it's hostility were the same. –Edmund Burke, Letters on a Regicide Peace

---

## Preface

The late Colonel Jeff Cooper, who wrote a column for *Guns & Ammo* magazine some years ago, once commented on the actions of an off-duty policeman who had attempted to stop an armed robbery while unarmed. He was shot and killed by the robbers. Cooper gave the policeman a ten for bravery and a zero for preparedness.

Those men and women who breached the Capitol building barricades in order to get at Congress were incredibly noble and brave. But what were they thinking? Our reason must be made to serve our hearts. Those brave, wonderful people should have known that our government is evil. You can't go up against such an evil entity unarmed. Protests do not work when the people protesting have been designated for slaughter by the powers that be. If the situation had been reversed, if Trump had won the election and Black Lives Matter barbarians and Antifa scum were storming the Capitol, they would have had a red carpet laid out for them, and the Federal police would have been ordered to stand down. And after standing down, they would have provided the rioters with milk and cookies. But no mercy will ever be shown by the Illuminati toward the unilluminated. In fact, Nancy Pelosi, who stands out for her supreme wickedness in a cabal of the wicked, said that the military was too kind to the protestors. "What if they had been black?" the wicked witch asked. We saw what happens with black rioters this past summer — they are allowed to burn, murder, and loot while the police stand down. And why didn't Trump order the military police to stand down in this case? I never blamed Trump for not stopping illegal immigration nor for not cleaning out the swamp, because I knew he had no support even within his own party for such initiatives. But I do blame him for not ordering the police or militia defending our Capitol to stand down. What did he have to lose? Was he afraid he would be impeached? He has already been impeached and removed from office by way of the fraudulent election. Perhaps he did order the troops to stand down, and the policeman who murdered that unarmed woman acted against orders. I doubt it, because Trump, for all his bravery, is still half-liberal. I think he was afraid to face the disapproval of the liberals.

If we can't protest, then what can be done? We should do what the Scots did long ago in the town of Edinburgh (see Walter Scott's novel *The Heart of Midlothian*). When the townspeople had exhausted all legal means to remove a duly appointed bloody tyrant from their midst, they quietly, without a public announcement, took care of that bloody tyrant one dark night and then just as quietly returned home. So it was with Forrest and his men, and so it was in Skidmore, Missouri, in 1981, after the townspeople had tried in vain, by all legal means, to remove a bloody white tyrant from their midst.

As I understand it, one woman was shot to death, two men died of heart-related issues, and one woman died from an undetermined medical emergency. My heart and my prayers go out to them (yes, I pray for the dead; did not our Lord enjoin us to take all our trouble and cares to Him in prayer? I am troubled about their deaths because I care about those poor souls), to those incredibly brave, incredibly noble souls. But I must maintain that the woman who was slain and the woman who died did not belong there. What have we become when the women man the barricades? I understand the woman who was slain was a former member of the military. For shame on a nation that places women in the military. She is not to blame; she was merely following, imperfectly, a noble aim, without the support of a Christian-mentoring society which would have inspired her to step away from the ramparts and assume her God-given right to nurture and pray.

Need I point out that the media, part of the evil cabal called liberalism, labelled the protestors as 'rioters' after telling us for over a twelve-month that Antifa and Black Lives Matter murderers were 'protestors'? And what is to be said about the alternative 'conservative' news media, such as Newsmax? All they could do was plead for mercy from their liberal brethren: "Most of the protestors were nonviolent." Why do 'conservatives' who worship veterans that fought to make the world safe for communism in World War II regularly denounce any violence against an evil government that is infinitely worse than Adolph Hitler's government?

Let us see the light in this darkness called liberalism. Those who breached the ramparts had something within them that cannot be defeated. The liberals, at the height of their power, have seen the spirit above the dust that will bring them down.

---

**When the left has triumphed, conservatives—if they are to remain conservative—must become counterrevolutionaries. What Burke said of France after the French revolution applies to every European nation. Burke said that the true Frenchmen were in exile because Jacobin France was not Christian France:**

The present system in France is not the ancient France. It is not the ancient France with ordinary ambition and ordinary means. It is not a new power of an old kind. It is a new power of a new species. When such a questionable shape is to be admitted for the first time into the brotherhood of Christendom, it is not a mere matter of idle curiosity to consider how far it is, in its nature, alliable with the rest, or whether "the relations of peace and amity" with this new State are likely to be of the same nature with the usual relations of the States of Europe.

Once democracy, which is based on the demons' flight from Christ (Luke 8), becomes the organizational model of government in a nation, that nation is committed to the principle of 'ever leftward' toward the pit of hell. The legislators in a democracy are all leftists—they are all moving leftward to hell. The battles that spring up are between those who want to move gradually toward hell—in our country, they are called Republicans—and those who want to move rapidly toward hell. Those people are called, in our country, Democrats. But the important thing in a democracy is that all citizens sign on to the 'progression' of mankind; they must believe in the 'new power of a new species' and reject 'the brotherhood of Christendom.'

Can we be at peace with this new power, this democratic entity? No, we cannot be at peace with such a power. It is a giant succubus that will draw all people toward it and consume them body and soul. The left always progresses toward hell by the enfranchisement of an 'oppressed' minority. Once that oppressed minority is enfranchised, that minority has a vested interest in supporting the progression of the left. The liberals achieved their greatest success with the blacks. The banner of 'we are not racist' has served the liberals well. Whenever a black does not fall in line with liberalism, he or she is told they are not black, because a black must support the leftward lurch into hell in order to prevent a mythical right wing from returning to the inequality and 'racism' of the past.

Tragically we have also witnessed, in the 20th century and the 21st century, the virtual collapse of the traditional right wing bastion of European civilization – the Christian woman. By holding out that apple, the apple of equality, to the new Eves, the left destroyed the heart of Western civilization. After the rape fest in Cologne, Germany, a few years ago, a female Danish journalist asked, "Where were the men, why didn't they do something?" She went on to say that she did not want to go back to the bad old days of patriarchy, but she did want men to be men and protect women. You can't have it both ways. The men of Victorian Britain would not have tolerated a rape fest because they believed that the females of the species were their helpmeets, they believed that women were the life nurturers and the life bearers, and as such they deserved to be protected and treasured. When they became part of the leftist march toward hell, when they became a legion of Lady Macbeths, why should they still be protected and treasured?

After the Fall, our Lord spoke to Eve: "Unto the woman He said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception: in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children: and thy desire shall be to thy husband and he shall rule over thee." That radical leftward shift from God's love to Satan's promise of equality with God that Adam and Eve made in the Garden of Eden was countered by Christ's charitable outreach on the Cross. Our propensity to sin remains, but through Him we were given a chance to restore our fallen nature. There is nothing on this earth that speaks of heaven more than a Christian family in which the male and the female have complementary roles rather than competitive ones. When equality enters into the familial hearth fire, there is no refuge from the devil; he is the omnipresent force from outside and from within. Can you really mount a campaign for Christian things – protection for the unborn, protection from the colored heathen within your

nation and from without — when you cherish, through the democratic process, Satan’s promise of, “You shall be as Gods”? There can be no true families and no true nations when the family and the state are democratized.

Biden claims Trump is attacking the democratic process by challenging the election results. And the mistress turned president in all but name, Kamala Harris, has articulated the moral underpinning of liberalism: “We want equity not equality.” Yes, that sums it up: “Some are more equal.” Biden and Harris are correct: the democratic process exists to ensure the continual dominance of Satan in what was once Christendom. Trump, who retains a few instincts of a European, senses that something has gone terribly wrong in America and Europe, but he does not understand that it is the democratic process that allows that wrong, the enthronement of Satan in the European world, to continue on in perpetuity. Trump fought nobly against all the forces of hell, but he fought without the full armour of Christ, and now, tragically, the liberals, like the hellhounds they are, will tear him to shreds while the clergymen, the Supreme Court justices, the Republicans, and the conservative pundits will look on with a Thomistic-Buddhistic quietude and thank whatever pig gods they pray to that they had the good sense to stay with the winning side. Burke describes such moral cowards in his great work, *On Regicide France after the Revolution*:

In truth, the tribe of vulgar politicians are the lowest of our species. There is no trade so vile and mechanical as government in their hands. Virtue is not their habit. They are out of themselves in any course of conduct recommended only by conscience and glory. A large, liberal and prospective view of the interests of States passes with them for romance; and the principles that recommend it for the wanderings of a disordered imagination. The calculators compute them out of their senses. The jesters and buffoons shame them out of every thing grand and elevated. Littleness, in object and in means, to them appears soundness and sobriety. They think there is nothing worth pursuit, but that which they can handle; which they can measure with a two-foot rule; which they can tell upon ten fingers.

Yes, the Republican shadows of the liberals have been computed out of their senses by their liberal brethren. In the recent pro-Trump protest a very small percentage of the protestors got it right: they became violent. And what was the reaction of the Republican and ‘conservative’ establishment? They denounced the protestors who became violent because their violence endangered the ‘democratic process.’ (1) Do you need a translation of such doublespeak? Then let me translate—“We, the Republican servants of Satan, must continue to eat and drink at Satan’s pig trough. And it is the demon-cratism process that enables us to eat and drink at Satan’s pig trough now and forever.” The ‘violent’ protestors are miracles of God’s grace; they saw through the horror of the satanic entity called democracy. They are currently too few and they have no leader, but they have something within them that points us to something above and beyond Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth.

What do I make of the fact that Trump himself condemned the ‘violent’ protestors — “Be peaceful, be nonviolent”? Trump, like the vast majority of his followers, wants to blend Christianity and liberalism. They don’t believe in the Christ of old, monarchical, aristocratic Europe, they believe in the new Christ of demon-cratism. But Satan and Christ are spiritual antagonists, so how can they be blended together? Trump was and is a brave man, with something inside of him that was and is struggling toward the light. However, if a man cannot give a name to that light, if he cannot see the real Aslan, the Christ of old Europe, he will ultimately be defeated by the mad-dog liberals who serve Satan. And those who follow him will be betrayed in deepest consequence, as the four martyrs were betrayed. The half-Christians will always lose to the fully committed Satanists, because the Satanists believe that Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth can only be achieved by those who are violent: “The violent bear it away.” The liberals act according to their faith. But the half-Christians who want to blend Christianity and liberalism will not act according to the Christian faith, they do not believe the Kingdom of Heaven is taken by violence, they believe that the Kingdom of heaven comes by uniting with Satan’s minions in order to insure a perfect union of God and the devil. There is nothing on the face of the earth more reprehensible, more morally repugnant, than the American experiment in demon-cratism. We need no longer imagine what hell will be like, it is here and now in the United States of Satan.

We are reaping what the scholastics in the Catholic and the Protestant churches have sown. If man’s reason receives God’s revelation, independent of the human heart, which the scholastics maintain, then what prevents abstract reason from becoming man’s God? Nothing prevents it. Robespierre was simply following the precepts of intellectual Christianity when he made a whore the Goddess of Reason. That great whore of Babylon, the Goddess of Reason, can be seen in all her satanic splendor whenever two or three are gathered together, in Church and State, in her name. No man is an island; we who are human need contact with other human beings. But what if humanity is divided between those who have renounced their humanity and those who are willing to blend what is human inside of them, a longing for the Mysterious Stranger, with that which is inhuman, the pig swill of liberalism? This final outrage of the ‘conservatives’ who have condemned the violence they should laud, gives us the answer to that question. We must walk away from those who want to blend Christ and Satan. We must walk away with the realization that some devils, and the satanic blending of democracy and Christianity is one such devil, can only be driven out by prayer and fasting.

This failure of the white grazers, the Trumpers, to see that they cannot make common cause with the liberals has broken my heart just as my parents’ blending of Christianity and liberalism broke my heart. My mother was an ethical Christian



who did not believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead, at least on a conscious level, and my father was a 'non-fundamentalist' Christian – the Old Testament was fairy stories, but the New Testament was true. But of course that truth was blended with the 'truth' that American democracy and Christianity were one and the same. When I became a Dream of the Rood Christian in my early twenties, I had to try to stay connected, in my heart, to my parents while maintaining a distance from their blended faith. What was difficult when I was a single man became even more difficult when I became a Christian father. How could I keep my children free of contagion while allowing them to experience the love of their grandparents? To this day I do not know the right and the wrong of my balancing act. Nor do I know the right and the wrong of my support for Trump and his followers. There was genuine humanity in Trump and those who supported him. But, oh, the horror of that blending process!

Why do men and women need to blend what is Christian with that which is satanic? It all, or so it seems to me, goes back to the original sin. Satan did not attack God directly, he did not tell Adam and Eve that God didn't exist, he told them that divinity rested in pure reason, divorced from their heart to heart connection to God. Whenever reason becomes the way to God, the path is made clear for man's reason and Satan's will to join together in defiance of the living God. We live in Satandom because we no longer believe that "the foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men." If we are "foolish" as St. Paul was foolish, we will discover that the Mysterious Stranger has never and will never leave us bereft in this vale of tears.

No man should be an island, but if there are no human beings left on earth who believe in the Dream of the Rood we must make that island where Christ dwells into our world. Pray for the four martyrs who went like lambs to the slaughter. They were sacrificed, like so many of the unborn infants and the innocent whites who died before them, on the altars of liberalism. I wish that I had the power to destroy them all, the hellhounds of liberalism, but I do not. So I must rage against the dying of the light and I must pray. What else is left to us? In Thy name, our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, we ask for a light in the darkness of Liberalism to guide us safely home.+

---

(1) The 'conservatives' who worship 'peaceful protest' are still under the thrall of Liberalism. They don't really want an end to the liberals' reign of terror, because they still have a place in Liberalism. In a 'peaceful protest' you are saying to your rulers, "Hey, we represent a couple of million votes, you can't ignore us." But what if your rulers have turned off your votes? You can peacefully protest from now to doomsday, and you will not alter the status quo of Liberalism. But of course the 'conservatives,' if they were really conservative, could see that obvious fact.

The barricade brigade whites are at the beginning. They have begun to understand the nature of demon-crazy. They have hearts that love much, but they still do not fully understand the evil of liberalism. If they did, they would not have launched a semi-peaceful suicide mission. Nor do I think Trump, who is half-liberal and half-Christian, fully understands just how evil the liberals are. He should flee the country now, with his entire family, or he will face the same fate as Louis XVI. These, our modern Jacobins, are much crueller than Robespierre, and he was the most bloodthirsty tyrant the European world has ever produced – until now.

---

## **The Satanic Unmasking - January 2, 2021**

Here is the indictment of the good Lord Hastings;  
Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd  
That it may be to-day read o'er in Paul's.  
And mark how well the sequel hangs together:  
Eleven hours I have spent to write it over,  
For yesternight by Catesby was it sent me;  
The precedent was full as long a-doing;  
And yet within these five hours Hastings liv'd,  
Untainted, unexamined, free, at liberty.  
Here's a good world the while! Who is so gross  
That cannot see this palpable device?  
Yet who's so bold but says he sees it not?  
Bad is the world; and all will come to nought,  
When such ill dealing must be seen in thought.

–Richard the Third

---

Reason is a whore; she peeks out over the blindfold and decides in favor of the prevailing powers that be. When the powers that be are liberal, which translates to satanic, then 'justice' is satanic. – CWN

---

“Who is so gross, That cannot see this palpable device?” In the months prior to the election I thought that the Demon-crats would win because I knew they would fix the election. But as Election Day approached, I became somewhat hopeful. Trump had such an enormous lead that I thought, “Can they really get away with fraud of such magnitude?” Of course they, the Demon-crats, did get away with it. The toll of human suffering, not just in this nation, but throughout the world, as a result of the election fraud, is beyond measure. In this nation millions of non-illuminated whites will be exterminated through economic disenfranchisement and outright slaughter at the hands of the colored barbarians. And worldwide the only nation that has the power to stand up to the communist Chinese will become the lap-dog of the Chinese communists. Is there any silver lining in this whole affair? No, there isn’t. This is an unmitigated tragedy. But there is one thing that we can take out of the “palpable device”: We no longer have to play the democratic game. The letter writing, the voting, the protest marches, can now be seen for what they were and are – part of the liberals’ subterfuge, which they have chosen to throw off. The satanic device of the liberals, which is the democratic process, has now been revealed as a complete hoax. It is time to make war as the Psalmist bids us: “So let us break their bonds asunder, and cast away their cords from us.”

Our nation, with some dissenting voices in the Southern half of the country, was founded on the heretical principle that our leaders govern by the consent of the governed. That is in direct contrast to the Christian European vision of leadership, in which a monarch and/or an aristocracy rule, not by Divine Right but in the name of Christ the King. We are all aware of the imperfections of such governments, because the liberals have told us for more than a twelfth-month of those imperfections. But has the Christian faith flourished under the rule of Christian kings and Christian aristocracies or has it flourished in the modern democracies? The answer to that question is obvious. The Christian faith and the European people thrived under the former regimes, and they are both, because they are one, about to be completely extinguished in the ‘Age of Democracy.’

Let us look at this thing called ‘democracy’ in the wake of the fraudulent American election. The spirit of democracy is grounded in the same spirit that motivated the demons in Luke 8: 32-37:

And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them. Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked. When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the country. Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid. They also which saw it told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was healed. Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

The demons, against their own self-interest, desired to be free of the God of Mercy, so Christ freed them, and they went into the swine, who ran off a cliff into a lake and choked to death. The liberals are the demon-possessed swine: They are bound and determined, also against their own self-interest, to go over the cliff. They must avoid, at all costs, the loving embrace of Jesus Christ.

All the modern democratic governments are based on the Jacobin vision of equality. They take the Christian precept of the moral equality of all men before the living God and conflate it with a natural equality among swine, who are committed to Satan. There is no natural equality in God’s Kingdom; there is a spiritual aristocracy based on His, not Satan’s, precepts, the precepts of the Suffering Servant who bids His apostles seek greatness by being the “servant of all.” There is no mechanical equality of swine competing for the pig swill of the world’s material goods in Christ’s Reign of Charity. When we seek a worldly equality, we seek Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. In the United States, that kingdom is here and now.

There is a satanic undergirding to this great evil called democracy. Its proponents tell us we shall all be equal: “We shall be as gods.” But all are not equal in a democracy: “Some are more equal.” Those “some” are the white Illuminati and the colored barbarians, the people who do the will of Satan. The election of 2020 in this country revealed the satanic presence behind the façade of the liberals’ “equality.” The votes of non-illuminated whites were null and void while the votes of the illuminated whites became the voice of “the people.” But the voice of “the people” is the voice of Satan. He works his will through the Illuminati and the people of color. When Robespierre was told his call for equality would lead to the extermination of all whites in San Domingo (Haiti), he was unmoved; in fact, he thought it was a great good, because the whites in San Domingo were non-illuminated whites. In Robespierre’s satanic mind, they deserved to die just as the non-illuminated whites in France and throughout Europe deserved to die.

Robespierre’s satanic utopia did not, as Burke warned us, die with Robespierre. It has become institutionalized throughout the nations of Europe. And it has become such a powerful entity, in church and state, that there is no one willing to oppose it. The Supreme Court justices in this country came up with all sorts of reasons why they did not want to even hear any election fraud cases. But there was only one reason why they didn’t want to hear the cases: They were afraid of the utopian left who will stop at nothing to achieve their ends. They were not afraid of the Pro-Trumpers who will stop at the crossroads and take the road marked, ‘Quaker,’ which is the road to oblivion, to their extinction as a people.

It is important to note that this electoral victory of the left was not a peaceful revolution. It was steeped in the blood of innocents such as Aaron Danielson, and it shall be upheld by the threat of more violence. Let us look at this, the latest and quite possibly the final revolution of the left, in light of the revolutions that preceded it. The first leftist revolt was in the Garden of Eden. Adam and Eve had a filial connection to the living God. The Lord handed them a kingdom that was preserved and protected in and through His filial bond with them, His people. They broke that bond when they chose to become intellectual Christians, men and women who placed their reason above their heart to heart connection to the living God. We know what ensued from that 'shipwreck.'

Our incarnate Lord, Jesus Christ, restored our severed blood connection to the living God through His birth, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead; that was the belief of our European ancestors. Every leftist revolution is grounded in a movement away from the European civilization whose people had a blood connection to Jesus Christ. In a perversion of everyman's moral equality before God, the left has presented every attack against Christ's reign of charity as a step forward for mankind – as a progression from the darkness of the inequalities and inequities of the past toward the light of a utopian future of equality. Thus 'votes for women' begot feminism and legalized abortion, and the enfranchisement of non-Europeans begot the worship of the sacred negro. Whatever was opposed to Christian European civilization was lauded and whatever was remotely tied to Christian Europe was opposed with fire and sword. Once we understand that the inner dynamic of the liberal Illuminati demands they follow the path of the demons described in Luke 8 we can understand why the liberals had to destroy Trump, even if it meant they had to take off their democratic masks and reveal their satanic visages for all the world to see.

On the surface Trump seems to be one with the liberals. He openly professed his belief in the equality heresy, which equates our moral equality before God to a mechanical equality of mankind, independent of the spirit which giveth life, and yet the liberals hated him as no man in public office has ever been hated before. Why? They hated and still hate Trump because he did not adhere to the inner dynamic of the equality heresy. That inner dynamic demands an inequality; it demands that some, the Illuminati and their colored minions, must be more equal. Every Republican candidate prior to Trump agreed to the extermination of the non-illuminated whites. The fact that Trump did not want non-illuminated whites to be exterminated made him an anathema to the liberals. And in this last election he was cast into outer darkness with his non-illuminated followers.

The mad-dog liberal media opposed Trump with a satanic vehemence. That was expected. But a great deal of the so-called conservatives, such as Ann Coulter and Drudge, also opposed Trump, and most of the Republicans gave him lukewarm support at best. My local Republican senator, for instance, sent me a snotty reply to my letter demanding he fight the fraudulent election: "The courts have spoken," he told me, so I should stop bothering him and find something better to do. What is obvious is that a committed violent minority, the left, have made it clear that only the illuminated will be permitted to live. The 'conservative' pundits and the Republican RINOs want to show the left they are not in support of the non-illuminated whites whom Trump represents. They want their easy lives of punditry and the Loyal Opposition to go on forever. And it is Biden, not Trump, who gives them the best chance to continue on as pundits and legislators, because they sense, like jackals, that Trump's followers will not fight back.

The late Rodney Dangerfield used to say in his comedy routine that he appealed to everyone who could do him absolutely no good. That was the reason for Trump's electoral 'defeat.' His appeal was to the disenfranchised white grazers who have been designated for the liberals' slaughterhouse. They voted for him in record numbers because he was the only Republican candidate who stood up for them as human beings with human needs rather than treating them as a universal aggregate to be manipulated for political purposes. I am in the field with the white grazers, I am not of the elect, I am not 'illuminated.' But although I am among the white grazers, I am not of them. I do not believe white pietas is a sin, nor do I believe that God and democracy are one. My task is to move the white grazers' hearts away from demoncracy toward white pietas. It seems like an impossible task. And it is impossible without Divine Intervention. I ask for that intervention now and at the hour of my death.

What do we make of the fact that Donald Trump's name coincides with St. Paul's sure and certain hope in 1 Corinthians 15: 52? "In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible and we shall be changed." Some Christians have asserted that the juxtaposition of Donald Trump and the last Trump means that the end of the world, the final consummation, is near. I do not sneer at such speculation because in the last four years the intense hatred of the liberals for Trump seemed to come from a satanic depth that we had never seen before. Their hatred is so obviously from the devil that we cannot help but think that now the devil's great antagonist, Jesus Christ, is going to step forth and put an end to the devil's reign. But we can't take that route because of what our Lord tells us in Mark 13: 31-33: "Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father."

What we do know is that the American election of 2020 marked the great unmasking of the liberals. They took off the benign façade of democracy and revealed the satanic heart of "government for the people and of the people." The "people"

are the Illuminati and their “ebony puppets,” who are consecrated to Satan. They have only one agenda – to attack Christ through His people. They must always attack the ‘image of God in man’ culture of the antique Europeans. Any movement back to that culture and that people must be dealt with harshly. The 2020 election was not an election, it was a reassertion, through violence, of the liberals’ power over the non-illuminated whites. I refer you once again to Walt Disney’s 1959 retelling of the Sleeping Beauty fairy tale. Maleficent throws aside all subterfuge and stands before Prince Phillip in all her satanic fury: “Now you shall deal with me and all the powers of hell.” That is what the liberals did in this last election – they unmasked and told us to deal with Satan and all the powers of hell. Can letter-writing, voting, and protest marches, move the powers of hell? Our supremely satanic Supreme Court gives the lie to that futile hope. The justices went with the forces of hell because they fear Satan’s minions and do not fear the Christ-bearing people, because the Christ-bearing people have become... what have they become? They are like unto a modern Prince Phillip, who turns from Maleficent when she confronts him. His sword becomes a pen, and he hurries home to write an angry letter to Maleficent demanding she release Sleeping Beauty. He and the good fairies then organize a protest march around Maleficent’s castle. After Maleficent sends out her goons to maim, torture, and murder the protestors, the surviving protestors find an alternative media outlet, one outlet among thousands that is not pro-Maleficent, and brag about their non-violent approach to all the powers of hell. Meanwhile, Sleeping Beauty rots in Maleficent’s castle. We play the devil’s game when we play the democratic game. Pray for the safety of the pro-Trump demonstrators on January 6, for they are going up against the devil’s minions without the full armour of Christ. Instead of “Onward, Christian soldiers,” they are marching to the tune of “We are not racist, we are non-violent.” That discordant melody is music to the ears of Satan and his minions.

We must avoid, or we will surely forfeit our humanity which is our link to the living God, the ‘religious’ posturing that always comes in crises such as this. I am referring to the old bromide, ‘God is punishing you for your sins by inflicting Biden and his demon-crats upon you.’ In the Johnstown flood of 1889, there were ‘religious’ people who claimed the flood was visited upon the people of Johnstown because of the brothels in the town. But those ‘religious’ people ignored the fact that the brothels were on high ground and not touched by the flood. Such is the case when a rash of earthquakes hit California. There is a segment of ‘religious’ people who tell us the earthquakes are God’s judgment upon the homosexuals who have made San Francisco their home city. But are the homosexuals the only people who suffer when the earthquakes strike California? We must reject such ‘religious’ posturing. When Solzhenitsyn went to the Gulag, he felt, after he had converted to Christianity while in prison, that he deserved his punishment because he had been a communist. That was a penitential act of a Christian. He looked at his own sins and decided that he needed to suffer for his sins. But Solzhenitsyn did not think that his fellow prisoners in the Gulag deserved their punishments. He had a compassionate empathy for their suffering and a holy rage against those who inflicted the suffering on his people. That should be our reaction to this violent assertion of the liberals’ power over the non-illuminated whites. We must respond to this outrage as integral Christians have responded to evil throughout our human history, our Christian European history. We do not know why evil always seems to triumph over good. Our heart pulls us toward Him who saves, while our head tells us to court favor with the powers of this world. Let us incline toward that which is in our hearts, the love of Him who saves, even in the face of what seems like the death of all our earthly hopes. We are the people who “know not seems.” We believe He is our beginning and our end. The Babe in the manger, the Suffering Servant on the Cross, and the Risen Lord are one. That mystery, the mystery of faith, will sustain us all through the night. +

“Roses bloom and cease to be,  
But we the Christ child shall see.”

---

## **Remembrances X: What Child Is This? - December 19, 2020**

### **By Way of a Preface**

When I started these stories I envisioned them as cautionary tales about a horrific future that we, as a people, were facing if the shadows of liberalism were not altered. That future has come upon us sooner than I imagined. The liberals have completely unmasked and are moving toward their final solution, which is the extermination of the non-illuminated whites. Who are the non-illuminated whites? They are the whites who do not accept every single aspect of liberalism: sexual debauchery, legalized abortion, and the worship of Satan through the sacred negro.

The liberals’ end, in their satanic minds, justifies any and all means. The white grazers, white people who cannot accept the entirety of the liberals’ illuminated agenda, are unable to cope with the liberals because they are part liberal themselves. They cannot get away from the soul-killing heresy, which says that God and democracy are one: they believe that God’s way is the democratic way. And in a Demon-crazy, you do not fight evil, you vote against it. We are now, as a people, at the crossroads. If we do not reject non-violence, if we let the liberals get away with the complete disenfranchisement of the white race, the future I depict in these stories will be upon us.

I have refrained from suggesting actual battle plans in my blog posts because I believe that once the European people have the will, once they reclaim that “charity of honor,” they will produce leaders who will know the best way to fight the liberals. I have already seen, in the

wake of the election fraud, some very good suggestions as regards the practical measures that we should take once the real war begins. The will to fight, which will come when we are a fully integral Christian people, is all in all.

---

### **Remembrances: What Child Is This?**

Roses bloom and cease to be,  
but we the Christ child shall see.

-Hans Christian Andersen

---

Act I. Scene 1.

Susan: (tied to a chair) Mother, may I be untied now?

Mother: No, you may not be untied.

Susan: Please, mother, the cords are hurting my hands.

Mother: I can't help that, you have been a very naughty little girl. You will remain tied to that chair until two o'clock. Then and only then will I untie you.

Susan: But I'm really and truly sorry.

Mother: You said that last time and then I found you this morning playing with that white boy you were forbidden to play with.

Susan: But I am white, and you said that my father was white, so why is it wrong for me to play with a white boy?

Mother: Now, you really are making me very angry, Susan. I have explained all of this to you before.

Susan: But I don't understand.

Mother: What is the one great commandment which is the basis of our religion?

Susan: That we should love the black race with all our heart, mind, and soul.

Mother: Yes, that is correct. But you did not follow that commandment when you played with that white boy.

Susan: But my father was...

Mother: Yes, I know, your father was white. But your father was an authorized white man. Do you know what that means?

Susan: You've explained it to me before, but I still can't understand.

Mother: I think you do understand, you're just being deliberately willful. But I'll go through it all again. Our black gods are nature gods; they represent all that is beautiful and good. But nature did not make them to fix things and build things; that is the task of white men. Now, white men are very, very evil, so we must not have too many white men in our nation. But we need a few white men to fix things and build things, therefore we don't kill all white men, we let a few live so that they can fix things and build things.

Susan: Was my father a fixer and a builder?

Mother: Yes.

Susan: Did he die?

Mother: Yes, he did, but I don't want you to talk about your father. He did some bad things before he died; he was not a good man.

Susan: Maybe Johnny is going to grow up to be a fixer and a builder.

Mother: Whether he grows up and is placed in the science lab or he is placed in the execution chamber should be of no concern of yours. In either case, you are not supposed to play with him. Now, I'll untie you, but you will be punished severely if you ever play with that boy again.

---

Act I. Scene 2.

Later that night Susan hears a tapping at her second story bedroom window. She gets up and opens the window to a small balcony.

Johnny: May I see you?

Susan: I'm not supposed to see you ever again.

Johnny: Why can't you see me?

Susan: Because you are a white boy.

Johnny: But what is wrong about white skin? I have a storybook that has pictures, and all the people in the pictures are white.

Susan: I'm not supposed to look at storybooks that come from the bad time.

Johnny: How do you know my storybook is from the bad time?

Susan: You said the book had white people in it, so that means it is from the bad time. Any book that doesn't have black people in it is a bad book.

Johnny: But there are nice stories in this book. There is a story called "Hansel and Gretel." They were a boy and girl who get lost in the woods and discover a gingerbread house.

Susan: I don't want to hear anymore... What do you mean by a gingerbread house, you can't make a house of gingerbread?

Johnny: Well, there is one in the book. And Hansel and Gretel meet a witch and then...

Susan: That is wrong. Witches were invented by white men in order to insult women. It is wrong to read stories about them. My mother says that...

Johnny: I think your mother is a witch.

Susan: (starts screaming) Mother, mother, that white boy is here.

(Susan's mother runs into the bedroom with a Glock pistol and starts firing at Johnny as he climbs down to the ground. Susan's mother isn't sure, but she thinks one of the bullets hits Johnny in the leg.)

Mother: (on the phone) Operator, get me the police. Is this the police? Good, I want to report a white boy who tried to break into my home and assault my daughter. He is about eight years old, blonde, and I think I shot him in the leg.

Police Dispatcher: We will send a squad car around to see if they can pick him up.

Mother: They better find him, I don't want him bothering my daughter again. (Coming over to the bed to tuck her daughter in.) You did good, Susan.

Susan: What will they do to him if they catch him.

Mother: They will kill him.

Susan: Oh no, I didn't want that to happen. I just got mad when he called you a witch. (She starts to cry.)

Mother: Stop that this instant, Susan. Women never cry, you know that, it is written in Article II, Section 6, of the Feminist Manifesto. There is nothing soft, nothing sentimental, in women; we are strong, we have nothing called sentiment in us. That was an invention of white males who once ruled this land and enslaved women and blacks. Now, stop crying or I'll be forced to beat you again.

Susan: It's only that I feel sorry for...

Mother: You are not to feel sorry for a white boy. You simply must stop this. No more of it, do you hear?

Susan: Yes, mother.

---

Act I. Scene 3.

A mountain stronghold of the White Underground.

John Taylor: Have you heard from Britain?

David Morgan: Yes, I have. I have a letter from Father Bontini. Would you like me to read it to you?

Taylor: By all means.

Morgan: (He reads the letter.) "This is not the first time I've had to write about Christopher Grey because he hasn't the time. He seems to have no rest, he is always going about his Lord's business. This time it was the plague raging through what used to be called Britain that called him away from the new Britain, which, as you know, used to be called Wales. You had the plague over there a year in advance of us, but it has now hit Europe with a vengeance. It is much more deadly than the COVID-19 virus of many years ago. This virus has a 90% kill rate and thus far there is no drug that can cure it.

"King Arthur took the measures necessary to keep us free of the plague. He placed armed guards on the border with orders to shoot and kill any and all invaders, whether they were Islamic soldiers or British-Islamic refugees. What else could he do? His policy, in my view, is in keeping with Christian charity. You can't allow your own people to be murdered by a virus spawned by your enemies. Arthur has literally launched all sorts of food supplies and experimental drugs over the border in cylinders in order to give some relief to those suffering from the plague, but he will not open up the borders.

"Christopher approved of Arthur's policy, but he felt called to do something more. He told me, 'There must be a Christian presence over there, in this crisis.'

"I asked him, 'Didn't the white Britons have a choice when they decided to stay in Islamic Britain instead of coming here to Christian Britain? Shouldn't they have to live with that choice?'

"Yes, they did have a choice, and not one single citizen of Christian Britain should have to suffer because of their apostasy. But I am not putting those Christians at risk. I'm going over there alone.'

"But Christopher, what can you do? We have some drugs that can alleviate the pain, but there is no cure for this disease. You will die from it before you can really do any good.'

"I'm 106 years old. Do I really have that many months left to live regardless of whether I die of the plague or not?'

"Those months belong to God, Christopher. I don't want you to give them away in a hopeless cause.'

"Bless you, my friend. I know that you are speaking from the heart. But I feel I must do this. Those people, which are still my people, must, at the hour of their deaths, have some human conduit to Christ. If they will accept my love, it will link them to His love. So I must go.'

"What could I say? I knelt and asked for his blessing before he went. I knew I would need that memory for the remaining years of my life without his presence. 'In the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Ghost.'

"That was six months ago. For some reason, known only to God, the Reverend Christopher Grey did not come down with the plague. The plague went down before Christopher Grey. He did not administer any drugs, but he was able to heal all those he came in contact with who had contracted the plague. What was his method? It was quite simple. In the case of the

adults who came to him, he laid his hand on their foreheads and asked the Lord Jesus to come into their soul in order to heal them. And with the children he did likewise except that he took them into his arms as he asked Jesus Christ to heal them. Did he convert a whole nation because of his efforts? No, of course not. The whites, once they were healed, started talking about psychic forces and psychological factors that harnessed the power of the mind and gave the body assistance in fighting off disease. And many of the coloreds and the Moslems attributed the healing powers of Christopher Grey to the devil. But still, there were more than a few who were cured of the disease who did call on Him who saves for the first time in their lives. Whether that initial awakening will turn into faith is difficult to predict, but the grace of God was present, through Christopher Grey, in that heathen nation.

“Why was Christopher permitted to go about Islamic Britain for six months? Because quite early in his mission of mercy he healed the eight year old son of the High Caliph of London. The High Caliph did not convert, but he did remove all restrictions on Christopher’s movements throughout Islamic Britain. We will not, here in New Britain, relax our vigilance, but for now Christopher’s mission of mercy has made for a more peaceful situation between Christian Britain and Islamic Britain.

“Of course, the larger question is – Why was Christopher able to heal so many people? Certainly it was Jesus Christ who healed them, but why was Christopher able to heal them in Christ’s name, when the rest of us could not? I do not have a definitive answer to that question. There are some things that we simply will not know until we have crossed over to that other shore. But there is one thing I can say about Christopher that might give us a glimmer – a glimmer of God’s grace. I have never known a man less tainted with the pride of intellect than Christopher Grey. No doubt because of the events of his childhood and his young manhood Christopher has looked on knowledge as a revelation from God that comes to the heart that loves. Christopher, throughout his entire life, has rejected the enlightened intellect. He refused to ‘evolve’ away from his ‘childish’ and ‘foolish’ faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ. I do not have Christopher’s photographic memory, but I have committed Chateaubriand’s comments on the pride of intellect to my memory and my heart:

‘Now, if the primitive constitution of man consisted in accordances such as we find established among other beings, nothing more was necessary for the destruction of this order, or any such harmony in general, than to alter the equilibrium of the forces or qualities. In man this precious equilibrium was formed by the faculties of love and thought. Adam was at the same time the most enlightened and the best of men ; the most powerful in thought and the most powerful in love. But whatever has been created must necessarily have a progressive course. Instead of waiting for new attainments in knowledge to be derived from the revolution of ages, and to be accompanied by an accession of new feelings, Adam wanted to know every thing at once. Observe, too, what is very important : man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tainted with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to under-take so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that over-powered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion ; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks.’

“Christopher, first with his grief for his cherished pet and then later with the death of his beloved wife, loved so much, so deeply, that God vouchsafed him a vision of heaven, a heaven in which those he loved still lived in and through Christ. Christopher has never sought God through an illuminated mind and that is why, in my judgement, God has been able to work miracles by using Christopher’s Christ-imbued heart as a channel of His grace. Does that sound like raving to you? I hope not. In the meantime, Christopher is now back in Christian Britain and is looking forward to another Christmas. I hope this letter finds you well and I hope the White Underground in your area continues to grow. God bless you, and Merry Christmas!”

---

Taylor: What can I say? I should say I’m surprised, but I’m not. I spent over a year in Christian Britain, which was long enough to get to know the Reverend Grey. He is not like other men.

Morgan: I like the way Father Bontini put it when he said that the plague didn’t bring Christopher down, Christopher brought the plague down. It is true, what Bontini says, that Christopher has more completely purged the rationalist dragon from his soul than the rest of us. That is why he seems to be a man apart from the rest of us.

Taylor: But he doesn’t feel apart from us, isn’t that the key?



Morgan: Yes, it is, he loves much, like his Master.

Taylor: My faith is still in its infancy.

Morgan: So is mine, despite my gray hairs. (They both laugh)

---

## Act II. Scene 1.

Susan's mother was wrong; she did not hit Johnny with a bullet from her Glock pistol, which is another example of the insufficiency of mere fire power without accuracy. Johnny was dragging his leg when he fled from Susan's house because he sprained it when he jumped from the balcony. The 20+ bullets were sprayed all around him, but they did not hit him.

Johnny spent the night dodging the police cars. He knew of hideaways in alleys and old burned-out buildings that the police did not know about. In the early morning, after keeping on the move the entire night, Johnny came to an old dilapidated church on the edge of the city. At first he thought the church was abandoned without any inhabitants, but he saw a light in the adjacent rectory. Starved and desperate, he took a chance and entered the church. Needless to say the church was a 'converted' church: the sign outside read, 'The African Church of North America,' and inside the usual signs of the new religion were present. The former Stations of the Cross had been replaced by various scenes depicting the evolution of the black race from slaves to gods. Now, instead of Christ, a depiction of the Sacred Negro was at the front of the church. When Johnny entered the church, a white priest, about 75 years of age, was at the altar cleaning up the blood that had been spilled when the sacrificial white victim had been killed on the altar at last night's service. Johnny limped up to the old man with a vague hope that he could get something to eat without becoming a sacrificial offering himself.

Old Priest: What do we have here? A little white boy. I don't think you are supposed to be here, are you?

Johnny: Please sir, I'm very hungry, could you give me some food?

Old Priest: Certainly, you just wait here and I'll bring you some toast and jelly. Would you like that?

Johnny: Please, I'd like any food.

Old Priest: Good, I'll bring it. (The priest briefly leaves the room and brings back the food. He then sits down and waits until Johnny has eaten.) I'll bet that makes you feel much better. What is your name?

Johnny: Johnny, sir. And yes, it was good.

Old Priest: Now tell me the truth, Johnny, you are a white runaway, aren't you? You have run away from the white internment camp.

Johnny: I don't know what an internment camp means. The guards call it the white pigsty.

Old Priest: It amounts to the same thing.

Johnny: You won't send me back there, will you?

Old Priest: I am a priest in the African Catholic Church of North America, Johnny. Do you know what that means?

Johnny: It means you are going to send me back.

Old Priest: Johnny, you do not understand. You are a white boy. And as a white boy, you are full of evil, racist prejudices. If you are allowed to grow up free and unrestrained, how could we be sure that you wouldn't become a racist and hurt a black person? You might even become a member of the White Underground.

Johnny: But why do I have to be a prisoner in the white pigsty? You are white, and you are free.

Old Priest: There is where you are wrong, Johnny. I am not a normal white person. I am an illuminated white. By a process that you are too young to understand, I have become illuminated in my mind, which makes me black inside. To

put it in terms that you can understand, let me just say that I thought very hard about how bad it was to be white, and I made myself, by thinking so hard, into a black man.

Johnny: But you still look white to me.

Old Priest: That is only on the outside, Johnny, on the inside I am black, and that is why I am free to perform the holy sacrifice at the altar every Sunday.

Johnny: You kill white people on the altar, don't you?

Old Priest: I wouldn't use the term 'kill,' Johnny, I would use the term 'sacrifice.' We sacrifice whites on the altar of the Sacred Negro.

Johnny: Will I be sacrificed on the altars of the Sacred Negro some day?

Old Priest: Yes, Johnny, you will be sacrificed there, as all members of the internment camps, the whites with no scientific aptitudes, are sacrificed. You, because you tried to run away, will be sacrificed on this altar next Sunday. While I was preparing breakfast for you, I called the police.

Johnny: Why do you hate me so?

Old Priest: I don't hate you, Johnny, it is not a bad thing to die, especially if we die on the altar of the Sacred Negro.

Johnny: But what happens to us when we die?

Old Priest: We become part of nature, we are absorbed by the elements.

Johnny: But I want to go to heaven when I die, me Johnny, I want to personally go to heaven to meet Jesus.

Old Priest: (very harshly) Who told you about heaven and Jesus?

Johnny: No one told me, I read about Jesus and heaven in a storybook.

Old Priest: (even more harshly) Storybooks, especially old storybooks, are forbidden in the African Republic of North America. Who gave it to you?

Johnny: No one, I found it. There were stories from the book, there were good white people in the book, too, white people who spoke of Jesus and heaven.

Old Priest: (slaps Johnny) That is racism, Johnny. You are not to speak of Jesus in such a manner. He is not a god.

Johnny: "Roses bloom and cease to be,  
But we shall the Christ child see."

That was in the book and I believe the book, because there were beautiful stories in the book.

Old Priest: (in a rage) You are not to speak of such things!

Johnny: I will, I will, you are going to kill me anyway!

Old Priest: (leaps upon Johnny and starts strangling him) I'll kill you, I'll kill you, you little fiend.

(In the midst of strangling Johnny, the priest has a heart attack and dies. As Johnny rolls free, he hears police sirens outside. As the police mount the stairs, he escapes out the window.)

---

## Act II. Scene 2.

A newly built science compound has been built over the ruins of the restaurant where Sister Jacqueline was taken away by the White Underground. It is dedicated to her. No one is allowed to mention the alleged miracle that happened there. It now houses about 80 white males with scientific aptitudes. They are afforded a little more freedom than the whites in the

internment camps; they can get passes to leave the compound on special occasions, and they can receive visitors. Most of their time, however, is spent in the laboratories at the compound. They are not completely free to come and go as the illuminated whites are free to come and go. Susan's father, Thomas Kent, is one of the scientists living at the compound. He shares a small apartment with another inmate, one Peter Mackenzie, although neither inmate is referred to by name. Kent is Inmate #79 and Mackenzie is Inmate #80. Kent once lived free, but his wife, Susan's mother, reported him to the feminist branch of the enforcement bureau of the African State Church of North America with a charge of sexism. He was found guilty and sent to the science compound. He would have been executed if not for his scientific expertise. Susan's mother simply told Susan that her father was dead.

As the scene opens, Kent and Mackenzie are in their apartment after the working day. Kent is reading a scientific journal – all other reading is banned – and Mackenzie is watching a state-sponsored sporting event in which only black athletes are allowed to compete.

Mackenzie: (turning off the set) It isn't much of a game.

Kent: (looking up from his journal) What's the matter?

Mackenzie: The game is already over, the Number Two's got off to too big of a lead.

Kent: That's a shame.

Mackenzie: I don't know how you do it.

Kent: Do what?

Mackenzie: Live here without going nuts. I've been here 6 months, and already I can't stand it here. You've been here – how long have you been here?

Kent: If you mean how long have I been at this facility, it has only been about 10 months.

Mackenzie: I don't mean that. How long have you been a laboratory worker?

Kent: Five years. I was once a free worker, but my wife had me sent here.

Mackenzie: That is the downside of getting married.

Kent: Were you ever married?

Mackenzie: No, I was a free white, an illuminated white, but a co-worker reported me for making a racist comment.

Kent: What was it, or shouldn't I ask?

Mackenzie: I simply wondered why whites, if they were illuminated, shouldn't be allowed to play in the sporting events.

Kent: And that got you sent here?

Mackenzie: Yes.

Kent: It could have been worse, you could have been executed for such a remark.

Mackenzie: I suppose I was lucky, but still this place is driving me nuts. I've only been given two weekend passes since I've been here, and those passes are limited to places that are not more than five miles from this laboratory.

Kent: Yes, we are rather confined here.

Mackenzie: What did you do that made your wife report you to the feminist board?

Kent: We had a three-year old daughter named Susan. She would be eight years old now. Well, I don't know if any man, despite what the feminists say, ever gets rid of a certain feeling that he is dealing with something soft and sweet when he is dealing with the best of the opposite sex. When I thought my wife wasn't looking or within hearing distance, I hugged my daughter and called her "daddy's little sweetie pie." My wife heard me.

Mackenzie: And she reported you?

Kent: Yes, she did. In less than a half-hour, my life as an illuminated white was over, and I became a laboratory worker. It could have been worse if I hadn't been scientifically inclined.

Mackenzie: Yes, it could have, but still you must get sick of this grind.

Kent: I do, but most of all, I miss my daughter. I'm sure my wife has told her I was an evil man, and has probably told her I am dead.

Mackenzie: Do you hate your wife?

Kent: I suppose I should say I don't hate her because she was only doing her duty according to the feminist manifesto, but to be honest I must say – Yes, I hate her.

Mackenzie: I don't think I could ever get up the energy to hate.

Kent: A very wise man once said that we cannot love where we should love, if we do not hate where we should hate.

Mackenzie: Who was that man?

Kent: His name was Edmund Burke.

Mackenzie: Where did you hear of such a man, he isn't someone we are supposed to know about, I'm sure about that.

Kent: Have you ever heard of Herb Broadhurst?

Mackenzie: Yes, wasn't he that archivist who joined the White Underground?

Kent: Yes, he was. And it was on this very spot, where this laboratory was built, that Herb joined with the White Underground.

Mackenzie: Did you know him?

Kent: Yes, and he used to tell me about some of the stories of the white people he read about in the Archives.

Mackenzie: He wasn't supposed to do that, was he?

Kent: No, he wasn't. Nevertheless, I found his stories from the Archives quite interesting.

Mackenzie: They eliminated the Archives after what happened with Broadhurst, didn't they?

Kent: Yes, they did.

Mackenzie: Why was what happened at the Inn that used to be here hushed up?

Kent: Many people who were here that Christmas Eve night claimed a miracle occurred. They said a twelve-year-old girl was brought back from the dead.

Mackenzie (laughing) Is that all? She probably just received mouth-to-mouth CPR and recovered from an unconscious state.

Kent: Possibly, but there were some people who insisted that a man brought the girl back to life simply by touching her forehead.

Mackenzie: That is ridiculous. Who was the man?

Kent: No-one is quite sure who he was. He disappeared after the incident. Before the alleged incident occurred he was chained outside in the snow.

Mackenzie: Who had him chained there?

Kent: Sister Jacqueline had him chained there.

Mackenzie: Who released him?

Kent: That's the problem. Nobody knows how he got rid of his chains. He suddenly appeared at the door without his chains. He then went to the girl, who had been struck dead by one of Sister Jacqueline's policemen, and brought her back to life. That is how the story goes.

Mackenzie: Pure nonsense.

Kent: Maybe.

Mackenzie: What do you mean by 'maybe'? Surely you don't think some mysterious stranger actually brought a young girl back to life?

Kent: No, I can't say that I think that. But I know that Herb Broadhurst thought so, and I really liked that man.

Mackenzie: I didn't know him. But he wasn't a scientist, which is why he saw a miracle in something that was scientific. CPR is a wonderful thing, but it is science-based in its principles.

Kent: You're probably right, but I'd still like to know more about that night.

Mackenzie: What would you still like to know?

Kent: Well, I'd like to know what happened to the mysterious stranger.

Mackenzie: That is easy – he left with the White Underground.

Kent: No, he was gone before the White Underground arrived.

Mackenzie: He was probably waiting outside for them to arrive and left with them.

Kent: Possibly.

Mackenzie: You seem to want there to be a mystery where there really is none.

Kent: I suppose I do. But didn't you say you were bored here?

Mackenzie: Yes, I did.

Kent: Why, if science is all and all, are you bored with it?

Mackenzie: It's not science I'm bored with, it's the lack of outside diversions that I miss.

Kent: Well, then I still maintain that if science was all, you wouldn't need outside diversions.

Mackenzie: I don't see that.

Kent: Then let's drop the subject. All I know is that I miss my daughter.

Mackenzie: Wait, I hear something on the balcony.

(Kent goes out onto the balcony and finds a boy – it is Johnny – shivering with cold and barely conscious. He brings him into the apartment.)

---

Act III. Scene 1.

The rectory of the major enforcement bureau of the African Catholic Church of North America. Monsignor McKinney (aged 55) and Father Mandela Johnston (age 34) are in the dining room finishing a late breakfast.

Johnston: I see that boy who killed one of our priests is still at large.

McKinney: Yes, I can't understand why the police haven't caught him yet. It's been three days now since the murder.

Johnston: Is it really that important that he is caught? After all, he is just one boy.

McKinney: I'm surprised at you, Father. It's of vital importance. Father Nicholas was of no particular importance – he didn't really have a parish, we had put him out to pasture six years ago – but he turned on the tape, as he was required to, before he spoke to that white boy. And that white boy blasphemed against the Sacred Negro.

He quoted from a forbidden book of stories, and he made reference to Christ, not as a forerunner of the Sacred Negro, but as the son of the living God. We must capture that boy and find out where he got that book. And we must find out who spoke to him about Christ. If that boy was an ordinary murderer, he would not be a concern, but since he is a blasphemer he is our concern. When the police apprehend him, they will turn him over to us.

Johnston: I'm sorry, Monsignor, I didn't realize the seriousness of the matter.

McKinney: It is easy, living as we do, to get complacent. We only associate with our fellow believers, but there is a white underground out there. We can't forget that.

Johnston: But aren't they just a small remnant?

McKinney: Small is a relative term. They have had an impact. Just two years ago they took Sister Jacqueline away to be tortured and killed.

Johnston: Do we know if she was killed?

McKinney: We must assume the worst; the white underground are racists.

Johnston: It's a terrible thing. And what about Father Taylor and Herb Broadhurst? They were members of the Illuminati and they became racists. It makes me sick to think of the enormity of their treachery.

McKinney: Yes, it's a terrible thing. To know the true God, the Sacred Negro, and then to descend to idolatry, superstition, and racism is unforgivable. I must preside over the trial of an apostate Illuminati today.

Johnston: I didn't know. Who is it?

McKinney: I don't believe you know him, it's Thomas Davenport; he was a psychologist in the Execution Division of our church.

Johnston: The same position that Father Taylor once held?

McKinney: Yes.

Johnston: What is it about that position that creates apostates?

McKinney: Don't be too hasty with your judgements, Father. We have hundreds of priest psychologists, and this is only our second case of apostasy.

Johnston: But even one case is too many.

McKinney: True, but we must keep things in perspective. I am going to look into shorter terms for our psychologists in the execution division. I think the pressure of deciding who must die and who will live grates on the psyche of some men.

Johnston: I don't think a really grounded man should have a problem. If a white man refuses illumination, he should die; it's that simple.

McKinney: I agree, but some men seem illuminated and then fall for reasons we still don't understand.

Johnston: Perhaps today at Thomas Davenport's trial you will be able to get some insight into his psyche that will help you weed out future apostates.

McKinney: He hasn't been found guilty yet.

Johnston: But isn't that just a formality? I heard he made an open declaration of his racism – he said that Jesus Christ was the one and only Son of the Living God.

McKinney: Yes, his guilt seems apparent from what I've heard, but I will let him explain himself in open court. Perhaps you'd like to attend.

Johnston: Yes, I would. I'd like to see one of these apostates close-up.

---

### Act III. Scene 2.

The trial of Thomas Davenport, formerly a priest-psychologist in the Execution Division of the African Roman Catholic Church of North America. Monsignor McKinney presiding.

McKinney: State your name.

Davenport: My name is Thomas Davenport.

McKinney: You have been charged with blasphemy against our holy faith. How do you plead?

Davenport: Guilty.

McKinney: What are you saying? Don't you want to issue a defense?

Davenport: I am guilty of blasphemy as you describe it. I do not believe in the Sacred Negro. I believe that he is a false god. I believe in the God of the white Europeans whom you persecute, I believe that Jesus Christ is the one true God who died on the cross to save us all from sin and death.

McKinney: Guards, have that man gagged. (Two guards tie Davenport's hands behind his back and then gag him.) Now, I must say a few words before I pass sentence. You have committed an unpardonable sin against our holy faith. When you attack that faith, you attack us all. We have struggled mightily against white racism, and it is only by the grace afforded us by the Sacred Negro that we have been able to conquer, within our own psyches (note that I do not use the word 'soul', which is a concept of white racists), the white racism within. Our illumination has been dearly bought. We cannot permit anyone to try and drag us back to racism.

(Monsignor McKinney rises from his seat and raises his arms in the air) I can see the Sacred Negro in my mind's eye; he calls on me to pass judgement on the racist before me. (He sits down.) I sentence you to torture and death two days hence. So die all racists.

Johnston: (coming up to Monsignor McKinney after the trial) I didn't get much of a chance to see into his psyche as he was not allowed to talk.

McKinney: Are you suggesting that I should have let him talk any further after he publicly blasphemed?

Johnston: No, of course not, but I would still like to learn a bit more about him, so I could be of some use in stopping such men from attaining any positions in our church again.

McKinney: I could give you a pass to visit him in his cell. Would you like that?

Johnston: Yes, I would.

McKinney: I'll arrange it.

---

### Act III. Scene 3.

Davenport's cell.

Father Johnston: I can't have your death sentence altered, I haven't the power. And quite frankly, I wouldn't alter your death sentence even if I had the power to. I think you deserve to die for your apostasy.

Davenport: Did you come here just to tell me that?

Johnston: No, I came here to tell you that if you cooperate with me, if you answer my questions, I can have the torture you are currently scheduled for remitted.

Davenport: I don't particularly care to be tortured, but I won't answer any questions that put my fellow Christians in jeopardy.

Johnston: My questions are not that type of questions.

Davenport: If they won't compromise anyone else, I'll answer your questions.

Johnston: Good. I would like to know how you, an illuminated white, made the descent into racism. By what process did you go from light to darkness?

Davenport: Of course, I do not see it as you see it. From my perspective I went from darkness to light. But since you ask me, I'll try to articulate the reason for what you call 'my apostasy.'

Like you, like all whites who are allowed to grow up and live in the African Republic of North America, I believed that the negro was sacred. I believed that we, as white men, were called upon to serve the negro with our whole heart, mind, and soul. And for many years, I did just that. All my work in the science lab was holy work to me, because it was done in the name of the sacred negro, it was done to make the sacred negroes' lives here on earth more pleasant.

I was given permission to marry a white woman, because I had demonstrated my scientific aptitude. The Illuminati on the council felt that my offspring might also be scientifically inclined. I was relieved when my son, at age three, scored very high on the scientific aptitude tests, because I saw there was an excellent chance that he would be allowed to live, that he would not have to be executed. Even though I knew it was in violation of Section III, Article 17 of the African Republic of North American's constitution, I had formed a very close bond with my son and my wife.

Johnston: Even though you knew such bonds were forbidden? When you knew that the procreation of the species was not supposed, within the bond of white marriage, to be connected with sentiment?

Davenport: Yes, I did form ties of sentiment with my wife and child. I just couldn't seem to help myself. But I still believed in the sacred negro despite my sentimental attachment to a white child and a white woman.

Johnston: I do not see how the two principles can be reconciled, but please proceed with your story.

Davenport: When Edmund was 6 years old, my wife died tragically in what they told me was a car accident.

Johnston: You don't believe it was a car accident?

Davenport: I believed it at the time, but now I know differently. I know that she was raped and murdered by your black gods. She got lost – she was always bad with directions – and drove into the rape and murder zone.

Johnston: You know that it is perfectly legal for blacks to rape and murder any white woman without a special pass. Did your wife have her pass?

Davenport: I don't know for sure, she might have forgotten it that day. But should that make a difference? Why should the blacks have the right to rape and murder white women even if they don't have a pass?

Johnston: If you weren't already scheduled for execution, that statement alone would be your death warrant. But go on – if you tell me your whole story, I will keep my promise and remit your torture.

Davenport: After my wife's death, I had only my son left to live for.



Johnston: You know that was wrong. You are not to live for what used to be called kith and kin; you are to live solely for the Sacred Negro.

Davenport: I know that is how it is supposed to be, but you asked me to tell my story.

Johnston: Go ahead.

Davenport: Two years after my wife's death, Edmund was eight; he contracted the plague. It came as quite a shock to me because he got the plague at a time when it had virtually died out in this country. It was still raging in Europe, but we no longer had any active cases. I could only conclude that I had carried it home from the lab. I had been working with the virus in order to develop a vaccine.

Now, before you interrupt me again, let me say that I knew I was supposed to report Edmund's illness. But I didn't, because I knew he would be executed. I packed up as many provisions as I could carry in the minivan and took Edmund to the mountains. I wanted him, if he had to die, to die in peaceful surroundings, not in a science lab. My special illuminated status allowed me to pass through the sentries guarding the roads.

Johnston: Did your son die in the mountains, then?

Davenport: No, he did not. The White Underground came upon us. That is all I will say. They came to me, a man who had sent hundreds of white Christians to their deaths for their refusal to worship the Sacred Negro, and they helped my son.

Johnston: How could they help your son? The plague is and was incurable.

Davenport: They told me there was a man in Britain who could cure the plague. He had just returned to Christian Britain after healing thousands of plague victims in Islamic Britain.

Johnston: And who was the man?

Davenport: His name was...

Johnston: Christopher Grey?

Davenport: Yes.

Johnston: He never cured anyone, all that is nonsense.

Davenport: He cured my son.

Johnston: If your son got better, it was a psychic phenomenon, it had nothing to do with Christopher Grey.

Davenport: That's what Christopher Grey said: he said he had nothing to do with my son's recovery. Only he did not call it a psychic phenomenon. He said that it was Jesus Christ who healed my son and that he was merely a vehicle for Christ.

Johnston: That is blasphemy. There are no miracles outside of the natural world. The so-called miracles are psychic phenomena. We must look to the Sacred Negro for the real miracles, the miracle of the Natural Savage untainted by the non-illuminated whites.

Davenport: So you say. But I saw a miracle. I had a mask and gloves on, a mask and gloves I had especially designed for myself when the plague had hit our country. The White Underground had us isolated from the rest of their population, but they kept us supplied with food and water. I didn't believe that my son could be cured, since he had entered the final stages of the disease, but there was a great peace amongst those people that made me glad that I had fled the city with my son. It was — you can make of this what you want — on the third day that I was among the White Underground that he, Christopher Grey, appeared. He simply nodded to me and walked right up to my son and took him in his arms. To me he looked like an enormous angel, like something from another world. He said, "Please, Lord Jesus, come into your child, Edmund Davenport, and cure him."

He held him for another two or three minutes in his arms and then he laid him back on the bed. And my son was plague free! I wept and I believed. I fell on my knees before Christopher and started to thank him. But he got on his knees beside me and thanked our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. And he was right — at that moment, when I saw my son healed through the power of Christ, I believed. Most certainly I am the least of God's children, because I persecuted His people,

and I needed to see before I believed, but still I now belong to Him. I was captured by your police force when I came back to get a few of my things, but I am thankful that my son is with the White Underground. And that is my story. If it will make my death less painful, I am glad I told it to you. If not, it will not change my faith.

Johnston: You truly deserve the death sentence that Monsignor McKinney gave you. As for the torture that is customary in these cases, I'm afraid I lied to you. I do not have the power to remit your torture. And quite frankly I wouldn't do it if I could. You deserve to be tortured because you have gone over to the racist Europeans, the Christers, and must be punished most severely with torture and death.

Davenport: So be it then. I know He will sustain me.

Johnston: Jailer! It's time to let me out.

Morgan: (outside the cell) The jailer is temporarily indisposed. I relieved him of his duties. You and Mr. Davenport are coming with me.

Johnston: Who are you?

Morgan: My name is Morgan.

Johnston: The leader of the White Underground?

Morgan: Yes, and you are going to meet many of my friends and some of your former friends such as Sister Jacqueline, who remains our prisoner.

Johnston: Hel... (Morgan muffles his scream and takes him away, accompanied by the newest member of the White Underground, Thomas Davenport.

---

#### Act IV. Scene 1.

The apartment of Thomas Kent and Peter Mackenzie. Kent has placed Johnny in his bed, covered him with blankets, and brought him a cup of hot chocolate. Johnny has regained consciousness.

Kent: And where have you come from? Easy on the milk, don't drink it too quickly.

Johnny: I'm so hungry and thirsty.

Kent: I'll get you something to eat as well, but take your time with it. (Kent goes into the kitchen to get Johnny some leftovers. Mackenzie speaks to him in the kitchen.)

Mackenzie: I'm sure that is the runaway white kid the police are looking for.

Kent: Probably.

Mackenzie: Then we'll have to turn him in right now.

Kent: Let's wait a bit, at least let him eat.

Mackenzie: What's the use of that, he will be killed as soon as they take him.

Kent: Still, I'd like to give him this chicken.

Mackenzie: Why?

Kent: It would give me pleasure to feed a human being instead of a laboratory rat.

Mackenzie: Don't be absurd, I'm calling the police. (He walks over to the phone. As he does so Kent goes to his desk drawer and draws out a small semiautomatic pistol.)

Kent: Leave the phone alone.

Mackenzie: Have you gone mad?

Kent: Quite probably I have gone mad. Which is all the more reason why you shouldn't touch that phone — I will shoot.

Mackenzie: All right, I won't touch the phone. But if you harbor a white escapee from the internment camp we will both be executed.

Kent: Don't worry, I'll see to it that you're not implicated. Put your hands behind your back. (Kent ties and gags Mackenzie and puts him in the closet. Then he goes into the bedroom, bringing Johnny the chicken. When Johnny finishes eating, Kent speaks to him.)

Kent: You've been very busy these last few days, haven't you?

Johnny: Yes, I have, and I'm very tired.

Kent: Well, in just a little while you can get some sleep. But first I'd like you to tell me your story.

Johnny: Like in the storybooks?

Kent: Yes, if that will make it easier for you.

Johnny: Well, once upon a time I was born in a big prison camp. I don't know who my father and mother were, because I never, that I can remember, had anyone around me. There were only black men with whips and sticks around me. They always beat me. They told me if I failed the tests, they would kill me and eat me, just like the witch in the Hansel and Gretel story.

Kent: Did they, the guards, tell you about Hansel and Gretel?

Johnny: No, that was a book I found two years ago. I read it many, many times when no-one was paying any attention to me. I had a hiding place for the book just outside the camp. I also had a little tunnel I dug that led outside the camp. That is where I read the book and visited Susan.

Kent: Who was Susan?

Johnny: She was a white girl I used to go and see. I thought she liked me. I still think she does, but when I called her mother a witch, she screamed, and her mother shot at me. That was about five days ago, but I'm not sure exactly how long it has been. A lot has happened to me since that time.

Kent: What was the last name of Susan?

Johnny: I'm not sure what Susan's last name was. But her mother's last name was Wagner.

Kent: Johnny, that young girl is my daughter.

Johnny: Then she should be with you. I'm sure she is not happy with her mother, because her mother ties her to a chair when she is bad.

Kent: I don't think Susan could be so bad as to warrant being tied to a chair.

Johnny: I think that was my fault. When Susan played with me, she was being 'racist,' so her mother punished her.

Kent: Yes, she would do that. You were right, Johnny, Susan's mother is a witch.

Johnny: I thought so. But what can we do? Susan shouldn't have to live with a witch.

Kent: No, she shouldn't. I'm going to take care of that. But you haven't finished telling me your story. How did you end up here, and why are the police chasing you?

Johnny: They say I killed a priest of the African Roman Catholic Church of North America.

Kent: Wait, before you go any further, let me get my roommate out of the closet. I really shouldn't have put him there. (Kent leaves the room for ten minutes and then comes back with Mackenzie.) Now, Johnny, please go on with your story. My friend here will listen as well. And when you have finished, we will both leave together while my friend calls the police, but not before he has given us a half-hour head start. Isn't that right, Peter?

Mackenzie: Agreed.

Kent: Go ahead, Johnny.

Johnny: Susan's mother, the witch, started shooting at me, so of course I had to run away. I couldn't go back to the prison camp like I used to do because I knew Susan's mother had called the police. So I ran and hid, and I ran and hid some more until I came to an old African Roman Catholic Church. The priest there started being nice to me. He gave me something to eat, and he seemed kind. But when I said, "Roses bloom and cease to be; But we shall the Christ child see," he attacked me and started to choke me. I thought I was going to die, but then he suddenly stopped choking me. He rolled over on the floor beside me and stopped breathing. Then I saw the police cars outside the window and I ran away. As I was running away, I heard someone yelling I had murdered the old priest. I didn't murder him, but I knew they would kill me anyway because of Susan's mother, so I kept running.

Kent: How did you survive for five days and nights?

Johnny: I grabbed some food off the old priest's table before I ran from that church. I made that last two days. Since then I haven't eaten until now. It was on my fifth day of hiding and running that I came upon the big church festival. It was being held outside.

Kent: What were they doing at the festival?

Johnny: They were killing white people, isn't that what they always do at religious festivals?

Kent: Yes.

Johnny: Well, they had all the white people lined up – there must have been hundreds of them lined up waiting their turn to be killed on the altars of the big outdoor church. The black guards all had those guns that shoot a lot of bullets.

Kent: Were you hidden during the festival?

Johnny: Yes, I was in the bushes on a hill overlooking the festival. But I guess I wasn't paying attention because a black sentry came up behind me and grabbed me. "How did you escape," he said. I tried to get away, but he held me tight and started to carry me down to the religious festival where the whites were being killed. But halfway down the hill somebody started shooting at the black guards, and I heard one of them say, "It's Morgan and the White Underground." Then the white prisoners started running for cover, and the black guards started shooting back at the White Underground people. But soon all the blacks were dead, and the White Underground people came and started telling the white people they could come with them. I tried to cry out to the White Underground people, but the black man held his hand over my mouth and started running into the hills with me.

Kent: Didn't anybody from the White Underground see him running away with you?

Johnny: No, I guess we were too far away.

Kent: But you're here now. Somebody must have helped you get away?

Johnny: Somebody did — his name was Michael.

Kent: Tell me about it.

Johnny: Well, the black guard was quite angry with the White Underground for killing all his friends. That is what he said, but he didn't really seem as sorry for his friends getting killed as he seemed sorry that all the whites weren't going to be killed. He kept saying, "Well, at least I'll kill you, at least I'll kill you." And when we came to a clearing, he put handcuffs on me and made me kneel down while he built a fire. He said he planned to roast me alive. When he got the fire nice and hot, he undid my handcuffs, picked me up, and threw me in the fire.

Kent: Johnny, how is that possible – you don't have any burn marks on your body?

Johnny: I didn't burn up because he was there in the fire.

Kent: Who was there?

Johnny: Saint Michael the Archangel. That was his name.

Kent: Did he tell you that was his name?

Johnny: Yes, he did, and he said the Christ Child had sent him to watch out for me. He told me that Baby Jesus had heard me calling on Him by name when I told the old priest that, "Roses bloom and cease to be. But we the Christ child shall see."

Mackenzie: This is too much. The child is lying, he is making all this up.

Kent: Is he?

Mackenzie: Of course he is, you don't seriously believe in archangels and the baby Jesus?

Kent: People once believed in such things.

Mackenzie: Yes, in the age of superstition people believed in a lot of things, no doubt. But we are men of science.

Kent: You are a man of science. And you can have it.

Mackenzie: You believe his story?

Kent: I want to believe it.

Mackenzie: That's not what I asked you. I asked you if you believed his story.

Kent: (Looks at Johnny and seems to be studying his face) Yes, I believe his story, more than I believe in that science lab over there.

Mackenzie: You're insane!

Kent: Perhaps.

Johnny: The angel Michael must have known you would believe me because he took me here after he killed the black man. He told me you would take care of me.

Kent: If the angel told you that, then I will take care of you. We shall join a friend of mine, Herb Broadhurst, in the White Underground. But first I must go rescue my daughter Susan from that witch. Would you like that?

Johnny: Yes, I would, very much!

Kent: (addressing Mackenzie) You've promised me one half-hour head start.

Mackenzie: I'll give you more than that, I won't phone in a missing person report until the morning.

Kent: Thanks.

Mackenzie: (with a wave of his hand) Get out of here before you have me seeing angels.

---

#### Act IV. Scene 2.

Susan's apartment. Johnny has shown Kent where he can climb up to Susan's bedroom. Kent climbs up into Susan's bedroom, but he goes through Susan's bedroom to the witch's bedroom. Without waking the witch, he goes to the dresser, opens a drawer, and removes the clip from his wife's Glock. Then he goes back to Susan's bedroom and gently wakes her. Johnny has been waiting there in the bedroom as well.

Kent: Do you hear me, Susan?

Susan: Yes, who are you?

Kent: I'm sure you don't remember me, but I am your father, and I've come to take you away from here to a better place. And I'm taking Johnny with me as well.

Susan: My father is dead.

Kent: No, that is not true. I am your father. Look at me, Susan, look very carefully at my face.

Susan: I am looking.

Kent: What do you see?

Susan: (suddenly lighting up) I see love there, you love me! I know you must be my father!

Kent: Then you'll come with me?

Susan: Yes, oh yes!

(At this point, Susan's mother, the witch, enters the bedroom.)

The Witch: (pointing the Glock at Kent) I don't know how you got here, but you'll never leave here, you disgusting white male. (She pulls the trigger of the Glock, but of course nothing happens.)

Kent: I removed the bullets, my dear. (The witch rushes at Kent, her fists flailing, but Kent knocks her out with a straight right-hand punch. Then he goes over to her to see if she is still alive. She is still breathing.)

Susan: Why does my mother hate everyone?

Kent: Your mother is a liberal, Susan.

Susan: What is a liberal?

Kent: A liberal is someone who hates Jesus Christ, and because liberals hate Jesus Christ, they hate His people.

Susan: I don't understand. Who is Jesus Christ?

Kent: I don't understand much myself, Susan, but where we are going, there will be many people who understand about these things. They will tell us about creatures such as your mother who hate everyone, and they will show us other people who love one another as Jesus Christ once told us to do.

(Speaking more to himself now than to the others, Kent looks at his wife.) I thought I loved you. You're still beautiful, at least on the outside. Maybe that is why I was punished through you. I only looked on the outside, not on the inside.

Johnny: Will we go now?

Kent: Yes, let me tie her up and gag her before we go.

Johnny: Roses bloom and cease to be, but we the Christ child shall see.

Kent: Yes, we will.

---

#### Act V. Scene 1.

A room in the mountain headquarters of the White Underground. Herb Broadhurst, Morgan, Kent, and Thomas Davenport are there.

Kent: I'm very grateful to you for taking me, my daughter, and Johnny into your mountain refuge. We certainly were in need of a refuge.

Morgan: We all are. There are many such refuges scattered throughout the continent.

Kent: Are you the leader?

Morgan: Yes, but every refuge has their own, for want of a better word, clan leader. I simply keep all the various clan chapters in touch with each other and ultimately in touch with King Arthur II of Britain.

Kent: Who was crowned by Christopher Grey?

Morgan: Yes.

Kent: Is he actually a real person? I've heard so many strange stories about him.

Davenport: He is quite real. He has been here for the past month. He came to heal my son and show the worst of sinners, one Thomas Davenport, the grace of Jesus Christ. He'll be returning to Britain tomorrow, but tonight he'll celebrate Christmas with us.

Kent: I'd like to meet him, but I must say this whole Christian thing is a little above and beyond me.

Broadhurst: It's above and beyond all of us to some extent. We all are infants in our faith.

Morgan: Yes, we are, but we believe.

(Christopher Grey enters the room.)

Grey: Lord, I believe, help my unbelief. That is always our prayer. But it takes faith to make that prayer (looking at Kent and Davenport). Allow me to invoke an ancient privilege. Please kneel.

(They all kneel, while Grey prays.)

Dear God, please bless these, your children; help them to know you in and through their brothers and sisters in Christ, gathered together here in your name. Keep them always in your heart and give them the grace to allow you into their hearts. We ask this, in the name of Jesus Christ, our Lord and Savior, Amen.

Morgan: Amen.

All: Amen.

Grey: I'll be back before I return to Britain, but right now I have a very important appointment with a young boy.

---

## Act V. Scene 2.

At the top of the mountain refuge where thousands of white Christians live, there is a huge nativity scene. Christopher Grey takes Johnny by the hand, and together they walk to the top of the mountain and stand before the representation of the Baby Jesus in the manger with the Virgin Mary, Joseph, the Wise Men, and the Shepherds kneeling before Him.

Johnny: Is this the Baby Jesus?

Grey: No, it's just a model, a picture in wood of the Baby Jesus.

Johnny: It's a nice picture, but I want to see the real Baby Jesus.

Grey: Why must you see him, Johnny?

Johnny: Because I love Him. "Roses bloom and cease to be, but we the Christ child shall see."

Grey: You shall see Him, Johnny. I want you to kneel down. Cup your hands like this (Grey cups his hands in prayer) and listen to what I say. (Grey recites, from memory, the nativity story from the Gospel of Luke:

“And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed. (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.) And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because he was of the house and lineage of David:) To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn. And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men. And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child. And all they that heard it wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart. And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.”

Grey: Did you see Him, Johnny?

Johnny: Yes, I did, but I saw another person standing with the Baby Jesus. It was a man with a crown of thorns on His head and deep cuts in His hands and His side. And when I saw the crown of thorns and the wounds, I cried inside my heart, because I was sorry for Him. But then He became all shiny and bright, and He was beautiful. He still had marks on Him but they were healed. And I knew He loved me, I just knew it.

Grey: The Baby Jesus is that Man with the crown of thorns and the wounds. And the Baby Jesus is that wonderful Man of light. He is Christ, He is our Savior. Do you believe in Him, Johnny?

Johnny: Yes.

Grey: Let's go down the mountain. Your young friend Susan is waiting for you down there and so are the rest of your friends.

Johnny: Do they love the Baby Jesus too?

Grey: Yes, they do.

---

Act V. Scene 3. Finis.

The Rev. Grey reads from Luke, chapter 2, and then he leads the faithful in song:

Away in a manger  
No crib for his bed  
The little Lord Jesus  
Laid down his sweet head  
The stars in the sky  
Looking down where he lay  
The little Lord Jesus  
Asleep on the hay

The cattle are lowing  
The poor baby wakes  
But little Lord Jesus  
No crying he makes  
I love Thee, Lord Jesus  
Look down from the sky



And stay by my cradle  
Till morning is nigh

Be near me, Lord Jesus  
I ask Thee to stay  
Close by me for ever  
And love me, I pray  
Bless all the dear children  
In Thy tender care  
And take us to Heaven  
To live with Thee there  
And take us to Heaven  
To live with Thee there. +

---

## **They Hate Him Whom We Love - December 12, 2020**

And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men. –Luke 2: 8-14

---

One of the pro-Trumpers at the rally I attended two weeks ago asked me what I thought Trump's chances were to overturn the election fraud. When I said I didn't think he had much of a chance, the pro-Trumper got quite angry with me. He went through the whole case for Trump and demanded that I see Trump was going to win. I told him again that I was hoping and praying for a Trump victory, and that I knew Trump had a slam-dunk, unimpeachable case against the Demon-crats. "Then why don't you think Trump is going to win?" the Trumper demanded. I could have referred him to Stevenson's "Thrawn Janet," (see "The Sacred Heritage," Sept. 30, 2007), but instead I kept it simple: "I don't believe that there are enough legislators or judges in this country who are interested in justice."

Our entire system of government is based on the theological error that has gained the upper hand in our churches. That error, or to be more accurate, that blasphemy, says that God does not reveal Himself to human hearts, He reveals Himself to human minds. Acting on that theological blasphemy, the European people built house-of-cards churches and house-of-cards governments, which were based on the supremacy of reason over revelation and the mind over the heart. We have all seen the image of Blind Justice with the scales in her hands. But should justice be blind? If the blind lead the blind, shall not both fall into a ditch?

Justice should not be blind to the precepts of the living God who requires mercy and not sacrifice. Reason, unilluminated by a heart connected to Our Lord and Savior, will always make decisions grounded in Satan's hatred of Christ and His people. The scholastics thought to avoid the evils inherent in human hearts by placing pure reason above the heart and making the human mind the conduit for God's grace. But doesn't that ignore the reality of our relationship with God? Are we pagans who come to God through illuminated minds? Our Lord and His apostle, St. Paul, made it clear: God comes to man through the human heart. The theologians, the men who have made a serious study of God, have told us that God was incorrect. The human heart, they tell us, is too sinful and problematic to be a conduit of God's grace. They have corrected God in the same manner that Dostoyevsky's Grand Inquisitor corrected Christ: "You thought too much of man, you should not have given him the freedom to choose between God and the devil." But God has chosen, in defiance of the experts on God, to "impart to human hearts the blessings of His heaven."

All decisions for good or evil are made in the human heart. Once those decisions are made, we use our reason to support those decisions. Philosophers and theologians, who try to reverse that process by claiming that the mind instructs the heart, fly in the face of reality and always increase the suffering of individual human beings who try to adhere to their theological and philosophical precepts. Every theologian or philosopher who derides sentiment has some underlying sentiment in his heart that rules his reason. The mad-dog liberal's overriding passion is self-love, and he hates Christ because to acknowledge Christ as his Savior would be an acknowledgement that he, the liberal, is not a god. So it is with the pagan white nationalists. They hate whites for the same reason the Jews hate whites – the white race once championed the living God. The European people's ancient faith is in direct conflict with the white nationalists' creed – "Nearer my genes to me, nearer to me, Because it is my DNA that leadeth me." The liberal must have the negro as his savior because the negro does not challenge his intellect, which is his true God. And the white nationalist must have the same God – his

intellect. The end result of such self-love is the deification of reason as defined by the image of justice with the blindfold. But there is no such thing as blind, rational justice. Reason is a whore; she peeks out over the blindfold and decides in favor of the prevailing powers that be. When the powers that be are liberal, which translates to satanic, then 'justice' is satanic. (1)

World War I marked the end of the Christ-believing European people, but it did not mark the end of an ethically Christian people. That Christian ethos survived through the first half of the twentieth century as a significant force in our courts of justice. By the second half of the twentieth century, 1965 was the demarcation point, the Christian ethos had disappeared from officialdom. Henceforth, the Christian ethos was banned to the underground with its parent, the Christian faith. When Trumpers look to blind justice, which is not blind, to remedy injustice – the fraudulent election – they are seeking redemption from the devil just as the pro-lifers have been seeking redemption from the devil for the past forty-seven years.

Is there no hope then for an electoral victory? There is a very slight hope. The liberals won't have a change of heart; the fact that Trump won the election will not compel them to concede the election to Trump. Our courts are filled with liberals who will rule according to what Satan wills. And Satan has decreed that there shall be no Christian presence in his Democracy. The slight chance Trump has involves a repudiation of nonviolence on the part of Trump's supporters. The liberals must be afraid that Trump's supporters will not remain nonviolent if they are disenfranchised. They must make it clear that there shall be no peace if there is no justice.

This election fraud has its antecedents in the legalization of abortion forty-seven years ago. I used to protest outside an abortion clinic listening, with impotent rage, to snide remarks from the abortion doctors and their aides when they went past me on the way to the abortuaries. It made me wonder, "What would it take to stop such fiends from hell from doing what they are doing?" An appeal to their reason? No, their reason told the abortion doctors they would earn over \$100,000 a week at the clinics. Why should they turn down that money? If a man or woman has turned their heart over to Satan they can only be dealt with as Edgar dealt with his evil brother in King Lear and as Macduff dealt with Macbeth. The justices who are refusing to hear the fraud cases and the legislators who are ready to "move on with the Biden presidency" must be made to fear for their lives if they chose liberalism over justice, just as the abortion doctors who choose to kill babies for profit must be forced to face the ultimate penalty if they continue with their blood fests.

My 'prejudices' regarding the black race were already formed before I became a police officer. What I saw as a police officer hardened me in my 'prejudices.' The blacks were indeed a 'gifted' race: they had a 'gift' for murderous savagery. But the horror of black savagery cannot compare with the pure, unmitigated evil of white liberalism. We are now witnessing, in the United States of America, an embodiment of the 'purest' manifestation of Satan that mankind has ever known since the devil's appearance in the Garden of Eden. All the evils of the ancient and modern reigns of terror – Babylon, Sodom and Gomorrah, the French Jacobins, the Northern Reconstructionists, the Soviet Gulags – have been synthesized and institutionalized in the United States of America. Our "beacon light" of "freedom" is a satanic horror. Can that horror be exorcised by a plea for justice addressed to the merciless angel of injustice and merciless cruelty?

The liberals have crossed a moral Rubicon, which has never been crossed before. We must see that horror for what it is. The great pastor and poet from Denmark, N. F. S. Grundtvig, spent his life emphasizing, "the human first." What did he mean by that line in his most famous poem? He was defending the human heart over the illuminated mind. There was still, Grundtvig the poet maintained, even after the Fall, something of God left in the heart of man. A man could respond to God's grace. Hence, if you deny what is truly human in man, you deny the image of God in man. That is the essence of Satanism, to destroy the image of God in man. Surely we can now see, if we look at modern liberalism, that Satan has imprinted his image throughout all the major institutions of our nation. We are commanded to follow Satan's dictates in Church and State. Through the worship of the Sacred Negro we are bound to Satan. The "we are not prejudiced" and the "we are not violent" affirmations of the Trumpers will not put a dent in the satanic armour of the liberals. We must be prejudiced, we must love our own, and we must, because we love much, be violent in the face of the liberals' violent attacks on the unborn and the white race.

The half-Christian, half-liberal faith of the Trumpers plays right into the hands of the liberals who are whole-heartedly committed to Satan. The Trumpers have taken Christ's injunction to "love your enemy" and twisted it around so that it has come to mean, in their religion, that there is no such thing as evil. But that is not Christian. Alfred first defeated his enemies, the pagan Danes, and then extended mercy to them – he did not surrender to them because he thought heathenism and Christianity were compatible. Pickwick dedicated his life to the pursuit of Alfred Jingle, who defrauded orphans and widows. It was only when he met, in prison, the repentant Jingle, who was at death's door, that Pickwick extended his hand to Jingle in Christian charity:

“Good fellow,” said Jingle, pressing his hand, and turning his head away. “Ungrateful dog—boyish to cry—can’t help it—bad fever—weak—ill—hungry. Deserved it all—but suffered much—very.” Wholly unable to keep up appearances any longer, and perhaps rendered worse by the effort he had made, the dejected stroller sat down on the stairs, and, covering his face with his hands, sobbed like a child.

“Come, come,” said Mr. Pickwick, with considerable emotion, “we will see what can be done, when I know all about the matter. Here, Job; where is that fellow?”

“Here, sir,” replied Job, presenting himself on the staircase. We have described him, by-the-bye, as having deeply-sunken eyes, in the best of times. In his present state of want and distress, he looked as if those features had gone out of town altogether.

“Here, sir,” cried Job.

“Come here, sir,” said Mr. Pickwick, trying to look stern, with four large tears running down his waistcoat. “Take that, sir.”

Take what? In the ordinary acceptation of such language, it should have been a blow. As the world runs, it ought to have been a sound, hearty cuff; for Mr. Pickwick had been duped, deceived, and wronged by the destitute outcast who was now wholly in his power. Must we tell the truth? It was something from Mr. Pickwick’s waistcoat-pocket, which chinked as it was given into Job’s hand, and the giving of which, somehow or other imparted a sparkle to the eye, and a swelling to the heart, of our excellent old friend, as he hurried away.

Does Christian charity, the charity that never faileth, mean that we must not fight against evil? That is, as Hamlet says, “The Question.” I believe, as Burke believed, that there is a “charity of honor” which compels us to fight, with all our heart and soul, against inhuman, heathen savagery and merciless, liberal cruelty. My heart goes out to my youngest daughter and my wife when they weep at every new cruelty and debauchery of the liberals. And my heart went out to that wheel-chair-bound Trumper who wept when a kind female Trump supporter gave him a free Trumpy bear. There is an agony of compassion in our hearts when we see the pain and suffering of our kith and kin. We long to fight against the inhuman creatures who are the cause of that pain and suffering. But must we end up like Lear in the storm, vowing to “do such things that shall be the terrors of the earth,” and then die, having failed to “do such things”? When the evil is so pervasive, when it is an evil such as the world has never seen before, how do you strike out against it? It is not a case of assassinating one tyrant, which would not be difficult. But when there is a vast network of men and women committed to the rule of Satan, whom do you strike first, and how do you know the most effective way to engage the enemy? One starts by seeing things with a heart that loves. The devil exists, and he works his will through the inhumanity of liberalism. We cannot make the liberals disappear by refusing to see them for what they are: the devil’s own. Only He who saves, if we call on Him by name, can give us the wisdom, the heart, and the courage to fight the devil and his minions.

I will do the Christmas things this Christmas. But I won’t lie – the liberals have pushed their satanic visages right to my door with this election fraud. My Christmas celebration will have a defiant element to it that it has not had in previous years. I would prefer a more peaceful celebration. But that is the nature of the world we live in right now.

The usual Christmas story will appear on this blog on December 19th and 26th. On January 2nd, I will, God willing, return as usual. God bless you, in defiance of the liberals, this Christmas and in the Christmases to come. +

---

(1) “Blind” justice has decided not to hear the Texas election fraud case. Our Supreme Court exists to ensure that Satan shall reign forever in the United States. Let us look to the one, higher authority, Jesus Christ, to sustain us in the war that we must fight against the most satanic army in human history.

---

## **We Must Hate the Devil and His Minions - December 5, 2020**

I will be flesh and blood;  
For there was never yet philosopher  
That could endure the toothache patiently,  
However they have writ the style of gods  
And made a push at chance and sufferance.

– *Much Ado About Nothing*

---

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

The advice, “take things philosophically,” was in common parlance when I was growing up. If your favorite sport team failed to win, you were advised to take it philosophically: “It’s only a game and there is always next season.” If your brother got that last extra piece of apple crumb pie at Thanksgiving that you had regarded as yours, you were advised to take that disappointment philosophically: “Someday your mother, possibly at Christmas, will make another apple crumb pie, and you can beat your brother to the second helping.” But can the greater tragedies of life, assuming there are greater tragedies than your failure to get a second helping of apple crumb pie, be overcome by “taking things philosophically”? Can the death of our loved ones and the contemplation of our own death, for instance, be assuaged by taking death philosophically? Plato tells us that, yes, even death itself can be overcome by taking things philosophically. He tells us that his mentor, Socrates, who spent his life telling everyone around him to disbelieve in everything around them, took hemlock at the behest of the state. And he took the hemlock serenely and contentedly while talking over the merits of the state’s case against him with his philosophically-minded friends. What do we think of such serenity? I look on it with horror. It is the serenity of superficiality that Balzac describes when he tells us how a man who has been a superficial humbug all his life manages to maintain that superficiality even in the face of death. I prefer Longfellow’s Christian stance vis-à-vis the tragedy of death –

Tell me not in mournful numbers,  
‘Life is but an empty dream!’  
For the soul is dead that slumbers.  
And things are not what they seem.  
Life is real! Life is earnest!  
And the grave is not its goal;  
‘Dust thou art, to dust returnest.’  
Was not spoken of the soul.

Stalin, one of the great liberal icons, once said that the death of one individual is a tragedy, but the death of two million people is a statistic. Spoken like a true philosopher. Let me throw Ivan Karamazov and Alyosha Karamazov into the debate. Ivan, the philosopher, asks Alyosha if he would build the happiness of all mankind on the suffering of one innocent child. Alyosha, the Christian, replies, “No, I would not.” Plato would build the happiness of mankind on the suffering of one – nay, not just one, but on millions upon millions of innocent victims, because Plato viewed life philosophically; he believed in an universal aggregate called mankind but despised individual human beings. Our Lord eschewed universals and came to save individual human beings from death. Plato and all the lesser philosophers that followed in his train tell us “in mournful numbers, that life is but an empty dream” for individual men and women of flesh and blood, but we can lose ourselves in the serenity of universal thought that will cure our longing for the “touch of a vanished hand and the sound of a voice that is still.” Is that correct? Can good, sound thinking transcend tragedy? No, it cannot. Taking things philosophically can only be a remedy for those men and women who have steeped themselves in trivialities and superficiality. Does the survival of planet earth, for instance, which you bring about by recycling, really help you face your own death and the death of your loved ones? The complete capitulation of organized Christian Jewry to Platonic universalism has left the European Everyman without his ancient faith in the God-Man who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. We are a people without the star of Bethlehem as our guide because Plato has replaced Christ. My heart soared when I first read Hughes’ *Tom Brown at Oxford*, because in that work he defended the God-Man, Jesus Christ, against the heathen philosopher who cast a pall over Christian Europe.

The result of Hardy’s management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the “Apology” had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, “You needn’t have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson.”

“I don’t understand,” said Tom.

“Well, there’s something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn’t there?”

“Yes, a great deal,” Tom answered, after a pause; “but it isn’t the same thing.”

“Why not the same thing?”

“Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning.”

“Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not.”

“How do you mean?” said Tom.

“Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can’t name it—know no more of it than he knew about his demon, of course, we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens.”

The contrast between Socrates’ philosophical serenity, as defined by Plato, in which he faces death without any need for a personal Savior, is in direct contrast to St. Paul’s Christian faith:

Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

It is a tragedy that our churchmen have blended Plato and Christ and our politicians have rejected Longfellow’s Christian affirmation that “life is real, life is earnest,” for platonic utopianism.

This past election has shown us the end result of allowing Christ’s crucifixion and resurrection to become a philosophical premise, a rational proposition rather than a blood faith. After telling us for over two centuries that democracy is the non-violent way to enact change – that we don’t need bullets when we have ballots – we are now told that the ballots of the non-illuminated whites do not count, only the ballots of the illuminated whites and the colored barbarians, including those who are not even citizens of this country, count. The platonic-minded conservative pundits tell us to accept the fact that we now live in a subsidiary of communist China. We are to take the election results philosophically. After all, we can always hope for a Republican victory in four more years. And can’t we take hope in the fact that the Republicans picked up some House seats? No, we can’t take hope in such tripe. It is not Republican shadows of the liberals that we need. We need a leader with Christian humanity. There are none in the ranks of the Republicans. Trump was an exception. It seems that it was too much to hope for, that Trump could be the beginning of a counter-revolution. He was hated by the mad-dog liberals in high tech, in the media, in the Republican Party, and in the conservative and liberal realms of Academia. He was one healthy human cell in a body filled with cancerous cells.

Arrayed against the haters, the liberal cancer cells, were the non-illuminated whites. They, like Trump, have a partial faith in Christian things and a partial faith in liberal things. That half-faith is why they lost the election.<sup>(1)</sup> The mad-dog liberals openly stole the election and then challenged the ‘conservatives’ to challenge the election in court – “See how far you get.” We must not take our cue from conservative pundits. They have a vested interest in all the lies of demon-crazy. They will tell us to write letters – we tell them we did that – they will tell us to vote – we tell them we did that – they will tell us to protest – we tell them we did that. What next? The conservative pundits have no answer. But we know the answer. A Trump supporter at a Trump rally told me she did not hate anyone. Is it possible, if we have a blood faith in Jesus Christ, not to hate the devil and all his works? And are not the liberals the greatest and proudest work of the devil? I don’t understand this new blended Christianity. The Book of Revelation tells us not to blend Christ, but the new Christianity that seems to be triumphant in ‘Christian’ circles tells us that a blended Christ is the truth and the way. But the blended Christians won’t fight. Do you think for one moment that the various judges in the battleground states would refuse to hear election fraud cases if the so-called conservatives made the same threats of violence the leftists routinely made? Do you think the cowardly weasel Bill Barr would declare there was no election fraud if he feared the Right as he fears the Left? Of course not.

War is a terrible thing because “war means fighting and fighting means killing,” but there is one thing worse than war. And that one thing worse is surrender to a bloody, satanic, tyrannical oligarchy that feasts on the blood of the innocents in the womb and the blood of non-illuminated whites. The Republicans and the conservative pundits will try to place themselves in the ranks of the Illuminati in the hopes that they will avoid the purge. Most of them will not be able to escape it despite their cowardice; they too will be purged. And the people they betrayed, the non-illuminated whites who have been told they mustn’t hate, that they must love the democratic way, will be the first, second, and third victims of the purge. I refuse to take the great liberal purge philosophically, because I am a Goth who loves and hates with my whole heart. I love old Europe and her people, and I hate the liberals with my whole heart and soul. Is such a love and such a hate wrong? Yes, the modern Christians tell me. But do I trust in what the platonic Christians tell me? No, I do not. I must go with my blood faith which tells me to love and hate with my whole heart.

It is very unwise – it is not prudent – to wear your heart upon your sleeve when you write. Nevertheless I have been and will continue to be unwise and imprudent. My heart goes out to Trump because of what he has striven so mightily against, the most satanic army ever assembled in the history of mankind. And my heart goes out to the white grazers, who are going to be slaughtered by Satan’s minions because their half-liberal, half-Christian faith will not allow them to hate where they should hate. This is a very basic ‘neighborhood bully’ situation, only more deadly. We have been told by the liberals that either they will have our total surrender to their wills or they will have our blood. They have pushed us to the wall. We

must either surrender to their will or fight to the death. The liberal conservatives' compromise – that we can vote against the devil and his minions – has been held up to the light and been revealed as a sham. We cannot vote the devil and his minions away because they determine the rules of the voting: "You may vote so long as you vote correctly. If you don't vote correctly, we will vote for you and then exterminate you." That is what happened in the last election. If you are a mad-dog liberal or a neo-pagan who has left all human feelings and passions behind you, then the fraudulent election need not concern you, but if you retain some remnant spark of what is human inside you, then you must see what the election means. It means that they, Satan's minions, are coming for thee and me. It is fight, in the full meaning of the word, or surrender philosophically and serenely to the liberals' will. And what do they will? They want us to drink the hemlock.

The neo-pagans are bragging that their 1/16th of 1% destroyed Trump and his 'sickening' Trumpy bear followers, who deservedly lost because they lacked Nietzschean fortitude. The mad-dog liberals are claiming that Biden won a resounding victory because the vast amount of Americans embrace Black Lives Matter, Antifa, and the communist Chinese. And the good old shadows of the liberals, the conservatives, tell us that we are better off without Trump. He was too uncivil and divisive. I hold to a different view. If not even one shred of Christian humanity – and Trump was that one Christian shred of humanity – is to be allowed in our democracy, then why should we support demon-crazy? Isn't it abundantly clear our democracy is demon-crazy? Do I think that the white grazer is up to the challenge – can he love and hate enough to fight? No, I do not think he will fight. I think that he will take the election fraud philosophically and serenely while awaiting his and his people's extermination.

That is what I see with the eyes of reason. But what do I see with the eyes of faith? I see a cruel utopian mind who banned the poets, the men with hearts of flesh, from his utopian state. And I see the liberals, mad-dog and conservative, continuing Plato's utopian persecution of men and women with hearts of flesh. But then I see our Lord enjoining His people to break the chains of philosophy and come to Him. He will prevail, because there always has been and always shall be faithful hearts that will not surrender to Satan and his minions.

I wanted, and still pray for, an electoral victory. But we as a people and as individuals are only "of all men most miserable" if we place our hopes in democracy alone. St. Paul enjoins us to be, "steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord." Yes, we shall be steadfast, we shall support His reign of charity against all the forces of hell arrayed against us. We shall not fade philosophically and serenely into Satan's eternal night. +

---

(1) An antidote for philosophical universalism in the Christian churches, which turns individual men and women into statistical aggregates, is a blood faith in Jesus Christ, grounded in the non-rational, anti-philosophical love of our kith and kin. So long as cosmic universalism reigns supreme in our churches, so long as pietas is 'racism,' white people will be either mad-dog liberals who attack non-illuminated whites under the banner of 'Black Lives Matter' or they will be half-way house Christians who defend the good while fervently denying they are 'racist.' That is a losing hand for the halfway-house Christians, because what the liberals call 'racism' is pietas – the love of our kith and kin in and through Jesus Christ – which makes us integral Christians and gives us the passion and the discernment to love where we should love and hate where we should hate.

---

## **Shall Satan Rule Unchallenged? - November 28, 2020**

There is a courageous wisdom: there is also a false reptile prudence, the result not of caution but of fear. Under misfortunes it often happens that the nerves of the understanding are so relaxed, the pressing peril of the hour so completely confounds all the faculties, that no future danger can be properly provided for, can be justly estimated, can be so much as fully seen. The eye of the mind is dazzled and vanquished. An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will. This short plan of policy is the only counsel which will obtain a hearing. We plunge into a dark gulph with all the rash precipitation of fear. The nature of courage is, without a question, to be conversant with danger; but in the palpable night of their terrors, men under consternation suppose, not that it is the danger, which, by a sure instinct, calls out the courage to resist it, but that it is the courage which produces the danger. They therefore seek for a refuge from their fears in the fears themselves, and consider a temporizing meanness as the only source of safety. –Edmund Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

---

A great liberal icon, one Joseph Stalin, has placed this election in its proper context: "It's not the people who vote that count. It's the people who count the votes." The mad-dog liberals grasped that essential fact, while the conservative-liberals did not, and that made the difference in the election. For all the Christian reasons I have previously stated I wanted Trump to win another four years. But I have always been conscious of the fact that my views on demon-crazy and elections is at variance with the views of the mad-dog liberals, the conservative-liberals, and the white electorate in America and Europe. I view democracy as a heresy that a Christian must struggle to live with as the Jewish people struggled to live with their pagan rulers during their Babylonian captivity. You must resist while trying to survive as a

people who do not have the power to supplant your heathen rulers. Because of my views on demon-crazy I have always voted for the candidate who I thought had a remnant of Christian humanity in his soul; I never voted for a man who I thought would restore all things in Christ because I knew such a consummation could never take place within the framework of demon-crazy.

I did not vote in the first Presidential election that I was eligible to vote in, the election of 1972 in which Nixon defeated McGovern. I did not vote in that election because I was only concerned with my own personal spiritual struggle at that time. I was struggling with the Dostoyevskian question: “Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?” Was I going to follow Ivan Karamazov or Alyosha Karamazov? I decided that I was going to follow Alyosha: “Lord, I believe, help my unbelief.” In 1976, in keeping with my Christian rejection of “Give us Barabbas” democracy, I looked for some Christian humanity in the Presidential candidates. I voted for Reagan in the primaries and then did not vote in the general election, because I did not see any Christian humanity in either Ford or Carter. In 1980 and 1984 I voted for Reagan. He proved to have less Christian humanity than I had hoped for, but I still do not regret voting for him. I never voted for a Republican candidate or a Democratic candidate again until the Romney-Obama campaign. I voted for Romney because I thought His Mormonism would give him some Christian instincts — after all, the Mormons as a religious group were purported to be the most conservative of the religious bodies. I was wrong about Romney; he turned out to be a mad-dog liberal just as the ‘born again’ George Bush the II was a mad-dog liberal.

Then there was Trump. I saw what I thought was some Christian humanity in the man. And this time I was right. That man exceeded my hopes. I have been roundly criticized for equating Trump with Alfred and Forrest, but I stand by that comparison. We must judge Trump by the forces arrayed against him. Alfred is rightly called the Great, but he did not face, in the pagan Danes, an enemy as irredeemably evil and treacherous as the post-Christian liberals. And he was allowed to actually fight his enemy as such an enemy should be fought, with the sword. In addition, Alfred had followers willing to fight his enemies with the sword. So did Forrest: he had men willing to march into hell for him and fight the black barbarians and carpet baggers. What he did was heroic, but he had the backing of real men and an entire people. Trump’s situation has been much more difficult than either Alfred’s or Forrest’s. He does not have an army of men willing to fight for him. Quite the opposite is the case — he has an army of liberals fighting against him. And this modern army is much more malevolent, much more satanic than any army has been in the past.

Each and every member of the modern liberal army has crossed a moral Rubicon. They have placed themselves beyond the boundary which separates the human from the satanic, and they have made it their unalterable intention to build Satandom over the graves of white humanity. Whatever is human is still tangentially, and in some cases directly, connected to Christ. So everything that is human must die in the liberals’ world. The reason the mad-dog liberals and their cousins, the neo-pagans, hate Trump is because Trump represented the injection of something humane and Christian into a body politic that was devoid of everything humane and Christian. And the reason the intellectual Christians and the conservatives are indifferent and often hostile to Trump is because they do not think that Christianity and/or conservatism needs to be rooted in what is real and what is earnest. Life is all theory to them. They, like Belloc before them, condemn actual Christians struggling with might and main against the liberal Jacobins, in order to support theoretical Christians of the future. Trump is a millennialist Christian, nor does he understand the sinister nature of the ‘civil rights’ movement, but why can’t any of the conservative intellectuals or the professed Christians see the evil that he fought against and the good for which he fought?

To those who think ‘any old Republican candidate will do,’ I would pose the question: Why has the liberals’ hatred for Trump been ten thousand times greater than their hatred for any other Republican candidate? Off this stage I have given you the answer. Trump wanted to regress, he wanted to inject some elements of Christian humanity into a governing body that had ‘progressed’ beyond Christian humanity. We must see that John Donne is right: “No man is an island.” If you claim to be human you have a stake in what has happened in this country during the past four years. Satan has shown his face, more completely than he has ever shown it before in human history. His minions throughout the world are watching what has happened here. It now appears that they, the liberals, no longer need to fear any resistance to their rule. They can do whatever they please, they can kill every last vestige of white, Christian humanity, and no one will say them nay. That was the message of the last four years in our exceptionalist nation. We have shown the world what hell is, it is embodied in the naked satanic hatred of the American liberals for any injection of Christian humanity into their satanic realm of inhumanity.

The liberals take up Caiaphas’ hatred of Christ, which was imparted to them by Satan, and seek to spread that hatred throughout the European world. In order to do that they had to become like unto the Scribes and Pharisees, they had to become experts on the subject of God, they had to become metaphysicians:

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thorough-bred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls the “compunctious visitings

of Nature” will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. –Burke, *Letter to a Noble Lord*

Have we not seen that moral nightmare that Burke described unfold before our eyes in the liberals’ hatred for every single effort of Trump to inject some Christian humanity into our satanic nation? The complete satanic, pharisaical essence of the liberals was never so manifest to me as it was during Trump’s news conference when he had five or six victims of the Covid-19 virus sitting a table with him. He talked with them about their illness and their recovery through the use of the hydroxychloroquine drug. After talking with them, he opened the discussion up to the Fifth Column, our press. Were they interested in a cure for Covid-19? Were they interested in the alleviation of human suffering? No, they were not. Like the scribes and the Pharisees before them, their hearts were closed to Christian charity. Any Christian act in Satandom — and Trump’s outreach at that press conference was Christian — will be repulsed as Christ was repulsed by the scribes and Pharisees.

And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority? And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him? But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet. And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things. –Matthew 21: 23-27

The liberals’ hearts are closed to all things humane and Christian. Never before, not since Europe was Christianized, has Satan’s presence been more openly paraded as virtue. And the shadows of the liberals, the conservatives, have rushed to become like unto the scribes and Pharisees of Liberalism. Is that what Christ enjoined us to be — scribes and Pharisees?

There are indeed more things in heaven and earth than are found in the philosophy of the scribes and Pharisees, but we no longer believe in that world beyond the metaphysics of the illuminated men of intellect. If we seek out that which is ‘foolish’ in old Europe and what is ‘foolish’ in the modern world, we will discover that charity, which is the foolishness of God, is still and always shall be our only infallible guide and hope in this world and the next.

In the wake of Trump’s electoral victory, which was turned into a defeat by the disciples of Uncle Joe Stalin, I have taken to stopping and talking with anyone who is still flying ‘Trump for President’ banners. The other day I stopped in front of a farm and talked with an elderly man (he was 87), who still had a Trump banner emblazoned across his barn. He had me pegged as twenty years younger than I actually am, so he called me a ‘young fellow.’ I listened to him reminisce for about 30 minutes, at the end of which he invited me to come to his house for Thanksgiving dinner. I thanked him but said I already had plans for Thanksgiving. He seemed glad to hear it. I think he thought that anyone who stopped to talk to an 87 year old farmer must be very, very lonely. And he was right. I am lonely, and I am hungry for some human contact. I have been blessed, and I am grateful for my immediate family, none of whom are liberals, but I like to think that there are some non-liberals out there, who are not my kin but are of my kith, that still shun the wisdom of the scribes and Pharisees in order to adhere to the foolishness of the Christian hearth fire virtues of old Europe. That ‘deplorable’ old man cared about what had happened to his native land; he knew that we had faced a democratic Armageddon in which the forces of evil had seemingly triumphed. Why should he, on the verge of the grave, care about what happens in this vale of tears? He cares because he has grandchildren and children that still need to see some reflection of God’s grace embodied in a people. And he cares because that is the nature of all those of our own kind, who still remain European; we need to see, we want to see, Christian humanity in our people. If all things satanic are embodied in our culture, how many of our own kind will come to know Jesus Christ?

In 1892 Rev. I. B. Praneitis published a small treatise, called *The Talmud Unmasked*, in which he documented the hatred of the Jews for all things Christian. He was subsequently executed by the Bolsheviks during the Russian revolution. I don’t want to go into a long tirade about the Jews, but I do want to point out that the Jews’ traditional hatred of European civilization is grounded in their hatred of Jesus Christ. As Walter Scott points out in his *Religious Discourses*, the Jewish hierarchy rejected Christ because He detected their hypocrisy and their rejection of the prophets to whom they were supposed to be committed:

The cause of the Pharisees’ unbelief, and their strenuous opposition to the Gospel tenets, had root undoubtedly in our blessed Saviour’s detection of their hypocrisy, and his publicly exposing the foul principles and practices which they covered with the most formal affectation of strict holiness. They could not bear the light, which, not content with playing on the outside of their whited sepulchres, penetrated into their foul charnels, and showed to the public gaze the dust and rottenness which their shewy exterior concealed. They



could not endure the friendly zeal of the Divine Physician, when he rent from their wounds the balsams with which they soothed, and the rich tissues under which they concealed them, and exhibited festering and filthy cancers which could be cured only by the probe, the knife, and the cautery. Hence they were, from the beginning of our Saviour's ministry until its dreadful consummation, (in which, they had a particular share,) the constant enemies of the doctrine and of the person of the blessed Jesus. Under his keen and searching eye, the pretensions which they had so long made in order to be esteemed of men, were exposed without disguise; their enlarged garments and extended phylacteries, their lengthened prayers, their formal ceremonial, and tithes of mint and anise, were denounced as of no avail without the weightier matters of the law —justice, mercy, and faith. Feeling thus their own sanctimonious professions held up to contempt, and their pretensions to public veneration at once exposed and destroyed, the Pharisees became the active and violent opposers of those doctrines to which the Sadducees, with sullen apathy, seemed to have refused a hearing. It was the Pharisees who maligned the life of our blessed Lord; who essayed to perplex the wisdom of Omnipotence by vain and captious interrogatories; and who, unable to deny those miracles by which the mission of Christ was authenticated and proved, blasphemously imputed them to the agency of daemons. —Walter Scott, *Religious Discourses*

Throughout the history of Europe when our people were truly Christian there were prayers said in the Protestant churches and in the Roman Catholic churches for the conversion of the Jews. That is right and proper. We should pray for the conversion of our enemies. But should we pray for the success and triumph of our enemies? The Jewish hatred for Christ and His people has been spread throughout what was once called Christendom by the Judaizing of the European people. Liberalism is the extension of Shylockian Judaism. All white Christians stand before the liberals' Sanhedrin, and they stand condemned. Will there be any Christians in all of Liberaldom who will try to stop the liberals from exacting their pound of flesh from off the hearts of every single white European Christian?

I frequently hear Trump supporters and Trump himself asking why the liberals hate them and him. The liberals hate white Trump supporters and Trump because they and he retain a remnant of Christian humanity. But they are wrong to attempt to fuse that Christian humanity with Judaism; they will never be able to triumph over their enemies if they try to fuse two polar opposites. You cannot blend Christ's reign of charity with Shylock's hatred of Christ's reign of charity.

There is nothing racist, sexist, or anti-Semitic about Christ's reign of charity. To hate the devil and love Christ is what we were born to do. All the modern democratic panaceas are based on either a blending of Satan and Christ, or on a complete rejection of Christ. We can't proceed any further with the blending or the rejection. The long road back to Christian Europe, which leads to the narrow gate, is the only path to our salvation as a people and our salvation as individuals. +

---

### Unmitigated Evil - November 21, 2020

A credulous father and a brother noble,  
Whose nature is so far from doing harms  
That he suspects none; on whose foolish honesty  
My practices ride easy. I see the business.  
Let me, if not by birth, have lands by wit:  
All with me's meet that I can fashion fit.  
—*King Lear*

---

Draw thy sword.  
That, if my speech offend a noble heart,  
Thy arm may do thee justice; here is mine.  
Behold, it is the privilege of mine honours,  
My oath, and my profession. I protest,  
Maugre thy strength, place, youth, and eminence,  
Despite thy victor-sword and fire-new fortune,  
Thy valour, and thy heart, thou art a traitor;  
False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father;  
Conspirant 'gainst this high illustrious prince;  
And, from th' extremest upward of thy head  
To the descent and dust below thy foot,  
A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou 'No,'  
This sword, this arm, and my best spirits are bent  
To prove upon thy heart, whereto I speak,  
Thou liest.  
[The formerly unsuspecting Edgar's response to evil.]  
—*King Lear*

---

I went to a Trump rally this past weekend. I went to the Trump rally even though I don't believe in the effectiveness of rallies. Why did I go? I went to the rally for three reasons. First, I was concerned for the safety of the people at the rally,

and I wanted to be of some assistance if they were attacked by Antifaers or Black Lives Matter barbarians. Secondly, I just wanted to compliment the Trump supporters for their loyalty. In my view such loyalty to a man who has fought for them shows that they have something inside of them that is rare in this day and age. And thirdly I wanted to see if there was a counter-revolutionary sentiment stirring in the hearts of the Trump supporters.

As to the first point: It was a small town protest, not of the magnitude of the Washington DC protest, so other than a few black barbarians and white college punks who screamed obscenities from a distance, there was no Antifa or BLM attacks.<sup>(1)</sup> But the Trump people at the rally did need protection because they were amazingly, stunningly naive about the possibility of violence. One very pretty woman in her mid-forties was standing on the corner, waving a big Trump banner as the cars went by. I told her to duck if she saw a rifle barrel sticking out of any of the passing cars. She said, “Why would anyone want to hurt me. I’m just expressing my opinion. I don’t hate anyone.” What can you say to such people? I thought of Shakespeare’s King Lear and the scene in which Edmund, the evil brother, says that his good brother, “is so far from doing harms that he suspects none.”

A cousin of mine, a Trump supporter who knows I don’t generally go to political events, accused me of going there to mock the Trump supporters. Far from it; my cousin doesn’t know me very well. I wanted to try and help the Trump supporters avoid Edgar’s fate; I wanted them to understand that they have an implacable enemy that wants their blood. Edgar ultimately has to confront his evil brother Edmund and kill him. That is what we must do vis-à-vis the liberals, but there currently does not seem to be any awareness, on the part of the white grazers, that they are facing, in their liberal opponents, pure, unmitigated evil. Edmund repents as he lays dying; our liberal foes are worse than Edmund. There is always a possibility of a death bed conversion, but we must see that liberalism is a very strong repellent of God’s grace. Most liberals will cling to their hatred of Christ and His people throughout their lives, and after their deaths they will take that hatred into hell with them. If we don’t realize that the liberals have recreated themselves in the image of Satan and are determined to eliminate Christ’s image in man from the face of the earth, we will not be able to fight and win the war that we must fight and win. Did I make any headway with the Trumpian Edgars? Of course not. When you talk about demonized swine, which is what the liberals are, you place yourself back in the bad old days, before people became too enlightened to believe in such fairy tales.

My second purpose, to compliment the Trump supporters on their loyalty, met with more success than my first intended purpose. They are the condemned and demonized deplorables, and they were quite responsive to someone who told them that they were noble and honorable. There was an older man who had come from an eastern European country when it was under communism, and now had the misfortune to live in a nation that was going down the same communist path. “Trump is the only leader who opposes them,” he said, “And we will be completely under their control if Trump loses.” Then there was the wheelchair-bound man who wept when the woman in charge of the Trumpy bear stand gave him a free Trumpy bear.

Everyone at the rally was white, but they would have embraced any black or Mexican who came to join them, and they would have run a mile from me if I had brought up white pietas. But still those people had, though they didn’t know it, white pietas. They know that they are hated by the liberal elite, and they know that Trump placed himself between them and the liberal elite and took the blows that were directed at them, and they love him for it. It’s difficult during this liberal-created COVID crisis to have direct interaction with people, but I hope I managed to convey my thanks to those white grazers with whom I spoke. They have that within which our Lord can build upon:

And let us not be hard on him, if at that moment his soul is fuller of the tomb and him who lies there, than of the altar and Him of whom it speaks. Such stages have to be gone through, I believe, by all young and brave souls, who must win their way through hero-worship, to the worship of Him who is the King and Lord of heroes. For it is only through our mysterious human relationships, through the love and tenderness and purity of mothers, and sisters, and wives, through the strength and courage and wisdom of fathers, and brothers, and teachers, that we can come to the knowledge of Him, in whom alone the love, and the tenderness, and the purity, and the strength, and the courage, and the wisdom of all these dwell forever and ever in perfect fullness.

—Thomas Hughes, *Tom Brown’s Schooldays*

God bless those mysterious human relationships! They constitute the “lovely intangibles” that the pre-conversion Doris in *Miracle on 34th Street* dismisses and the “foolish,” Quixotic lawyer declares to be “the only things that really are worthwhile.”

As I left the rally, I went by a beautiful old mansion situated in the affluent section of the town. The inhuman creatures who inhabit the house had a Biden-Harris sign with the words, “Love, not Hate” under it. How do creatures who spit on everything humane and noble and openly support the worship of Satan dare to proclaim that they favor love over hate? They dare to make such proclamations because they are inhuman creatures who have become, through intellectual pride, one with Satan, who regards everything that stinks of Christ’s love for mankind as evil, and everything that exalts Satan’s hatred of mankind as good. I still hope and pray that the liberals’ complete triumph over those white grazers at the Trump

rally will be delayed another four years — that will be a miracle of God's grace if it occurs. The two million Trump votes that were given to Biden can only be returned to Trump by an act of God. (2) We can still pray; they can't take that from us.

Now, sadly, I must come to my third reason for going to the Trump rally: I wanted to see if there was any counterrevolutionary sentiment among the Trump supporters. There was none. Possibly in the MAGA rally in Washington DC I would have found someone who was willing to think counterrevolution instead of 'wait till next time,' but I doubt it. The white Trump supporters, like Trump himself, are supporters of a fusion of Christianity and liberalism. They have more of a Christian ethos than the mad-dog liberals, but they still believe in demon-crazy and reject the older Christian cultures of the European nations. Half-liberal and half-Christian will not prevail against the internal demonism of the liberals. Four more years of Trump will give us a President who opposes communism, who opposes the anti-white instruction in our military and civil service agencies, and who opposes the wholesale slaughter of the unborn. But you can't have just a little bit of liberalism. Liberalism is the giant Blob in the old sci-fi movie — it will consume everything unless it is completely eradicated. Four more years of Trump would be a very great blessing, because some white lives in the womb and outside the womb will be saved during a Trump administration, but ultimately there must be a white counterrevolution. The liberals represent unmitigated evil; they cannot be dealt with within the demon-crazy parameters of the devil.

Because "life is earnest, life is real," and because there is something incredibly noble in Trump's fight against the mad-dog liberals, I have bent over backwards to avoid Ann Coulterism, which is grounded in a complete misunderstanding of what can actually be done by a leader who has been elected President rather than a king who has been anointed or a dictator who has taken power by means of a coup. I would prefer a king or a dictator, but that is not what we have, so I can't hold the President accountable for not immediately making the changes in the nation that a king or a dictator could make. All that having been said, even a very good President, and Trump is the best President we have ever had, cannot deal effectively with liberalism within the confines of American demon-crazy, because the American experiment in demon-crazy is grounded in the Jacobin concepts of liberty, equality, and fraternity. Those concepts are diametrically opposed to white pietas which is the foundation of a Christian culture. Some years back I wrote about getting lost in the Lake District of England when I was a young man in my early twenties. A retired English couple saw that I was lost and invited me to stay the night in their cottage. At first I refused the invitation, but the man insisted I stay: "You Yanks and us are all of the same blood."

Yes, we are, we Europeans, all of the same blood. And if we are true to our blood, we will be true to our faith in Jesus Christ, because faith is of the blood and heart. Just as Christ became flesh and dwelt among us, so did He become one with the European people when they took Him into their hearts. The lifeblood of their culture was their faith in Jesus Christ. When an idea of God replaces the blood faith of a people — and that is the case in organized Christian Jewry — Satan enters in and makes his will the new faith. We structure our governments according to our faith. The Jacobin governments of the United States, France, and the other European nations are based on the anti-revelatory faith of the intellectual Christians. They place their reason above revelation and end up supporting Satan over Christ. It's no coincidence that the most organized and anti-revelatory branch of organized Christian Jewry produced the highest percentage of Biden voters. How can that happen? How can professed Christians vote for legalized abortion and communism? It's easy if you believe that man's reason transcends faith, and a universal, generic love for mankind transcends pietas. Then you will support all things antithetical to old Europe because the people of old Europe were 'stupid,' they believed, quite literally, in the Christ depicted in the Gospels, and they were racist, because they believed that they could only know Christ through those mysterious blood ties that we form with our kith and kin.

What is good in organized Christian Jewry is the individual who forms, against the mandate of the Church authorities, a personal attachment to Jesus Christ. And what is good in our democracy is an individual who, in defiance of the pundits, conservatives and liberal, forms a personal attachment to a leader who exhibits pietas: "I will fight for my people." The individual who rejects rational Christianity for a blood faith in Jesus Christ and the Trump supporter who loves Trump because Trump fights for his people, have that within which George Fitzhugh describes as our only hope in this vale of tears:

We employ the term Benevolence to express our outward affections, sympathies, tastes, and feelings, but it is inadequate to express our meaning; it is not the opposite of selfishness, and unselfishness would be too negative for our purpose. Philosophy has been so busy with the worst feature of human nature that it has not even found a name for this, its better feature. We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man's whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.

*—Cannibals All! or Slaves Without Masters*

What we witnessed during the French Revolution was the devil's attempt to completely destroy God's image in man. He defaced that image, but he didn't completely destroy it. Our Civil War, which was anything but civil, was also an attempt, by the devil, to destroy God's image in man. Again, he was partially successful, but he didn't completely destroy God's image in man. We are still fighting that Civil War, and this time the devil is determined to complete his revolution. The similarities between then (1860) and now (2020) are striking. A coalition of Jacobin liberals and colored barbarians joined together in the 1860s to destroy the image-of-God-in-man culture of the South:

"Oh, Mother, I can't stand it! Oh, Mother. Oh Mother!"

"My dear little girl," she said, surprised at her voice and the ordinary words, for she felt as if she would faint, "you must be calm and brave. You must control yourself. We may have a great deal to do today and we must seek strength and help from God. Kneel down and ask God to give us strength."

Lucy, who had started with every fresh report of the cannon, grew quiet as she knelt by the armchair and buried her face in her arms. She was on her knees quiet thus for some minutes and from that time on was calm and helpful.

Before Agnes had finished dressing, William Veal knocked on the door; the whole place was full of Yankees, he said.

"Where?" she called, taking the garments Lucy held out to her and hurrying to dress herself.

"The house is surrounded by Yankees," William said. "Nigger Yankees."

By the time she got to the front gallery, cavalry in their dusty blue uniforms were riding through the gate. She ran down the stairs and to the kitchens. There was not a servant male or female in the whole court or in the cellars or servants' rooms. A skirmish was going on in the woods beyond the gate. Servants were running to the scene of the fight, risking bullets through their brains. Then after a few minutes the firing in the wood ceased; the cook and housemaids returned. Agnes ordered breakfast immediately. She went to Belle's room, ordered a tray brought to her, went through the dining-room and upstairs. Edna, the maid, brought tea and buttered bread on a small silver platter to her room. And after taking it, for she was weak from the long night, Agnes went again below stairs.

Over the grounds there was a great confusion. They were cooking in the back court for Colonel Gobel's Confederates, with Paralee standing over the fire. But in the dining-room no breakfast had been brought. A little mulatto girl, Bessie, ran to Agnes from Belle's room.

"Oh, Missis," she said, pulling at her collar, "them Yankee niggers is in Miss Belle's room and they ain' nobody wid her 'tall."

Agnes darted along the back gallery into the room, seeing on her way that the whole grounds were full of negroes. They were at the smokehouse and over the kitchen court, on foot and on horseback. She could hear them tramping in the parlors and the rattle of their sabres and spurs. She rushed in to her daughter. There they were. Lucy was in the bedroom and the negroes were tramping through the sitting-room, threatening, cursing.

"Get out," Agnes ordered. "Get out of my house. Get out of my sight!"

A big black who seemed to be in command gave a guffaw, and the other negroes, watching him evidently, followed. One of them came up to her and with his open hand boxed her on the cheek. At once another negro put a pistol against her breast; she could smell his sweat. Then the big negro who had struck her said, "Don't shoot her, Mose, slap her. Slap the old slut." He broke into a stream of abuse.

—Stark Young, *So Red the Rose*

That terrible destruction of the Southern civilization was grounded on the malignant hatred of Satan for Christ. The terrible swift sword was Satan's sword, and the sacred negro was the spiritual justification for the use of that terrible swift sword. As it was then, so it is now. But there is, tragically, one crucial difference between then and now. There were, in the 1860s, men with white pietas, men with a blood faith, who resisted the onslaught of the devil. The image-of-man-in-God culture was saved for a time. In 2020 we need a counterrevolution, but we no longer have men with the spiritual substance to start and sustain a counterrevolution. Church and Academy have destroyed white pietas. Trump and his followers are divided against themselves. They have a longing for a hearth fire faith, a faith that is rooted in their love of kith and kin, but they cannot act on that longing because all the modern authorities tell them that the true faith is not of the blood, it is of the mind, and that new faith proclaims that white pietas is evil and universal enfranchisement with the sacred negro as the more-than-equal god of that universal enfranchisement, is what we all must strive for.

It is useless to talk of counterrevolutions without pietas. When whites recover their pietas, or should I say if they recover their pietas, then and only then will they mount a counterrevolution against Satan and his minions. Until that time the best we can hope for is an electoral victory for Trump which will give us a slight respite in this war that only one side, the wrong side, is fighting. Should Trump win the election, it will be a victory wrought by prayer, because only a miracle can take those stolen votes away from Satan's minions and give them back to Trump. And if we lose? Then we must pray that our Lord gives us the strength to endure. In the end this conflict will not be settled by elections. The liberals represent the

militant forces of unmitigated evil. We can't come to terms with them because they will give us no terms except unconditional surrender to their will, which is Satan's will. We cannot surrender to such an enemy. Surely Christ will sustain us in the day of battle. +

---

(1) The females of the species are always the most vitriolic and obscene. They make me think of Tennyson's observation: "For men at most differ as Heaven and earth, But women, worst and best, as Heaven and Hell." A society that produces such creatures, women who have embraced hell, is truly a society at the end of the line.

(2) It actually appears that more than 2 million votes were stolen from Trump. And why on earth were so many ballots in the democratic states sent to Merkel's Germany and socialist Spain to be counted? Is it still a conspiracy when it is so blatant? No, it is an outright assertion of the liberals' tyrannical power. They do not believe there is any legal recourse for the whites who voted for Trump. They believe they can commit fraud on a massive scale and get away with it. If they are right, if they get away with it, they will proceed with their final solution – which is the complete extermination of the white race. But let us pause there. If the liberals get their wish, that the white grazers shall not have any voice within the confines of Liberalism, then why should the white grazers continue to graze within those confines of Liberalism? The old maxim which says, "Be careful what you wish for, you might get it," applies to the liberals. You might at the peak of your arrogant pride, find out that the men you thought you had under your heel have rediscovered their manhood and decided that if their votes do not count in our demon-crazy, then the time has come for non-democratic action. Alfred and Forrest are our exemplars.

---

### **It Shall Not Be Business As Usual - November 14, 2020**

Trump entered hell when he became President. Did we expect him to convert Satan's minions and transform the hell on earth that the liberals have been building for centuries into heaven on earth? He battled mightily against the devil and his minions, and because he had the moral courage to do battle with them, they chained him to the Promethean rock and pecked away at his entrails. He has earned the respect and love of every man and woman who still has a heart that loves. Like Alfred, like Lee, like Forrest, he has given his life's blood for his people. I love and honor him for that.

If, as it appears, that the demon-crats have stolen the election by liberal chicanery and Trump has been removed from office, what is to be done? Should we despair and die? No, we should not, because that is what he, the archangel Satan, and his minions, the liberals, want. They hate all things noble and Christian, and they think they now have destroyed the last tiny remnants of Christian humanity. Is that true? They have certainly destroyed the last remnants of Christian humanity within the framework of democracy. But is our hope bound up with the fortunes of democracy? Remember it was the democratic process that produced, "Give us Barabbas." – CWN

---

Since the days of our fathers have we been in a great trespass unto this day; and for our iniquities have we, our kings, and our priests, been delivered into the hand of the kings of the lands, to the sword, to captivity, and to a spoil, and to confusion of face, as it is this day. And now for a little space grace hath been shewed from the LORD our God, to leave us a remnant to escape, and to give us a nail in his holy place, that our God may lighten our eyes, and give us a little reviving in our bondage. –Ezra 9: 7-8

---

AOC's call to make a list of all who supported Trump and hunt them down was an accurate summation of the Demoncrats' major policy concern: The white race must be eliminated. And why was it no surprise when the conservative pundits who told us it was the end of everything if Trump lost, immediately fell in line and became part of the loyal opposition? Why, if it was the end of everything, didn't they tell us to grab pitchforks, rifles, and shotguns and take to the streets rather than submit peacefully to the liberals who openly tell us they are coming for us? The reason is quite simple – The conservative pundits are liberals. They believe the most important thing in life is that the great American talk show – the show where clever Republican liberals try to out-wisecrack Democratic liberals in order to prove that they are the smart guys – shall continue on into eternity. Most of the conservative pundits, Limbaugh being the exception, seem happy that Biden has won since he gives them more chances to make sarcastic comments about his gaffes and his senility. But I don't find their jokes very funny, nor do the 'deplorables,' the white grazers who voted for Trump and have now been designated for slaughter. In 2016 Hillary's supporters laid down in the street and foamed at the mouth because Trump threatened to limit their abortion rights, and he was opposed to the extermination of the white race. Trump's supporters are not lying down in the street or foaming at the mouth, but they are very depressed and some are suicidal. But isn't turn-about fair play? Isn't that part of the democratic process? It is part of the demon-cratic process, a process which tells us that the agony of white grazers is a good thing while the slightest tummy upset of a liberal is a bad thing. When Trump won, the liberals wept because they wanted to kill babies and kill whites. They thought Trump would stifle them, so they opposed him in everything, and eventually brought him down by making common cause with the Chinese communists. The white grazers, whom the liberals want to eliminate, are depressed because more babies will be killed and they will be killed as well. Whom should we be concerned about?

Every Trump supporter was not on the side of the angels — they were a mixed group — but every Biden-Harris voter was and is on the side of Satan. That is why the demon-crats 'won' the election and why they have won the cultural war. They

have faith; they worship the devil through the sacred negro, while the white grazers are still groping for a faith they can call their own. They can't turn to the organized churches, because the churchmen have embraced liberalism. So where do they go? A romance is often, as John Buchan points out in his novel *Huntingtower*, quite crude and earthy in its beginnings:

Dickon groaned. What had become of his dream of idylls, his gentle bookish romance? Vanished before a reality which smacked horribly of crude melodrama and possibly of sordid crime. His gorge rose at the picture, but a thought troubled him. Perhaps all romance in its hour of happening was rough and ugly like this, and only shone rosy in the retrospect. Was he being false to his deepest faith?

But then a romance can grow, if there is genuine humanity in its inception, to something of great constancy, to something that is noble and good. The "simple fools" with their MAGA hats and Trump banners had something inside them which the conservative intellectuals lacked. They had a feeling for a leader who loved them and sought to protect them from the wickedness and snares of the demon-crats.

And that type of love is the stuff of romance. "We are such stuff as dreams are made on." The white grazers' dreams, when they voted for Trump, were not completely divorced from the hearth-fire faith of the antique Europeans. For that reason, and that reason alone, the demon-crats bared their fangs and attacked with satanic fury. The break with old Europe must be complete. There must be no European hearth fire in the liberals' utopian world. The Bush-Romney Republicans are not the objects of the liberals' hatred because they believe, like the liberals, in the destruction of the white race. Neither Trump nor the white grazers who supported him ever advocated anything resembling what the liberals' call 'white supremacy.' But merely being white makes you a white supremacist in the demonic ideology of the liberals. We can't escape this issue of white pietas. If we give up our racial hearth fire, if we march behind the banner of 'We are not racist,' we will continue to lose to the liberals.

When Trump won in 2016 without cheating, the liberals treated his election as an illegal usurpation. The election was supposed to be a mere formality, like the elections in the Soviet Union used to be. This time around the liberals made certain that there would be no repeat of 2016. The Biden-Harris ticket got fewer votes than Hillary the witch got, yet they won, because the liberals were quite willing to break every electoral rule in order to win, just as they were quite willing to commit murder, through the communist Chinese virus, and through the Antifa/Black Lives Matter barbarians, in order to eliminate their enemies, the white Trump supporters. And as is always the case with liberals, they didn't care if thousands of non-whites, the collateral damage, were killed as well. The liberals adhere to only one law – their will is sacred because their will is God's will. And who is their God? It is Satan, whom they worship in and through the sacred negro.

Solzhenitsyn asked himself the question, when he was imprisoned in the Gulag Archipelago, why didn't we resist when they came for us? Why didn't we get whatever weapons we could lay our hands on and fight as a united group? I think the answer to Solzhenitsyn's question can be found in Dostoevsky's book, *The House of the Dead*. In that book Dostoevsky writes about his experience in prison, during which he got a chance to observe first-hand men who were imprisoned for murder. And he noted that once they had transgressed that moral barrier of 'thou shalt not kill,' the second, third, and fourth murders became quite easy. The murderers had become a moral authority unto themselves, and that made them able to kill again and again. But such men are unusual; most men need some moral authority in order to justify the killing of their fellow men. A soldier finds his moral authority for killing in the State, and so do the bulk of the European people. And that is the tragedy of the European people. The mad-dog liberals believe that they are the State, whether they are elected to power or whether they are not elected; they believe themselves to be the State. And their religion of State is the worship of Satan through the sacred negro. Anything is lawful in the defense and advancement of that State. This places the white grazer in an impossible position. He believes that the modern democratic states are sacred and cannot be violently opposed, just as the Soviet citizens believed that the Soviet State could not and should not be violently opposed. The white grazer will defend his home from burglars, he will support state-sanctioned wars and his local police, but he will not fight against the State, because he has retained half of the Christianity of Alfred the Great, while the mad-dog liberals have embraced the entire dogmatic theology of the devil. Let us go back to Alfred.

Alfred started the reclamation of his kingdom with just a few acres of land in the hinterlands of Britain. That was his Christian kingdom. And then, because he was truly Alfred the Great, he reclaimed all of Britain from the Danes. And he so impressed the pagan Danes when he showed mercy to them after he defeated them, that they made a genuine conversion to the true faith. Now we come to the crucial point that is of such significance to modern Europeans. On his death bed Alfred enjoined his sons to 'keep the law.' Alfred was right of course, he was always in the right. It was imperative that his sons should adhere to the Christian laws that he had laid down for all Britons. But what if Alfred had lost to the Danes? What if he was forced to live in the hinterlands of pagan Britain? Would he have commanded his sons to 'keep the law'? Of course not. He would have commanded them to keep fighting until Christ was King over all of Britain.<sup>(1)</sup>

The liberals, the men and women who voted for Biden, are totally committed to Satan; that is why they were prepared to violently resist Trump's reelection if their mail-in ballot subterfuge failed. But the white grazers, the men and women who voted for Trump, are in limbo. They have a certain preference for Christian things, but they do not have an "Onward, Christian Soldiers" faith in the Christ of the Gospels, the Christ of old Europe. And when you only retain a partial faith, you will be annihilated by the demon-possessed liberal swine who have made Satan their god. The grazers have retained the Christian Europeans' respect for the law, but they are incapable of seeing that the law, once it is no longer Christian, is not the law that Alfred, the exemplar of Christian rulers, told his sons to adhere to. The exact opposite is the case. Our law is grounded in Satan's will. Alfred would have told us – he is telling us still – to oppose that law with our whole heart, mind, and soul.

With the exception of the House of the Dead type of murderers, the Ted Bundies, the white Europeans need State sanction when they kill. The exemplar for all liberals is Robespierre, who made man's reason into a god, and in the name of that god started his purge. That purge still continues in the European nations. In the name of reason, the sacred negro, and science, the non-illuminated whites must be eliminated. AOC and her ilk have told us outright, the liberals are coming for thee and me.

It would seem that the colored barbarians, particularly the black barbarians, do not need state sanction to kill. But when they kill whites, do they not kill with the state sanction of the liberals? And when they kill each other, isn't it in adherence to their ancient barbaric faith in bloody sacrifice? Civil rights for blacks, in a white Christian society, must of necessity involve a suppression of the blacks' barbaric faith in bloody sacrifice. They must be forced to adhere to Christian precepts of law and morality. In a post-Christian society, a society based on man's reason, the black barbarians are encouraged to practice their ancient faith. Of course the illuminated whites never anticipate that the blacks might not always distinguish between illuminated whites and non-illuminated whites; Atticus Finch is only admired by the white liberals.

We must fully understand why the liberals hated Trump. He was opposed, unlike his Republican predecessors, to their religion of bloody sacrifice. He did not want infants to be slaughtered on the liberals' altars (other Republican presidents merely gave lip service to the anti-abortion cause), and he wanted white people to be included in the American dream, and not exterminated. The liberals will always oppose such a politician, they will eliminate him by whatever means necessary. Where does that leave the white Europeans? It leaves us in the demon-cratic slaughterhouse. We can stay within the perimeters of demon-crazy and wait to be slaughtered, or we can oppose the liberals, as Forrest opposed them. But how can we fight without state sanction? How can we not fight? If we remain passive, haven't we chosen to support Satan over Christ? Is it noble to brag about your acceptance of the law if that law is the liberals' law, a law based on the slaughter of the innocents and the ritual murder of the white race?

If this election has not taught us that we cannot reason with the devil, then we are of all men most to be pitied, because we will remain in thralldom to the devil and his minions during our lives here on earth. And the next world? It is my hope and prayer that I and the white grazers will not give up our hope for another world, even while under the heel of Satan in this world. But it will be better for us, the white Europeans, if we fight for His reign of charity here on earth. That fight is what gave our European ancestors a sure and certain hope in His Kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven. If we don't fight, if we follow the conservative pundits and make peace with our liberal overlords, we will endanger our own souls and the souls of generations of Europeans still to be born. The Witch of the Green Kirtle just about convinces Jill Pole and Eustace Scrubb that there never was a Narnia or an Aslan until Puddleglum breaks the hellish spell and defies the Witch:

"No, I suppose that other world must be all dream."

"Yes. It is all a dream," said the Witch, always thrumming.

"Yes, all a dream," said Jill.

"There never was such a world," said the Witch.

"No," said Jill and Scrubb, "never was such a world."

"There never was any world but mine," said the Witch.

"There never was any world but yours," said they.

Puddleglum was still fighting hard. "I don't know rightly what you all mean by a world," he said, talking like a man who hasn't enough air. "But you can play that fiddle till your fingers drop off, and still you won't make me forget Narnia, and the whole Overworld too. We'll never see it again, I shouldn't wonder. You may have blotted it out and turned it dark like this, for all I know. Nothing more likely. But I know I was there once. I've seen the sky full of stars. I've seen the sun coming up out of the sea of a morning and sinking behind the mountains at night. And I've seen him up in the midday sky when I couldn't look at him for brightness."

Puddleglum's words had a very rousing effect. The other three all breathed again and looked on one another like people newly awaked.

"Why, there it is!" cried the Prince. "Of course! The blessing of Aslan upon this honest Marshwiggle. We have all been dreaming, these last few minutes. How could we have forgotten it? Of course we've all seen the sun."

—*The Silver Chair*

Our schools, our churches, and every major institution in our nation support the Underworld of the Witch of the Green Kirtle. They tell us that there never was an Overworld, a world in which men and women looked to a Suffering Servant who came to redeem mankind from sin and death. What are the liberals celebrating when they celebrate the death of one tiny instance of Christian humanity in their Underworld? They are celebrating the total victory of darkness over light. Right now our greatest enemies are the conservative pundits who tell us to get back to business as usual. It shall not be business as usual. In the name of God, we must reject the 'non-resistance to evil' policy of the conservative Quakers and act like European men who actually believe in Christ the King and oppose the devil and all his works – and the devil's proudest work is the liberal who hates Christ as the devil hates Christ.

Biden will reinstate the anti-white propaganda throughout our military, he will re-establish the United States' subservience to communist China, and he will put in motion the legal machinery to have Trump and his family prosecuted for crimes against the satanic state. When the State is satanic, to oppose Satan is treason. Then they, the demon-crats, and the conservative shadows of the demon-crats, will come for the white grazers. The white grazers will have one more season to hunt deer before the liberals shall order the militia to hunt them. And while the purge is going on, the conservative pundits will tell us to sit tight and wait for a Bush or a Pence to come along and save us through the demon-cratic process.

When we walk through the valley of the shadow of death we need our ancient faith, which is a revelatory faith, not an intellectual faith, in Christ the Lord. We are helpless and hopeless if we stay within the confines of demon-crazy. But outside of those hellish confines there is faith, hope, and that charity of honor. That charity and that honor, which are grounded in His love, shall see us safely home. +

---

(1) Biden will legalize some ten million colored infidels because that is the essence of liberalism – a satanic coalition of post-Christian Europeans allied with the barbarians of color. It will take another Alfred, supported by a remnant band of Christians, to drive the liberals and the colored barbarians from the European nations that once called themselves Christian. The United States, the exceptionalist nation, is indeed an exception. Our anti-nation is exceptionally satanic because we had less of a Christian tradition to throw off. When David was hiding in the cave from his enemies, he asked the Lord to, "Bring my soul out of prison, that I may praise thy name: the righteous shall compass me about: for thou shalt deal bountifully with me." So shall it be with us when we reject democracy and turn to the God of David and the God of Alfred, our Savior, Jesus Christ.

---

## **It Will Be Now - November 7, 2020**

Hamlet. He was a man, take him for all in all...

---

Hamlet. Not a whit; we defy augury. There's a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come; the readiness is all. Since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is't to leave betimes? Let be.

---

I have always been moved by the love and affection the Southern people retained for Robert E. Lee, even after he lost the Civil War. He made some crucial military mistakes, but still his people loved him because they knew he had given them his life's blood. So it is with Donald Trump. He has given his life's blood for his people. He deserves their love, and it seems that he has it. I hope he retains it always, even in defeat.<sup>(1)</sup> Whatever Trump's mistakes were, he was the embodiment of what a Christian leader should be. He loved much and fought mightily against the same forces of evil that Lee fought against, only at this stage of European history the forces of evil are infinitely mightier than they were at the time of Robert E. Lee.

I don't think Trump's critics on the 'conservative' side really understand that "life is earnest, life is real." The conservative critics preferred theory to reality. When Trump failed to adhere to their utopian theories of democracy they turned on him and joined the mad-dog liberals in their venomous attacks on Trump. Democracy with a large D is a terrible system of government; it is organized anarchy, a war of all against all with no mediating authority. A 'leader' in a democracy is not really that powerful. When Trump won a close election in 2016, it was not a coup d'état in which he eliminated all of the evil cabinet members and court sycophants of the previous regime. Far from it. The media, which are part of the liberal opposition, and all the federal bureaucrats and the Republican Rhinos remained intact during Trump's presidency. In



order to get anything done, Trump had to make all sorts of coalitions with divergent factions. That is the nature of democracy. I hate democracy, but it is not Donald Trump's fault that we have a democracy and not a throne-and-altar Christian monarchy. The conservative intellectuals such as Ann Coulter, who threw fits when Trump did not immediately set things right, showed an amazing lack of understanding, considering that they were supposed to be wise pundits, of just how democracy works.

Trump was faced with an impossible task. He faced off against a majority coalition – the academy, the churchmen, the media, and the demon-crats – who are possessed by the devil. Such creatures cannot be dealt with democratically, yet Trump was forced to deal with them democratically. The difference between good and evil was never so apparent as it was during Trump's interactions with the press when the coronavirus was at its peak. Trump was manfully trying to balance concern for the health of the American people with his concern for the American economy, which is also a health issue because poverty and unemployment produce their own set of health problems, while all the liberals, and unfortunately a good deal of the conservative liberals as well, could do was attack Trump. "Better two million people should die," one liberal commentator declared, "than Trump should be re-elected." And what is so bad about Trump – what has he done to earn such hatred? He has injected an infusion of genuine humanity, a touch of Christian charity, into a political system that was and shall be again, once Trump departs, devoid of humanity and Christian charity. Trump's people love him because they know that he has fought for them with a fierceness and a passion that can only be produced by love. He tried to balance concern for the health of the American people with his concern for the economy during the Covid-19 crisis, he tried to appoint prolife judges who would limit the wholesale slaughter of infants, he opposed the communist Chinese, and he fought against liberal economic policies designed to impoverish white Americans. When a leader exhibits that type of charity, "that charity of honor," we must support him even if his actual successes seem very slight. For how do we measure success? If we look at the satanic forces arrayed against Donald Trump, his 'slight' successes seem enormous.

Trump entered hell when he became President. Did we expect him to convert Satan's minions and transform the hell on earth that the liberals have been building for centuries into heaven on earth? He battled mightily against the devil and his minions, and because he had the moral courage to do battle with them, they chained him to the Promethean rock and pecked away at his entrails. He has earned the respect and love of every man and woman who still has a heart that loves. Like Alfred, like Lee, like Forrest, he has given his life's blood for his people. I love and honor him for that.

If, as it appears, that the demon-crats have stolen the election by liberal chicanery and Trump has been removed from office, what is to be done? Should we despair and die? No, we should not, because that is what he, the archangel Satan, and his minions, the liberals, want. They hate all things noble and Christian, and they think they now have destroyed the last tiny remnants of Christian humanity. Is that true? They have certainly destroyed the last remnants of Christian humanity within the framework of democracy. But is our hope bound up with the fortunes of democracy? Remember it was the democratic process that produced, "Give us Barabbas." I hoped and prayed for a Trump victory because I wanted more time before what I knew was coming, the armed battle against Satan and his minions. Shouldn't I, as a Christian, have wanted that battle to come sooner rather than later? I suppose I should have, but it is not a pleasant prospect, and I, because I am weak and mortal, said, "Not yet, oh Lord, not yet." But it has come; it is time to break the liberals' chains of democracy and "step out" into the real world, where what is good, pure, and noble must be defended and fought for as real Christian men of old Europe fought for their Christian hearth fires. Trump's victory four years ago gave us a Christian respite. We had a few more moments to walk in the sunlight of a remnant Christian culture. But now the darkness of Satan's everlasting night has descended upon us. We must fight to restore the light that shineth in darkness; Christ will aid us if we call on Him by name.

I believe, against the wisdom of the Scribes and Pharisees, that the foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men, but I don't want to lie about my feelings either. Trump's loss goes beyond depressing. First and foremost it goes beyond depressing because I love my wife and children. They need, like all Christians, to feel that there is some concrete, visible representation of something honorable and Christian left on this earth. There is that within me that screams, "They didn't deserve this, please God, they didn't deserve this." And then there are the white grazers, my people, who are confused and bewildered about everything, particularly all things pertaining to God, but they are more sinned against than sinning. They have something inside of them still; they are struggling toward the light that once shone all over Christian Europe. They need to believe in the source of that great light. The right type of hero worship, which they had for Trump, was a start toward the one great hero, Jesus Christ. Only an intellectual conservative or a Gnostic neo-pagan could be indifferent to the sufferings of the white grazer and make common cause with the Biden-Harris demon-crats in order to punish the white grazers for following Trump instead of their intellectual theories.

The first liberal, as Burke tells us, was the devil. It has always been and always will be the devil's desire that his will, not God's, shall rule here on earth as he rules in hell, which is a perverse parody of the Lord's prayer. Through his minions in society, men like Shaw, Voltaire, and Rousseau, and through his minions in the organized churches, as distinct from the real church, the church of "where two or three are gathered together in my name," Satan has managed to create, through the democratic process, hell on earth. Trump's presence, as off this stage we have shown, represented an attempt to inject

Christian charity into a democratic system opposed to all things Christian. The liberals reacted to Trump as Dracula reacted to Van Helsing when Van Helsing thrust the crucifix into his face. And we must, now that the liberals have shown their fangs, do what Van Helsing did to Dracula. We must drive a stake through their collective heart.

On election eve one of my sons said that if Trump won, we, the Christian remnant and the liberals would be much better off. But if Biden and Harris won, we and the liberals would be worse off. He was right. Why should the liberals oppose even a remnant of Christian charity being injected into the political arena? The answer can be found in the Gospel:

And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils. And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts. – Matthew 8: 28-34

The liberals must, because they worship darkness and not the light, flee from Jesus Christ. If we bow to their will, simply because they claim they have been democratically elected to do Satan's will, we will go over the cliff with the demon-possessed liberal swine. If we do not denounce "give us Barabbas" democracy, the white grazers will despair and die because they will see no alternative to swinish, demonic demon-crazy. The deep state and the deep church – Pope Francis the blasphemer is a Satanist – are totally opposed to Christ. They hate anything that resembles His reign of charity. Those two forces are fearsome, reptilian entities that seem invincible. Still, I can say without lying that I believe if we call on Him by name, He will send His angels to protect and defend us in the coming battle against Satan and his minions. In this our darkest hour, when it seems like all the forces of hell have prevailed against all that is good and honorable and Christian, we shall see, if we pray to Him who saves, that He will sustain us in the day of battle just as He will sustain us at the hour of our death.

After we honor Trump for his efforts, and after we grieve for our electoral defeat, we must make the determination to turn this electoral defeat into a victory. The liberals bared their satanic fangs during the election in a way that they never did before. They think, now that they have disposed of Trump, that they will be able to reign in perpetuity. That is not so. Now the real war shall begin. Democratic resistance to liberalism is over. But quietly, without any official declaration of war, we must internally, "With Ate by his side... let loose the dogs of war." The liberals have invaded our homes, violated our women, and murdered our kith and kin. They must not remain unopposed just because they have won an election by chicanery. We must, in the name of the God of mercy, make them know that their merciless cruelty will not go unopposed.

I should say, before closing, that I do not know when the final internet shutdown will take place. Trump's presence in the political arena has mitigated, somewhat, the boldness of the internet tyrants. I will keep writing until the final shutdown. "If it be not now, it will come." So let me place my heart in my hand and write the words from that old song: "I have loved you dearly, more dearly than the spoken word can tell." Though I have not seen you face to face, I love you, ye remnant band of Christian Europeans. None of us shall yield, because He did not yield to the devil, who tempted Him in the desert, nor did He yield on the cross. "By the cross we conquer." +

---

(1) Trump might still win an electoral victory. I hope and pray that he does. But whether it be now or four years from now, the final reckoning with the liberals must take place. No people can exist as a people under God who permit liberals to hold sway in their nation.

---

## **Which Is In Christ - October 31, 2020**

Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. – Romans 8: 35-39

---

Without opening one new avenue to the understanding, they have succeeded in stopping up those that lead to the heart. They have perverted in themselves, and in those that attend to them, all the well-placed sympathies of the human breast. – Edmund Burke in *Reflections on the Revolution in France*

---

The ongoing Jacobin revolution throughout the European world is based on a purging of the European people from the European nations. Africa for Africans, Asia for Asians, and Europe and its satellites must be African and Asian. Whither goeth the European? He must be exterminated. We know who is behind the great purge, it is the devil, but we do not know if the devil always approves of the tactics used by his minions. Currently, in the United States, and it also appears to be the same in most of the European nations, the devil's minions have decided it is time for a direct assault on the white race. They no longer believe there is any need for subterfuge. Confident in their belief that there will be no serious opposition to any cause that flies the banner of the sacred negro, the devil's minions have decided to kill the Cannon Hinnants, the Aaron Danielsons, and the Tommie Lindhs of the white nations until there are no longer any whites left to murder. What then? There will be heaven on earth. That is the vision of the illuminated liberals. They will be the benevolent caretakers of a blessed kingdom purged of all non-illuminated whites. Some non-illuminated whites might survive as lamp shades and facial creams, but they will no longer survive as a people. Will there be any opposition to the great purge? We can hope and pray there will be some resistance, but as things stand right now it looks like the purge will be successful.

What are the bad signs, the signs that there will be no resistance to the purge? The first bad sign is that there is still no resistance in the ranks of the white 'conservatives' to the deification of the sacred negro. Let us take the arrest and subsequent death of George Floyd as an example, since it seemed to be the incident the liberals used to start the last phase of the purge. I heard Lou Dobbs, and a former white republican governor of Virginia, and many other 'conservatives' use the word 'murder' in reference to the death of George Floyd. I do not believe, based on the evidence I have heard, that the officer who is now rotting in jail did anything wrong, but even if you believe that he should have researched the suspect's medical condition before trying to arrest him, in order to ensure that the arrest would not be too hard on his drug-crazed nervous system, the arrest still cannot and should not be called murder by any stretch of the imagination. And when I hear so-called conservatives using the word 'murder' in order to show that they are not racist, I want those conservatives to be forced, in an urban setting, to answer every single call that involves the arrest of a black. I will give you one hundred to one odds that in less than a year, those conservatives, if they actually try to arrest the black criminals, will be in jail charged with brutality and/or murder. How do you arrest brutal criminals? If you "reimagine" police work and decide that you should simply chat with criminals who are black — maybe you can even give them a cookie — then you do not have a police force, you have a Society of Friends. I think the entire Quaker regalia would be a more fitting uniform for our modern police, at least the police that the liberals think we should have. But of course the Society of Friends' approach to police work only applies to black criminals. If a white person goes unmasked in a public arena, or a pro-life protestor or a white gun owner is involved in a disturbance, then the liberals will inform the police they can now put on their Nazi uniforms and arrest the dirty, blankety-blank white 'criminals.'

The second bad sign, which is linked to the first one, is that the conservatives are not conservative. They do not oppose the mad-dog liberals because the mad-dog liberals are against the Christian hearth-fire faith of the European people, they oppose the mad-dog liberals because they think that they, not the mad-dog liberals, are better equipped to build that "shining city on a hill" with a melting pot of all the peoples of the earth at the top of the hill. But is that "shining city on a hill" which Ronald Reagan made reference to in his Presidential campaign really something to be desired? Hasn't that utopian dream become a nightmare? The melting pot has become a cauldron in which white victims are boiled alive as black savages and illuminated whites dance around the cauldron while keeping the coals beneath the cauldron at a white heat. The conservatives never defend white civilization. They do not defend the South's attempt to resist the infusion of the black savage into the heart of European civilization, nor do they resist the 'liberation' of women, a 'liberation' which has resulted in legalized abortion and the death of the Christian patriarchal family. Yes, I equate Christian with patriarchal. Just as there can be no real faith in the Word made flesh if we do not have a racial hearth fire where we see the Word made flesh embodied, we cannot know our heavenly Father unless we see His love embodied in loving fathers.

"Up the farm-yard way. There—he is on the gravel-walk. He has stopped; I daresay it is to pull some of the jessamine that grows over the well. Now, fly away, dove! Father's here."

And the next minute a general shout echoed, "Father's here!"

He stood in the doorway, lifting one after the other up in his arms; having a kiss and a merry word for all — this good father!

O solemn name, which Deity Himself claims and owns. Happy these children, who in its fullest sense could understand the word "father!" to whom, from the dawn of their little lives, their father was what all fathers should be—the truest representative here on earth of that Father in heaven, who is at once justice, wisdom, and perfect love.

-Miss Mulock, *John Halifax, Gentleman*

It is not any defense of that which should be defended, Christian Europe, to say that the antique Europeans were racist, but we, the good Europeans, are not racist. We must say what is true, that white pietas is sacred, and it is through the love of our kith and kin that we come to know the living God. Without that love we have nothing, we have not charity, not for our own people nor for the stranger. Without pietas, we are reeds blown in the wind, subject to whatever false universalist

ideology comes our way, an ideology that is easily blown away by another ideology, so long as that ideology comes as a superficial, universalist ideology without spiritual substance. Thus the democratic capitalist ideology is blown away by democratic socialism, and democratic socialism is blown away by an universalist anarchy – a war of the utopians against whatever is not utopian, that which is Christian and white.

As it is with race – “We are not racist, but our white ancestors were” – so it is with women’s ‘rights’ – “We are not sexist, but our ancestors were.” That is the apologia of the modern conservatives. They will not defend the Christian patriarchy of old Europe, which ‘restricted’ women to home and child-rearing. Instead they cite the new woman, the woman who has the choice to become Lady Macbeth—“Unsex me here” – or a working mother combining business and home. That is always the non-vision of the modern conservatives. They think you can have a little bit of liberalism and a little bit of Christianity. You mix the two together and you get “My country ‘tis of thee, Sweet land of liberty.” Right? No, that is wrong. What you get is what Burke warned us about: you get utopian creatures from hell who must destroy everything human in order to move humanity to utopia:

They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. – Burke, *A Letter to a Noble Lord*

The utopians are extremists; they can only be defeated by men and women who are more extreme in their defense of the good than the mad-dog liberals are in defense of evil. We need extremists, not conservative Quakers who believe we can ‘dialogue’ with Satan. What has been the result of that dialogue, of that attempt to debate that which cannot be debated? Whether we can or cannot abort – whether we should permit the existence of the white race or not – and whether we should allow heathen gods to be placed on Christian altars.

There are consequences when you try to fuse good and evil into a democratic synthesis. It can’t be done. Good must either defeat evil, or evil must triumph over good. Our European folk stories and fairy tales, the ones we have left behind in order to make room in our minds for ‘serious’ stuff, all tell us one essential thing – there is such a thing as good, and that good is embodied in Christ the Lord; and there is such a thing as evil, and that evil is embodied in the devil. We can either serve the good, which is Christ, or we can serve the devil; we cannot fuse the two together and call that fusion a “democracy.”

Right now we have reached the stage in which pure evil prances around the political stage, in the form of demon-crats such as Biden and Harris, and we have reached the stage where creatures from hell stalk our streets under the banner of Black Lives Matter. Such creatures riot, loot, and kill on a daily basis, and they intensify their murderous sprees (as they are currently doing in Philadelphia) every time a black criminal is killed or maimed. The conservatives’ response to the pure evil of the demon-crats, the Antifa and the BLM is more dialogue. That is the sickness of the fusionist mentality. The integral man, the Christian European, cannot abide the fusion of that which he loves, his kith and kin and his Savior, with a universalist people and a new deity, the sacred negro. That universalist fusion dilutes love. It makes the European a Quaker in his response to pure evil, and it makes him a dried-up lab scientist in his response to the one true God who is deserving of our passionate heartfelt love and adoration.

I long for a Trump victory for the same reason I longed for my father to survive just a few months more during his final illness. I couldn’t face his death, “at least not yet.” But I had to face his death, just as we must face the fact that the mad-dog liberals will not be stopped within the confines of modern demoncracy. They are an unrelenting, merciless, ungodly force that will kill everything good, everything noble, everything beautiful and innocent, without the slightest “compunctious visitings of nature.” In fact, it is their professed armed doctrine that man’s nature is Satan’s nature. They have re-created themselves in the image of Satan; therefore they must kill Christ by destroying His image in man. That it is Satan’s desire that the mad-dog liberals show their hands at this point in history is not something we can know for sure. What is certain is that his minions have decided it is no longer necessary to cloak their evil. They do not fear the white Europeans because they do not believe there are any Christian Europeans left on the field of battle; they have either been slain or neutered by the democratic faith of the conservatives, which is one with the faith of the Quakers: “Thou shalt not defend one’s kith and kin.” If the Christian Europeans no longer have the will to fight the devil and his minions, who will stop the bloodletting? In the works of the great poets of our race and in our fairy tales and folk stories, we find a belief that was best expressed by Hansel’s and Gretel’s father: “When hope seems nearly gone, God’s relief to us will surely come.” That hope, that faith, is grounded in St. Paul’s sure and certain hope that “in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump,” we shall be saved by Him who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. The demon-crats, the Antifaers, and the BLM creatures are pushing the white Europeans to a final reckoning, a reckoning which they, Satan’s minions, think will result in the triumph of darkness over the light. But we have that within which tells us that it is His word that shall be the last word.

The mad-dog liberals must have legalized abortion because they must be as gods, and how can you be a god without controlling the act of procreation? And the liberals must worship the negro because a post-Christian people must have a savior diametrically opposed to the Christians' Savior. The mad-dog liberals do not want to alleviate the ills of blacks, they want to increase whatever ills they suffer and invent other ills that have no basis in reality. All this they must do because the black race must be the suffering servant the post-Christian liberal worships and serves through his illuminated mind, a mind that has gone beyond pietas, beyond charity, to an inhuman monster of supernatural cruelty, rooted in Satan's supernatural hatred of Christ and His people. The European fairy tales are true — there is Christ and there is the devil — and now the liberals have decided to make it clear whom they serve. We can't dialogue with Satan, nor can we fight Satan without divine aid. Our Lord will not leave us defenseless if we call on Him by name. +

---

## **Our God Has Sent His Angel - October 24, 2020**

And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called. And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee. —Mark 10: 49

---

So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. — Revelations 2: 15-16

---

One of the mistakes a man of my age often makes is to judge events and people according to what his experiences were when he was growing up. In other words, older men often fail to 'adjust the typewriter.' And the mere fact that I use the term 'typewriter' rather than computer indicates that I have failed to adjust. But let me give another 'for instance': when I was young, the mainstream churches had gone over to liberalism, but the smaller, fringe churches were much more Christian in their orientation. After all, they had come into being because of the liberalism of the mainstream churches. But some fifteen years ago I discovered, to my horror, just how far the fringe churches had shifted to the left. I encountered 'born again Christians' and 'conservative' Catholics who had very little knowledge of (nor did they adhere to) the faith of the European people. An incredible shift to the left had occurred even in the fringe churches. That leftward shift caught me by surprise.

The same thing has occurred in politics. I was the only one in my family who thought that Hillary would lose to Trump, because I remembered that when Reagan ran he always did better than the polls showed. And I also remembered the days of George McGovern, who was too blatant with his left wing views, which spelled disaster for him, and Hillary was very blatant in her leftism, much more so than her husband and Obama had been. But I was wrong; Hillary won the popular vote and would have won the electoral vote if Pennsylvania had allowed mail-in voting, which they are now allowing in this election. What was the change I had not taken into consideration? I had not taken into account Burke's assertion about the twelvemonth of indoctrination. The relentless liberal indoctrination process in our schools, our churches, and the media had taken its toll. What seemed left wing in McGovern's day has become mainstream. That is why I no longer have any confidence that the blatant leftism of the Biden-Harris demon-crats will bring them the defeat they would have been handed forty years ago. "The times they are a-changin'."

This past weekend I went to a shooting range with some of my sons. The range was out in the country, away from the rich folk with their luxury houses and their "Biden Harris" signs; there were no Biden supporters at the gun range. The men there were the 'deplorable' men that Hillary Clinton spit on; they had Trump stickers and 'God and Guns' stickers on their four-wheel drive vehicles. They would look on me as a man-from-Mars if I brought up European Christianity, but still those white grazers are an infinitely better breed of men than you'll find within academia or in any of the other centers of Liberalism. But as I talked with the men, I became incredibly sad, because they are all "so far from doing harm that they suspect none." They see that the radical left — the Antifa and the Black Lives Matter creatures — hate them, but they do not see that their churches and their schools and the entire democratic structure which they revere as part of their American-exceptionalism heritage has been designed to destroy them. They believe, like the pro-lifers, that the evil entity called liberalism is a subversion of the American democratic process, rather than the inevitable result of the American democratic process. Hence they look to democracy to save them. Should Trump lose, they have no Plan B. That is why it is sad to be among these decent men whom the liberals have designated for extermination. They will grumble and cry unfair if the Biden-Harris leftists win, but they will not take up arms against the Philistines of Liberalism, because there is no spirit of counterrevolution in their American hearts. They cannot see any life outside the perimeters of democracy. That is a terrible tragedy, because in reality there is no life for the white European within the framework of democracy.

I am not a Thomist; I do not view existence with a Buddhist-Thomistic quietude, which is why I hope and pray for a Trump victory this fall. Individual white lives will be saved, and white jobs will be saved if Trump wins, so we can never say that this election is of no consequence. But we should see that even a Trump victory, which is doubtful, will only slow

down the onward march of the liberals toward... toward what? Where would the leftists of Liberaldom have us go? “We shall bring you hell!” the Antifaers scream. That is the promised end of liberalism. We will find ourselves in hell on earth while we still live on this earth, and we will spend all eternity in hell after our lives here on earth end if we take the spirit of liberalism into our hearts.

If we adjust the typewriter (or computer), what has changed in the last four years to make a Biden-Harris victory more likely than four years ago? First, there will be a whole host of new, younger voters who will vote for the Biden-Harris ticket. In school and church, if they go to church, our young people hear the leftists’ lies, and they will vote in accordance with the Jacobin-Marxist party line. Secondly, the ‘news’ outlets have clamped down on free speech to an incredible degree, and even the more moderate news channels, such as Fox, have shifted to the left. The conservatives’ response to the clamp-down – they call for more civility and politeness – is woefully inadequate. Let us pause there. One last remaining ‘conservative’ outlet, News Max, runs specials lauding Martin Luther King Jr. and George Bush, who now supports Biden. And their support of the police is a non-support. They condemn ‘rogue cops’ who are not rogue cops while supporting a theoretical police force that never gets their hands dirty by arresting black criminals. That policy of non-support for white policemen, who actually do their jobs and try to arrest black criminals, is right in line with their non-support of the antique Europeans. They routinely condemn the ‘racists’ of the old South while proudly proclaiming their non-racist Americanism. Small wonder that the white grazers are holding a losing hand as the election approaches.

The Covid-19 gambit of the liberals’ ally, the Chinese communists, has also been very successful. The Chinese didn’t succeed in completely destroying the American economy, but they did hand the liberals a very great weapon, a reason for the mail-in ballot which will enable them to steal electoral votes in key states. A disputed election, an election which goes to the courts, will result in a Biden-Harris victory, because our courts always decide in favor of liberalism for the simple reason that they are liberal.

Four years ago if the Antifaers and the BLM creatures from hell had openly committed the atrocities they are currently engaged in, I would have said they had destroyed the demon-crats’ chances for an electoral victory. I would have said that the extreme violence of the leftists had turned the electoral tide toward the Republicans. But now, I’m not so sure about that. Decent people are appalled by the violence in cities like Seattle, Portland, and Chicago, and decent people are buying guns at a record pace in order to protect themselves and their families from the colored hordes. But are there enough decent people left who will vote for Trump? Again, I must refer you to the liberal propaganda onslaught in church, state, and academy. The prospects for white people seem quite grim.

If we look at the electoral scale it appears to be weighted in favor of the demon-crats. But is there not one thing to which we cannot assign an exact weight? “If ye ask any thing in my name, I will do it.” We can give what money we can afford to Trump’s campaign, and we can vote for him, but we can also pray that somehow our Lord will aid us in this war against the devil and his minions. What if we pray, and our prayers are not answered? I don’t know the answer to that question. It seems that the side that should win, if we look at European history, often does not win. Still, I believe we should call on Him by name and ask Him to intervene in this upcoming election. We are not praying for riches when we pray for a Trump victory, we are asking our Lord to help us begin the long journey back to His Europe and away from Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. Of course if we do not have the humility of the prodigal son in our hearts, if we do not want to return to a land where unborn babies are protected and the old virtues of faith, hope, and charity are revered, our prayers will not be answered. The Philistines of Liberaldom will triumph.

A Trump victory will not change the fact that we live in Liberaldom, which is a kingdom diametrically opposed to the image-of-God-in-man culture of old Europe, but there still are very good Christian reasons for hoping and praying for Trump’s re-election. Currently in many democratic cities, the forces of evil, the Antifaers and the BLM creatures from hell, are being given free rein to rape, pillage, and murder, while the police are ordered to ‘stand down.’ If Biden-Harris are elected, the police will no longer stand down, they will join the Antifa and BLM rebellions because they will be ordered to do so by the Federal government. The liberals, under Biden and Harris, will switch from States’ Righters back to Federalists. It will be the same with the military as it is with the police. The military currently is not intervening in the wars in our cities. In a Biden-Harris regime, the military, along with the police, will be used to crack down on white gun owners and whites who try to defend themselves against the onslaught of Antifa and the colored barbarians.

We can’t walk away from our Christian heritage. The liberals will side with the Jews, the Moslems, the blacks, the Asians, and every other non-white entity against the white race, because the white race is the image-of-God-in-man race. The liberals can’t, as Burke tells us, strike God directly, so they must attack His image in man. I pray for a Trump victory because I love my kith and kin, but if we place our hopes in democracy alone we will be betrayed in deepest consequence. Our covenant is with a personal God, not with an abstract theory of the rights of man. If we are given breathing room because of a Trump victory, let us use that victory to start on the road back, not to the land of liberty, but to the land of the covenant, to Christian Europe. +

## **We Must Regress - October 17, 2020**

The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters. He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me. Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever. – Psalm 23

---

Anyone who votes for the Biden-Harris ticket is possessed by the devil. That fact cannot be disputed. And roughly half of the voters are going to vote for the Biden-Harris ticket. Even if Trump, like last time, manages to win an electoral victory, is it really possible, from a Christian perspective, to democratically govern a nation when half of it is committed to Satan? No, it is not possible; the last four years have made that abundantly clear. Every Trump initiative, his efforts to appoint pro-life judges, his efforts to fight the Chinese communists and their Wuhan virus, and his efforts to control our borders have been resisted and often thwarted by the demon-crats. They hate Trump with a maniacal fury unsurpassed in the annals of American politics. And the liberals' hatred for Trump is not confined to just this nation. The liberals in other European nations also hate Trump with a maniacal fury. But Trump's policies are well within the framework of classical liberalism. They do not differ that much from the policies of John F. Kennedy, whom the liberals adored. Why then is Trump hated more than Nixon and Reagan and even more than Franco and Pinochet?

The pagan viewed history as a cyclical process. Mankind was not, in the pagan's mind, progressing toward perfection. The Christian, whose God had entered historical time, looked to an end to human history when his God returned to earth. Christ was the beginning and the end. But the Christian did not equate the passage of time as a movement towards the moral perfection of mankind; he saw the passage of time as a step closer to the return of Christ. So neither the pagan nor the Christian saw the progression of time as a moral progression for mankind. Enter stage left, the liberal. The liberal has secularized the Christian's expectation of the return of Christ. The liberal expects an end to history that shall be brought about by the moral perfection of mankind. The chosen ones are those who work for the moral perfection of mankind — they shall be saved — and the evil ones are those people who do not work for the moral perfection of mankind. They shall be damned.

The new view of history, the post-Christian view, was always on the fringes of Christendom in the 'elevated' minds of 'great' thinkers such as Voltaire and Rousseau, but it didn't become part of the fabric of the European people's culture until the French Revolution. After that revolution even professed Christians who rejected the outright atheism of the French Jacobins came to accept the post-Christian view of history — that mankind was morally progressing toward the kingdom of God on earth. It's hard to see how a Christian could accept the idea of the moral progression of mankind when St. Paul emphasized that our salvation depended on, "Christ in me and I in Christ." How can people who reject St. Paul's faith continue to morally progress? They can't, but our modern 'Christians' go along with the liberals, believing that the accumulation of scientific knowledge — the replacement of the horse with the automobile, the replacement of ink and paper with computer printouts, and other such scientific 'advances' — constitutes a moral improvement. That we are moving onward and upward is the moral given of the democratic, scientific nations of the West. I see all the scientific advances, but still I do not see a moral improvement. Is the acceptance of legalized abortion a moral improvement? Is the acceptance of communism a moral improvement? Is the worship of the noble black savage a moral improvement? And is the implementation of sexual Babylon a moral improvement? The liberal says, yes, to all those questions, and the conservative does a "respectable amount of growling" over communism, abortion, and sexual Babylon, but in the end he accepts the implementation of those moral 'improvements' because he does not oppose the ultimate progression that buttresses up all the other progressions: the transformation of civil rights for the negro into the worship of the negro.

Trump is in favor of civil rights just as John F. Kennedy was, but Trump does not see that the civil rights movement had nothing to do with civil rights. The negro already had civil rights, particularly in the old South prior to the Civil War: he had the right to raise a family and be a part of a Christian civilization, a right he was not afforded in Africa or Liberaldom. The civil rights movement was part of the ongoing Jacobin revolution. The negro had to become the new savior of the European people in order to keep the new trinity intact. A return to mere civil rights and away from the worship of the negro, which is what Trump represents, is an intolerable attack on the liberals' faith. They won't permit such an attack, just as they will not tolerate any effort to deal with the communists as an enemy nor any attempt to deal with unborn infants as human beings. We must progress, we can never go back. And moral progress is always measured by the illuminated minds of the liberals. Whatever moves the European people away from Christian Europe is seen as progress, and whatever seems to be taking us back, even slightly, is seen as heresy, a heresy that must be punished with fire and sword.

If you are still a European Christian, you should take note of the liberals' hatred of Trump. He is a millennialist Christian, which is far afield from European Christianity, and he is a classical liberal who wants whites to be included in the American dream. But that small retrogression has made him a hated figure in Liberaldom. So what would they think of me and thee if they knew our views on liberals and Christian Europe? Ask not for whom the death knell tolls, it tolls for thee and me.

As he approaches death, which I am praying will be later rather than sooner, Rush Limbaugh has become much more European in his commentary and less Americanist. He was one of the first to label the Covid-19 virus a flu that the liberals were going to try to turn into a pandemic in order to "get Trump." And he has correctly stated that if the demon-crats manage to subvert this election and win, there will be no more elections, no more courts of law, no more anything resembling old America. I would argue that this has already happened to a large degree, but still Limbaugh has grasped, unlike the other conservatives, that this Presidential election is like no other, because Trump is the only Republican President who was, and will be if elected again, a retrograde President. Neither Bush, who now supports Biden, nor Pence, who says prayers for Jacob Blake and thinks it is wonderful that Scalia and Ginsburg were such good friends, are retrograde Republicans. They are a 'let's go at a slower rate toward perdition' type of Republicans. As such, they are opposed by the demon-crats, but they are not maniacally hated as Trump is hated. The liberals' hatred for Pence is only because of his association with Trump. And we should note that the intellectual Christians in the ranks of the Catholics and the Evangelicals have a preference for the Bush-Pence type of 'Christian.' They want polite Christians who intellectually affirm the Christian virtues while wholeheartedly endorsing politeness and civility towards the great haters of Christ and His people. I have a cousin who works at a nearby hospital, and she tells me that it is always her professed 'Christian' co-workers who side with liberal hospital administrators against older staff members whom they perceive to have homophobic and racist tendencies. This Jacobin revolution, like the original Jacobin revolution, could not have been completed, in fact, it would not have even been contemplated, had not the so-called Christians accepted the post-Christian, Jacobin view of history – that mankind was advancing, through reason, through the worship of the sacred negro, and through science toward the moral perfection of the human race.

I grew up at a time when most liberals had something of the Christian ethos left in their soul. But as our society has 'progressed' in the last fifty years, that remnant of Christianity has left the souls of the liberals. They have become reptilian creatures with whom any man who still adheres to Christianity cannot have any contact. In Doctor Zhivago, Pasternak depicts a moment in time after the communist revolution when Zhivago is forced to live among reprogrammed Russians who now profess to be happy, well-behaved communists. Zhivago has to leave the room because he still has a soul, and the presence of these de-souled human beings makes him physically sick. That is my reaction to the liberals of this generation. And I do not understand how those who call themselves conservatives can debate with the liberals as if they are united in one common cause, differing only in non-essentials. Perhaps it is because the conservatives are united with the liberals on that which they see as essential – the moral progression of mankind under the banner of the sacred negro and the condemnation of the 'racist' Europeans of the past. You cannot hold on to a faith in two masters. You can either serve the negro or Christ. Our condemned European ancestors choose to serve Christ. The liberals have chosen to serve the negro, and their conservative shadows will follow a few steps behind them:

It may be inferred again that the present movement for women's rights will certainly prevail from the history of its only opponent: Northern conservatism. This is a party which never conserves anything. Its history has been that it demurs to each aggression of the progressive party, and aims to save its credit by a respectable amount of growling, but always acquiesces at last in the innovation. What was the resisted novelty of yesterday is today one of the accepted principles of conservatism; it is now conservative only in affecting to resist the next innovation, which will tomorrow be forced upon its timidity and will be succeeded by some third revolution, to be denounced and then adopted in its turn. American conservatism is merely the shadow that follows Radicalism as it moves forward towards perdition. It remains behind it, but never retards it, and always advances near its leader... –Robert Lewis Dabney

The Bush and Pence Republicans make me ill. But I am drawn to the hard-core Trump supporters who went to that rally in Florida and chanted, "We love you!" As the reptilian liberals make their final purge of the impure Europeans, it is that remnant of pietas in white souls which we must try to keep alive and turn into an all-consuming fire of charity that will destroy Liberaldom. Do I think such a miracle is possible? Not if I look at life with the eye of reason alone. With that eye, I see only darkness ahead. But with the other eye, the eye illuminated by a heart that loves, I see my people rising up against their liberal overlords and facing off against them in battle. And then, as in the old hymns, I see the triumph of the Lord and those who are "on the Lord's side."

While being fully aware of the fact that a Trump victory will not cure the sickness unto death that has enveloped the European people, I still want that victory to occur for the same reason that I wanted my father, during his final illness, to survive through one more Christmas. We cling to life ourselves, and we want those whom we love to live. Even if there are only a few white grazers with a remnant of white pietas left in their souls, I want them and the members of my family to have a few more moments of European life before they must take up arms against the liberals. The prospect of a Biden-



Harris victory is too hideous to contemplate. But if it comes, we must believe, because it is true, that He will give us the grace to face even that tragedy.

My parents 'progressed' away from Christian Europe to American liberalism. They were both the first members of their families to go to college, and their moral progression, by liberal standards, coincided with their financial progression. My siblings also progressed, from their parents' classical liberalism to mad-dog liberalism. I went through the hell depicted by my brother in spirit, Fyodor Dostoyevsky, and came out, by the grace of God, on the other side of hell. I won't go back there. My children did not absorb any part of liberalism because they heard, for more than a twelve-month, the story of another world, a world separate and distinct from Liberaldom; that world was and is Christian Europe. The one great consolation of my old age is that I have been able to see the face of Jesus Christ in my children, who have never been tainted with the progression called liberalism. Once an entire continent was filled with such people. We must regress to Christian Europe, because it is only in that culture and with those people that we see the face of Jesus Christ. +

---

### **According to Thine Own Heart - October 10, 2020**

O worthy Duke,  
You bid me seek redemption of the devil.  
Hear me yourself; for that which I must speak  
Must either punish me, not being believ'd,  
Or wring redress from you. Hear me, O hear me, hear!

*—Measure for Measure*

---

For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. —2 Corinthians 4: 6

---

I do not trust Paul Craig Roberts because he writes in economic hieroglyphics and once called abortion a trivial side issue. But I am very suspicious of the Washington DC establishment and of doctors in general, so when Roberts said that Trump was being sent to Walter Reed Hospital so the doctors there could murder him, I was very concerned. Why should I be concerned about Trump since he believes in the great American experiment in demon-crazy and I do not? I care about Trump in much the same way that Sir Walter Scott cared about Bonnie Prince Charles. Scott was an ardent supporter of the counterrevolution which put an end to the Stuarts' attempt to replace a throne-and-altar European monarchy with a divine-right-of-kings, Asian style monarchy. And yet he admired the cavalier prince because of his courage and his panache. I admire Trump for his courage and because he has a small remnant of white pietas, which all his Republican predecessors lacked.

Because of my concern for Trump's safety, which was made all the greater because of Paul Craig Roberts' assertion, I watched more of the news on Monday than I usually watch in a whole month. That was a mistake on my part, because I listened to the liberals' questioning of Trump's doctors at the press conference outside Walter Reed. The press had no concern for Trump as a human being or Trump as the President. Their desire was that he should die, and if he failed to die, their next best hope was that he could be declared mentally incompetent. My reaction to the nest of vipers was an incredible rage that could only be satisfied if I were personally able to strangle each and every one of those creatures from hell. How does the devil get the time to make such creatures? And how does he make them appear to be, at least outwardly, so lifelike? You would almost think they were human. But then of course they open their mouths and instead of human speech, inhuman venom proceeds from their mouths and shows them to be creatures conceived in hell. My youngest daughter who watched the venom conference with me – it was not a press conference – had to leave the room in order to weep. I suppose that is the difference between the male and the female; I wanted to kill in the presence of such unmitigated evil and my daughter had to go and weep.

In 1959 Walt Disney made that magnificent retelling of Perrault's fairytale Sleeping Beauty. In the film, Maleficent finally confronts the hero in her true form, that of a reptilian dragon. The liberals are now confronting the white race in their true form of a reptilian dragon, but no one has emerged to throw the sword of truth into the dragon's heart. Why is that? Why are the liberals not seen for what they are, namely creatures from hell, and why are there no leaders who can see that we must do to the liberals what Prince Phillip did to Maleficent? There is no opposition to the liberals because the conservatives are one with the liberals on that which is essential for the liberals' rule: Reason, detached from the revelatory faith of the antique Europeans, must be the guiding light of men in the new religion of Satan. The conservatives, who are the shadows of the liberals, only oppose the liberals within the confines of the new, blasphemous trinity of reason, the sacred negro, and science. Such an 'opposition' is not an opposition, it is an affirmation of demonism as the ruling principle of our nation.

Let us look at how the symbiotic relationship between the conservatives and the liberals plays out. If we look at legalized abortion as one of the most glaring examples, but certainly not the only one, of the liberal and conservative dynamic at work, we can see the devil's handiwork close up. Abortion was made legal forever more in the land of liberty on January 22, 1973, the exact date that President Nixon agreed to a peace accord with the Viet Cong without requiring an accounting of our prisoners of war. Is there a parallel there? I think there is. A government that won't protect babies in the womb is not a government that will protect the soldiers who go to war (even if it is not an official war) for that government.

We are approaching the fiftieth anniversary of *Roe vs. Wade*, and there is still no hope of procuring protection for the infants in the womb. That is because the conservatives who claim to be prolife are also believers in the democratic way, a system of government designed by rationalists, which makes the Christian God subordinate to the U. S. Constitution. I remember, when I was a young man filled with "challenge and desire," asking a veteran prolife who had been picketing at one of the local abortuaries since the liberals started the murder factories, why we didn't just storm the abortuary, kill the abortion doctor and his staff, and burn the abortuary to the ground. His response was quite telling: "I once had about one hundred men lined up to do just that when Father \_\_\_\_\_ got wind of it. He denounced such actions from the pulpit, and that pretty much ended any real resistance. Since then I carry this sign around on Saturdays, and I vote prolife." The devil always wins when decent men place a rational system above that "charity of honor." The democratic process that resulted in "Give us Barabbas!" also resulted in legalized abortion. We will never make abortion illegal so long as we remain democratic. "What if we get prolife judges?" A prolife majority on the Supreme Court would only return abortion to the states, and after nearly fifty years of permitting abortions how many states will then make it illegal? Legalized abortion continues to exist as the result of schools which preach abortion as a sacred right and church men who regard abortion as a lesser issue than civil rights, climate change, and open borders. We cannot seek redemption from the devil. And the democratic process is a creation of the devil, in that it places a man-made system above God's revelation to man.

Let me stay with the abortion example, because it tells us so much about the demise of the European people. I used to sit at tables in various malls with anti-abortion literature on display. The purpose of my interaction with the public was to convince them that the child in the womb was a human being who deserved to live. The assumption behind my efforts was that I could appeal to people's reason, and once they saw that the child was a child they would no longer be pro-abortion. What an absurdity! Of course, the pro-aborts knew the child was a child – that is why they needed to take violent action against the child in order to ensure that he or she would not invade their privacy, their right to live unencumbered by a child. I had not taken into account Taine's wise observation about the real place of reason in human affairs:

In every doctrine which wins men over to it, the sophistry it contains is less potent than the promises it makes; its power over them is greater through their sensibility than through their intelligences; for, if the heart is often the dupe of the head, the latter is much more frequently the dupe of the former. We do not accept a system because we deem it a true one, but because the truth we find in it suits us. Political or religious fanaticism, any theological or philosophical channel in which truth flows, always has its source in some ardent longing, some secret passion, some accumulation of intense, painful desire to which a theory affords an outlet. –The French Revolution

It is significant that the 'Christian' apology for abortion came from the monk who separated the heart from the head and revelation from reason. Aquinas never said we could abort, he said that which would one day be a child should be treated as a child, but his reasonable heirs, men and women who believed in the sovereignty of reason, decided that the delayed ensoulment theory suited the ardent longing of their hearts, their longing to destroy a child who did not suit their life style. Reason is not the moral element in man; we cannot appeal to it as the final arbiter of what is right and wrong. That is the theological error of the great scholastic and that is the error of our modern conservatives who try to reason with Maleficent. Our Lord needs reason illuminated by a heart that loves, He does not need or want illuminated reason divorced from the heart.

The poet-pastor of Denmark, N. F. S. Grundtvig, was a remarkable clergyman in that he condemned any clergyman, Catholic, Lutheran, Calvinist, etc., who said that which was within the human heart was unredeemable. There had to be something, the good pastor insisted, within us that was capable of responding to God's grace. If there wasn't, then how could we know God? Of course the Catholic and the Protestant scholastics told us we could know God through their illuminated minds. But doesn't that contradict St. Paul who told us to search the Scriptures with our hearts? And doesn't it contradict St. Paul's assertion that charity never faileth? Did he tell us that reason never faileth? Did he tell us to study the Scriptures with our illuminated minds until there was nothing left of the Holy Scriptures? Why do the conservatives always cite Jefferson, the man who rewrote the Gospels in order to purge all the irrational events, such as the virgin birth and Christ's resurrection from the dead, as their 'conservative' progenitor?

The Polish existentialist Jan Kott once wrote a book called *Shakespeare Our Contemporary*. In that book, Kott highlighted the dark, existentialist elements in Shakespeare's plays that made him, in Kott's mind, a contemporary with the likes of Samuel Beckett and the modern, 'let's all commit suicide' playwrights. But Kott neglected to point out that

Shakespeare, who saw into the darkest recesses of the human heart, also saw redemption in the human heart. There was Edgar as a counterweight to Edmund, and Cordelia as a counterweight to Goneril and Regan. The great temptation that the scholastic churchmen and the conservatives succumbed to was the temptation to flee from the “horror, the horror,” the evil present in the human heart, to embrace pure reason. That flight serves the devil, because when we take refuge in reason detached from the heart, we are naked before our enemy who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. There is great evil in the human heart, witness the liberals, but there is redemption there as well, witness our people when they were a people. Ah, there’s the rub. The conservatives and the churchmen will not credit the people with the ancient hearts because they were racist, they had pietas. The conservatives are now illuminated Christians without pietas. But the illuminated Christians will always lose to the liberals; they will be their shadows. They will champion a rationalist Christianity devoid of the blood faith of St. Paul and the antique Europeans. The end result of such a faith is that the conservatives dialogue with Maleficent instead of putting a sword through her heart. Liberalism will live and thrive so long as we reason with the devil while condemning the Christ-centered faith of the antique Europeans.

St. Paul said that his vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen was a stumbling block to the Jews and foolishness to the Greeks. The modern liberal is like unto the Jews that St. Paul spoke of. They condemn the blood faith of the European people because such a faith is antithetical to everything they believe in – sexual Babylon, legalized abortion, and the worship of the sacred negro. The modern conservatives condemn the blood faith of the European people because it is also antithetical to what they believe in. They believe in a Socratic Christ who is confined within a rational system. But when we study God in order to dissect Him, making Him the sum of the dissected parts, we lose the second person of the holy Trinity, we lose our Savior. The conservatives leave Christ in church with the rational men and embrace the negro for their real life savior. They never defend the culture and the people of old Europe because those people were racist. They defend the modern adherents of the democratic way because they are not racist. We must be ‘racist,’ we must have white pietas in order to see the living God and act on that vision.

The Europeans’ vision of the Rood was not rational, it was uniquely European and therefore racist; it was also unscientific. But was it true? Did that European vision lead us to “something of great constancy”? Did those dear old folk of long ago give a local habitation and a name to the living God? I say they did. His name was and is Jesus. The liberals tell us that there is no room for hate in Liberaldom. Then why do they have nothing inside them but hate for the living God and the people who championed the living God?

Is it time to jest and dally now? Is it a time to dialogue with the devil? No, it is never such a time, and it is most especially not such a time when the devil has drawn his terrible swift sword. Armed with cruel hate, he is now, under the mantle of the sacred negro, attacking the Christ-bearing race with unparalleled fury. Whether this is the end time or an image of that horror, is not for us to know. But we do know that the liberals and their colored minions are the devil’s own who cannot be voted or dialogued out of existence. +

---

## **Armageddon - October 3, 2020**

And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. –Revelations 20: 12

And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. – Revelations 21: 2

---

I live in a poor, white, small town. There are a large number of Trump signs in the town, and one Black Lives Matter and a Biden sign on a lawn of one of the more prosperous houses in town. That is pretty much how it breaks down in the countryside surrounding my town as well: the wealthy people who have ‘moved out’ are mostly Biden supporters while the poor whites with working farms are Trump supporters. About five miles down the road from our town is a larger more prosperous small town. In that town Biden supporters outnumber the Trump supporters by about 10 to 1, and it is always the more prosperous homes displaying Biden/Harris signs. The signs could be misleading though because I think there are many Trump supporters who are afraid to publicly declare their support for Trump. In that more prosperous town down the road, for instance, the main street in the town has a Democratic Party headquarters in public view with all the memorabilia and literature that goes with a presidential election, but there is no Republican Party headquarters anywhere to be seen. Not without some difficulty, I managed to get a Republican Party worker on the phone, and I asked him why there was no Republican headquarters in the town. His answer was quite revealing: “We’re afraid we’ll get a brick, or worse, through our window.” Now, I am not disputing that person’s assessment – he was undoubtedly correct – but why is it that the Republicans, particularly the Trump supporters, are the people who must fear the violence of the left? The demon-crats constantly cite the right-wing, white bogeymen who are going to come and get them, but in reality they have no fear of white bogeymen; they know that they, not the non-existent right-wing, wield the terrible swift sword. They, and

they alone, have the right to use violence because they are the godded men and women building utopia over the bodies of 'white racists.'

Writing in 1950 Herbert Butterfield pointed out that as the belief in original sin faded, the demonization of the opposing political party by the other political party would increase, because the feeling that we are all flawed, none are without sin, used to keep the two parties from proceeding toward open, violent warfare against an irredeemable enemy. Now the Republicans have a remnant of the old Christian ethos while the Democrats have none at all, so it is they, the demon-crats, who feel that any and all measures, even violent measures, are meritorious when used to defeat their Republican enemies. Since they are without sin, they feel entitled to throw the first, second, third, and fourth stone, and the Molotov cocktails at their opponents. That is the reason that the demon-crats will be the victors in the upcoming Presidential election. If Trump wins the election, the demon-crats, through the courts, through the military, and through violence in the streets will not allow a Trump victory. On the other hand, if the demon-crats win, the Republicans will grumble and scream 'fraud,' but they will not mount a violent counterrevolution against the demon-crats. The classical liberals who want a little bit of Christianity in their liberal cocktail will always lose to the mad-dog liberals who prefer the straight atheist cocktail, because their fusion of liberalism and Christianity does not provide its adherents with the strength to stand up against the wickedness and snares of the devil's own.

Thomas Molnar, the great Hungarian counterrevolutionary, always preferred to be called a man of the right rather than a conservative, because he saw that the conservatives were not conservative, they were classical liberals who wanted to preserve democracy, which was rooted in Jacobinism. The people of the West have still not come to terms with the horror of democracy. Robespierre was finally killed by his fellow Jacobins because they realized that even they were not pure enough to survive Robespierre's cleansing of the Republic. But they never repudiated their attack on Christian France. Every single member of the post-Robespierre Directory had signed on to the assassination of the King. And every single European nation in their acceptance of democracy as the truth and the way has signed on to the death of Christian Europe. Every Christian counterrevolution, Forrest in the South, Franco in Spain, and Pinochet in Chile, has been anti-democratic. And that is what we must be, anti-democratic, if we really want to be Christian warriors instead of slaves of the Jacobin zealots and their allies in the ranks of Christian Jewry who make common cause with the Jacobins because they, like Belloc before them, denounce the antique Europeans as insufficiently Christian.

But how do those 'insufficiently Christian' men compare to our modern, enlightened Christians? They, the modern Christians, make a few pathetic protests about abortion and the excessive violence of the hard left while dutifully embracing the democratic ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity. In contrast, the antique Europeans believed that Christ was greater than democracy, and they fought for His reign of charity rather than the rights of man. Vladimir Solovyov's critique of Thomism, that it placed human reason above the revelation of Christ the Lord, should be our critique of democracy: it places a rational system of government above His reign of charity. When the newly appointed candidate to the Supreme Court tells us that she will place the Constitution of the United States above her faith, we can see the terrible results of placing man's reason above God's revelation to man through Jesus Christ. Reason is a whore; she will sleep with anyone she wants. The French Jacobins made a prostitute their Goddess of Reason.

Abstract reason is now ensconced in all the citadels of Europe while 'the people' have become the sacred negroes and the entire white race has become the aristocrats who must be exterminated. And strange as it seems, the poor whites have been most particularly singled out for extermination. The Antifa creatures from hell are the spawns of evil, "illuminated" whites from mostly upper middle-class families. So much for the Jacobin-Marxist lie that proclaims their revolutions are made against the rich in the name of the poor. It was the French peasantry that resisted the Jacobins, the Russian peasantry that resisted the Russian communists, and it is the dirt-poor whites who are looking to Trump to save them from poverty and the murderous savagery of the Antifa and Black Lives Matter barbarians.

We have come to a pass where hideous, demonic creatures – we cannot call them human – are allowed not only to live and breathe in our nation, but they are allowed to govern. There are demon-crats holding office in many of the states; two monstrous reptiles, Biden and Harris, have been given permission to run for office, and the followers of the demon-crats are allowed to own property and walk the streets of our anti-nation without fearing for their lives. Only a people who have embraced hell, an actual hell more hideous than the fictional hell described by Dante and illustrated by Dore, could stomach and permit the presence of liberals, for liberalism is truly the synthesis of Sodom and Gomorrah, Babylon, and the fleshpots of Egypt.

Most certainly there are some devout liberals in the Republican Party, and everyone who votes for Trump does not do so for good reasons, but that being said, it is within the ranks of Trump's supporters that we must work to start the counterrevolution. Right now the white grazers are still too enamored of democracy to make a serious dent in liberalism. But once they see the terrible outcome of the upcoming democratic Armageddon, we must prepare them for the real Armageddon. The liberals must no longer be permitted to kill the unborn and exterminate the white race under the

banners of democracy and the sacred negro. They must, in His name, be opposed by ancient hearts who believe in a Savior who is greater than the sacred negro.

Most Southern apologists during the Civil War and after it defended the premise that they, not the Yankees, were the true Constitutionals. They were following the Constitution while their enemies were perverting it. Fitzhugh and Andrew Lytle were the exceptions to that line of thought. Both men saw the heretical nature of the U. S. Constitution and the Declaration of Independence, which placed documents conceived in the brains of rationalists above the traditional revelatory faith of the European people. Major James Innes Randolph, writing immediately after the Civil War, got it right:

I hates the Constitution,  
This "great" republic too.  
I hates the Freedman's Buro,  
In uniforms of blue.  
I hates the nasty eagle,  
With all his brags and fuss...  
I hates the Yankees' nation  
And everything they do,  
I hates the Declaration  
Of Independence, too  
I hates the glorious Union--  
'Tis dripping with our blood...

While that piece of doggerel lacks Shakespearean eloquence, it cuts to the heart of the matter. The American experiment in democracy was a utopian break from Christian Europe, predicated on the proposition that the wisdom of men is greater than the foolishness of God. And what has been the result of that experiment in democracy? A once-Christian people worship the sacred negro, and in the name of that sacred god they murder infants in the womb, celebrate every depravity known to man, and condemn all that is good, noble, and pure. "Let us make America great again." When was America ever great? The European Southland was great, but has anyone in either party suggested we resurrect that civilization? We are reaping the bitter harvest of reason detached from a heart of flesh. If we recapture our ancient hearts, we will reject the unholy trinity of the modern liberals – Reason, the Sacred Negro, and Science – and we will start back on the long road to recovery. That road leads to a cross, but it also leads us to His Kingdom come, a far better place than the liberals' hell on earth.

I was a teenager when the Manson murders occurred, the hideous torture-murders of Sharon Tate, her baby, and the women and men who shared the house with her. Before the murderers were discovered, 'experts' such as Truman Capote conjectured they had been done by one isolated psychopath. When it came out that highly educated upper-middle-class young women had done the murders at the behest of a white man who wanted to lead a black revolt against the white race, the white grazers turned all their faces away; they could not face the fact that reason, detached from the human heart, produces Satanic creatures from hell. There wasn't supposed to be a hell in democracy. Now, we have millions of Charles Mansons, whites who place themselves, in their fantasies, at the head of black savages who will destroy the white race. And we have millions of creatures from hell – they are called demon-crats, Black Lives Matter, and Antifa – who are ready and willing to torture and murder white people just as the Manson clan tortured and murdered their victims.

The Black Lives Matter movement has revealed the horrible extent of the evil which has enveloped the white European nations. Hell is indeed empty and all the devils are here! A little bit of Christianity won't save us. In fact, it is a little bit of Christianity that has left the democratic conservatives and the white grazers who support them naked to their enemies, because the democratic-conservatives have preserved politeness and civility, remnants of the Christian ethos, while the liberals have completely and whole-heartedly embraced Satan. (1) And Satan has no mercy, he does not have anything in his soul but hatred for Christ and the Christ-bearing race. Politeness and civility divorced from the Dream of the Rood faith in Christ the Lord turns into cowardice in the face of the enemy. We need the whole armor of faith, a passionate unyielding faith in the God-Man Jesus Christ, if we are going to prevail against the onslaught of the devil. Instead of politeness and civility, instead of the democratic way, let us embrace that "charity of honor" and send the hellhounds – the demon-crats, the Antifa, and the BLMers – back to hell where they belong. +

---

(1) The malicious glee with which the liberal elite has responded to Trumps' illness reveals the impossibility of dealing peacefully with liberals. We have spent the unbought grace of life. No election will bring that grace back.

Please God, restore President Trump to health; he is struggling toward the light, and abide with us amid the encircling gloom.

---

## The Shadow of Satan - September 26, 2020

'Tis the time's plague, when madmen lead the blind. –King Lear

---

In his song-poem “My Old Kentucky Home,” Stephen Collins Foster describes the sorrow involved when what was once our home is no more:

The day goes by like a shadow o'er the heart,  
With sorrow, where all was delight.

For me, modern Liberalism is the ‘shadow o'er the heart’ culture. The liberals of the mad-dog and classical persuasion have placed a shadow, in the form of a black shroud, over old Europe. If we must worship the negro and forsake our ancient hearth culture, because those dear old folk of long ago did not worship the negro, then how can we have a culture at all? Our culture comes from our racial hearth fire. If we were a purely pagan people, our hearth fire gods would sustain us. When our God was the one true God, He sustained us through our racial and familial hearth fire. The Christian does not differ from the pagan because the pagan's faith emanates from his hearth fire and the Christian's faith does not. That is the lie of the theologian, the intellectual Christian who has no blood faith. The Christian has a familial and racial hearth fire just as the pagan does, but the Christian's hearth fire is consecrated to Christ rather than to a series of heathen gods. When we forsake our European hearth fire to embrace the anti-pietas culture of liberalism, which is a fusion of intellectual Christianity and paganism, we condemn our children to hell on earth. They will be lost, without a vision of the living God, if they are denied access to their bardic past. In the name of a mathematical, utopian future, the liberals have created a civilization which has demonized white pietas.

Give ear, O my people, to my law: incline your ears to the words of my mouth. I will open my mouth in a parable: I will utter dark sayings of old: Which we have heard and known, and our fathers have told us. We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the LORD, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done. –Psalm 78

Christian Europe was a wonderful work of our Lord. That great work has been obliterated by the work of Satan. Just as our Lord worked through men to build Christian Europe, Satan has worked through men to build satanic Europe. And let us not deceive ourselves about that. The liberal is satanic: we cannot reason with a liberal any more than we can reason with a deadly, poisonous snake. (1) There is nothing that pleases the devil more than a nice, rational debate, because the devil knows that reason, detached from the human heart, is the essence of his kingdom of hell on earth. Once the European steps away from his hearth fire because he believes that prejudice and superstition reside there, that selfsame European belongs to the devil.

The United States has advanced further than any other nation toward the kingdom of hell on earth. But every single European nation is on that slippery slope of reason detached from the human heart. That detachment always results in a severance from the bardic culture of old Europe, the culture of the parable, which is of the spirit. That severance allows the new men of reason and science the liberty to create a culture of math and the syllogism, which is the culture of dumb nature. It is not possible to live with the shadow of liberalism over our hearts. We must remove that shadow by returning home. Even if that home is now a devastated vineyard, we must rebuild it with a heart that has cast off the shadows of Liberalism.

It wasn't that long ago, about 25 years ago, that the classical liberals such as George Gilder were extolling the benefits of the computer revolution. Through the computer, the liberals, they told us, would be defeated because they would no longer have a monopoly on the flow of information. The computer would democratize information, thus allowing American, conservative populism to overcome American liberalism. But that has not been the case. The mad-dog liberals, through search engines like Google and social media websites like Twitter and Facebook, now have a greater monopoly on thought and speech than they ever had in the print and ink era. Why is that? It is because the conservatives are not conservative. They, like their liberal cousins, believe in the mathematical nature culture of Satan more than the fairy tale culture of old Europe. In the European fairy tales the hero ventures forth without a mathematical plan to guide him. He trusts in God to take him safely home through the good offices of beneficent fairies and angels. But a man with a system, be it Thomism, communism, capitalism, or democracy, does not need fairy tales; he does not need, or so he thinks, the people of the parable and the spirit. “Oh what a falling off was there!”

I always feel a certain satisfaction when a Trump or an Orbán wins an election in Liberalism, but my heart does not soar at such tidings because I know that electoral victories from within Liberalism are not really victories for the European people. They are merely delaying actions before our inevitable defeat by the forces of Satan and his liberal minions. I use the term ‘inevitable’ conditionally: Our defeat is only inevitable if we do not return to our home, to our racial hearth fire, where the parable of the God-Man who saved us from sin and death reigns supreme.

I had a student some 30 years ago whom I still recall quite vividly. And I remember him for two reasons. The first reason is that he died tragically at the hands of a black barbarian. And the second reason is that he was very interested in what I had to say about literature. That made him a rare student. But he was not in agreement at first with what I had to say about modern authors; I unilaterally condemned them all. His hero was Stephen King, and he defended his hero in class and outside of class. I didn't talk down to the young man – I wasn't that much older than him at the time, only about 12 years, which was, I think, one of the reasons I finally changed his opinion of Stephen King. I was a young man defending the old authors. What it finally came down to was that Shakespeare, Dickens, Scott, Dostoyevsky, and the other old white Europeans had depth of soul, and Stephen King and the other moderns did not. My young friend, because he still had a soul, came to see, once he was exposed to the authors with the ancient European hearts, that Stephen King and his ilk were nothing; in fact, they were hideous purveyors of liberal filth. But of course that young man from my early teaching days had that within which enabled him to reject modernity. Are there any such young men, or old men for that matter, left today? It doesn't appear there are, but perhaps that is how the devil wants it to appear so that the European Christian, the man imbued with white pietas, will believe he no longer has a spiritual home, a people to whom he belongs, and then he will die in despair.(2)

Does it make any difference whether a man dies in despair or whether he dies feeling connected to a long line of people with whom he shares a kindred faith? I think it does. St. Paul tells us that, “none of us liveth alone and none of us dieth alone, for whether we live we live unto the Lord, and whether we die we die unto the Lord.” If we die having renounced our people, the people who lived and died unto the Lord, do not we die alone? That is a fearful thing. Small wonder so many opiates are needed to sustain the post-Christian Europeans. Death will come to us all, but is it not unthinkable to die without the faith of the antique Europeans? Will the great god of the liberals, the sacred negro, comfort us at the hour of our deaths? Is he a god worthy of our love and reverence?

A traditional, non-utopian European seeks to preserve the heritage bequeathed to him by his ancestors. He does not think that “he began today,” nor does he think he has a right to alter the sacred heritage of his ancestors. All changes of a material, technological nature must be used to help preserve his cultural heritage, not to supplant it. In contrast to that genuine conservatism is the liberalism of the modern Europeans. In modern democracies, technology is not used to preserve the culture of the antique Europeans, it is used to destroy it. We have the technological means, for instance, to ensure that a greater number of children live past their births, but instead of using that technology to preserve life, we use it to ensure that a greater number of children never live to see the light of day. That is because we do not want to preserve the traditional reverence for infant children that our Christian ancestors bequeathed to us. We also have the technology to place barriers between our people and foreign invaders. But we do not do that because the foreign invaders, be they Moslem, Mexican, or Chinese, are anti-European and anti-Christian, which is in keeping with liberalism. And we have the technology, the armaments, to destroy the Antifa/BLM barbarians, who prowl about the streets in order to loot, rob, rape, and kill. But our government does not use their armaments, their technology, to fight the Antifa/BLM barbarians, because those creatures from hell are moving forward, away from ‘racist,’ Christian Europe. They are moving toward a liberal utopia in which Satan rules unchallenged.

At present, you are deemed a madman, a racist, or both, if you see yourself as part of a continuum, a long line of kith-and-kin Europeans who lived and died to preserve a Christ-centered civilization instead of a new, technological civilization with the sacred negro at its center. It is a great irony of European history that the people who so proudly lauded themselves for their democratic governments, their science, their technology, and their God-like reason, have succumbed to a primitive religion, the worship of the sacred negro, which places them on a lower scale than the primitive black savages whom they worship.

Pride of reason was the original sin; Christ's passion was God's cure for our original sin. Europeans who placed pietas, the love for their kith and kin in and through Christ, at the center of their civilization kept pride of reason at bay. But the scientizing of God brought pride of reason back into the mainstream of European culture. It became acceptable to deify man's reason as long as it was used to study God. That acceptance of a little bit of liberalism has resulted in the triumph of Satan. He has built Liberalism in Europe's green and pleasant land. We allowed a small corner in Christendom to be used for reason detached from the heart, and Satan made that small corner into all and all; he transformed Christendom into Liberalism. Now we crawl on our bellies before the sacred negro because we are too smart to bend our knees to Christ. If we love much, if we see His blood upon the rose of Christian Europe, we will get up off our bellies and destroy the liberal leviathan. If we don't see His blood upon the rose of Christian Europe? Then we will be damned. Please Lord, abide with us. +

---

(1) The premise of demon-crazy is that men can work out their differences without recourse to violence. But that premise only holds when there is a basic agreement on that which is essential. You cannot democratically settle your differences with pro-abortion, negro-worshipping liberals whose avowed purpose is the destruction of the white race and the Christian civilization that once sustained the

white race. Talk shows won't save us from the snares of the devil. In fact, the talk show, in which we reason with the devil's own, the liberals, as if they are our buddies, is a snare of the devil.

(2) A man is not meant to live alone, but how can he have any contact with a people who have denied they are a people? A remarkable short story/short novel, *Master Humphrey's Clock*, by Charles Dickens, gives us the key: Cling to a chosen few who have not renounced their kith and kin who died in the arms of our Lord.

---

## White Privilege - September 19, 2020

"The way I've been obliged to see it is this: our ideas and instincts work upon our memory of these people who have lived before us, and so they take on some clarity of outline. It's not to our credit to think we began today, and it's not to our glory to think we end today. All through time we keep coming in to the shore like waves—like waves. You stick to your blood, son; there's a certain fierceness in blood that can bind you up with a long community of life."

—*So Red the Rose* by Stark Young

---

The Reverend – let us leave his name and denomination a blank – was eighty-five years old. He had been put out to pasture, so to speak, when he was seventy. He was still in good health, but it was his church's policy to retire their clergy at age seventy unless there was some pressing reason for them to continue in their duties. In the case of Reverend Everyman there was no pressing need for him. In his fifteen years of retirement he had never once been asked to substitute for any of the still functioning clergy, but this past August was different. Summer vacations and COVID-19 had diminished the ranks of the available clergy. The powers that be in the Reverend's church decided, "Let's get old Rev. Everyman to fill in one Sunday."

"Is he available?" a junior clergyman asked.

"Certainly," his superior replied, "He is just sitting around collecting dust, so let's dust him off and put him in the pulpit this Sunday. What harm can he do?"

So on August 16, 2020, the Reverend Everyman stepped out of retirement. At first, nothing unusual happened; the Reverend went smoothly through the service. He did all the readings himself because he had no assisting clergyman and he did not want the laity to read. After he read the Gospel, which was John 9, the story of the man who was born blind, the Reverend stepped up to the pulpit to deliver his sermon, his homily, or his commentary, whatever you prefer to call it. First he greeted the faithful, introducing himself because he had never done a service in this particular church before and wishing them all a pleasant summer – the usual formalities. Then he presented his homily/sermon.

"There are two great miracles in the story of the man born blind. The first is the miracle of God's grace: He has compassion for the man born blind and cures his blindness. That is the obvious miracle. We can all see that miracle. But there is a second miracle in this story that we often overlook. That is the miracle of God's grace working within the heart of an individual human being. After the man born blind receives his sight, he faces incredible pressure to deny the Man who restored his sight. We must remember what it entailed for a Jew at that time to be cast out of the synagogue. The synagogue was the Jew's social and religious life. The parents of the man born blind were unwilling to take the risk of being cast out of the synagogue. Yet, their son did take that risk. He spoke back to the Pharisees and defended the man who had given him his sight:

Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?

Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.'

"And then the Pharisees cast the man born blind out of the synagogue. Now, we come to the great moment. When Christ hears that the man born blind has been cast out of the synagogue, He seeks him out:

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?

He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?



And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind.

And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also?

Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

“In these two miracles, which are intertwined, we see our faith embodied. Our Lord shows us His divine compassion, and we respond to His divine compassion. Ah, but as Hamlet says, “There’s the rub.” Do we, in 2020, respond to God’s grace as the man born blind responded to His grace? No, my friends, we do not. In this very church, last week, you were asked to sit there and think about ‘white privilege.’ And you all sat there, listening to unholy blasphemies from the pulpit because you were afraid to be cast out of the synagogue. But if you are afraid to be cast out of the synagogue, our Lord will not seek you out; you will remain captives of the blasphemers. There are two white privileges, and neither of those privileges are what the authorities, the purveyors of blasphemy, are referring to when they talk about white privilege.

“The first white privilege is the privilege shared by all the races of mankind. That is the privilege of knowing that Christ died on the cross to redeem us from sin and death. And the second white privilege is the privilege to champion Christ crucified, Christ risen in a hostile world. That privilege, which is also a cross, was borne by our white ancestors, the men and women who are now damned as racists by the Marxists in the Democratic party and by the Antifa and the Black Lives Matter creatures from hell. While you sit in those pews and worship blacks, and when you leave this church and kneel down to the banners of the BLM creatures, you crucify your Lord anew, and you disgrace your ancestors who loved their own people in and through Jesus Christ. There is no dichotomy between the Old and New Testament. Today the Old Testament reading, Psalm 139, is in complete accord with the story of the man born blind. The man born blind is loyal to the God of mercy, and because he loves much he refuses to renounce Christ even though he knows he will be cast out of the synagogue. He hates the enemies of the true God, just as the psalmist does:

Surely thou wilt slay the wicked, O God: depart from me therefore, ye bloody men. For they speak against thee wickedly, and thine enemies take thy name in vain. Do not I hate them, O LORD, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee? I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies. Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

“Surely we must not join with the bloody men of the Democrats, the Antifa, and the Black Lives Matters. We must, like the man born blind, cling to our Lord and Savior. May Christ be with you always, even to the ending of the world. Amen.”

During the course of the homily/sermon, over four-fifths of the congregation exited the church. Of the remaining one-fifth, all but one man shunned the Reverend Everyman when he stood outside the church to greet the people as they left. That one man embraced the Reverend, and with tears in his eyes, asked him to pray for him in the battle to come. “You’ve given me a renewed faith and a renewed hope, Reverend.”

“God bless you, my son, may Christ strengthen you.”

The reaction to the Reverend’s homily/sermon was swift. Two days later he was given official notification that he no longer had a pension and he no longer was a member of the clergy. He was defrocked and defunded. The Reverend was not surprised. He knew what he was doing when he spoke out against the Pharisees in the synagogue of liberalism. Was it worth it? After all, only one man took the sermon/homily into his heart. “Yes,” the Reverend said, “it was worth it.” The Reverend bought a van and at age 85, started a new life as a wanderer on the face of the earth. He would preach the Gospel in KOA campgrounds and other wilderness locations to whomever would listen. And when his time came, he would go to his Lord, the God of the meek, the humble, and the merciful, the God who stands as a sign of contradiction to the merciless gods of Liberalism.

In Shakespeare’s *Richard III*, a Scrivener comments, to himself, on what he dares not say in public because a bloody tyrant will brook no opposition:

Here’s a good world the while! Who is so gross  
That cannot see this palpable device?  
Yet who’s so bold but says he sees it not?  
Bad is the world; and all will come to nought,  
When such ill dealing must be seen in thought.

For quite some time now the liberals have been hell-bent on the extermination of the white race under the banner of the sacred negro. Yet no one is permitted to say what is obvious. The conservatives talk about preserving law and order, but they never touch on the main enemies of law and order, the sacred negroes. They are just as quick as their liberal counterparts to condemn the ‘rogue cops’ when they hurt, maim, or kill the sacred negroes while trying to arrest them for their crimes. Must I point out that none of the celebrated negroes – Blake, Floyd, etc. – would have been injured had they not committed crimes and then resisted arrest? No nation can long endure, Mr. Lincoln, when those who govern that nation are too illuminated to protect their people from black noble savages who murder, rape, and pillage because they know they can do so with impunity.

I listened to a conservative the other day telling his audience that we were living in the best of all worlds because the stock market was booming. Is he mad? Yes, indeed he is. Even if the stock market boom that he was extolling becomes a permanent boom, does it then follow that these are the best of times? Our young people have embraced negro worship, they hate their own kind and the cultural heritage of the antique Europeans, and the few that have not embraced negro worship have succumbed to despair because they do not think there is a future for the white race in Liberalism. Yet, the stock market man tells us we live in a world of financial wonders that should make us all deliriously happy. A conservative who is not a counterrevolutionary is not a conservative, he is a liberal, because he seeks to preserve the Jacobin-Marxist revolution. It matters little whether the liberal-conservatives, who are the capitalists, or the mad-dog liberals, who are the socialists, rule; they both worship Baal under the guise of the sacred negro. That is the truth that cannot be spoken of in our modern, dystopian hell.

If I was to be executed, and my executioners gave me a choice of an execution in two weeks or four weeks, I would choose four weeks. We are made that way, we cling to life. That is why I would like to see Trump win the presidential election. It will delay, ever so slightly, the final execution of the white race. But ultimately our salvation as a people does not depend on elections. In point of fact, we must renounce democracy in order to survive as a people, because our modern democracy is based on the premise that white pietas is evil. Conservatives never attack Black Lives Matter by defending the white Christians of the Old South, the people who took Christian Europe to the northern hemisphere. Instead they claim that the Black Lives Matter creatures should not attack contemporary whites because they are no longer racist. We must not overlook the moral cowardice of such a ‘defense,’ which is no defense: “You can no longer call us racist. We are not racists, it is our ancestors who were racists!” Is that so? Yes, it is so. Our ancestors, the whites of the Old South, built a civilization based on pietas, the love of their own in and through Christ the Lord. If they were wrong, if they were racist in the pejorative sense of the word, then all of Christian Europe was wrong from its inception: the Dream of the Rood Christians were wrong, St. Paul was wrong, and, if we take that liberal logic to its ultimate conclusion, Christ be not risen. That is what the Demon-cratic-Antifa-BLM movement is all about. Satan has decreed that, “Christ be not risen, He is a fraud. You must follow me and destroy every last vestige of the culture based on Christ is Risen and every single, individual, white person who refuses to renounce that culture. The conservative-liberals seek to survive by renouncing their ancestors and joining the ranks of the illuminati. “We too are non-racists. In fact, the liberals are more racist than we are.”

If the Republicans somehow manage to retain the presidency, the rioting will continue in the democrat-controlled cities, and the demon-crats in Congress will continue to nullify all of Trump’s initiatives. If the demon-crats win, the riots will intensify throughout the nation, and all resistance to the rioters will be squashed by the military and the police. That is something we must keep in mind. The hierarchy of the military are Obama appointees. They are not going to mount a counterrevolution against their demon-cratic brethren. And the police who have been given racial sensitivity courses for the past forty years will side with the liberals who pay them. We owe it to our women, those who have remained faithful through all these years, not to remain passive because we do not want to act outside of the democratic shackles of Satan. We must pick up the cross of Christ, our white privilege, and destroy the enemies of white pietas. And we must do this because we love our own and hate the devil and all his works. +

---

### **The Great Religious Talk Show - September 12, 2020**

“What do I wish for?” repeated the student. “Perfect happiness. Fortune herself is my desire.”

“Explain what you mean by Fortune,” pursued the spirit.

“Fortune,” began the other, “is a power of nature, and—”

“Be quick!” cried the ghost. “Do you wish for money?”

“No, no,” answered the wise man; “the greatest happiness is to have no heart. I wish that you would take mine from me.”

“Shall I take your heart?” asked the spirit again.

“Yes, take it, and hide it so well that it will never be found.”

“Far, far away,” said the spirit, “in the middle of a wild forest, there is a sea with an island on which an old castle is standing. I shall bury your heart fifty feet under the deepest cellar in this castle. Are you contented?”

“Yes, and I shall rejoice to be rid of it.”

Now the stream vanished, and the pot boiled quietly as before. The wise man felt a cold touch at the left side of his chest, and knew that he had lost his heart. Since that day he lived much more peacefully, and was able to see the greatest want and distress without feeling the least trouble. He thought himself happier than all other beings, and was able to pursue his studies undisturbed.

—Danish Fairy and Folk Tales

---

‘Bitzer,’ said Mr. Gradgrind, broken down, and miserably submissive to him, ‘have you a heart?’

‘The circulation, sir,’ returned Bitzer, smiling at the oddity of the question, ‘couldn’t be carried on without one. No man, sir, acquainted with the facts established by Harvey relating to the circulation of the blood, can doubt that I have a heart.’

‘Is it accessible,’ cried Mr. Gradgrind, ‘to any compassionate influences?’

‘It is accessible to Reason, sir,’ returned the excellent young man. ‘And to nothing else.’

—*Hard Times*

---

The star had shown him where to find the God of the poor; and through humility, and sorrow, and forgiveness, he had gone to his Redeemer’s rest.

—*Hard Times*

---

The liberals’ “elective affections” are with the sacred negroes and all those who hate the white race. To what extent have they, the liberals, suborned the affections of the white grazers in favor of their cruelty? It appears they have been very successful in their attempt to suborn the pity of whites and turn them against their own people. If what appears to be true is true, that whites actually believe their ancestors were evil and beyond redemption and that they must do penance for their ancestors’ evil by ceding their civilization and their very lives to the sacred negroes, then it is quite useless to have elections this fall.

The Republicans are campaigning for a return to the first circle of hell, where the virtuous pagans sit around a heathen campfire and talk about the virtuous life. The demon-crats are campaigning for the final descent into the pit of hell. Even if the demon-crats lose the presidential election because the white grazers are not prepared to go into the deepest pit of hell, the devil still has won, because he has won the cultural war: the European people have rejected Christian Europe because it was ‘racist,’ and they have embraced post-Christian Europe because it is not racist. The political debate is not about whether we shall be Christian or heathen — that has been decided already: we shall be heathen — what is up for debate is the fate of the white grazers. Trump claims there is a place for the white grazers in the first circle of hell, while the demon-crats claim there is no place for white grazers in their kingdom which has ‘progressed’ beyond the first circle of hell. They are for the deepest regions of hell where they intend to dwell with the devil in perpetuity.

Dante errs when he places virtuous pagans in hell who have never been exposed to the light of Christ’s love. But what about those who have been exposed to the Word made flesh, the Christian theologians and philosophers who worship reason untainted by a heart of flesh — haven’t they chosen the first circle of hell? Yes, they have. They don’t hate the Word made flesh as their liberal brethren do — they are beyond love and hatred — but they always side with the liberal hellhounds because they, like the mad-dog liberals, do not believe that abstract reason unilluminated by the human heart is pure evil. They think, against the blood wisdom of our people, that their exalted Grand Inquisitorial reason shall take them and their followers to heaven on earth. That cannot be. Such ‘exalted’ reasoning brings a man, and a civilization, to the deepest pit of hell. What seems to be a polite, cozy talk show discussion about religion starts with a supper with the devil, then precedes to a long vacation in the devil’s summer house, and finally ends with a permanent residence in hell. Why must that be the case? Do I not place too much emphasis on hearts of flesh, on what I call Christian Europe? That is only true if the Christian faith is something other than what St. Paul claimed it was. He enjoined us to search the scriptures with our hearts so that we could become “epistles of the living God.” Doesn’t that injunction require that we have a heart?

If we can't see the face of Jesus Christ in the living epistles of the people who took His word into their hearts, where can we see the face of Jesus Christ? "You don't need to see His face," the Thomist and all the rational, first-circle men of reason tell us, "All you need is our philosophy." But whose philosophy shall I choose? Why should I choose one rational scheme over another? Is truth revelatory or is it rational? I maintain, because I have seen the face of Jesus Christ in European hearts of flesh and not in abstract reason, that truth is revelatory, not rational.

Negro worship has replaced Christ-centered Christianity because organized Christian Jewry rejected St. Paul's revelatory vision of Jesus Christ in favor of reason unaided, and as the churchmen asserted, unpolluted by humanity. Dmitry Karamazov is the exemplar of the heart of flesh, which the theologians hate. He despises 'two plus two equals four' theology, and he allows his passion for Grushenka to bring him to the brink of murder and despair. But his heart of flesh overcomes his evil passions, and he comes to the foot of the Cross. In contrast, the great intellect, the great rationalist, Ivan Karamazov, is left naked to the merciless god of the rationalists, the archangel Satan. It is significant that when Hollywood made a movie of *The Brothers Karamazov*, Ivan became the hero. Twentieth century modernists were incapable of believing that a rationalist could be a villain. But not only can a rationalist be a villain, a pure rationalist is always a villain; he is the boon companion of the greatest rationalist of them all. Satan lurks behind the arras of the great religious talk show, a diabolical Polonius making sure that there are no hearts of flesh present at the talk show.

It's a curious thing — the mad-dog, secular liberals are one with the conservative Christians in their rejection of St. Paul's vision of charity. St. Paul saw Christ in his heart and told us we could know Him through that vital organ of sight. The liberals and the churchmen damn that organ of sight and bid us turn to their visions of a rational utopian world ordered and run by illuminated minds free from the illicit passions of the human heart. It is very easy to find illicit passions in the hearts of the antique Europeans because they were mortal men and women. But is that all we can see in their hearts? Is Rembrandt the sum of whatever sins he may have committed, or is he to be judged by the vision within his heart? I cannot be silent on this issue of the passionate hearts of my people. They had a vision of the heart that completely transcends the cruel utopian theologies of our clergymen and the hellish utopias of the liberals. We must reject both evils and stand, even if we stand alone, with the ancient hearts of our people.

In the culture that the theologians damn as impure and the secular liberals damn as racist is the blood faith of a people who took Christ into their hearts. If the theologians and their followers would look at those people through and not with the eye they would see with blinding sight and become epistles of the living God instead of the Amen chorus of Liberaldom.

The Christ story is all in all, and it was always present as a vital, living entity in our people until our people divorced Christ and married the sacred negro. Let me reference a work such as Dickens' *Hard Times*. The book is certainly the greatest critique of the inhumanity of unbridled capitalism ever written, but it is so much more. When the hero of the book, one Stephen Blackpool, a suffering servant who has been rejected by the socialists and the capitalists, disappears under suspicion for the robbery of the bank, only one faithful heart remains in Coketown who still believes that Stephen is innocent and that he will return. And the one faithful heart, Rachel, wins another woman over to her side, and together they wait and pray for Stephen's return. Dickens did not make a rational decision to write a Christian allegory, he wrote from the heart, and the Christ story was in his heart. That is the beauty of our people when they were a people.

All my life I have heard the theologians tell me to abandon the whited sepulchre of Christian Europe for their Christian rationalism. But is not reason unilluminated by a heart of flesh the real whited sepulchre? The people with the ancient hearts saw a great light, they lived and died in the shadow of the cross. The modern theologians see no light, they bid us sit in church and think about 'white privilege' while we contemplate the magnificence of the noble black savage. That is not my world, I cannot live with the inhuman vision of the anti-pietas, anti-European, Christless Christians.

However much I might rail against the first-circle-of-hell talk show conservatives, both lay and clerical, they now constitute the ranks of the opposition to the mad-dog liberals. Isn't it better to make peace with them and reside in the first circle of hell rather than go into the deepest region of hell with the mad-dog liberals? No, it is not better. It is not better for two reasons. The first reason is that hell is still hell and I do not want to live in hell. The second reason is that the liberals will not let you remain in the first circle of hell, they will not let you go halfway off the cliff with the swine, you must go all the way. Unamuno was right: it is all or nothing. Either we stand with the men whom Moley (from *The Wind and the Willows*) called the "Death or Glory Toads," the antique Europeans, or we can become the shadows of the liberals, following them ever so cautiously, wearing conservative outer garments covering up our liberal hearts, into the center of hell.

The great battle will not begin until we walk away from the religious talk show where the 'racism' of the 'evil,' antique Europeans with hearts of flesh is taken as a given. If we proceed against the Tower of Babel rationalists, refusing to accept their given, that white pietas is racism, we will find a heart and a will to resist what now seems irresistible, the liberals'

juggernaut. But of course in order for that to happen the whites who have made a whited sepulchre of reason divorced from the human heart must reclaim their hearts, like the philosopher in the Danish fairy tale, “The Man Without a Heart”:

The old man turned furiously upon him, and reached for his staff, but at the same moment he felt a stinging pain in his left side, threw up his hands, staggered to his feet, and cried: “Mercy, mercy! I have served the Evil One! Some one gave me back my heart. Oh, give me my youth again, that I may live like other men!”

In the next second the two figures outside the windows became alive again, and the two brothers clasped each other in their arms, while the sisters held each other by the hand. But a great change had taken place in the room. There now stood by the philosopher’s chair a little boy, gazing curiously at the many singular objects about him. This man had found his heart again, and was to begin life afresh.

For none of God’s creatures can live without a heart.

“Like unto a child”: that is the miracle of Christian Europe. +

---

## **The War That Has Been Thrust Upon Us - September 5, 2020**

To all this let us join the practice of cannibalism, with which, in the proper terms, and with the greatest truth, their several factions accuse each other. By cannibalism, I mean their devouring, as a nutriment of their ferocity, some part of the bodies of those they have murdered; their drinking the blood of their victims, and forcing the victims themselves to drink the blood of their kindred slaughtered before their faces. By cannibalism, I mean also to signify all their nameless, unmanly, and abominable insults on the bodies of those they slaughter.

As to those whom they suffer to die a natural death, they do not permit them to enjoy the last consolations of mankind, or those rights of sepulture, which indicate hope, and which meek nature has taught to mankind in all countries, to soothe the afflictions, and to cover the infirmity of mortal condition. They disgrace men in the entry into life; they vitiate and enslave them through the whole course of it; and they deprive them of all comfort at the conclusion of their dishonoured and depraved existence. Endeavouring to persuade the people that they are no better than beasts, the whole body of their institution tends to make them beasts of prey, furious and savage. —*Letters on a Regicide Peace*

---

After the murder of counter-protester Aaron Jay Danielson in Portland by Antifa/BLMers from hell, a liberal commentator cried that you could not equate the justifiable killing of a white racist with the unjustified killing of anti-racists. And after a black barbarian shot Cannon Hinnant in the head, a black prison guard on social media derisively said, “He should have ducked.” In those murders we see the armed doctrine of the liberals – all non-illuminated whites must be killed. And it is me and thee that are non-illuminated. The liberals have decreed it is meritorious to kill non-illuminated whites and it is a vicious, horrendous crime to kill the murdering scum in the ranks of the Antifa/BLMers. Of course the Antifa must fly the Black Lives Matter flag when they murder because they too are white, hence they must denounce whiteness all the more, and they will lose their shields if they don’t hide behind Black Lives Matter. Kyle Rittenhouse may be acquitted for his meritorious killing of the two Antifaers because they were white, but he shouldn’t even have to go on trial — he should be given a medal of honor and a parade. When the demon-crats applaud and laud the murderers and looters of the Antifa and the BLM, and when the Republicans say a prayer at their convention for the horrendous black criminal, Jacob Blake, both parties have shown us where their hearts are:

Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections. —*Regicide Peace*

The shadow-conservatives who attack Trump for not living up to their illuminated conservatism have no right to attack him, because they are not Burkean conservatives, they are classical liberals who believe in democracy. They believe in the American system of Jacobinism, which was conceived in hell and dedicated to the proposition that men can decide all the important questions of life without recourse to the living God. That system, based on abstract reason and modern science, always results in the worship of nature and nature’s god, which is the sacred negro. Within that system a man like Trump, who is a modern democratic man with a tiny remnant of white pietas, is the very best man you will ever get. Do you think a Romney, a Bush, a Ted Cruz, or any other Republican shill would be one-half as good as Trump? But from a Burkean standpoint, the standpoint of a Christian counter-revolutionary, a standpoint that the modern ‘conservatives’ will not take, Trump is part of Liberalism, and as part of Liberalism he will not ultimately help the European people to leave Liberalism and return to that other world, which is Christian Europe. We need a leader who will repudiate Jacobinism in its Marxist and its American forms. Such a leader cannot emerge from within the Jacobin confines of American democracy.

All we need to know about the Republicans who claim to offer us an alternative to the demon-crats can be seen in their call for prayers for Jacob Blake. Their “elective affections” are one with the demon-crats. They condemn white policemen who try to thwart black barbarians while they weep and pray for the black barbarians. How do they differ from the demon-crats who exalt the sacred negroes and ignore the murder of innocent whites? That which must be said is not said by any political party nor is it permitted to be said in any public venue: Negro worship, which is the state religion of the United States is the worship of Satan.

There must be a reckoning for the murder of the Aaron Jay Danielson in Portland, for Cannon Hinnant, for Jonathan Foster, and for all the white victims of liberal treachery and black barbarism. Why are Antifa Satanists and black barbarians allowed to walk the streets carrying AR-15 rifles while whites are expected to cower in their homes awaiting execution? And why, when whites come out to protest, are they gunned down without any attempt on the part of the liberal establishment to punish the murderers? Oh, I forgot, the murder of a white is not murder, it is a meritorious execution of a racist. And we dare not place our hopes in the police. They work for the state, and the state will not allow them to act against the Antifaers or the BLMers. (1) As Forrest and his followers did many years ago, so we should do. We cannot rely on either a demon-cratic government or a Republican government to protect us from the liberals and the black barbarians who want our blood. We must be a law unto ourselves. How can Christian men consent to be ruled by Satan’s minions? Doesn’t that charity of honor demand that we rise and ride in defense of our people and our God? The ‘pro-lifers’ failed to procure protection for the innocents in the womb because they did not love enough to kill the baby killers. In fact, they denounced Paul Hill when he did what had to be done. So it is now with the white grazers. If we don’t love enough to kill the murderers of our people, we will perish as a people, and Satan will reign unchallenged. The Antifaers and the BLMers have made it abundantly clear that we cannot serve two masters. We can serve Satan or we can serve Christ, there is no in between despite what the purveyors of star-spangled Americanism tell us.

Let me preface what I am about to say next with the assertion that in any war it is the spiritual substance of the people that must be paramount. An army of a committed few with something within, determined to fight to the knife, is better than a whole host of spiritually gutted men with AR-15s and shotguns in their gun cabinets. However, using Forrest as our exemplar, certain practical considerations about armaments are necessary. The enemy is armed, yet they don’t have jobs. Who is arming the creatures of Antifa and Black Lives Matter? I assume it is George Soros and others of his ilk. So right away we shall despair if we seek to defeat the enemy with our superior armaments. They will always be better armed than we are, because they have more money. Need I cite David and his slingshot? But still, let us come to the practical matter, something I am woefully inadequate to discuss, but I will – I did not grow up in a gun family. My father served in World War II, but he was not a hunter nor did he believe in keeping a gun in the house for self-defense. I did not own a gun until, after a teaching position I held was eliminated, I got a job as a police officer. When I left the police force, I kept a handgun for self-defense and taught my family members the use of the gun. But I never became the type of country boy depicted in the Hank Williams Jr. music video, “Country Boys Can Survive,” because my interests didn’t really lie in that direction. And I had hoped in my old age to pursue those other interests exclusively. Now I find that it is not possible to live in peace. The liberals want war, they will not accept any terms but unconditional surrender. And that I will not do. So I have had to put aside time for the shotgun and the rifle. I realize that guns are not magic in and of themselves, but I feel I must take some care of this, lest I give the enemy an easy conquest.

It is not easy for a Christian to shed blood. Like Burke, the Christian feels that, “The blood of man should never be shed but to redeem the blood of man. It is well shed for our family, for our friends, for our God, for our country, for our kind. The rest is vanity, the rest is crime.” But what do we make of creatures who delight in bloodletting for the sake of vanity, for the sake of building a utopian Tower of Babel dedicated to the pride of reason, to science, and to the sacred negro? Can creatures possessed of such a zealous thirst for blood be opposed by Christian Europeans with a reluctance to shed blood? Yes, such creatures can and must be opposed, because something inside of us rebels against the inhuman cruelty and bloodlust of the liberals and the colored barbarians. In the name of Him who saves, that something inside of us says, “This shall not go on.”

We have come to this dreadful pass where the grim visage of death in life and life without hope has overwhelmed us, because we have lost sight of the Romance that’s above the sceptered sway of mere reason. The Christ we see in the Gospels is not a Socratic Christ, He is not a great sage. Nor is the Christ we see in the epistles of St. Paul an Aristotelian philosopher. Then who is He? He is the one true knight, the knight errant of Europe who bids us remember the childhood of our race so that we will not forget we belong to His world, a world where reason is humbled and purified before the poetic light of the Word made flesh. Without a childlike faith that does not exalt the rational man who is independent of our Savior, we are wanderers in a foreign land, the land of reason, science, and the noble colored savage.

Trump knows where the magic bricks come from that the Antifaers and the BLMers throw at the police and the private businesses, and he knows where the guns come from which are used to kill white people, yet all he can do is demand that the white police officers in Kenosha, Wisconsin face criminal charges. That is how a democratic leader, the best of the democratic leaders, responds to the liberals’ and the colored barbarians’ assault on the white race. Soros and his ilk are a

protected species as are the colored barbarians. Why should we hold elections at all? The results will be the same: A liberal oligarchy ruling in the name of the sacred negro will govern our nation no matter who holds public office. But we cling to life no matter what. A Trump victory will afford whites a slight delay before their final execution. (2)

Why must we be governed by liberals who hate whites? Why must we cower in our homes waiting to be executed by Antifaers or BLMers? Why is our President more concerned about the meritorious shooting of Jacob Blake than the murder of Cannon Hinnant and thousands of other white victims of black barbarism? (3) The 'why' is there before our eyes. Look at the world we have embraced. When we left His Europe, the non-statistical world of Handel, Shakespeare, and Rembrandt for Rosencrantz and Guildenstern's world of statistical maggots on nature's dung heap, we left faith, hope, and charity behind for the pride of reason, the wonders of science, and a new God, the sacred negro. If we reject that world of glorified maggots for His world, we will put on the whole armour of Christ and defeat the devil and his minions. But that rejection must take place within our souls. We can't have abstract reason and our Savior, we can't have science and our Savior. And most of all, we cannot worship the sacred negro and Jesus Christ. The liberals' war against the Light has been thrust upon us, and we cannot defeat the liberals by way of democracy and democracy's god. We must call upon Him who "hath borne our griefs and carried our sorrows," even if such a divine condescension cannot be statistically computed. +

---

(1) Danielson's murderer was shot by federal police after he gave an interview bragging about the murder. But the local police did not apprehend him after the shooting nor stop the murder before it happened by disarming the mob. Police kill more white criminals than black criminals, even though blacks commit more crimes. There is a racial disparity in law enforcement: Whites are discriminated against. How could it be otherwise when police brutality against innocent whites such as pro-life protesters and ranchers is lauded while simple law enforcement against black barbarians is condemned by church and state? There is no essential difference between the demon-crats and the Republicans on the issue of negro worship. They have all joined hands around the throne of the sacred negro. How effective will the police be if they cannot touch the major perpetrators of crime because they are sacred? Everyone wants approval from their peers. If the police are lauded for arresting whites and condemned for arresting blacks, whom do you think they are going to focus on? Just look at the case of Roger Stone, who was convicted of lying to a pack of liars. Storm troopers with rifles, shotguns, and helicopters were sent to arrest him as if he were ten times more dangerous than John Dillinger. And yet the Antifaers and the BLMers march through our streets looting, murdering, and raping with impunity. But of course their violence is the 'good violence', done to combat white racism. And what is white racism? It is anything that is good and pure and Christian.

(2) Hilary Clinton has ordered Biden not to concede the election no matter what, because she knows that the courts are demon-crat-dominated and the military will back the courts. So if we place our hopes in a Republican victory, which we should not do, our hopes will be dashed. Only that revelatory faith that we have abandoned will sustain us in the dark days ahead. Dostoevsky's Father Zosima gives the lie to our modern kingdom of hell on earth which we must fight "to the knife":

Look at the worldly, at those who set themselves above the people of God—have they not distorted the image of God and His truth? They have science, but science contains nothing that does not come through the senses. The spiritual world, the nobler side of man's being, has been rejected altogether, banned as it were triumphantly, perhaps even with hatred. The world has proclaimed freedom, now more loudly than ever; but what do we find in that freedom of theirs? Nothing but enslavement and suicide! The world says: "You have needs—satisfy them. You have as much right as the rich and the mighty. Don't hesitate to satisfy your needs; indeed, expand your needs and demand more." This is the worldly doctrine of today. And they believe that this is freedom. The result for the rich is isolation and suicide, for the poor, envy and murder; for while the poor have been handed all these rights, they have not been given the means to enjoy them. Some claim that the world is gradually becoming united, that it will grow into a brotherly community as distances shrink and ideas are transmitted through the air. Alas, you must not believe that men can be united in this way. To consider freedom as directly dependent on the number of man's requirements and the extent of their immediate satisfaction shows a twisted understanding of human nature, for such an interpretation only breeds in men a multitude of senseless, stupid desires and habits and endless preposterous inventions. People are more and more moved by envy now, by the desire to satisfy their material greed, and by vanity. Giving dinners, riding in private carriages, occupying high social positions, and having myriads of servants—these are considered so important by some that they devote their whole lives to acquiring them and sacrifice for their sake their love of their fellow men, and sometimes even kill themselves if they cannot obtain what they believe they must have.

(3) If the main cause of the decline of European civilization, which is the replacement of Christ with the noble black savage, is never addressed by the leaders of the West, then the leaders of the West are not fit to lead. For more than a twelfth month the liberals have told the story of the evil whites and the evil civilization they built on the backs of the suffering servants, the negroes. So the liberals have decreed that that civilization and the whites who built it must perish. Trump can act when the Antifa isolate themselves from Black Lives Matter, but neither he nor any other white leader will act forcibly against Black Lives Matter. This careful avoidance of the second person of the liberals' holy trinity while focusing on police brutality against blacks is like a public official who declares war on air pollution by ignoring the factories spewing out noxious fumes while he attacks the people burning leaves in their back yards.

---

## **The Cruel Gods of Liberalism - August 29, 2020**

The major news outlets will not cover the story of Cannon Hinnant's murder. White athletes will not refuse to honor the American flag until there is justice for the white victims of black barbarism. White people will not get T-shirts with pictures of Cannon Hinnant and

the words, 'White Lives Matter,' emblazoned on them. 'Christian' pastors will not condemn black barbarism from their pulpits. Blacks will not be asked to think about black privilege nor be commanded to annihilate themselves because of their long history of racist crimes against the white race. In short, nothing at all will happen within the ranks of the Christian Europeans that will begin a counterrevolution against the armed doctrine of the liberals who have made the destruction of the white race and the deification of the negro the two main tenets of their faith. – CWN

---

O all you host of heaven! O earth! What else?  
And shall I couple hell? O, fie! Hold, my heart,  
And you, my sinews, grow not instant old,  
But bear me stiffly up. Remember thee!  
Ay, thou poor ghost, while memory holds a seat  
In this distracted globe.

–Hamlet

---

They attempted to assassinate the memory of those, whose bodies their friends had massacred; and to consider their murder as a less formal act of justice. They endeavoured even to debauch our pity, and to suborn it in favour of cruelty. They wept over the lot of those who were driven by the crimes of Aristocrats to republican vengeance. Every pause of their cruelty they considered as a return of their natural sentiments of benignity and justice.

–Letters on a Regicide Peace

---

Interviewer. I know things can and will get a lot worse, it doesn't take a prophet to see that, but would I be exaggerating if I said that we, the European people, have never been as far from your country, which is Christian Europe, as we are at present?

Young Drummer. No, you are not exaggerating. The gulf between my nation and your non-nation is enormous.

Int. Is it impossible to bridge that gulf?

Y.D. You bridged it. That is why you are talking with me.

Int. But is it possible for my people, as a people, to bridge the gulf?

Y.D. Like you I do not claim to be a prophet, but it does not appear that the European people are capable of leaving the pigsty of democracy for Christian Europe. They do not have that within which makes the impossible possible.

Int. Pietas?

Y.D. Yes, that is what they lack. Only men and women with hearts of flesh, men and women who love much, can transcend the demons of modernity – rationalism, negro worship, and science.

Int. They won't give up rationalism and science.

Y.D. Then they will not be able to live without the sacred negro, because he is the savior that the post-Christian European must have.

Int. When I look at successful counterrevolutions, Pinochet in Chile, Franco in Spain, and Forrest in North America, I can see what is lacking in the modern European people.

Y.D. For instance?

Int. Well, first, neither Pinochet, Franco, nor Forrest thought they could not act against a democratically elected government. All they were concerned with was a Jacobin-Marxist enemy that was attacking their people. And secondly all three counterrevolutionary leaders were working with a military-oriented base. Forrest had former Confederate soldiers in his ranks, and both Pinochet and Franco had large elements of the military on their side. In my anti-nation, however, the military always backs the demon-cratically elected liberals. So a counterrevolutionary leader in a democracy would have to go against a formidable military power without any military-minded people on his side. And that presupposes that a counterrevolutionary leader, a man opposed to democracy, could actually emerge from the ranks of the European people.



Y.D. What you describe is true. So long as there are no Burkean conservatives, men who see Christian Europe and not democratic Europe as that which must be preserved, you will continue onward to hell on earth.

Int. Then all is cheerless, dark, and deadly?

Y.D. Yes, so long as your people look to the devil for their salvation. So long as they remain in thrall to democracy, they will remain in thrall to Satan, who rules them through his surrogate, the sacred negro. Show me a modern conservative, as distinct from a Burkean conservative, who does not pay homage to the sacred negro.

Int. There aren't any.

Y.D. No, there aren't. But before we end this interview, I must point out to you the greatest counterrevolution in history. Christ is frequently described as a revolutionary against pagan Rome and the paganized Sanhedrin of the Jewish people. But wasn't paganism itself a revolution against the one true God? Adam and Eve were the original revolutionaries, they turned to Satan who promised them equality with God if they would turn their minds to nature and dumb nature's god, who is Satan. Christ, through His incarnation, crucifixion, and resurrection, give all those who believed in Him the power to restore, through His grace, the spiritual equilibrium that was lost through the fall of Adam and Eve. The counterrevolution must start with a spiritual renewal within. We must have hearts of flesh, hearts that can "receive Him still."

Int. But hearts of flesh are proscribed in modern Europe. Church and State have joined together to attack the Word made flesh. Both entities hope to consolidate their power through their illuminated minds.

Y.D. We who are about to die need a miracle. Modern Europe needs the same miracle that we as individuals need. That miracle is much greater than any of the so-called wonders of science. That the dead shall be raised is the one true miracle which was brought about by our Lord Jesus Christ. I don't know what else to tell you. If you have bridged the gulf, then you must continue to believe that there will be others. That charity of honor demands that we believe, and that we act on our belief, that the gulf between modern Europe and Christian Europe can be bridged. Glass mountains can be climbed and enormous gulfs can be bridged by hearts of flesh consecrated to Him who saves.

---

If Trump wins re-election, the win will slow down, ever so slightly, the extermination of the white race. But a Trump victory will not change the religious core of our culture. The modern Europeans are a post-Christian people. Their customs and manners are anti-Christian. And an anti-Christian nation must, of necessity, exterminate whites because of their Christian past. There is no election or policy stemming from democracy that can change the religious core of our liberal nation. Let us suppose, for instance, that a Republican mayor is elected in one of those democratically controlled cities where the Antifa/Black Lives Matter creatures from hell are rioting. And let us suppose the new Republican mayor builds up the city's police force and sends more police out on the street. Will that stop the Antifa/BLM barbarians from rioting and looting? No, it will not. More police is not the solution. The police must be empowered to do what is necessary. Thirty policemen who are empowered to shoot and kill rioters are more effective than 3,000 police officers who are told to stand around and get hit by bricks, stones, and bullets. The demon-crats, the Antifa and the Black Lives Matter all believe in their anti-white, anti-Christian faith. If they are to be successfully opposed they must face off against men with "that charity of honor" which stems from a faith in Christ. A vague Republican faith in democracy and the rule of law will not stop the Jacobin-Marxist coalition of demon-crats, Antifa, and BLM, because the religious faith of the Republicans is the same faith as the demon-crats, Antifa, and BLM: They believe in the sacred negro. So long as that remains the ruling faith of our people, the rioters will not be shot. How can you shoot your gods? (1)

The pathetic conservatives always evade the central issue. I heard Tucker Carlson, one of the best of the pathetic conservatives, urging people, in the wake of the Anti/BLM attacks on the white people of Kenosha, Wisconsin, not to cower in their houses. What are they supposed to do? Call the police? The police, if they do come, will just stand around in order to be targeted by bricks and bullets from the rioters. Should they get their guns and shoot back? What would happen to them if they did give the rioters what they deserve – a bullet? They would either be imprisoned for life or executed. From the liberals' perspective the Antifa and the colored barbarians are on the side of right, they are anti-white and anti-Christian. So long as that post-Christian dystopian vision of reality rules our nation, we will live in hell.

In Dante's *Inferno*, Satan is found upside down in the pit of hell. That is our world, everything has been inverted. What is good is labeled evil and what is evil is labeled good. Bloody rioters are called peaceful protestors for social justice, the dismemberment of children in the womb is called choice, and sexual perversity is called gay rights. Liberalism is an armed doctrine that must be opposed with a force commensurate with the force used against us. Violent rioters and violent abortion doctors cannot be won over with peaceful dialogue. The devil wants Christians to dialogue on into the night as he continues to strike back at God through His children.

Franco's counterrevolution did not outlive him. His people returned to the pigsty of democracy after his death. And Pinochet's people returned to democracy before Pinochet's death. There is a limit to what a European counterrevolutionary leader can accomplish without a sufficiently Christian base. Both Franco and Pinochet had to form coalitions with neo-pagan Europeans and colored pagans in order to oust the Jacobin-Marxists, and those loose coalitions could not sustain the counterrevolution.

In contrast, Forrest's counterrevolution was grounded in a thoroughly Christian, non-utopian, non-modern Christian people, untainted by rationalism, science, and a belief in the sacred negro. That is why the soul-preserving, life-preserving effects of his counterrevolution lived on many years after his death. It was only when the Southern people succumbed to rationalism, science, and the belief in the sacred negro in the 1950's that the Southern people joined the post-Christian, anti-European world. It will take something much greater than a Republican electoral victory to restore that which was lost when we abandoned the European civilization that Forrest defended.

In the two conventions, Democrat and Republican, we saw mad-dog liberals squaring off against classical liberals. The classical liberals, who retain a remnant of the Christian ethos, are certainly preferable. But both liberal camps are part of a closed system. They are part of a rational, science-based, two-plus-two-equals-four civilization, a factoid anti-civilization of dumb nature that destroys hearts of flesh in the name of a mind-forged, man-made religion grounded in rationalism, science and a belief in the sacred negro. No one of either convention will condemn the religion of the sacred negro. Both parties will condemn white racism and ignore the murder of innocent whites such as Jonathan Foster and Cannon Hinnant. Nothing good can be expected from a people who condemn their Christian ancestors and sacrifice their children to the colored barbarians. I'm sick to death of hearing about the superiority of capitalism to Marxism. Both systems are based on a mathematical anti-vision of man. We will not be saved by any mathematical system. We will be saved by the Word made flesh.

You cannot breathe a word about the one culture that was not nature-based in any modern venue. But if we can't even say it – that Christian Europe once existed and must be restored – then how can it – and He – be defended? The conservatives want white people to stop cowering in their homes, they want them to fight by voting for Republicans. What do the Republicans stand for? And what is the white grazer's touchstone of reality? He has been told over and over again that his ancestors, men with hearts of flesh, men like Forrest and his remnant band of confederate veterans, were evil racists who must be consigned to the dustbins of history. So in order to be accepted in the new, non-racist world of the future, the white grazer must not have a heart of flesh, he must, the conservatives tell him, be guided by their non-racist illuminated minds. But what will stop the grazer from following the liberals' illuminated vision? Nothing at all. The reason why men like Matt Drudge and Richard Spencer go from what seem to be conservative causes to leftist causes is that there is no spiritual heart in the anti-Christian ideologies of the neo-pagans and their liberal cousins. A man can easily slide from one mathematical system to another. Where does this leave the European Christians? It leaves us at the foot of the cross asking for mercy for our sins against the Light, and for His protection during the Babylonian captivity of the European people. +

---

(1) The officers in Kenosha did the right thing morally and legally, and they should be commended by liberals and blacks alike. They saved black lives. I thought black lives matter? A black athlete (who, by virtue of being black and an athlete, is sacred) proclaimed, in the aftermath of the Kenosha shooting of that horrendous criminal, that blacks live in constant fear of the police. "No white father," the black athlete intoned, "has to tell his children to be afraid." Oh really, I'm a white father and I had to teach my children to be very afraid because they lived in a nation where black barbarians prey on innocent white people with the encouragement of a liberal cabal of bloodthirsty Jacobins.

The only abuse of blacks I ever witnessed when I was a police officer was done by black police officers. They are just as cruel to their own people as they are to whites. There are only two solutions to the "black problem." Either we follow Malcolm X's solution and give the blacks their own separate state, with black police officers who will show the blacks what real police brutality is, or we reinstate slavery to keep the blacks from killing whites and each other. I prefer segregation, the former solution, not because slavery as practiced by the white Southerners was immoral, but because the maintenance of the negroes places too great a burden on whites. Of course I don't believe that the liberals or their conservative cousins will adopt the humane, Christian solution to the black problem. They will continue to deify negroes and turn a blind eye to their crimes against the white race and other races, including their own. I have often been accused of referring all things to "gentle Jesus." Yes, I do. Christians who love their people in and through Christ do not sacrifice their people on the altars of the liberals' black gods. Tommie Lindh was an innocent victim of black savagery. Cannon Hinnant was an innocent victim of black savagery. Jonathan Foster was an innocent victim of black savagery. The whites being massacred by black savages in South Africa are innocent victims of black savagery.

But who is it that the media and the liberal establishment, which are one and the same, mourn and exalt? The black savages who maim, rape, and murder. Nothing good will happen to the European people, as a people, until they look to restore Christian Europe, a land in which Christian men opposed the slaughter of the innocent, and forsake Liberalism, a land ruled by Satan in the name of the sacred negro.

## **Cannon Hinnant - August 22, 2020**

Sleep on, beloved, sleep and take thy rest,  
Lay down thy head upon thy Savior's breast;  
We love thee well, but Jesus loves thee best—  
Good night! Good night! Good night!

-Sarah Doudney

---

The murder of five year old Cannon Hinnant was particularly horrific because he was so young, but his murder was not out of the ordinary. In point of fact the murder of innocent whites by barbaric blacks is America's favorite national pastime, part of the religious festival called liberalism. Cannon Hinnant joins with the burning white child (see CWNy 8-24-2013), Jonathan Foster, and an ever growing legion of white victims who have been sacrificed to the liberals' barbaric black gods. Would a Christian people permit such a barbaric religious festival to continue? Of course not. Would a pagan people permit such a barbaric religious festival, a festival in which their own people are the sacrificial victims, to continue? Of course not. But would a post-Christian people who have replaced Christ with the sacred negro permit the continuance of such a barbaric religious festival? Yes, a post-Christian people would, could, and does support the continuance of a religious festival in which black barbarians murder whites with the full approval of their liberal devotees.

The major news outlets will not cover the story of Cannon Hinnant's murder. White athletes will not refuse to honor the American flag until there is justice for the white victims of black barbarism. White people will not get T-shirts with pictures of Cannon Hinnant and the words 'White Lives Matter' emblazoned on them. 'Christian' pastors will not condemn black barbarism from their pulpits. Blacks will not be asked to think about black privilege nor be commanded to annihilate themselves because of their long history of racist crimes against the white race. In short, nothing at all will happen within the ranks of the post-Christian Europeans that will begin a counterrevolution against the armed doctrine of the liberals who have made the destruction of the white race and the deification of the negro the two main tenets of their faith.

Time is a difficult thing to fathom. There are events in my life that happened many, many years ago, which seem like they happened only yesterday, and there are events in my life that took place within the last year that seem like events of many, many years ago. In the first category is the memory of something that happened to me about 25 years ago. I was desperately trying to make a living for my family at that time, so I was relieved when a conservative publication asked me to write a series of articles for them. I was aware that I had to avoid the race issue — I couldn't write an article in defense of Nathan Bedford Forrest nor one in defense of apartheid South Africa or the pre-Civil War South. But I was not aware that the use of the term 'Christian Europe' was considered, even in conservative circles, to be a 'racist' term. My refusal to strike that term from the first piece I wrote ended my affiliation with that respectable 'conservative' publication.

The white Europeans' refusal to strike back against the liberals who countenance the massacre of white innocents such as Cannon Hinnant and the black barbarians who perform the ritualistic murders is the result of the churchmen's and the conservatives' (their partners in crime) refusal to accept the reality of Christian Europe. The assertion that the antique Europeans were "Epistles of the Living God" is an anathema to the modern churchmen and the modern conservatives. They prefer to condemn their European ancestors as racist so that they can be part of Liberalism.

It is quite easy to condemn your ancestors because they are dead and unable to defend themselves, but there are consequences that come with what seems like such an easy and expedient condemnation. In the case of modern Europeans the consequence of their willingness to cut their ties to their ancestors because of their 'racism' is that they have no future as a people. They jettisoned their past so they could be part of the future, but they failed to see that the utopian liberals do not plan to allow white people to live in the utopian state of the future. Non-illuminated whites must be exterminated; that is the main tenet of liberalism.

In almost every town and city throughout this nation and the other European nations you can find buildings that are called Christian churches. But what is preached in those churches? Is it the revelatory faith of the antique Europeans? Do the churchmen preach that Christ and Christ alone is our salvation? No, they do not. And they do not preach that doctrine because it is 'racist'. The epistles of the living God, our people, the antique Europeans, preached that Gospel and were 'racists'. And racists cannot enter the kingdom of a god who is a natural god, compatible with reason and liberalism. We have seen who that god is. The Socratic Christ is the new Christ of Liberalism. With a modest smile he refers all religious controversies to the liberals. And they solve every controversy by bowing in awe before the sacred negro and condemning the racist Europeans of the past who blasphemed against the sacred negro by declaring that their 'racist' culture was grounded in the Word made flesh.

Right now the pathetic conservative shadows of the liberals confine their criticisms of the Antifa/Black Lives Matter creatures to talky news shows on which they interview a black 'conservative' who says that it is wrong to exterminate whites of the present in order to make up for the terrible sins of the whites of the past. And the white conservative then falls on his knees in adoration before the black god. How does such a spectacle serve white people? It doesn't serve white people because it perpetuates the lie that whites, when they were a Christian people, were a degenerate race of unnatural, morally depraved creatures from hell. And where does that leave the Christian faith? If what they taught us, our honored dead, about the living God was false, then to whom can we turn to for the words of eternal life? We can't turn to the modern churchmen because they are just echo chambers for the liberals. Must we then turn to the liberals? That is what we are told in church and state – "Truth is liberalism and liberalism is truth." Then it must needs follow that the sacred negro is God and we must fall on our knees and bless him when he murders our white children. We must praise the murderer of Cannon Hinnant because he is part of that collective body called the sacred negro. We cannot escape the logic of the liberals' imperative unless we reject liberalism in its entirety. We must reject the first part of the liberals' trinity, which is reason detached from the human heart, and we must reject science and all its attendant studies of man such as psychology, anthropology, and sociology. When we reject those two entities as revelatory sources, we will reject the sacred negro. And then we will be His people again, loving and hating with hearts of flesh. We will love our own in and through Him, and we will hate those who attack our own. The black barbarians will no longer be allowed to butcher our people with impunity because a cabal of liberals worship Satan through them.

If a European views the modern conservative-liberals or the mad-dog liberals too long without turning his eyes back in time to the antique Europeans, his heart of flesh will turn to stone, just as the modern conservatives' and their liberal cousins' hearts have turned to stone. We must only look at those modern Medusas as reflected and deflected by the shield of old Europe. We must be among them, but we can never be of them. Satan hurled his defiance at the Lord God – "I shall not serve." We must counter his defiance of the living God with our defiance of him. We must refuse to serve Satan by refusing to worship his surrogate, the sacred negro.

We are entering terrible times. The age of democracy is over, which is a good thing; the white Christian has never fared well under the tyranny of democracy. But are the white grazers going to be able to stand up to the liberal oligarchy when it abandons the thin veneer of democracy and imposes martial law? The white grazers are not made of the same stuff as the men who served under Forrest when he took command of the Ku Klux Klan. They have no faith in themselves as a people, because they no longer believe that their people once were Epistles of the Living God. Reason asserts, and science confirms reason's assertion, that there is no such thing as Epistles of the Living God. Such a miracle presupposes that God can take root in the human heart. We are in the position of Puddleglum in *The Silver Chair*, who must maintain the existence of Narnia when Eustace and Jill have begun to believe the White Witch's assertion that there never was a Narnia. Reason and science have beaten down the European people. The White Witches in Church, State, and the Academy tell us that there never was a Narnia, a Christian Europe. If we can't even say it – Christian Europe – we will lose all contact with our people when they were Epistles of the Living God, and we will continue to be enslaved by liberals who encourage their black gods to feast on the blood of white people.

We constantly hear the refrain that black lives matter. But let's go to the heart of that doctrine. What does it mean? It means that no lives matter because there is no God. The BLM movement is straight from hell. Satan is a coward. He is afraid to strike out at God directly, so he strikes at Him through His children. We are either children of God, created in His image, or we are creatures of dumb nature, just maggots on a garbage heap. That is the magnificent vision of man presented to us by the BLM movement – we are all natural, organic maggots, but somehow, through an act of faith, we must believe that the blacks are a special deified breed of maggots that can give us a vision of – what do they give us a vision of? They give us a vision of hell on earth. To live one day with the vision of our people when they were a people consecrated to the living God is worth more than ten thousand lifetimes with the liberals' BLM vision of hell.

The witches of liberalism have ensnared the European people in the coils of Satan through the religion of the sacred negro. White lives matter most of all because it is only when white people exist as a people, when they are Epistles of the Living God, that we can see a vision of the God who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. He didn't die for just the white race, He died for us all, but do I need to state the obvious? Yes, I do, because Satan's minions have made the truth illegal. Only the white race championed the God who died for all. If we are extinguished as a people we will live in a world – we now do live in such a world – a world without love, without hope, a world that no longer knows what mercy means. Please God, take Cannon Hinnant into thy loving care and abide with us amid the encircling gloom of liberalism. We call on you by name, our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. +

---

### **Epistles of the Living God - August 15, 2020**

But mercy is above the sceptred sway;  
It is enthroned in the hearts of Kings,

It is an attribute to God himself;  
And earthly power doth then show likest God's  
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore Jew,  
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,  
That in the course of justice, none of us  
Should see salvation. We do pray for mercy,  
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  
The deeds of mercy.

–*The Merchant of Venice*

---

I remember a conservative columnist some forty years ago writing that there was a greater chance of a Sioux Indian uprising than a Nazi uprising. He was making a comment on the liberals' propensity to bring up the Nazis every time a Republican disagreed with the Democrats. Nothing has changed over the last forty years, except – I wouldn't have thought it possible – the liberals have increased and extended their use of the Nazi accusation, using it even more than they did forty years ago. Apparently "age cannot wither nor custom stale" the liberals' infinite delight in invoking the Nazi bogeyman to denigrate their opponents. But wouldn't it be ironic if the liberals, who have been using the Nazi accusation for their own political purposes for the past 75 years, have actually brought the Nazis back to life in reality through their support of Antifa and BLM? I bring this up because I went to a gun shop this past weekend with one of my sons. He was having trouble getting the armaments he needs because in the wake of the Antifa/BLM assault on the white race, arms and ammunition sales have increased tenfold. Kipling wrote about the time when the English would begin to hate. Is it possible that the white grazers have begun to hate? The white men in the gun shop were not hunters preparing for deer season. Nor, with the exception of my son and I, were they Christian warriors. They were angry young men who clearly identified themselves as the men whom the liberals have been invoking every time they want to discredit their opponents. Did this bring me great joy? No, it did not. I took a certain grim satisfaction in the knowledge that a large group of white males are not going to go quietly into the night just because the liberals ordain it, but I want a Christian counterrevolution, not a Neo-Nazi revolution. Hitler was the lesser of two evils during World War II – Stalin and Mao were the greater dangers – but a Christian does not choose between two evils, he champions the good. The Christ-centered Europeans have not yet entered the lists against the liberals. Perhaps they will never appear again this side of heaven. However, we can still endure our going hence, in the name of our Lord, who tells us that he who endures to the end shall be saved.

The mantra of the Black Lives Matter barbarians is social justice. They demand it, they must have it, or they will kill every white person on the face of the earth. Since the church men won't give the Christian response to the BLM barbarians' lying assertion that the white race has not treated the black race properly, thereby giving them the right to engage in violent assaults on white people, let me provide the Christian response.

The liberals have left Christianity behind them in the 'age of superstition,' and the blacks have never been a Christian people. The blacks who are exceptions have always been a persecuted minority within the black community because they are perceived as toadies to the white man. So in the absence of a Christian vision we would not expect either the liberals or the blacks to have any comprehension of real justice.

The European Christian knows, as Shakespeare's Portia tells us, "That, in the course of justice, none of us should see salvation. We do pray for mercy, And that same prayer doth teach us to render the deeds of mercy." But the liberal, like Shylock, does not believe he needs mercy because he believes he is without sin. There is only one great sin in the liberal's new religion and that is white racism. He, the liberal, is illuminated, he has progressed beyond racism. So he is without sin, but thee and me are horrendous sinners. We are non-illuminated whites. And there can be no mercy for us because there is no mercy for racists in the liberals' utopian faith. The liberals feel no kinship with racists, so they respond to all pleas for mercy as Shylock responded: "My deeds upon my head! I crave the law, the penalty and forfeit of my bond."

That is also where the blacks have placed themselves. Like Shylock, like the liberals, they crave justice without mercy because they see themselves as a race of people who are devoid of sin. What is actually the case? If the blacks received justice without mercy what would be their fate? They would be exterminated. Whenever whites have extended charity toward blacks by trying to stop their tribal bloodlettings and giving them a glimpse of the one true God, the blacks have repaid that charitable outreach with blood. The old South, apartheid South Africa, and French San Domingo are three of the most striking examples of white charity and black treachery. But the entire history of the interaction between the white race and the black race, when looked at from a Christian perspective, reveals that the black race, with a few exceptions, has repaid the whites' charity toward them with hatred and malice. But despite the historical record, which shows us that blacks have never learned the difference between mercy and sacrifice, and despite the fact that blacks have never ceased to regard kindness as a weakness they could exploit, the liberals tell us that the whites are guilty of the mistreatment of blacks and must submit to their annihilation because of their guilt. If we were to give the liberals and the BLM barbarians the justice they demand, we would have to execute the liberals for treason and the blacks for their crimes of violence

against the white race. However, because of our Lord, we must be merciful, we must temper justice with mercy, but that mercy should never countenance the sacrifice of our people to liberal treachery and black barbarism.

If actual elections are allowed to take place this fall, Biden and company will lose. The Demon-crats have allowed the Antifa/BLM fiends to push them too far to the left too quickly. Their only hope is to have virtual elections, which would result in a Demon-cratic victory. What the Demon-crats have failed to grasp is that the white grazers do not believe they are racist. They will accept the fact that their ancestors were racist, but they do not believe they themselves are racists. And they resent being called racists. If they are allowed to vote, which I doubt, they will return Trump to the White House. But whether Trump is re-elected or the Demon-crats steal the election, the utopian religion of the liberals, the religion of the sacred negro, will remain the state religion of the satanic republic called the United States of America.

All that the white grazer wants is to be included in utopia. He wants to be certified 'non-racist' so that he can live and breathe in the brave new world of the liberals. He is willing to worship at the shrine of the sacred negro so long as he can be absolved of the sin of his racist ancestors. But there is the rub. The antique Europeans were not racist in the modern liberals' meaning of that term. They were not evil overlords who took advantage of poor, downtrodden negroes. Far from it, they were a remarkable race of people who loved their own people in and through the God of mercy. And because they loved in His name, they were able to extend kindness and mercy to the bloodthirsty barbarians of the colored races without capitulating to them. When the Europeans lost their faith in Christ, they capitulated to the bloodthirsty barbarians. We will never stop the violence in our cities or change the prevailing climate of despair in our nation by renouncing our Christian ancestors as evil racists. Our people were epistles of Christ, "written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart." White people will not be allowed in the new kingdom of hell on earth, but why should we seek that kingdom? If our only hope is to live in a liberal pigsty while rejecting our people who were epistles of the living God, then we are of all people most to be pitied, for we will have denounced our hope of heaven for a place in the liberals' hell on earth.

Currently the conservatives' response to the Antifa/BLM assault on the white race is to report their atrocities to the white grazers in order to encourage the white grazers to vote for a conservative liberal, who is less extreme than the Antifa/BLM barbarians. An eight-year-old white boy is cut to pieces in London by a crazed African, the Swedish police blame the victims when the Moslems murder innocent whites, and in the United States those who murder, loot, and rape are given free rein so long as their atrocities are done under the banner of the sacred negro. If you think voting for a more moderate liberal should be our response to the atrocities committed on an hourly basis by the Antifa/BLM barbarians, then you are a pathetic creation of reason divorced from the human heart. I recently heard one of those pathetic conservative commentators go back in time to condemn 'racist Democrats' in the name of his modern conservative, anti-racist credentials. He went through a litany of Democrats who had once been slavers and segregationists and enjoined his listeners to join with the non-racist Republicans. You cannot damn your own people, the people with hearts of flesh, and expect to conquer the Antifa/BLM creatures from hell. If your people were really as evil as you say, why should non-Christian utopians who do not believe in mercy forgive you? What should be lauded in our past, the intense love that whites had for their own people and their charitable outreach to the people of other races, has been unilaterally condemned by churchmen, Republicans, and Demon-crats. A plague on all their houses. Let us ride with Forrest once again:

The meeting was held in Room Number 10 in the Maxwell House, and Lee's letter was read. In the course of the meeting a name for the Klan was discussed. Taking the word "invisible" out of Lee's note, somebody suggested the Invisible Empire; and this was adopted. The next matter was to select the commander and his title. A voice from the back of the room called out, "The Wizard of the Saddle, General Nathan Bedford Forrest." He was then elected and became the Grand Wizard of the Invisible Empire. His powers were supreme.

In this way was General Forrest made the last ruler of the South. Only those veterans who were honorably discharged and those who were in prison at the end of the war were eligible, something over one hundred thousand men.

"It was," says Judge Albion Tourgee, a Reconstruction Judge in North Carolina, "a daring conception for a conquered people. Only a race of warlike instincts and regal pride could have conceived or executed it.

"It was a magnificent conception, and, in a sense, deserved success. It differed from all other attempts at revolution in the caution and skill required in its conduct. It was a movement made in the face of the enemy and an enemy of overwhelming strength. Should it succeed, it would be the most brilliant revolution ever accomplished. Should it fail—well, those who engaged in it felt that they had nothing more to lose."

It did not fail. It baffled in a few years all the efforts of the victors to destroy the Culture of the South, and it succeeded, when the fortunes of the Southern people were at their lowest, because for once it had a leader whom the people knew would not fail. It was the last brilliant example in Western Culture of what Feudalism could do.

*-Bedford Forrest and His Critter Company, Andrew Lytle*

Andrew Lytle uses the term 'Feudalism'; I would use the term pietas, but I see in Forrest what Lytle saw and what Thomas Nelson Page saw in the Goth.<sup>(1)</sup> I see the undaunted, invincible spirit of the European hero undeterred by rationalism, science, and negro worship, determined to fight for his people in the name of Him who saves. That is the spirit we need. Is that what we shall see once again in the European people? It doesn't appear so. The coming war will be between the contending liberal factions – the Marxist-Jacobins and the neo-pagans.

The grace of God once enveloped the European people. Perhaps if we love much and believe, the culture of the people who became epistles of the living God will triumph over the darkness of liberalism. It seems simple-minded to place our hopes in pietas, but the striking thing about our people when they ruled the earth was their child-like simplicity. They really did believe in the story of the Christ child who became the Hero that saved mankind from sin and death. It is our faith in Him, not in reason, science, or the sacred negro, that will see us safely home. +

---

(1) On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

–*Under the Crust*, Thomas Nelson Page

---

### **Christian Europe is His Word Made Flesh - August 8, 2020**

Do we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you? Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men: Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. –2 Corinthians 3:1-3

---

You must attend to the commencement of this story, for when we get to the end we shall know more than we do now about a very wicked hobgoblin; he was one of the very worst, for he was a real demon. One day, when he was in a merry mood, he made a looking-glass which had the power of making everything good or beautiful that was reflected in it almost shrink to nothing, while everything that was worthless and bad looked increased in size and worse than ever. – Hans Christian Andersen, "The Snow Queen"

---

A number of white grazers and even some of the older demon-crats have expressed concern over the extreme measures of the Antifa/BLMers. I prefer the extremism of the Antifa/BLMers to the older, more moderate Jacobinism of the demon-crats. I prefer the new extremism because I want the choice that the white grazer must make to be crystal clear: Satan or Christ, there is no in-between position a man can take. That has always been the case, but previously the white grazer, if he wanted to have this world and Christ, could wrap Christ up in democracy and civil rights and claim he was being Christian in his support of democratic institutions, and he could claim that his worship of the negro was a noble attempt to enfranchise the downtrodden negro. Now it is clear that the grazer must either completely submit to the liberals and their negro gods or else he must make war against them with the realization that there can be no peace between the white race and the Antifa/BLMers.

What our visionaries such as Burke and our poets such as Hawthorne told us about the utopian Europeans has turned out to be all too true. Burke told us that they would calmly assent to the extermination of millions upon millions of people in the name of the future utopia. And Hawthorne warned us that nothing from our past was untouchable, the utopians would destroy everything. History imitated art recently when the Scots proposed legislation that would criminalize the reading of the Bible in churches and Antifa/BLMers in Portland burned Bibles. Let me reference Hawthorne's short story, "Earth's Holocaust":

The doubt implied in his question was well founded. In the general destruction of books already described, a holy volume, that stood apart from the catalogue of human literature, and yet, in one sense, was at its head, had been spared. But the Titan of innovation,—angel or fiend, double in his nature, and capable of deeds befitting both characters,—at first shaking down only the old and rotten shapes of things, had now, as it appeared, laid his terrible hand upon the main pillars which supported the whole edifice of our moral and spiritual state. The inhabitants of the earth had grown too enlightened to define their faith within a form of words, or to limit the spiritual by any analogy to our material existence. Truths which the heavens trembled at were now but a fable of the world's infancy. Therefore, as the final sacrifice of human error, what else remained to be thrown upon the embers of that awful pile, except the book which, though a celestial revelation to past ages, was but a voice from a lower sphere as regarded the present race of man? It was done! Upon the blazing heap of falsehood and worn-out truth—things that the earth had never needed, or had ceased to need, or had grown childishly

weary of—fell the ponderous church Bible, the great old volume that had lain so long on the cushion of the pulpit, and whence the pastor's solemn voice had given holy utterance on so many a Sabbath day. There, likewise, fell the family Bible, which the long-buried patriarch had read to his children,—in prosperity or sorrow, by the fireside and in the summer shade of trees,—and had bequeathed downward as the heirloom of generations. There fell the bosom Bible, the little volume that had been the soul's friend of some sorely tried child of dust, who thence took courage, whether his trial were for life or death, steadfastly confronting both in the strong assurance of immortality.

One race championed the one true God, which is why that race must be eliminated from the face of the earth. The prescription against the Bible in Scotland and the burning of the Bible in Portland indicate that the “children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light.” The liberals are going to the heart of white culture: they are attacking the Word made flesh. What should be our response? Should we try to vote for a candidate who is against burning bibles? Would such a candidate, even if he were elected, have the courage to put a stop to such blasphemy if the blasphemy was done in the name of the sacred negro? Of course not. The liberals have moved on, they have a new god much more suited for the dystopian hell they envision for the new, non-racist, non-sexist, non-Christian mankind of the future.

Yesterday I heard a ‘conservative’ pointing out what he felt was an illogical inconsistency, namely the Bible burnings. “That has nothing to do with race, that has to do with religion.” But that is precisely the issue. The modern conservatives, who are mere shadows of the liberals, have never understood what their mad-dog liberal cousins do understand. The race issue is a religious issue. The rationalist utopians hate God for creating a world that is imperfect; they do not accept the reality of original sin. How can they, the illuminated creatures of light, be tainted with original sin? They must strike out at the Christian God by destroying His image in man. What sacred book did the evil ones, the white Christian Europeans, revere? That book must be destroyed.

The mad-dog liberals are not being illogical when they burn bibles. They are being maniacally and consistently logical. It is the conservatives who appeal to reason, abstracted from the heart, and the theologians who deny the reality of the Word which was made flesh in the culture of the antique Europeans that are being illogical. They deny the Christ who entered human history while they look to another more perfect Christ and a more perfect Christian people of the future, a Christ who is subordinate to the sacred negro and a non-racist band of illuminated whites who worship the sacred negro. Thus does the utopian ideal destroy our hope in ages past. We do not need a utopia that can never come to fruition, we are sorely-tried souls who need our Savior, who told us that He has a house of many mansions prepared for those who call on Him by name.

The reason ‘Founding Father’ conservatives such as Ann Coulter have turned on Trump is because they do not perceive the reality of the American experiment in utopia. We, the Christian Europeans, have lost the cultural war, we have spent the unbought grace of life, our Christian heritage, and ceded everything to the liberal utopians. Trump has fought a courageous rearguard action; he has saved some white lives, for which he should be lauded. Those conservatives who want something more from Trump than a rearguard fight for a few white lives need to look at life without the utopian-tainted glasses of democracy and reason. America has not gone wrong, it was wrong from the start. You cannot extract Christ from the body politic and place reason in His stead. If you do, you will get what we have now, a new religion of the sacred negro. The ‘get the kids back to school’ movement championed by the conservatives reveals the non-conservative ethos of the conservatives. Why should a Christian European want the kids back in school? What is being taught in our schools? The hatred of the white race is being taught in our schools. The love of the sacred negro is being taught in our schools. And the hatred of Christ the Lord is being taught in our schools. In the name of God, why should we want to ‘get the kids back to school’?

Is truth revelatory or is it rational? The Dream of the Rood Europeans were revelatory Christians. Christ did not come to them from out there, in the land of reason where the theologians and philosophers dwell, He came to their hearts, and it was there that they knew Him as their Lord and kinsman. The early conflicts within Christendom were conflicts between rationalist Christians and revelatory Christians. Over time the revelatory Christians were squeezed out of the church and Christianity and rationalism became one. Now those twin towers of atheism, intellectual Christianity and secularized academia, have joined forces to attack the revelatory faith of the European Christians. I have heard nothing from the ‘conservatives’ during this current onslaught of the devil by way of Covid-19 and Black Lives Matter that indicates they understand that their illuminated minds, unaided by the revelatory faith of the antique Europeans, are no match for the religious zeal of their mad dog liberal cousins. I hope Trump wins reelection — his reelection will slow down the Marxist-Jacobin assault — but whether he wins or loses, it will not change the fact that the Europeans have lost the cultural war without a fight. Only revelatory Christians will be able to retake Europe from Satan. They hear a different drummer, a drummer who is the exact opposite of Thoreau's distant drummer. We walketh in the counsel of the ungodly, standeth in the way of sinners, and sitteth in the seat of the scornful when we dialogue with the liberals through the democratic process. Isn't that dialogue an admission that liberalism is legitimate, that Satan can rule Europe if he is democratically elected?



‘We the People’ democracy is based on the heretical notion that our rational minds are free from original sin. So on into the night the conservatives debate with the liberals and prove, beyond a rational shadow of a doubt, that their democratic solutions are superior to the mad-dog liberals’ democratic solutions. Still, the liberals do not desist, they tune up their pitched voices to a higher decibel and then shout down all opposition. They should not have the right to speak blasphemy let alone to shout it from the rooftops and make it holy writ. You can’t allow the churches and the schools to spew out the new gospel – that the sacred negro is our savior – and then try to counter the effects of that doctrine – such as the Bible burnings, the burning and looting, and the rapes and murders– with your superior reasoning. The conservatives’ plea for more reason and more democracy in the wake of the Antifa/BLMers’ attack on the white race is the moral equivalent of a doctor advising a lung cancer patient to smoke more cigarettes in order to recover from his lung cancer.

The revelatory Christian believes that “man proposes and God disposes.” The rationalist Christian believes that man proposes and man disposes, because God is a fool. Religion in the 20th and 21st centuries consists of a panel of experts sitting around discussing the problem of man and the problem of God in the grand style of Socrates and Plato. And what do the experts decide? They decide that you can’t have a religion based on the incarnation, crucifixion, and resurrection of Christ. You must have a more rationally based faith that can be all things to all people. You must allow men to have two masters; they must be able to have God and Mammon: Christ and the negro. And you must allow men to get to heaven via the Celestial Railroad rather than by the way of the cross. All that is necessary on the utopian, Celestial Railroad is a large supply of stones which the passengers can throw at the original sinners, the ‘racist’ antique Europeans who are struggling along the steep and narrow path.

The Black Lives Matter creatures from hell are now demanding ‘protection’ money from white businesses. They are also demanding that they should determine how black history should be taught. Need I point out the white businesses are already paying protection money to black barbarians in that they have been forced to allow shoplifting and burglaries when the perpetrators are black? And need I point out that our schools already teach black history; they teach white children to hate their Christian ancestors and worship black barbarians?

There is no hope for white Europeans if they stay within the perimeters of intellectual Christianity and democracy. Within that world there is nothing but despair and death. But there is life in the revelatory Christianity of the antique Europeans which surfaces in our modern era whenever a poor sinner sees the Light that shineth in darkness, with a heart of flesh. We cannot allow the liberals to stop up all the channels of God’s grace, which is what we allow when we denounce white pietas as racism, and expect to climb out of this modern utopian hell. The Gospel of Christ can still give us the faith, hope, and charity to defy the devil and his minions in the ranks of the demon-crats, the Antifa, and the BLM, but we must receive it as His living word and not as an ossified piece of parchment that is only the purview of scholars and religious experts. The first apostles and St. Paul did not love a Socrates, a great teacher; they loved a Savior. And so did our people love Him before they became too smart to weep and believe. It is now time to love much and “receive Him still.” That is how we shall defeat the modern purveyors of hell on earth. +

---

### **Up Off Our Knees - August 1, 2020**

To Beatrice,—so radically had her earthly part been wrought upon by Rappaccini’s skill,—as poison had been life, so the powerful antidote was death; and thus the poor victim of man’s ingenuity and of thwarted nature, and of the fatality that attends all such efforts of perverted wisdom, perished there, at the feet of her father and Giovanni. Just at that moment Professor Pietro Baglioni looked forth from the window, and called loudly, in a tone of triumph mixed with horror, to the thunderstricken man of science,— “Rappaccini! Rappaccini! And is this the upshot of your experiment!”

-Nathaniel Hawthorne, “Rappaccini’s Daughter”

---

The European people are a captive people; they are the slaves of the negroes. There have been other captive peoples throughout the history of mankind, but the European people are the first people that have willingly handed themselves over to another race of people without being conquered in battle. They surrendered themselves to an alien race without firing a shot against their enemies. What about the Civil War? That was whites fighting whites – we shall come back to that anon.

The uniqueness of the Europeans’ willing surrender to an alien race cannot be understood unless we understand the uniqueness of the Christian faith. That God entered human history at one particular point in time, not as a cyclical nature god, but as the God above nature, was completely different from all other religions. And that uniqueness was increased when Christ came to us as a God of mercy, not as a God of sacrifice. When the European people could no longer believe in the miracle of the God of mercy they sought to return to the gods of sacrifice, but they could never return to unadulterated paganism. Their new paganism had to incorporate a nature god, a cruel, sacrificial god, and their new paganism also had

to include, because of their Christian past, a suffering servant. So the negro had to become the new God of the European people. He was not and is not the god of any other race, not even the black race; he is the god of the European people. He is uniquely their god and their god alone, because they and they alone made Christ the center of a civilization that the theologians tell us never existed. However, theologians have always been ahistorical because actual history is not an abstraction, and theologians deal only in abstractions.

The hierarchy of the North at the time of the uncivil Civil War consisted of utopians, men who had forsaken actual Christ-centered Christianity for an abstract intellectual Christianity, and men who had forsaken Christianity altogether. It was New England that was dominated by fiery theologians such as Jonathan Edwards and secular theologians such as Julia Ward Howe. The South had Christian pastors such as R. L. Dabney. The utopians needed, as utopians always do, something new and perfect, so they created a religion without humanity in order to destroy all that was old, imperfect, and humane. Hawthorne, who saw with blinding sight because he lived in the midst of the utopian theorists, wrote about the utopian mania. In his short stories and novel *The Blithedale Romance*, he depicted the inhumanity of the utopians, who, in the name of a utopian humanity, set themselves the task of destroying every last vestige of what was good and noble in the imperfect civilization they lived in.

With her dying breath, Rappaccini's daughter, who has been poisoned by her utopian father, tells him, "Thy words of hatred are like lead within my heart; but they too, will fall away as I ascend. Oh, was there not, from the first, more poison in thy nature than in mine?" Yes, there was and is much, much more poison in the utopians than in the imperfect, white Christians. The Civil War was a war of white Christians against Christian utopians and secular utopians. Thomas Nelson Page wrote that, "We shall aid the negro, but we shall not be dominated by him." The Northern utopians told Page, the Christian, that, "You shall be dominated by him, because he is our god." The utopians have won. White people, North and South, worship the sacred negro: they will not oppose anything done in his name. The shocking moral cowardice of the European people was on display during the opening festivities of the baseball season. In all of baseball, only one man refused to kneel to the sacred negro. I hope that one man, Samuel Coonrod, will stay true to his instincts, that he will not be intellectualized out of his faith by a 'Christian' pastor. God bless him for choosing the narrow way.

Let us never forget what Rappaccini's daughter discovers – the poison is in them, the utopian liberals. They hate with the passion of the devil, the malignant fiend that hates our Savior because He loves us. And they have advanced their cause under the banner of the sacred negro. The blacks do not understand liberalism; they don't understand the inner dynamics of a post-Christian people, because they have never been a Christian people. All they understand is power; they understand that whites are weak and will give them whatever they want. Nor do the utopian whites see what is obvious – the blacks hate them just as much as they hate the white grazers. The liberals do not see that obvious fact because they must have a savior, a savior that they can champion against the evil white race. The Antifa goons are a more militant, more violent version of Atticus Finch, but they remain Atticus Finch – they will help their black gods to conquer the white enemy. And they think their black gods will be grateful – "Stand up, your father is passing." Yet, the BLMers tell the Antifa that they do not want their help, but that doesn't stop the utopian whites – "Though he slay me, yet will I trust in him."

War is a great tragedy, but the surrender of a once Christian people to barbaric negroes without even a whimper is a far greater tragedy. The Europeans have reached the season mentioned in Ecclesiastes: "A time to kill, and a time to heal; A time to break down, and a time to build up." The gradual destruction of the white race has accelerated; it is now the season to kill whites – that is the Ecclesiastes of the liberals. The white Christians must kill in self-defense and then they must rebuild Christian Europe. The moral imperative is clear, but so long as the false Aslan, the abstract Christ of the theologians, reigns supreme in the churches, which have become anti-pietas churches, the European people will remain the sacrificial offerings of the liberals' church of the sacred negro.

I once heard two women at the supermarket engage in one of those morbid, medical gossip chats that women at supermarkets love to engage in: "They opened him up to see how bad it was and they immediately closed him up when they saw how widespread the cancer was," the morbid gossip informed her companion. The listener replied, "I guess an operation was ruled out?" "Of course," the ghoulish gossip informed her, "there is no hope." Recent events have opened up the insides of the European grazers and that has been quite a revelation. The moral rot seems to be incurable. But, contra Unwin and Spengler, the spirit is not subject to mere biology. The physical cancer that was incurable in the poor man who was the subject of the supermarket gossips is not the same cancer that the European people are sick with. The European peoples have a fatal spiritual cancer that will surely kill them, but only, "If these shadows are not altered."

Will the shadows of Jacobin-Marxist, negro worship be altered? That is more than we can know. The devil must work through his minions. It's possible they have pushed too hard and too fast. If you take everything away from the white grazer, his hope in another world and his material subsistence in this world, might not he become something more than a grazer? Or will the white grazer cling to his assigned pigsty in Liberaldom in order to avoid confrontation with the liberals and their gods? Right now it appears that the white grazer will cling to his pigsty.

We must ask ourselves why a race of people who produced warriors such as Alfred the Great, Sir Henry Havelock, and Nathan Bedford Forrest, artists such as Rembrandt, composers such as Handel, and poets such as Shakespeare now produce cowardly men who bow before the sacred negro, and ‘artists’ who can only laud graffiti painted on the walls of urban slums by their black gods, graffiti that is inferior in quality to the paintings of prehistoric cave dwellers? Is this the promised end? Is this the final resting place of the European people? Or can we hope that some Europeans will at least at the hour of their deaths manage to write “Our Father Which...” in the mud of their pigsty?

The key element in the Jacobin-Marxists’ assault on the white race and the Christian churchmen’s repudiation of the antique Europeans is the ahistorical, utopian vision. The Jacobin-Marxists — without the slightest interest in the historical record of the white’s interactions with the black race, which shows that the whites were the victims, their kindness to the blacks was repaid with bloodthirsty treachery — launch an unholy crusade against the white race based on the whites’ alleged mistreatment of blacks. And then they step in as the visionaries who will give us a perfect world in which illuminated whites cavort around the throne of the sacred negro. And the Amen chorus for the liberals, the utopian churchmen, make way for the sacred negro in their churches while they deny the historical Christ, the Christ who lived in the hearts and the civilization of the antique Europeans.

Caleb was in his mid-eighties when he asked to be placed in the midst of the enemies of the Lord so he could fight for his Lord:

And now, behold, the LORD hath kept me alive, as he said, these forty and five years, even since the LORD spake this word unto Moses, while the children of Israel wandered in the wilderness: and now, lo, I am this day fourscore and five years old. As yet I am as strong this day as I was in the day that Moses sent me: as my strength was then, even so is my strength now, for war, both to go out, and to come in. Now therefore give me this mountain, whereof the LORD spake in that day; for thou heardest in that day how the Anakims were there, and that the cities were great and fenced: if so be the LORD will be with me, then I shall be able to drive them out, as the LORD said. And Joshua blessed him, and gave unto Caleb the son of Jephunneh Hebron for an inheritance. —Joshua 14: 10-13

A foolish old man? No, Caleb triumphed over the Anakims despite the fact that they seemed invincible. “You shall have the city of Hebron with all its giants, if you will gather together your men and take it.” Nothing is impossible for European men who keep faith with the Christ of history, our blessed Savior. If we get up off our knees, if we refuse to give homage to the sacred negro, we will take Christian Europe back from the liberals and the colored heathens.

Black despair has descended on our people, because of the Chinese attack on the white race through the COVID-19 virus and the Antifa/BLM attack on the white race. It is time to do battle with the enemies of our God and our people. The white grazers must see someone of their own race standing up against the liberals and their negro gods. I know the reaction to such an assertion — “No one will follow a Christian leader.” That is quite possible, but should that matter? Who wants to live in their world, a world consecrated to Satan, through the sacred negro?

The utopian poison is in them. If we look to our history, not to their cruel, inhumane, utopian theories, we will renew the covenant our people made with the living God. We will place Christ back in our hearts and our nation. Let us get up off our knees and stand with Joshua — “As for me and my house, we will serve the Lord.” +

---

## **The Light Beyond Rationalism - July 25, 2020**

For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks foolishness; But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. —1 Corinthians 1: 19-25

---

Based purely on my own anecdotal observations I have concluded that this stepped-up, intensified attack on the white race by Antifa and Black Lives Matter has brought out a rage in some white grazers that was not there before, and it has forced some of the button-down conservatives who have never liked people such as me using terms like “satanic” and “negro worship” to concede that just maybe the liberals are satanic and just maybe they really and truly do worship the negro. But will the rage against the BLM fiends and the new awareness amongst some whites about the real religion of modern Europeans bring about a change in the hellish conditions the European people are currently living under?

I doubt it, because of the extent that the worship of Satan, through the sacred negro, has become institutionalized throughout the European world. Burke said that if “we suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for

one twelvemonth, he will become our master.” The liberals have been telling us their story of the evil white race and the sacred negro for over one hundred years, which is why I think it is highly unlikely that the rage of a few white grazers and the new awareness of a few white conservatives is going to start a white counterrevolution. But unlikely is not the same as impossible. If a poll had been taken at the time of Christ’s crucifixion and resurrection from the dead on the subject of “which religious cult will replace Rome?” you probably would have gotten 45% for Mithra, 35% for Cybele, and the remaining 20% for the philosophers. The religion of the Nazarene would have gotten a statistical zero. The spirit is not subject to the same laws of birth, death, and decay as plant life, no matter what Oswald Spengler tells us.

In order for the European people to go from here, the worship of the sacred negro, to there, the worship of Christ the Lord, they must reject rationalism. St. Paul led the charge against the rationalist dragon when he stood before the Athenian philosophers and preached Christ crucified, Christ risen. Hamlet followed in his train when he confronted Rosencrantz and Guildenstern and refused to be “played upon” as if he were a musical instrument with a predetermined amount of notes. Burke echoed St. Paul’s and Shakespeare’s defiance of the rationalists when he exposed the “cold malignity of the metaphysicians”:

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thorough-bred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of Evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. –*Letter to a Noble Lord*

Scott continued the attack:

Among those who were the first to ridicule and abandon the self-denying principles in which the young knight was instructed and to which he was so carefully trained up, Louis XIth of France was the chief. That Sovereign was of a character so purely selfish—so guiltless of entertaining any purpose unconnected with his ambition, covetousness, and desire of selfish enjoyment, that he almost seems an incarnation of the devil himself, permitted to do his utmost to corrupt our ideas of honour in its very source. Nor is it to be forgotten, that Louis possessed to a great extent that caustic wit which can turn into ridicule all that a man does for any other person’s advantage but his own, and was, therefore, peculiarly qualified to play the part of a cold hearted and sneering fiend. –*Quentin Durward*

Then Dostoyevsky’s *Underground Man*: “A man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key,” and Dmitri Karamazov: “I defy the logic of two plus two equals four,” upheld the Christian Europeans’ defiance of rationalism, a defiance grounded in the Gospel of Christ and the epistles of St. Paul.

And finally it was Ian Maclaren’s young pastor of Drumtochty, who came to Drumtochty determined to bring the newer, scientific Gospel to his people; but then, with the memory of his mother in his heart, he preached Christ crucified, Christ risen, the unadulterated, unscientized Christ, to the people of Drumtochty.

Next minute he was kneeling on the hearth, and pressing the magnum opus, that was to shake Drumtochty, into the heart of the red fire, and he saw, half-smiling and half-weeping, the impressive words, “Semitic environment,” shrivel up and disappear.

As the last black flake fluttered out of sight, the face looked at him again, but this time the sweet brown eyes were full of peace.

It was no masterpiece, but only the crude production of a lad who knew little of letters and nothing of the world. Very likely it would have done neither harm nor good, but it was his best, and he gave it for love’s sake, and I suppose that there is nothing in a human life so precious to God, neither clever words nor famous deeds, as the sacrifices of love.

The moon flooded his bedroom with silver light, and he felt the presence of his mother. His bed stood ghostly with its white curtains, and he remembered how every night his mother knelt by its side in prayer for him. He is a boy once more, and repeats the Lord’s Prayer, then he cries again, “My mother! My mother!” and an indescribable contentment fills his heart. –*Beside the Bonnie Brier Bush*

The folklore of our people gives the lie to rationalism. But is the folklore true? If we decide, with our abstract reason, that the folklore is false, then we will add the sacred negro and science to our unholy trinity and reject the Christ in whom the European people believed. And then we will, of necessity, have to reject the European people. There are variations on the anti-European theme. The intellectual Christians squeeze Christ into the ‘abstract reason’ position of the unholy trinity and place the negro in the position of the Savior while retaining science as the Holy Ghost. The neo-pagans embrace abstract reason and science while rejecting the negro and Christ, which is why they always lose in confrontations with their liberal cousins: they have no Savior. But when all variations are stated, we are left with one huge obstacle to the restoration of the European people – Christ’s incarnation and His resurrection from the dead is irrational and unscientific; therefore, the European people must look either to a utopian future with a modified, rationalized Gospel of Christ or a utopian future completely devoid of Christ. In either case, the European people must, if they want to survive on the lowest rung of the liberals’ ladder of diversity, repudiate their ‘racist’ past and embrace the new doctrine of ‘white is evil and the negro is good.’ And as we now can see clearly, ‘racist’ means something entirely different from the dictionary definition of racist. The liberal definition of racist is – Any European who believes in the Gospel of Christ as St. Paul and the antique Europeans believed. The condemnation of our heartfelt faith in Christ the Lord is at the heart of the Antifa/BLM attack on

the white race. They are from hell, and only those who love much, only white Christians, will have the passion to fight such creatures to the death.

It seems completely out of place to talk about gentle Jesus in the wake of the demon-cratic, Antifa, BLM assault on the white race, but I ask you – what force on this earth can overcome such evil? In *Our Mutual Friend*, Dickens tells us, through John Harmon, that there are white moments in this life when we touch the heart of God through His channels of grace:

So, she leaning on her husband's arm, they turned homeward by a rosy path which the gracious sun struck out for them in its setting. And oh! there are days in this life, worth life and worth death.

The hearth fire virtues, those bonds we form with our kith and kin, give us the faith, hope, and charity to survive in this vale of tears. The demon-crats, the Antifa and the BLMers would destroy every channel of grace that connect us, through our people, to the living God. It's of no use to dialogue with such creatures from hell – they don't want a dialogue, they do not want peaceful coexistence. This is war, against an enemy that has no mercy.

In the 20th century, as psychology, the scientific study of mankind, replaced the Biblical view of mankind, our laws reflected that new world view. Murderers and other violent criminals were often given second and third chances. The end result of that new psychology was an increase in the murder rate, for the simple reason that society gave murderers extra opportunities to murder. But still, there was a belief, even among liberals, that violent white criminals should be apprehended and punished. What kind of society would we have if murderers and rapists were not punished?

Enter, stage left, the sacred negro. When the negroes commit violent crimes, there is a strong belief among liberals that they have not committed any crime, that the crimes attributed to them are fabrications by racist whites (see *To Kill a Mockingbird*), or that their alleged crimes are justifiable, self-defense killings of their white oppressors. If you look at any police show, you will never see black criminals. And all of the documentaries on crime focus on the Mafia and white murderers such as the barbaric white fiends that recently surfaced in Florida. Evil exists in all races, no white Christian has ever disputed that, but no white Christian should ever exempt one race from original sin. The consequence of that exemption has resulted in the destruction of all that was decent and good in our civilization – the pietas that connected us to His divinely human heart.

Would the demon-crats and the Antifa be able to destroy every last vestige of our European civilization if they did not invoke the sacred negro? Of course not. Which is why they do invoke the sacred negro, to justify everything they do. Every time the liberals meet the slightest opposition, the cry of 'racism' surfaces. It is their battle cry, and thus far they have defeated all their enemies under that banner. So long as abstract reason remains the first person of the liberals' trinity, the negro will be sacred, and Satan, through the sacred negro, will reign supreme in the European world.

Great artists are not separate from us because they are unlike us; the Shakespeares, the Rembrandts, and the Handels are separate from us in their artistic excellence. But we are drawn to them because they express, through their art, what we feel. The lesser artists, who do not reach our hearts, men like Proust and Joyce, belong only to an intellectual elite who enjoy only that which is esoteric and devoid of humanity. Dostoyevsky belongs with the great artists; he describes for us, through his art, a modern man's journey from rationalism to faith in Christ, the God-Man. Dostoyevsky was a radical, inspired by the revolutionary atheist Visarion Belinsky. During his imprisonment for his revolutionary activities he gradually converted to a faith in Jesus Christ. But it was only when he saw that there was a higher truth than rationalism that he could believe in the God-Man. First it was the humanity of Christ, what he called the "radiant personality" of the God-Man, which drew him away from rationalism. And then later, after much suffering, he came to believe that Christ's "radiant personality" pointed to the truth – Christ was indeed the Son of the living God. Dostoyevsky believed that he, "an intelligent man, a European," could believe in the divinity of Jesus Christ.

Christ faced the religious rationalists when He stood before the Sanhedrin, and He faced the secular rationalists when He stood before Pilate. In both instances He stood alone – "He hath borne our griefs, And carried our sorrows." St. Paul also stood before the religious rationalists, the Jews, and the secular rationalists, the Athenians, who considered the incarnation and resurrection of Christ blasphemy and foolishness. But St. Paul did not stand alone – Christ was with him: "In Him and through Him." What Dostoyevsky went through is what we must go through, the inner struggle against rationalism, if we will be able to stand against Satan and his minions. We cannot 'out-reason' the liberals – we must defeat them with a heartfelt faith in the God who transcends reason. In the absence of that faith, we stand alone before the liberals' rationalist tribunal where the white man is always guilty and the negroes are sacred. Is the folklore of our people, the Christ story, true or false? It is true, and our certainty that it is true will sustain us against this intensified onslaught of the devil.

We do well to dwell upon the short story, “The Man Who Saw through Heaven,” by Wilbur Daniel Steele, written in 1919. In the short story a fundamentalist minister goes to an observatory and, for the first time in his life, looks at the heavens with the outer eye of reason rather than with the inner eye of faith. In a ‘Road Away from Damascus’ experience, he sees the un-light of rationalism. Having lost the Savior he plunges into primitive religions. At his death his wife is left with the hope that her husband has finally purged the rationalist demon from his soul:

“From here, Mrs. Diana, your husband walked out — “

“He had sunk to idolatry. Idolatry!”

“To the bottom, yes. And come up its whole history again. And from here he walked out into the sunshine to kneel and talk with ‘Our Father Which — ‘ “

She got it. She caught it. I wish you could have seen the light going up those long, long cheeks as she got it:

“Our Father which art in Heaven, hallowed be Thy Name!”

We went down hill in the darkness, protected against goblins by a vast rattling of gourds and beating of heathen drums.

We too must walk out of the rationalist nightmare and return to Him who bids us pray to “Our Father which art in Heaven,” rather than to the sacred negro who is Satan’s surrogate. +

---

### **Caliban or Christ - July 18, 2020**

We must prepare to meet with Caliban. – *The Tempest*

---

‘Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.

‘There He tasted death; yet God rose up again with His mighty power to help men. Then He ascended to heaven; hither again will the Lord Himself make His way to this world to seek mankind on the day of judgment, Almighty God and His angels with Him, when He who has power of judgment will judge each one according as he merits in this fleeting life. No one can be without fear there at the word the Lord says: He will ask before the multitude where the man is who for God’s sake would taste bitter death, as He aforetime did on the cross; but then they will be afraid, and think little of what they begin to say to Christ. No one need be terrified there who erstwhile bears in his breast the best of signs, but each soul which desires to dwell with the Lord must through the cross seek the kingdom which is far from earth.’ – *The Dream of the Rood*

---

When Russell Kirk’s book *The Conservative Mind* was published, Thomas Molnar remarked that Kirk had revealed that there were some conservatives hiding out in America, but he had failed to show that they ever had any influence on the American people or the American government. I concur with Dr. Molnar: the America of the Declaration of Independence and the U.S. Constitution is rooted in the “rights of man,” not in the love of God. It seems blasphemous to a people brainwashed by the superficialities of “separation of church and state” and “We, the people” to speak of God rather than the democratic process as our touchstone of reality, but all people that have ever existed frame their governments around their religious faith. Our exalted founding fathers had a god: it was abstract reason, and they founded a republic based on that god. But abstract reason cannot sustain a people; they need a personal, hearth fire God. Our Civil War was fought to decide which personal God was to fill the void created by the framers of our atheistic Constitution. The northern Unitarians saw the glory of the coming of their Lord, the sacred negro, and they placed him where Christ the Lord should have been placed. Consequently, conservatism in America is based on radical Jacobin-Marxism, which places the sacred negro at the forefront of an ongoing utopian revelation. The end result of that revolution must of necessity bring about the destruction of all things white and Christian. Conservatives in such a society merely act as regulators of the revolutionary process – they want it to proceed along orderly lines; they want the white grazers to be killed humanely with the proper democratic aesthetics rather than butchered indiscriminately without the proper aesthetics.

Because our conservatives do not want to be counterrevolutionary and challenge the state religion of negro worship, they always adroitly avoid the cancerous tumor at the heart of the body politic and focus on the ingrown toenail. For example, I recently watched a conservative pundit interview a concerned parent about the Marxist BLM curriculum in our public schools. The concerned parent said that white children are being taught they are totally depraved and unfit to live. Yet, on the same show both the conservative pundit and the parent dismissed home schooling (“not a real option”) and insisted that parents should “stand up” to the liberal “mob.” That same conservative pundit was and is at the center of the “get our kids back to school” movement. Abstract reason is a whore who will ultimately bed whomever has the cash. A hearth fire

European would never forsake His Lord or his people by sacrificing his children on the altars of the sacred negro, but tragically the European people have abandoned their hearth fire; they now prefer shopping malls and interracial sporting events to their racial hearth fire. An individual is powerless to change the Marxist BLM curriculum from within the American system, but he can become a counterrevolutionary force from without that system: he can become an unrepentant, prejudiced white man, prejudiced in favor of a heartfelt faith in Christ over an intellectual, Christless Christianity blended with a belief in the sacred negro, and prejudiced in favor of his own kith and kin over a belief in the democratic equality of all peoples of all races and creeds.

Trump's efforts to put a stop to the Aztec death squads is commendable. And I hope he carries out his threat to do something about the crime in the cities where the Democratic mayors have refused to restore order. But let me ask – who are committing the murders in our cities? It is the sacred negroes. Are the federal troops going to be allowed to do what has to be done to violent murderers? Eventually, if you are really serious about a war on crime, you must face the fact that “war means fighting, and fighting means killing.” I do not think a government grounded in a belief in the sacred negro is going to be able to kill sacred negroes in order to put an end to their reign of terror. It is much more likely that our federal troops and local police will be sent out into the hinterlands of our anti-nation in order to disarm “white racists.”

Louis XVI did not lose his head because he was a terrible king who oppressed his people. Far from it, he was an exemplary Christian who tried to rule in Christ's name. He lost his head because he failed to understand that an internal, moral revolution had taken place in his nation. The pamphleteers, what we now call the press and academia, could no longer tolerate any authority over them and especially not that of a Christian king. Louis XVI made the mistake of thinking there was something he could do to appease the academics and the pamphleteers. He didn't understand that they were pure evil, they could only be dealt with by force. They wanted his blood and the blood of his kith and kin. He should have fought them “to the knife.” It is often hard to see when men and women who once were Christian have gone over to Satan, but if we don't see when the worm has turned, we and our kith and kin will suffer the same fate as Louis XVI. Whether we call our enemies Jacobins, Marxists, Antifa, or Democrats, they all serve Satan and they serve him through the sacred negro. If we don't “prepare to meet with Caliban,” the negro god of the liberals, we will never rebuild Christian Europe, we will be a non-people without a homeland on this earth and without any hope for a place in His house of many mansions.

Let us look at New York City as a microcosm of the West. Without a doubt, no city is more like unto Sodom and Gomorrah and ancient Babylon than New York City is. But all the European nations are heading for the same fate as the white New Yorkers if they don't give up the worship of the sacred negro and return to Christ. We are the cowboy in that magnificent song, “Ghost Riders in the Sky,” who must mend his ways in order to avoid spending all eternity in hell. One of the ghost riders tells him – “Cowboy, mend your ways this day or with us you shall ride on horses spouting fire.” The devil walks the streets of New York; he has been welcomed into the city in the name of the sacred negro, and he will not leave until he is forcibly evicted by Dream of the Rood Christians.

From a practical pagan standpoint, it seems insane to disband your police force and turn your city over to blood-thirsty barbarians. And from a Christian European standpoint, it goes against “that charity of honor” to allow blood-thirsty barbarians to murder your people. But a liberal is neither pagan nor Christian, he is an unman, born as a result of the blending of intellectual Christianity with paganism. When the Grand Inquisitors of intellectual Christianity turned Christ into Socrates, the European people went whoring after pagan gods. And whom did they finally choose? They chose to bend their knees to the sacred negro. We can only understand the New York City phenomenon if we grasp that fact — This is a satanic faith we are dealing with: Blacks must be good, they must be sacred, or otherwise the white post-Christian European cannot have a savior. It is better, in the sick mind of the liberal, that millions of innocent whites should die than he should be left bereft of his savior, the sacred negro.

We have come to this pass because our clergy blasphemed against the Holy Ghost. They refused to believe that God could and does come to men through the heart and not the head. It is not wrong, it is not anti-Semitic, to point out the great number of Jews involved in anti-European organizations, but we cannot overlook the fact that the Judaized Christians, white Europeans, who like Lady Macbeth have stopped “up th' access and passage to remorse” by denying the Christ who comes to us through the human heart, have become like unto Caiaphas and all the Grand Inquisitors of intellectual Christianity who must modify and ‘improve’ God's word so that it is more compatible with man's reason. What are the main charges the Grand Inquisitor hurls at Christ? He tells Him that He thought too highly of mankind; He should not have given such miserable creatures free will. “They don't want it,” the Grand Inquisitor tells Christ, “They will exchange their freedom for bread,” for the things of this world. And the second charge against Christ is that He broke His promise: He said that He would return soon, and He didn't return. Therefore, the Grand Inquisitors were forced to reinstate the Sanhedrin, a religious organization opposed to the Word Made Flesh.

The negro is of this world only; the liberal believes that the sacred negro, allied with the abstract intellect of man and science, can give them the things of this world. And the negro is here and now; he does not require men to believe in the Second Coming of a Savior whose followers claimed He rose, unscientifically, from the dead on the third day. Against that

faith, the unfaith of the unmen of the kingdom of hell on earth, stands the Dream of the Rood Europeans. They did not seek first the things of this world; of their own free will they saw life in death, they saw beauty, nobility, and truth in the cross of Christ. They “wept and they believed.” Nor did they look for another savior because they felt abandoned. You do not feel bereft of Christ if you have taken Him, through the Holy Ghost, into your heart. The devil is incarnate in what was once Christendom, because the European intelligentsia, in church and state, have made white pietas a crime and the worship of the sacred negro a sacred duty. (1) We who still believe in mercy, not sacrifice, will not accept the sacred negro as a substitute for our Lord and Savior.

We do well to dwell on the words of the “Battle Hymn of the Republic” written by a Unitarian minister, a feminist. In stirring terms, she calls on the forces of intellectual Christianity, a Christless army, to join with her in a crusade against white, Christian Europeans. In the name of the sacred negro, the liberals will smite the white Christians with the terrible swift sword of Satan. We are engaged in an ongoing civil war to determine whether a nation conceived in liberty from Christ and dedicated to the proposition that the sacred negro is God can long endure as a nation. That evil republic shall long endure if we don’t respond to the liberals’ militant faith with a passionate militant faith diametrically opposed to their faith. Surely if we are one with Him who bore our griefs and our sorrows on the “glorious tree,” we shall have the heart not only to endure, but to conquer. Is that a dream? Yes, it is, it is the Dream of the Rood, the poetic reality of life bequeathed to us by our people who saw with their hearts and believed. The darkness of negro worship will be banished from the earth when the Word Made Flesh becomes, once again, the light of the European world. +

---

(1) The definition of systemic racism is — any white who references his or her past. Whites seem to have accepted that definition, which is why they constantly look for “good blacks” who tell them that they don’t have to be exterminated for something their ancestors did. They can live on in the brave new world as support staff for the sacred negroes so long as they repudiate their ‘racist’ past.

We must constantly reference our past; it is a moral imperative. Why? Because all that we are and ever shall be that is good, noble, and pure comes from our past, where the people, our people who saw a great light, lived their lives with His sacred cross before their eyes. We are being pushed to a moral reckoning — will we embrace the sacred negro and live in a hell on earth in preparation for our eternal damnation, or will we stand with our God and our honored dead, the God of mercy and love and the people who saw beauty, truth, and love on the cross?

---

### **The Anaconda’s Coil - July 11, 2020**

In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea. —Isaiah 27: 1

---

Every 4th of July I ask myself why white people celebrate the 4th of July. And every year I can only come up with the one great line from the movie *Rebel Without a Cause*. When James Dean asks his rival why, now that they have become friends, they are playing ‘chicken’ with their automobiles, his rival-friend says, “You got to do something, now don’t you?” It seems that the white grazers have a great desire to celebrate something, so they shoot off firecrackers and eat hot dogs on the 4th of July. It always strikes me as a rather obscene holiday, but this year, in the wake of the Antifa/Black Lives Matter assault on the white race and the demon-crats COVID-19 assault on the white race, it seems particularly obscene to see white people celebrating the 4th of July.

During our American un-Civil War, the Southern people did not celebrate the 4th of July. It is a pity — it is a tragedy — that they did not extend that spirit of resistance to star-spangled Americanism past the reconstruction years when they were allowed back into the Union. John Sharp Williams was right to applaud the great Southern heroes of the reconstruction era in an address given to the Sons of the Confederate Veterans on May 31, 1904 (Vol. XII, No. 11, November 1904, pp. 517-521), heroes who kept the South from being destroyed during those dark days. But shouldn’t there have been a grave warning attached to his praise of the veterans’ efforts to preserve the “white man’s civilization”? The South was accepted back into the Union with the proviso that her people would tow the mark, that they, like the Northerners, would worship the negro. For a time the Southern people skirted around the negro issue, with grandfather clause voting rights and segregation, but Eisenhower ended the South’s delaying action when he sent Federal troops to Little Rock. The Civil War finally ended on September 23, 1957. Now no Americans of the North or the South question the state religion of the United States, which is the worship of the sacred negro.

Burke and his American counterpart, George Fitzhugh, both pointed out that when a government ceases to be conservative, when it sets itself against the customs, manners, and religion of its people, there is no reason to support that government. Thomas Paine, who condemned Christianity and the people who followed that religion, was the lodestar of the American Revolution (*Common Sense*). Lincoln and his cohorts merely put the finishing touches on a Jacobin



revolution conceived by men who rejected the Word made flesh and accepted the negro as the second person of their new trinity.

The Antifa/BLM creatures from hell are not following wise policies when they attack demon-crats holding public office. The demon-crats are the great preservers of the American republic, which has flown the banner of the sacred negro for the past century and a half. Why, if you are a Jacobin-Marxist, would you want to destroy the American republic? The police enforce the laws of the land, which are anti-white and anti-Christian, and the American military engages in foreign wars in defense of the sacred negro and the nation of Israel, so why should Jacobin-Marxists oppose those entities? It is white Christians who should oppose them; they are the people that are suffering under the yoke of demon-cracy. Why don't they oppose demon-cracy? Why do they still celebrate the 4th of July? Is it because 'you got to celebrate something, now don't you?' Must that something be the religion of the sacred negro?

A recent piece in the *Chronicle of Higher Education*, required reading for the powers-that-be in academia, declared that "Colleges Are in for a Racial Reckoning: Name Changes Are Only the Beginning" when administrators and faculty come back in the fall. The myth that somewhere there is a white racist among their ranks continues to live on in the halls of academia. Quite the opposite is the case. I vividly remember an incident at the university where I worked some thirty years ago. A black clerical worker had supposedly had the n— word written on her car. After the FBI and a whole host of other law enforcement agencies investigated the crime of the century, it was discovered that the clerical worker had written the bad word herself. Was she disciplined? Of course not, because it was the fear that white racists might fire her for incompetence that had made her do what she did to ensure she would not be fired for incompetence. This type of radical negro worshipping madness will go on until this hideous republic called the United States of America is destroyed because white Christians refuse to support it. That "racial reckoning" that the *Chronicle of Higher Education* has called for is indeed a reckoning we should wish for, hope for, and strive for. We should have a racial reckoning with the liberals in which we demand that all European nations should be white nations free of negroes, liberals, Muslims, and all other non-Europeans.

You cannot defend our demon-cracy without defending everything vile, debauched, and evil. Every religious service, every sporting event, every classroom lecture in some way does homage to the negro and demonizes the white race. George Floyd the black criminal allegedly said he couldn't breathe, but it is whites who cannot breathe; they are given no breathing room in this republic of the negro and for the negro. As everything white is condemned when nothing white should be condemned except liberalism, we must ask, why are all things white condemned? Why must our past be blotted out and our future be a future of unalloyed hell in which we live only to serve the negro?

John D. Phelan of Montgomery, Alabama saw quite clearly as the war clouds gathered over his nation what the Civil War was all about: it was about the negro – should white Christians bow their knees to Christ or to the sacred negro?

This serpent Abolition  
Has been coiling on for years;  
We have reasoned, we have threatened,  
We have begged almost with tears:  
Now, away, away with Union,  
Since on our Southern soil  
The only union left us  
Is an anaconda's coil.

The Civil War was an extension of the Jacobin revolution in France, in which men who would be as gods struck out at God by destroying His image in man. The Jacobin-Marxist revolution in Russia was another outbreak of that same ongoing assault on the image of God in man. The United States has always been at the forefront of that same revolution, which is why our government supported the communists in both World Wars. Do we want to live under the yoke of such a government? What is left to us of our Christian past? Nothing is left to us. Everything from white Christian Europe is demonized. And at the heart of that demonized Christian Europe is Christ the Lord. He has become a demon to the liberals and their colored minions, and Satan, through the sacred negro, has become the god of the post-Christian liberals.

You deserve the place to which you came  
If, having entered hell, you feel no flame.

A people who willingly jettison their past have no future. The liberals now date everything prior to the deification of George Floyd on May 25, 2020 as part of B.G.F. – Before George Floyd. All that prior history is racist. And after George Floyd? White racism will always exist, but it will be more thoroughly condemned. Whiteness will be banished from our language – we already speak a bastardized English – and all art works produced by white civilization will be banned or become negroized – black actors will play all the parts in Shakespearean dramas and all other works from the pre-George Floyd era, the era of white racism. This is not a sci-fi dystopian fantasy of the future, it is here and now and it is not

something that white Christians should submit to and certainly not something they should celebrate with firecrackers and barbecues, because the fireworks symbolize our cities, which are on fire, and the barbecues symbolize the white race, which has been sacrificed on the altars of the sacred negroes.

If I had been an older liberal right before the George Floyd rebellion, and the younger Antifa liberals had come to me for advice (which they wouldn't have done, but let's pretend they did), I would have advised them not to launch the final stage of the anti-white revolution based on George Floyd. I would have told them that he, a black criminal, was not the best primer for the revolutionary flames. I would have told the young radicals that the deification of George Floyd would not be accepted by the whites: "They will resist it." I would have been wrong. It has worked, which shows me and all those who choose to see that the indoctrination of the white race by the far left has been a glorious success. Even the 'conservatives' worship the sacred negro.

A conservative who wants to conserve our 'democratic way of life' is not a conservative, he is a far-left radical, because our 'democratic way of life' is centered on the worship of the sacred negro. How can such a creed be called, from a Christian European perspective, conservative? In many respects the conservative left is more dangerous than the Antifa-Demon-crats left, because the conservatives are at the forefront of preserving academia, from preschool through the college years. It is the conservatives who are screaming during this pandemic that we must reopen our schools and our churches, which are the citadels of Satanism. If the conservatives were what they should be, namely Christian counterrevolutionaries, they would see that nothing good will ever happen to the European people so long as academia in church and state is still pouring out its filth on generation after generation. And they would use the COVID-19 crisis to start dismantling academia. We are reaping the 'benefits' of a truly liberal education in Satan's classroom. Dante placed a sign above the entrance to hell, "Abandon all hope ye who enter here." Dante's hell is here, it is called Academia. There is a direct pathway from the unhallowed halls of Academia to the deepest pit in hell.

Let us give 'higher education', which is the lowest, foulest education, a pestilence, what they desire. Let us give them a "racial reckoning." We will take off their "anaconda's coil" and declare for the first time in the history of academia what is true: The demonized antique Europeans were the Christ-bearing race. They were the people of I Corinthians 13. If we are connected to them, we will be connected to Him. The liberals of academia are connected, through the sacred negro, to the devil. So long as our people stay 'educated,' so long as they send their children to the "public orphanages" of the liberals, and so long as they allow themselves to be 'educated' out of their 'racism,' which is pietas, they will be a non-people without a past or a future. To be white is to be Christian; the devil knows that, which is why he attacks the white, Christ-bearing race with such an unrelenting fury. The odds against us are fearsome because our people have forsaken our past where He who is our only comfort and our only hope dwells. Please, Lord, "Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent." +

---

### **Recrossing our Spiritual Rubicon - July 4, 2020**

She crept among the trees to the trunk of a tree whence she could see, beyond some intervening trees and branches, the lighted windows, both in their reality and their reflection in the water. She placed her orderly little basket at her side, and sank upon the ground, supporting herself against the tree. It brought to her mind the foot of the Cross, and she committed herself to Him who died upon it. —*Our Mutual Friend*

---

For they all saw him, and were troubled. And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid. —Mark 6: 50

---

The lack of a Christian response to the Antifa/Black Lives Matter assault on the white race and the Demon-crats' Covid-19 assault on the white race has supplied those who need to see before they believe a look at the state of the European people's collective soul. Lo and behold, they have no collective soul, they have forfeited their souls to the devil and his minions

All utopian thinking is divorced from the human heart, existing only in the airy nothings of the abstract intellects of the utopians. As a result, the closer a nation gets to the implementation of utopia, the closer that nation gets to the institution of everything inhuman, cruel, and barbaric. God is humane — He comes to us through human hearts. The Christian utopians in the Church, who jettisoned the human heart because it was impure and theologically problematic and bid us turn to their utopian plans for a perfect Christian future, paved the way for the secular utopians who moved us to an even greater 'perfection' than the Christian utopians. The utopian churchmen look to a perfect Christianity devoid of the racist Europeans while the secular utopians look to a perfect world devoid of the racist Europeans and the Son of God. Christ the social worker can stay in our modern utopias, but He must be subordinate to the sacred negro, who is at the center of all the European utopian states. Pope Francis the blasphemer and his like-minded clerical sycophants can stay at one with

the secular liberals because their ‘Christianity’ is a utopian ‘Christianity’ completely in line with the Christ-less utopias of the secular utopians. Some European nations are not as ‘advanced’ – which translates to ‘satanic’ – as the United States is, but all the European nations are moving toward democratic utopias that are in reality the incarnation of Satan.

Obviously I am generalizing when I say that the European people, as a people, have lost their collective soul. Surely there must be some European people left with souls that still live? That is my hope, or why bother writing? But we must face the reality that even if we allow for exceptions, we are still faced with the tragic reality that the majority of our people have given their souls to the devil while the rest of our people have been spiritually neutered; they haven’t the will or the heart to fight their demon-possessed countrymen. In our own nation, the anti-nation called the United States, we are about to reap what the devil has sown. We are going to see what happens when people forsake their Christian past in order to embrace a Christless future.

So let’s be clear: other white nations might not have crossed their spiritual Rubicon, they might still have many miles to go before they reach it, but in the United States we have crossed our spiritual Rubicon. We are an anti-nation that is totally in the hands of Satan and his minions. If we try to behave as if the liberals are something other than what they are – demons – we will continue to try and deal with them as if they are human beings capable of responding to existence with human sentiments and human decency. Utopians have no humanity, they have renounced everything but their own abstract intellects, which can view the suffering of mankind with complete indifference if that suffering leads to their utopian kingdom of heaven on earth, which is in reality the kingdom of hell on earth.

The alternative news sites, which report many of the various atrocities committed by the liberals in the name of their utopian kingdom, with the sacred negro at its center, are just as shocking in their opposition as the atrocities they report. The conservative and nationalist opposition to liberalism is shocking because it is completely disproportionate to the atrocities reported. The conservatives’ opposition to the liberals’ demonism is the equivalent of a man who writes a letter to his local paper as his family members are being massacred by vicious barbarians who have invaded his home. When you have crossed a spiritual Rubicon as a nation, when your rulers are demon-crats and the bulk of your people are easily manipulated by the demon-crats because they have become convinced they have no sacred heritage to defend, you cannot try to survive by democratic measures. When Satan enters the body politic, extraordinary measures, measures that come from a spirit opposed to Satan, must be used.

Let me reference the master of thrillers and high class melodramas, Edgar Wallace. In his novel *The Fourth Plague* (1913), he tells of two Italian brothers from the ranks of the nobility, one evil and one good. The evil brother, Festini, plans with the aid of his secret society, the Red Hand, to drop bombs containing the Bubonic Plague all over Britain in order to destroy Britain. Without revealing that Festini is his brother, the good brother goes before Parliament and tells them that the normal democratic procedures will not stop the Red Hand. The good brother asks the members of Parliament to grasp the fact that the Red Hand is pure evil and must be dealt with by taking extreme measures that fall outside the normal procedures for dealing with lesser criminals:

“I do not know,” he said, “what plans this Parliament has formed for ridding the country of so dangerous and so terrible a force. No plan,” he spoke earnestly and emphatically, and punctuated his speech with characteristic gestures, “which you may decide upon, can be effective unless it includes some system of physical extermination. I do not make myself clear, perhaps,” he said, hurriedly, “although I have a very large acquaintance with your language.” He emphasized his point with one finger on the palm of his hand. “These men are going to destroy you and your kind. Believe me, they will have no compunction; the plague will be spread throughout England unless you take the most drastic steps within the next few hours. There is no existing law on the statute books which exactly provides for the present situation. You must create a new method to deal with a new crime, and, Mr. Speaker, whatever this House does, whatever steps it takes, however dreadful may be the form of punishment which it, in its wisdom, may devise, it cannot be too drastic or too severe to deal with the type of criminal organization which the ‘Red Hand’ represents.”

In the beginning of his novel, Wallace tells us that “all the characters in the book are fictitious,” but that is no longer true. We now face real life members of the fictional Red Hand. They are called by various names – liberals, Antifa, and Black Lives Matter, but they are all completely evil. The good brother’s response to the Red Hand should be our response to the liberal/Antifa/BLM creatures from hell – “Don’t arrest them, eliminate them.” But of course it is too late for that – white Christians are on the outside of the law, and the various branches of Liberalism feel toward us as the good brother felt about the Red Hand headed by his demonic brother: “Eliminate them.”

Burke went before the British Parliament and warned its members that the Jacobin plague was a plague like no other. And Dostoevsky went before his people and warned them that the Jacobin-Bolshevik plague would result in the death of millions. We refused to see that America was also facing a potential plague spawned by demon-possessed liberals, and now it is upon us. Let us cease the democratic platitudes and deal with the evil demons of liberalism as Christian men should deal with evil.

It would be easy to dismiss the best of the melodramatic adventure authors of the early 20th century, but authors such as Wallace, H. C. McNeile, Johnston McCulley, and Sax Rohmer had something that the existentialist writers of the 20th century and the social justice authors of the 21st century lacked: they still had a Christian view of good and evil. The villains were against white Christian Europe, and the heroes defended white Christian Europe. If Christ did indeed rise from the dead, then Sax Rohmer's novels about the evil Fu Manchu, who always wants to destroy the "white Christians" are more realistic than Samuel Beckett's *Waiting for Godot* or James Joyce's *Ulysses*. But of course the great men of intellect do not believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead. In the absence of that belief, good becomes evil and evil becomes good. Paine's *Rights of Man*, in which he calls Christianity the most evil religion ever conceived, became the liberals' Bible while Burke's assertion that Christian Europe was our only hope, which had to be defended against the demonic Jacobins, was rejected.

When liberals rule, the humane God is discarded in favor of the inhuman god. Negro worship is the logical outcome of liberalism. Under the banner of the sacred negro, everything evil is good and everything good is evil. Small wonder that our cities are being ripped apart by anarchists and black barbarians while the police are ordered to become non-police, to "stand down" and let the sacred negroes destroy white business and kill white citizens, who are really non-citizens with no right to live in utopia. When I see the black butchers parading through the streets of our cities I see the image Stoddard sets before our eyes in his recounting of the events of the *French Revolution in San Domingo*: "A young mulatto named Fifi Pariset ranged the town like a madman searching the houses to kill the little children. Many of the men and women were hewn down by sappers, who hacked off their arms and..." Why go on? Let us never forget that these massacres, this barbarism, is part and parcel of the liberals' utopia. What we see before us – the rapes, the lootings, and the murders – are all one big liberal religious festival, except the Pelosis and the DiAngelos no longer knit while they watch the executioners, they eat ice cream and sip wine instead.

There are no provisions in our Constitution to deal with pure evil. In a democracy there is no such thing as original sin; we are all rational creatures who can work things out by appeals to reason. But what if even our reason, contra St. Thomas Aquinas, is infected with original sin? What if we can't come to a rational agreement about what is good and what is evil? The conservative shadows of the liberals keep appealing to the liberals' reason under the assumption that what is good is what is rational. The liberals then respond, quite rationally, with their demands: "You must die because you are white." You see the liberals have a religion: they do believe in original sin. They believe in the original sin of whiteness, which is a sin that cannot be forgiven.

In Shakespeare's *Much Ado About Nothing*, it is the bumbling Constable Dogberry and his companions that catch the villains in the drama: "I have deceived even your very eyes. What your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light..." So it is with those authors in the first part of the 20th century who tried to please their audiences with exciting 'potboilers.' What they brought to light, writing within the framework of a Christian worldview, was that when evil men have placed themselves beyond the ken of humanity, when they are ruled by Satan, it takes a hero, not a candidate, to destroy the evil men. Democracies do not produce Christian heroes, they produce men who, at their best, compromise with evil, and at their worst surrender to evil. Since the defeat of the South in our uncivil war, it has been one compromise with evil after another on the part of white Christians. Now the democratic charade is over. Satan has been unmasked, he was always the force behind our democratic anti-nation. Are the European-Americans too spiritually weak to fight? Yes, they are. All that the conservatives can do, citing educated secularists such as Victor Davis Hanson and Heather MacDonald, is bid us elect a candidate who will democratically oppose the demon-crats, the Antifa, and the BLM. The liberals and their minions are in our streets, they are in our homes, they have no mercy, they have no honor, and they have no charity. They have only the hatred of all things white and Christian that shall endure so long as Satan endures – until Christ returns and consigns Satan and his minions to eternal hell. Do you really think such creatures can be stopped by voting?

I know why the Breitbart conservatives and the Tucker Carlsons do not bid Christian men to rise and ride. They, like their scholastic counterparts in the Church, are uncomfortable with the heartfelt faith of the antique Europeans. It seems stupid to speak of chivalry and "that charity of honor" in a world of computers, the internet, and new technologies that demand a new language in order to talk about them. I have never learned that language. This I have learned – The modern liberals, be they demon-crats or Antifa, and the colored barbarians of Black Lives Matter are in league with the devil. They are far more evil than the worst villains in the fictional pot boilers of MacNeile, Wallace, Rohmer, and McCulley. Those authors, even with their vivid imaginations, could not conceive of creatures as totally evil as our modern liberals. Why, when the reality of the existence of original sin and the devil is so vividly revealed to us, do we look to secular remedies for that which is a crisis of faith? The devil is attacking, through his minions, the Christ-bearing race. Christ will not leave us defenseless, but He, not 'our democratic traditions,' must be invoked if we are going to have any success against the liberals. Must I, again, go through the litany of their cruelties? They murder babies in their mothers' wombs, they round up the elderly and put them in "nursing homes" in order to infect them with the Covid-19 virus. And they encourage colored barbarians to murder, rape, and destroy. What is there left to say? Just this – All that we know on this earth of charity, which never faileth, and the love which passeth the understanding of the rational mind, came to us through our

Christ-imbued European hearth fire. If we are ashamed of that hearth fire, or worse yet, if we demonize that hearth fire, we will stand naked and defenseless before the enemy of mankind. It is impossible for mere mortals to swim against the liberal current and recross their spiritual Rubicon, back to Christian Europe. But all things are possible through Him who saves. The history of our people, when they were a people, proves that. We were born of Christian Europe: that is our hope in this world and the next. +

---

### **Back from the Dead - June 27, 2020**

LEAR: Prithee go in thyself; seek thine own ease.  
This tempest will not give me leave to ponder  
On things would hurt me more. But I'll go in.  
[To the Fool] In, boy; go first.- You houseless poverty-  
Nay, get thee in. I'll pray, and then I'll sleep. Exit [Fool].  
Poor naked wretches, wheresoe'er you are,  
That bide the pelting of this pitiless storm,  
How shall your houseless heads and unfed sides,  
Your loop'd and window'd raggedness, defend you  
From seasons such as these? O, I have ta'en  
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;  
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,  
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them  
And show the heavens more just.

—*King Lear*

---

Jasper was to have been tracked remorselessly to his death by the man whom he supposed he had slain. Risen from his grave, Drood was to have driven Jasper to his tomb, there to seek for the dreaded evidence of his guilt: but to find there instead, alive and implacable, the man whom he had doomed to a sudden and terrible death, and in whose dust he had come to seek for the dreaded evidence of his guilt.

—Richard A. Proctor, *Watched by the Dead*

---

That Trump has not said anything against the deification of George Floyd and the Black Lives Matter group should not surprise us. Trump never at any point in his campaign nor in his inaugural speech gave any indication he was opposed to the worship of the sacred negro. In fact, everything he said and did told us that he was one with the liberals in his worship of the sacred negro. Trump ran afoul of the mad-dog liberals because he thought then (and still thinks) a nation dedicated to the sacred negro does not have to exterminate whites. Whites should be allowed, Trump maintains, to live and work in the United States so long as they do homage to the sacred negro. That is why the liberals hate him; they want every presidential candidate to sign on to the extermination of the white race, and Trump has not done that.

Trump is the best president that white people will ever get; the rest of the Republicans who follow Trump will agree to the gradual extermination of the white race, just as their Republican predecessors such as Bush and Regan did. But Trump's vision of whites working side by side with the negroes in an effort to maintain a nation consecrated to the negro is not compatible with the Christian faith. Such a vision, even if it were possible to bring about, is morally reprehensible because we should not bend our knee to the sacred negro. And it is not possible, even if we wanted to abandon our faith in order to be part of Liberaldom, to work side by side with the liberals and the negroes, because they believe that the white race must be eliminated. You can't mea culpa, mea culpa your way out of the original sin of white racism. If you are white, you are guilty; you will not be forgiven your whiteness, you must die for your sin.<sup>(1)</sup>

If Trump is the best that we can elect and he is committed to the same soul-killing, blasphemous faith as the mad-dog liberals, which is the worship of the sacred negro, then everything is cheerless, dark and deadly; we are doomed. Isn't that right? No, it is not right. We are only doomed if we stay within the prison of democracy. Whites have always been a tiny minority among the races of the world. If they have small, village-meeting type democracies within the confines of a non-democratic white government, they might not do themselves great harm. But if they make a racially diverse democracy their national system of government, they are committing suicide. Which is, of course, what whites have done. They accepted the extermination of the white race in the name of a democratic government which has placed the sacred negro at the center of our culture. Our church services, our arts, our sports, and our civic organizations are all centered on one thing – the worship of the great black gods.

Democracy is the white people's shroud. If they accept that shroud as their destiny, if they do not tear that shroud to pieces, they will have earned the eternal night the liberals have planned for them. Christian Europe was an impossibility, yet it came into being despite its impossibility because the white Europeans who took Christ into their hearts did not live life second-hand through the demon-cratic process. They saw the divine love in Christ and they loved Him; they saw evil in those who opposed Christ's reign of charity, and they fought that evil. They did not vote on who God was nor did they try to stop evil by dialoging with the devil.(2)

Nothing remains left inside of the European people because they have answered Dostoyevsky's question, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?," with a resounding 'No.' We entered the 20th century with the 'no,' but there still remained a great Christian ethical holdover through the first 50 years of the 20th century. The second half of the 20th century was the half-century in which the European people discarded the last remnants of the ethos that stemmed from a faith in Christ. Now, in the 21st century, we have embarked on a new journey without the Christian faith and without the ethos that came from a faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen. Whither do we go without our ancient faith? We go to the sacred negro; surely he will save us from the pestilence that walketh at noonday and the arrows that flieth by night. Do you believe that? Do you believe in the sacred negro? Our European people, especially our young people, do not even know that they have a sacred heritage. They believe they are only alive to the extent that they worship the sacred negro: "In the sacred negro and through the sacred negro, there is life." That is what our people are taught. No wonder they are in despair. Somewhere in the recesses of their soul they yearn for someone besides the sacred negro. They will never find that Someone if the remnant band who still believe in Christ as true God and true man will not stand against the Black Lives Matter movement of the liberals and the colored heathen.(3) "Truth is truth till the end of reckoning," Isabella declares in Shakespeare's *Measure for Measure*. And negro worship is demonism; that is and always shall be true till the end of reckoning. You cannot serve two masters. If your Christian faith consists of proclaiming the compatibility of Christianity and negro worship, you are not a Christian. If we are true to our Jesus, we must renounce the devil and all his works, even if that means we must stand alone against the demon-possessed liberal swine who command us to bow down before the sacred negro.

It appears when we look at the modern Europeans that the European people are a race of cowards. How else can we explain a people who willingly place themselves in subjugation to another race, a race of cruel, merciless people who have not charity? But if we look at the history of the European people, we see there once was great courage and virtue within their ranks. What happened to them? It is our faith that gives us courage and strength. The Europeans now have a very strange faith — they believe they must submit to the cruelties of blacks because the black race is the manifestation of God incarnate. From my perspective, as a Christian, that is the ultimate blasphemy, but it is the belief of the modern Europeans.

Is it possible to go from where we are, in a nation in which the inhabitants worship the sacred negro, back to that other nation in which the inhabitants worshipped the Lord God, Jesus Christ? Yes, it is possible. It doesn't, at present, seem very likely that the European people will break away from the sacred negro, but still there is that lonely figure standing before the Sanhedrin and answering Caiaphas's question, "Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?," with the words, "I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven." What was it that destroyed our faith in the great "I am"? It was the first part of the liberals' trinity, the abstract intellect of man. St. Bonaventure warned the world about the danger of the Thomistic revolt against the indwelling spirit of Christ championed by the apostles and St. Paul. Their experience of God was a direct, heartfelt encounter: they saw Christ "feelingly" with the passion of men with hearts of flesh, and they passed on a vision of the heart, not a theory of God, to subsequent generations of Christians. By placing God out there, St. Thomas and all the philosophically minded clergymen made man's abstract intellect, not man's heart, the great arbiter of truth.

The first abstract-intellect men in the church decided in favor of the Christian God, but the natural philosophers who followed in St. Thomas's train decided against the Christian God, who was declared to be a fraud. First the Voltaires and the Rousseaus revolted, but they were just a few weakened links on a strong chain of faith stretching all the way back to that stable in Bethlehem. But over many, many years, with the backing of science, men of "intelligence" succeeded in making the Christ story into a bedtime fairy tale, something that no intelligent people give any credence to. We must now prepare to meet with Caliban. We must destroy negro worship by attacking, as St. Paul did, the first person of the liberals' trinity, the abstract intellect of man.

It is now taken as a given that the "intelligent" men and women are liberals. But is that the case if intelligence comes from vision, not from rationality? What do the prophets, who see with blinding sight, tell us about existence? What do St. Paul and the Apostles tell us? And what do the poets of our race, men such as Shakespeare, Chateaubriand, Scott, Dostoyevsky, Burke, and Grundtvig, tell us about that indwelling spirit within us who has a local habitation and a name? Kent begs King Lear to "see better," to see with his heart, so that he can know it is Cordelia who loves him, not Goneril and Regan. So long as we remain captive to the satanically illuminated mind, we will not know the God who loves us, we will remain tragically allied with the liberals and the savage gods of color, and ultimately, through them, we will be connected to Satan.

I noticed in my early days in the prolife movement that “prolifers,” when going before the liberals’ Sanhedrin, would condemn legalized abortion because innocent black babies were being aborted. That was and is true, but what are you conceding when you say abortion is bad only because it kills black babies? You are kowtowing to the liberals’ god, the sacred negro. That is a game you cannot win: you cannot plead for redemption from the devil. The essence of the liberals’ new religion of the noble black savage is bloody sacrifice, not mercy. I saw another example of conservatives pandering to the black gods of liberalism the other day on Breitbart, which reported that Muhammad Ali Jr. had come out against Black Lives Matter. That does Muhammad Ali Jr. credit, but it does white people no good when the conservative shadows of the liberals ineffectually oppose liberalism by trying to find blacks who are opposed to the extermination of the white race. Do you really think you can obtain mercy and forgiveness from the liberals and the noble savages of color because you can find one black out of a thousand who is willing to allow white people a chance to live? Mercy and love have one source – “None but thee Lord, none but Thee.” Why won’t white people look to the God of their ascending race to save them instead of the second person of the liberals’ trinity?

In his book *Watched by the Dead*, Richard A. Proctor points out that in almost every book Charles Dickens wrote, there is some character gliding through the book that is thought to be dead, or, if still alive, thought to be inconsequential or too downright stupid to be taken notice of. And that character always steps out of the shadows of death, inconsequentiality, and stupidity to turn the tables on the evil villains of the novel. The same pattern can be seen in the works of Shakespeare and Walter Scott. Christ was the inconsequential figure in the Roman Empire and in the Jewish state who was considered dead and buried, but He became the reason for the defeat of both those secular realms, and He became the moral center of a realm called Christian Europe. Now the wheel has come full circle: Christ is once again a shadowy, inconsequential figure in a secular realm that combines the worst features of Roman paganism with a Shylockian hatred of the living God.

The complete collapse of white people in the face of the Black Lives Matter movement indicates a spiritual sickness that cannot be cured. Negro worship has become too deeply ingrained in the heart and soul of the European people. But our people must be cured. I have no empirical proof, but I know that the Mysterious Stranger still stands outside of our racial hearth fires waiting to be invited in. Is it as simple as saying, “Come, Lord Jesus”? Yes, it is that simple, once we have purged from our heart, mind, and soul, all three persons of the liberals’ trinity, the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science. If we fight only a defensive war – “Please allow me into Liberaldom, because I too worship the sacred negro” – we will surely cease to exist as a people in this world and will surely suffer eternal damnation in the next world. But if we go on the offensive, if we attack the immoral imbecility of the men of the abstract intellect, the blasphemy of negro worship, and the soul-killing superficiality of science, we will find our people and our God once again.+

---

(1) The best-selling book, which is now a textbook in our schools, *White Fragility*, by Robin DiAngelo, is a precise exposition of the liberals’ religion. All whites are guilty of racism and all whites must die – except the illuminated whites such as DiAngelo, who have gone beyond whiteness to a plane of existence that thee and me cannot achieve. What DiAngelo desires for us is Haiti:

The nature of these events is well shown by the letter of a French officer secretly in Port-au-Prince at the time, who himself escaped by a miracle to the lesser evil of an English prison in Jamaica. “The murder of the whites in detail,” he writes, “began at Port-au-Prince in the first days of January, but on the 17th and 18th March were finished off en masse. All, without exception, have been massacred, down to the very women and children. Madame de Boynes was killed in a peculiarly horrible manner. A young mulatto named Fifi Pariset ranged the town like a madman searching the houses to kill the little children. Many of the men and women were hewn down by sappers, who hacked off their arms and smashed in their chests. Some were poniarded, others mutilated, others ‘passed on the bayonet,’ others disemboweled with knives or sabres, still others stuck like pigs. At the beginning a great number were drowned. The same general massacre has taken place all over the colony, and as I write you these lines I believe that there are not twenty whites still alive – and these not for long.”

This estimate, was indeed, scarcely exaggerated. The white race had perished utterly out of the land. French San Domingo had vanished forever, and the black State of Haiti had begun its troubled history.

–*The French Revolution in San Domingo* by T. Lothrop Stoddard

(2) I sometimes go to a nearby shooting range. I don’t know why, but every shooting range I have ever gone to has a resident ‘gun nut.’ I don’t use that term in a derogatory sense – the gun nut is not a crazy man just itching to gun people down, far from it. The gun nut is usually an Americanist, an American Legion man who loves to show off his guns and talk about our marvelous Constitution with a Second Amendment that guarantees our right to bear arms.

The gun nut at this particular range is named, as most gun nuts are, Joe, and he regularly shows me guns of an amazing variety and high quality. Joe never shoots his guns, he just shows them off. Which calls to mind Patrick McManus’s (the great comic outdoorsman) statement to his wife when she asked him why he owned so many guns that he never shoots: “You don’t have a gun to shoot it, you have a gun so that it can be your gun.”

One day Joe – “he held me with his glittering eye” – started going on about other countries like Britain that had no Second Amendment and therefore had no guns to cherish anymore. Without trying to tweak Joe, because I liked the man, I said that the liberals in our country would eventually, by imperial fiat, take all the legally registered guns away from our people, so that it behooved us to start up a black market traffic in guns. Joe was incredulous: “They wouldn’t violate the Second Amendment.”

White people such as Joe, who are not at heart liberals, must come to realize that liberalism is from the devil. The devil does not respect constitutions, elections, or any of our democratic procedures. In fact he uses them for his own purposes. When they don’t suit his purposes, he abandons them. Look within, look to pietas – there you will find the passion and the fire to love much, to love your own and hate the devil.

(3) Tucker Carlson is the best of the mainstream commentators. He confronts issues that all the other ‘conservatives’ run away from. However, he falls woefully short in his commentary, because he still avoids the main crisis of the European people. Recently I heard Carlson say, quite rightly, that the terrorists of Antifa and Black Lives Matter should be opposed. Language is sermonic: calling terrorists terrorists is certainly a good start; they are not ‘protestors.’ Carlson went on to say that Trump should do something. Yes, he should. But what should be done to stop terrorists? The answer is simple – terrorists should be shot and killed. No government that is still a government can tolerate what is now going on in the name of Black Lives Matter. The F.B.I. gave orders to “shoot to kill” when they were dealing with the “white supremacist” Randy Weaver and his family. And they did just that: they shot and killed Weaver’s wife while she was standing in the doorway of their house, with her baby in her arms. Surely she was a dangerous terrorist who deserved to die! But the “peaceful protestors” throwing Molotov cocktails while they loot, murder, and rape are a protected species. The police are told not to shoot those creatures but to let them be.

No man can be elected to office in our nation who does not do homage to the sacred negro. If Trump gave the order to “shoot to kill” the Antifa/Black Lives Matter terrorists, he would be removed from office, tried for murder, and then executed. And he knows that. Trump is a very brave man, but he is not going to deliberately put his head on the chopping block.

Carlson is right to focus on the accelerating rate of the crime wave engulfing our anti-nation. But he is dead wrong to call for democratic solutions to a crisis that is a crisis of faith. If our people had the same faith in Christ as the antique Europeans, they would not be naked to their enemies. They would do what has to be done. We cannot avoid this thing called faith. Do we serve Christ or the negro?

---

## **The Iniquity of Negro Worship - June 20, 2020**

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. –Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

---

For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. –Revelations 18: 5

---

The gentle bard told us what happens when charity gives way to cruelty:

It will come  
Humanity must perforce prey on itself,  
Like monsters of the deep.

Of course the inevitable has happened: without the charity that never faileth, which only existed in racist Europe, humanity is preying upon itself. The demon-crats want a police force in order to enforce the laws of demon-crazy, the Antifa want no police because they still perceive the police as a threat, and the black gods of the demon-crats and the Antifa hold their white subjects in the ranks of the demon-crats and the Antifa in contempt. Bringing up the rear are the conservative shadows of the liberals who respond to the burnings, the lootings, the rapes, and the murders by the blacks with pleas for dialogue with the devil and his minions. “Surely,” the conservatives plead, “we can all agree on that which is essential – we must love the negro, with our whole heart, mind, and soul. Proceeding on that essential, can’t we all come together?” No, we can’t all come together based on our love of the sacred negro. That religious absolute is the reason we live in a non-nation quickly becoming hell on earth.

I was surprised to see the people of the new nation of CHOP demanding porta-potties from the old nation of the demon-crats. Isn’t the need to defecate something that belongs only to the original sinners of racism? I thought utopian humanity had gone beyond that need. I suppose, for a time, certain non-utopian elements will appear in utopia. The utopians might have to receive aid from outside until they can evolve beyond racist humanity and become as gods who do not need porta-potties, electricity, and garbage removal.



Some demon-crats have expressed concerns over the extremism of the Antifa utopians. By what right do they criticize the Antifa utopians? Aren't the Antifa their children? The demon-crats cannot, so long as the Antifa act in the name of the sacred negro, oppose anything the Antifa do. That leaves the Nancy Pelosis, who love their ice cream, and the Joe Bidens, who love their status as politicians, in a bind. They dare not seem too far to the right of Antifa, because their careers are based on being on the left, but if they allow Antifa to have their way they will not be allowed their ice cream palaces or their highly exalted status in Liberaldom. They will be consigned to a porta-potty existence in CHOP and other such mini-states.

The devil can set a tidal wave of evil in motion, but he can't control where it goes and who it will engulf. Nor can we, mere mortals, predict the end result of the devil's assault on the Christ-bearing race. All we know is that it will not be good. Will the Antifa liberals destroy the demon-crats and set up a whole nation of CHOPs? Will the demon-crats continue to rule while allowing for certain CHOP states within our anti-nation? Or will the blacks destroy the white liberal geese that are providing them with golden eggs by murdering the white Antifaers and the white demon-crats? I think we will have what Sweden has, what France has, what Belgium has, and what Britain has: we will have a far left government with a police and military that do not enforce any laws against the creatures of color, but that will enforce very strict laws against white 'racists.' And of course the definition of a white racist is: "Anybody who is white." I think it would be better for the white grazers if the Antifaers completely destroyed our existing government. Then it will be clear to whites that they are on their own. They won't hold out any false hope that their police and their military are going to save them. Of course neither I nor any man knows exactly how this new gambit of the Jacobin-Marxists will actually play out. But we do know who is behind this onslaught, so we know with complete certainty that what ensues will not be good. And we also know that we cannot dialogue with the devil. We must stop retreating before his minions in the hope that they and their master will stop just short of us. They won't stop of their own accord, they must be stopped by Christian men.

The America of "My Country, 'Tis of Thee, Sweet Land of Liberty," is finished. But that should not make us despair. We never really belonged to that country. We belong to His Europe; whatever was good in our nation came from the Christian faith, which our illustrious founding fathers deemed too trivial and unimportant to be enshrined in our laws and Constitution. Lincoln was right: we were and are a nation conceived in liberty, liberty from God. Can such a nation long endure? No, it did not long endure. Americans needed a God; they couldn't worship a system of government without a God at the center of that government. The sacred negro has entered the void at the heart of our nation and the other democratic nations of Europe. He is the new Savior of the European people. We won't be able to see Him who saves while we are kneeling before the altar of the sacred negro.

Only the white Europeans, as a people, held His sacred cross before their eyes. "In life and death, oh Lord abide with me." And only the white race has made the sacred negro their God. Is that a coincidence? Of course not. Negro worship comes from academia; the Rousseauian philosophers and French pamphleteers ushered in the French Revolution, and the flames of that revolution continue to be fueled by academics throughout the European world. We must then ask – from whence came academia? It came to us through the rational sector, the non-poetic sector, of ancient Greece. The first talk show culture existed in ancient Athens. "Let's sit around and discuss the idea of God, while rejecting beforehand the possibility of knowing the truth about God." Into that world, the world of academia, came St. Paul. And he preached the resurrection and the life through Jesus Christ.

Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city wholly given to idolatry. Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him. Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And some said, What will this babblers say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection. And they took him, and brought him unto Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is? For thou bringest certain strange things to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean. (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.)

– Acts 17: 16-21

When our people came to see the same vision St. Paul saw on the road to Damascus, they became a people such as the world had never seen before. They bore witness to the one true God, whom the Athenian academics claimed could not possibly be the one true God. When we blend their world, the academics' world of talk shows and panel discussions, with St. Paul's inner world, the world of a heart connected to Christ, we destroy faith in Jesus Christ. The church as an organization is a 'this world only' organization. Dostoyevsky depicts such a church, a church opposed to Jesus Christ, in the Grand Inquisitor chapter of his novel *The Brothers Karamazov*. That church, the church of philosophy and theology, whose clergy study God from outside instead of taking Him into their hearts, spawned academia. And academia ultimately made Christ an intellectual construct who could be rejected completely or turned into Socrates.

I have not lost the thread of the story. We came to this pass where evil is given free reign so long as it is done in the name of the sacred negro, because we, as a people, have lost St. Paul's vision of Christ as an ever present reality within every

human heart that seeks to know Him “feelingly.” That is the way of true wisdom, the heartfelt wisdom that eschews the putrid, false wisdom of academia. The Europeans cannot, having once taken the one true God into their civilization, return to pure paganism. They must have a god who is a satanic caricature of the one true God. The negro is their savior, he is the new suffering servant. But has he really suffered at the hands of white people as his devotees tell us? No, he has not. His alleged persecutors in apartheid South Africa and the Old South were in reality his liberators who attempted to save him from heathenism, but the liberals must tell a different story, they must tell us of the black man’s horrible suffering because he must be their savior. And how does the new savior compare to Christ concerning mercy and forgiveness? There is no mercy or forgiveness in the black savior. Nor is there any hope for the resurrection of the dead in and through the black savior. Yet still the liberals cling to him, and the white grazers kneel to him. Do the grazers secretly yearn for Christ? I do not know just how far down the slippery slope they have gone, but it is a sad fact that we have a state religion that has surpassed Sodom and Gomorrah and the Babylonians in evil. And the evil of this our modern uncivilization is unopposed because the evil is done in the name of the sacred negro who cannot be opposed.

We know neither the day nor the hour, but I wonder, when I see Satan’s banner – “Black Lives Matter” – defiantly placed at the heart of what was once Christendom, if the final battle, the Icelandic Ragnarök and/or the Biblical Armageddon is now at hand. But then I draw back – such things are not within the ken of mortal men. And we are told that not even the angels in heaven know the day nor the hour. However, we have been given the heart to distinguish good from evil. It is not possible to love the sacred negro and love Christ. Nor is it possible to blend the two loves in order to avoid conflict. We have a war on our hands that can only be avoided if we surrender to the devil and his minions.

We are constantly told by the liberals that any criticism of Black Lives Matter is heresy and will be dealt with quite severely. White reactionaries will not be allowed to impose their old world racism on the new utopian world of diversity. But that old racist world had in it all that we will ever know of the love that passeth the understanding of the rational mind. To know that we touch the heart of God through human hearts imbued with His divine charity is a gift more precious to us than all the riches of this world. “Like unto that of a little child.” (1) What the great poets of our race saw in our people was a childlike faith in our Father which art in Heaven; they believed He would be with us always, through His Son, in life and death. They received that faith at their racial hearth fire, and they took that faith to all the corners of the earth. Now all the colored heathens of the earth are converging on the formerly Christian nations of Europe, at the special invitation of the Jacobin-Marxists, to sit on the thrones and be worshipped in the churches that were once consecrated to Christ our King.

Whites will only fight “Black Lives Matter,” which is the sign, symbol, and substance of liberalism, if they desire to become, once again, children of God. If they have no such desire, if they want to be grown-up pagans who get along quite nicely without the Divine Love, then they will continue to bow down to the sacred negro in order to obtain the approbation of the liberals and, they hope, the riches of this world. I am not that tough. I need the Divine Love and mercy. Therefore I will not bend my knee to Black Lives Matter – I will fight that entity with my whole heart, mind, and soul. +

---

(1) Some readers have asked about a blog post I wrote in September 2007 called, “The Sacred Heritage.” The authors I mentioned in that post had the European Faith of, “like unto that of a little child.” The post is viewable [here](#).

---

## **Our God and Our People Matter Most of All - June 13, 2020**

O all you host of heaven! O earth! What else?  
And shall I couple hell? O, fie! Hold, my heart,  
And you, my sinews, grow not instant old,  
But bear me stiffly up. Remember thee!  
Ay, thou poor ghost, while memory holds a seat  
In this distracted globe.

–*Hamlet*

---

There’s a hope that leaves me never,  
All through the night.

–Welsh folk song

---

“No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.” (Luke 16: 13) The sacred negro has one very great advantage over

Christ: he can be seen with the material eye, he is not of the spirit. He has come to represent mammon, the false god of riches and success. You cannot have success in this world, the Jacobin-Marxist world, without paying homage to the sacred negro and the other lesser gods of color. The new religion of negro worship appears to be more completely developed in the United States than any other nation, but all the white nations hold to the democratic way: they love the noble savage, and that love will ultimately destroy them.

Just when you think it is impossible to be surprised by the extent of the intellectual Christians' and the conservatives' apostasy, I find that I am surprised. The liberals have gone beyond anything they have ever done before during the COVID-19 crisis and the George Floyd insurrection — that does not surprise me — but the conservatives and the intellectual Christians, during the George Floyd insurrection, have thrown themselves on the altars of the sacred negro with a passionate intensity that indicates even more than an indifference to Christ; it indicates that they share the same hatred for Christ as their mad-dog brethren. That has thrown me for a loop. I didn't know they were that far gone.

To talk of making America great again in the aftermath of the George Floyd blasphemy is an absurdity. White America only existed as a real nation in the South before the Civil War. (1) Since that time we have been a Jacobin-Marxist non-nation, consecrated to the sacred negro. Trump's 'victory' was nothing more than a man picking up one broken shard from the ruins of a stately mansion burnt to the ground. There is no house left to defend against the looters and despoilers, but we have a certain admiration for a man who is at least man enough to take down a few looters before he goes down.

Beginning with Spengler's *Decline of the West* in 1918, the 20th century has produced enough 'death-of-the-West' books to fill a large library. I'm not speaking of the celebratory death-of-the-West books, the books in which the authors were glad the West was dying; I am speaking of the men who wanted to show us the way to restore the West. Richard Weaver, in *Ideas Have Consequences*, spoke for all the death-of-the-West authors when he said he was not going to conclude his objective analysis of the ills of the West with a plea of impotence, he was going to offer a solution to the demise of the West. And what was Weaver's solution? He told us to cling to the right of private property.

Other death-of-the-West conservatives offered different restoration plans from Weaver's, but their plans did not really differ in kind from Weaver's plan. All the conservatives presented very rational, material solutions to a spiritual problem. That which all conservatives sought to avoid, the issue of "Who moved the stone," was placed off to the side while the Socratic conservatives debated with the Jacobin mad-dogs. The debate has now ended in America: the 'noble savage' Jacobins have won. But throughout the European nations the conservative shadows of the liberals are busy outlining their policies of defeat. They have made Christ into Socrates and the noble black savage their savior. Such states cannot stand up against the looters and despoilers.

Yeats's oft-quoted statement that the best lack all conviction and the worst are full of passionate intensity no longer describes the plight of Western man. It is now a case of the best, the formerly Christian Europeans, having adopted the passionate intensity of the worst, the mad-dog liberals; they have learned to love the sacred negro. And with that love of the sacred negro comes legalized abortion, homosexual marriage, transgenderism, and every other evil under the sun. If the natural savage represents virtue, then the complete indulgence of one's appetites becomes virtuous and the practice of the old Christian virtues becomes sin:

They teach the people, that the debauchers of virgins, almost in the arms of their parents, may be safe inmates in their house, and even fit guardians of the honour of those husbands who succeed legally to the office which the young literators had pre-occupied, without asking leave of law or conscience.

-Burke, *Letter to a Member of the National Assembly*

The liberals, or if you like a harsher phrase, the radical left, are pushing their Satanic logic to its ultimate conclusion. Like predatory carnivores, they sense that their prey will not fight, so they are going in for the kill. The Socratic Christians have joined the radical left; they also want white blood as well. And they hope if they join with the radical left that they will be spared. It is fight or die; there are no other options for the white European. It's possible to be killed later than sooner by sacrificing your kith and kin to the liberals and the heathens of color, but that is the only way to survive, for a time, in Liberaldom. Do you want to survive that way? "Yes," the grazers and the conservatives proclaim, "We will survive if we denounce the racist whites and their civilization." That won't be the case — the conservatives and the grazers will be slaughtered soon after their betrayal of their people. If the white grazers and the conservatives don't love His Europe and His people enough to fight for them, then they are not going to be of any use to themselves or the remnant band. Is there a remnant band? I don't see them, but what is our faith if it can be seen?

In old Europe, the Europe of Shakespeare, Handel, and Rembrandt, we were vouchsafed a vision of the living God. We saw, with our hearts, the divine Love. And in modern Europe we have been given a vision of unadulterated Satanism. If we love where we should love and hate where we should hate, we will oppose the liberals with our whole heart, mind, and

soul. Why hasn't that happened? Why don't the European people want to fight the liberals to the death? They won't fight the devil and his minions because they do not love the God-Man who died on the cross for our sins and to save us from death. Only our Savior can inspire us to fight against the seemingly irresistible forces of liberalism. But He no longer dwells within the European people's hearts. There can be only one Savior. If the sacred negro has replaced Christ as the God of the European people, how can they fight against the liberals? They can't and they won't. Thus the love of the sacred negro doth make cowards and traitors of the European people.

The conservative death-of-the-West chroniclers could not unseat the mad-dog liberals because they themselves were universalists. They could not champion a particular people against a generic love for all mankind, which the liberals made claim to, because they would not champion the particular God who entered human history. Paine, in his Rights of Man, dismissed Burke's concern for the victims of the Terror with the statement: "What matters the loss of a few frills and few people." That is the same man who said of Christianity: "It has been the most dishonorable belief against the character of the Divinity, the most destructive to morality and the peace and happiness of man, that ever was propagated since man began." Paine, who sought to make man's religion conform to reason and science, won out over Burke, who was concerned with "a few frills and few people." Christian Europe was that frill and all the white Europeans who adhere to His Europe are the few people who must be eliminated. We cannot place our hopes, as the conservatives do, in the debate over universal theories designed to save a generic mankind from unhappiness and suffering in this world. There is no panacea in the abstractions of the liberals, be they classical or mad-dog. There is only death in life and eternal damnation in rational, scientific panaceas that reject our unscientific faith in our risen Lord.

If you can't love a particular God and a particular people, you will never be able to draw a line in the sand and tell your enemies, "Thou shalt not cross that line, or you will die." If our God and our people can be dismissed as "frills and a few people," we will watch the people who worship the great universal god, the sacred negro, destroy every vestige of the European civilization that once was our spiritual home. Throughout the European world, the monuments, the art works, even the bodies of our honored dead are being destroyed and desecrated. Does it matter? Why should we defend dead racists? Shouldn't we embrace what is scientific and real, the natural world of the sacred negro? Can the sacred negro, with the backing of science, which is the liberals' holy ghost, raise the dead? Does the sacred negro love us? For the love of Him who died on the cross we must drive them, the liberals and their colored minions, back across that European line, and then we must defend that line against all the world.

I knew that the conservatives were spiritually weak because they were not really conservative, and I knew that the grazers were confused and easily manipulated by the liberal elite. But I did not think the liberals and their colored minions could be so blatantly evil without eliciting some kind of response from the conservatives and the grazers. The spiritual rot is even deeper than I thought. What is there left to say to the conservatives and the grazers? Nothing at all.

So much blood has been shed by white men for the negro. Our 'civil' war, which had nothing civil about it, was fought under the banner of 'black lives matter,' and a "few" white lives didn't matter. That remains the mantra of the Jacobin-Marxist. The people that matter are the blacks, and the vermin that must be exterminated are the whites throughout all of the European nations. All the white men and the white women in leadership positions in the European world have signed on to the extermination of the white race under the banner of 'black lives matter.' But why do black lives matter? If Christ be not risen, if faith, hope, and charity belongs only in fairy tale books, then why should I, or any man, care about a criminally inclined race of people? Only white Christians, the whites of the old South, and the apartheid South Africans cared enough about black people to make the attempt to save them from themselves, to put a stop to their hellish, murderous heathenism. When there are no longer any whites to stand between them and the Orientals, they will become beasts of burden, enslaved by the masters of torture and cruelty. And the whites who worship them, where will they be? They will be in the place with the swine who went over the cliff in their mad flight from the Son of the living God.

In my freshmen year in college I read Bertrand Russell's famous work on the religions of the world. When he came to Christianity he asserted that no force of will, no sentimental desire to once again embrace our beloved dead, could alter the nothingness of our existence here on earth. I rebelled against Russell then just as I rebel against the 'black lives matter' mantra of the Jacobin-Marxists and the colored barbarians now. I won't betray my God and my people by bowing down to the principalities and powers of this world. If, as it appears, there are no Europeans left on the face of the earth, I can at least make my refusal. I will not bend my knee to any God but Christ, and I will be faithful to only one nation – His Europe. As for the rest of the world, the inhuman devils cavorting around the throne of the sacred negro, who is a conduit to Satan, at that world, I hurl my defiance.

The love that once was there in that magnificent living tapestry of Christian Europe is still here. I can see all of my honored dead when I close my outer eyes and listen with the inner eye of the heart. They still live in Christ and through Christ. That vision of the heart will sustain me and thee in our day of battle with the liberals and their colored minions, and it will sustain us "all through the night." +

(1) It is not just offensive, it is blasphemous when outwardly masculine sport figures applaud the removal of the Confederate flag at sporting events like NASCAR. That flag, the only American flag with a cross on it, is the symbol of a Christian nation in which charity was extended to all people, black and white, and the honor of that civilization was maintained by a white hierarchy who worshipped Christ, not the negro and science. And because they didn't worship the negroes, they were able to elevate the negroes. That is something the liberals have never done and never will do.

The modern world condemns all that is good and lauds everything that is evil. It is an easy thing to denounce your Christian forebears by calling them racists. But let's state the truth of the matter. The outwardly masculine anti-racists are spiritual cowards. They lack the moral courage to stand with a few brave souls against the world. Will we ever see European manhood, the Christian manhood of men like Burke, Havelock, Forrest, and Lee, again? No, we won't, unless we see the God-Man's blood upon the rose.

---

## **Amid the Encircling Gloom - June 6, 2020**

Our race is our spiritual stronghold. Within that stronghold are the mysterious human relationships that give us the wherewithal to fight the battle against principalities and powers. If you strip a man of his racial identity, you strip him of his soul. How can a man without a soul fight the good fight? He can't; he can only surrender to the devil and his minions. – CWN (2012)

---

On a daily basis innocent whites are murdered by black barbarians. The black murder plague is far worse than the plague called the coronavirus. When Tommie Lindh, the white, 19-year-old, Swedish man, was murdered trying to stop a black barbarian from raping a white girl, the liberal and conservative media were silent, as they are always silent in the face of the murder of a white by a black. But when a black criminal dies while being arrested by white policemen, the media explodes with condemnations of white racism, and the black barbarians seize the moment to increase their burnings, lootings, rapes, and murders. We live in the midst of diversity-created plagues – coronavirus and black – that have one source: the hatred of the Christ-bearing race. When our churchmen stop hating the white race and start defending His Europe, when the liberals are opposed instead of appeased, then we will begin to see some light in the darkness. – CWN

---

The opinions that follow are merely anecdotal; they have not been clinically tested. You have been warned.

I was brought up in a white middle-class household by parents who considered themselves to be “moderate liberals.” Both my parents were the first of their lines to go to college. My mother did not believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead; she thought Christianity was a good ethical system. And my father rejected all of the Old Testament – fundamentalism was an anathema to him – but he made a leap of faith when he came to the New Testament. My parents, my pastors, and my teachers in the all-white public schools I attended, all believed in the sacred negro. So of course I grew up believing in the sacred negro as well.

My faith was first tested when I encountered the sacred negroes on the rival sport teams. They did not play according to the code that I was taught to play by. But my coaches had prepared me for that rude awakening. They explained to me beforehand that I shouldn't expect the black players to behave like whites. They had suffered years of racism and oppression, so I had to make allowances. Did I make allowances? Yes, I did. Although once during a high school basketball game, I responded to insults against my mother with an elbow to the face of the offending player. I got a lecture from my coach afterwards about “understanding their rage,” etc. Did I understand? Yes, I suppose I still did. I apologized for my “unwarranted” outburst.

Let me fast forward to the summer of my freshman year in college. I had a job as a camp counselor at a camp for inner city boys. The camp was run by blacks for black boys, ages 8 to 12 years. I was the only white counselor amongst a whole host of black counselors. That did not bother me because, as I said, I was raised to revere the black race. I was not picked on – I suppose I would have been picked on had I been weak and frail, but I was not. So my moral dilemma had nothing to do with what was done unto me. It was not a case, as it was in junior high and high school, of being tolerant of the blacks' uncivil behavior toward me as a white man. No, it was a case of the black counselors' cruelty toward the black children. I need not chronicle the long litany of cruelty and abuse I witnessed; let one 8-year-old boy step forward. He was not in my group, but I saw what he endured. He was weak, frail, and nonathletic, which is a difficult fate to endure in a white camp for boys, but in the black camp he was in danger of being removed, by an excess of cruelty from his counselor and his fellow campers, from the face of the earth. I intervened and got him transferred to my group even though the head of the camp told me that blacks were not whites: “We do things differently.” Ah, there's the rub! I could not agree that cruelty to children was not cruelty if it was perpetrated by black men. To me, it was still cruelty. There was a footnote to that anecdote: The boy's mother told me at the close of camp that she was grateful to me for showing her son a kindness that he had never received before from a male. That is rather sad, isn't it?

Now, that one, small anecdote can be easily dismissed as white racism. You can tell me that there is even more cruelty in the white race – “Look at their wars, look at colonialism” etc. But I can only bear witness to what I have seen through the eyes of my heart. I saw then and I see now that it is only in the white race, when the white race was Christian, that we see that undefinable virtue that never faileth. Outside the white race there is no such thing as charity.

Africans have respected power deriving from force for too many centuries to acquire any moral shackles – they admire and follow the man with strength. Here is an illustration, amusing but unfortunately quite true. In a school run by the Catholic Church for young men showing aptitudes which might befit them for eventual priesthood, a film was being shown. The film represented in silent form the trial and crucifixion of Jesus Christ. At the scene in the Palace where the Roman soldiers struck Him with whips and placed a crown of thorns upon His head, excited cries of ‘Pika! Pika!’ rang out from the Congolese. Pika means hit or strike, and quite naturally, as in a Western film we cheer on the goodies and boo the baddies, they were encouraging the strong against the weak.

Another film depicting in symbolic form the ending of the Arab slave trade by the white man was greeted with equal enthusiasm—each slash of the long whip on the wretched black man’s back was cheered wholeheartedly, and when in coming to grips with the Arab the white hero is momentarily thrown to the ground—their shouts reached a crescendo of support for the Arab—not as representing a race, creed or idea—but simply because he symbolized power and force.

-D. P. Dugauquier, *Congo Cauldron*

During the 1950s a child of moderate liberals, be he Catholic or Protestant, was usually exposed to the Christ story before he was given the straight, organizational party line, the party line that destroys faith in the Christ story. So I had the Christ story in my heart as a touchstone of reality even during my late teens and early twenties, when the scientific worldview forced me to conclude that, “Christ be not risen.” But it was the Christ story that triumphed over science by my mid-twenties. Why? Because I saw Christ in His people. They, the antique Europeans, who had charity, spoke to my heart: “I wept and I believed.” That ‘sentimental’ attachment to our people must not be allowed to perish from the earth, because it is our connection to the living God. If Christianity becomes, as it has become, synonymous with the worship of the negro, then what is our faith? Are we supposed to believe, contrary to the words of our Lord, that the cruel and the merciless shall inherit the earth?

These ‘spontaneous’ outbursts of love for George Floyd are not spontaneous outbursts of love. The blacks are just as cruel to their own people as they are to the whites. They don’t really care about the death of George Floyd, who was not murdered. However ill-advised it was to kneel on a man’s neck, it must be emphasized that the police officer who has been damned by the liberal world could have killed instantly with one blow to the head or one bullet if he had been trying to commit murder. But of course that is not the issue. The blacks want a world in which they can rape, murder, and steal to their hearts’ content. And they have such a world. (1) Every time a black dies at the hands of a policeman, black or white (in Baltimore, the majority of the officers were black), the powers that be make it illegal to arrest blacks. And the ‘spontaneous’ riots, which are called protests? They are planned and orchestrated by the Jacobin-Marxists who call themselves Antifa. It was Trotsky who gave the Jacobin-Marxists their battle plan. He said that the Marxists should use the black race to destroy the European governments. And they have done just that. Who will say, “Stop, this shall not go on!”

No one will say stop, this shall not go on because it is up to the Christ-imbued European to stand up to the forces of Satan. And tragically there are no Christ-imbued Europeans. Organized Christian Jewry only produces ‘Christians’ who have disregarded our Lord’s stricture against serving two masters. The churchmen have tried and are still trying to serve Christ and the Negro. That cannot be. What happens when you cannot condemn cruelty when negroes are the practitioners of cruelty? What happens when you must condemn the Christ-centered culture of old Europe because it was racist? You will support the liberals who serve Satan because they are not racist. It is significant that the only whites who practiced cannibalism as a cannibalistic sect (the Donner party was an aberration) were the French Jacobins, who drank the blood of the French aristocrats after they were beheaded. And the modern Jacobins, the Antifa, tell us to “Eat the rich.” Thus the two become one, the Antifa liberal is joined in his cannibalism to the noble black savage.

The Batatela tribe were described in 1899 as being a race of remarkably tall and well-made people where no signs of disease or age were apparent. It was discovered afterwards that this was due to the fact that the young Batatelas ate their parents directly any signs of decrepitude became too evident.

-*Congo Cauldron*

But why should we be prejudiced against cannibalism? If the sacred negro does it, how can it be wrong? What right do we, white racists, have to judge our gods? And isn’t eating the older members of the herd in keeping with the wisdom of the Darwinian Swedes and their conservative advocates in the United States? Let’s all gather at the sacrificial altars on which white blood flows by the throne of Satan.

At the hour of his death, H. F. Lyte, possibly the most Christ-imbued European who ever lived, asked our Lord to, “Hold thou thy cross before my closing eyes.” He saw his salvation in the cross of Christ, because he had lived his entire life in and through Christ. Most Europeans fell far short of Henry Lyte, but there was a time when we, as a people, believed that men and women who lived as Henry Lyte lived, in and through Christ, were the penultimate of humanity. That an entire people believed the living God had entered human history through humanity was a miracle. We must support that miracle culture, especially now that it is completely condemned by ‘Christians’ and liberals. If we make black barbarians our saviors then we are damned. How can we, who once had Christ as our Savior, stoop so low? Who is being served when we worship the blacks? Is our God being served? Are we, the European people, being served? Are the people of color being served? Only Satan is being served.

This terrible, blasphemous rush, by avowed Christians such as Vice-President Pence, to worship at the altars of the noble black savage in the wake of the death of George Floyd has brought home to me something I have tried to avoid. I have frequently called such ‘Christians,’ who combine the worship of the negro with the worship of Christ, half-way house Christians. I did that because I wanted to believe there was a remnant of the true faith in those Europeans who called themselves Christians. But it is not so. Absolutely nothing remains in organized Christian Jewry of our ancient faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen. What we see before our eyes when we look at the unfaith of the modern European Christians is the noble black savage on the sacred cross of Christ.

There is no more inspiring and hopeful story in the Gospels than the story of the good thief who asks our Lord to remember him when He comes into His Kingdom. But when the intellectual Christians take Christ off His sacred cross and place Him in the position of the good thief, asking the noble black savage for mercy and forgiveness, then we see before our closing eyes the most hideous blasphemy in the history of mankind. It was the antique European people who held His cross before our eyes, in life and death we belonged to Him. Now we are constantly told by all the world that we must hold the sacred negro before our eyes in life and death. The shame is ours, the guilt is ours, the damnation is ours, if we do not tear the hideous blasphemy of negro worship from our hearts. Lord, forgive us our sins and stay with us “amid the encircling gloom, in life and death, abide with us.” +

---

(1) If the police cannot arrest the greatest perpetrators of crime, for fear they might kill them when they resist arrest, of what use is a police force? Our policemen come from our culture, a culture which is ruled by Jacobin-Marxists who have placed the sacred negro at the religious center of our culture. Do you really think that young men, who want to make a living, are going to oppose their liberal rulers by arresting black people? No, they won't. Especially after they see what has happened when police officers wound, maim, or kill blacks in their efforts to make an arrest. The police officers, who must do something, will concentrate their efforts on white prolife demonstrators, white ranchers, and whites who voted for Trump. Then, like the police in the European nations currently are doing, they can really release their inner demons and use force in the defense of the Jacobin-Marxist government that pays them. The police are not the friends of white people. Protect yourself and your family and look to Christ for salvation, not to Demoncracy. It is better that we have no police than a police who serve the liberals and their gods.

Lest We Forget – Tommie Lindh

---

## **Our Miracle Culture - May 30, 2020**

“Tis the time's plague when madmen lead the blind.” –*King Lear*

---

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. –John 1: 1-5

---

There is one thing certain about the coronavirus: it has become the most politicized virus in the history of the European people. Wasn't such a politicization inevitable? People without a blood faith must turn to the abstract 'science' of politics to convince themselves that “still they live” and to convince the aggregate herd (there are no human personalities in modern democracies) that their political schemes can bring mankind happiness and freedom from suffering.

In contrast to the modern purveyors of secular happiness stands Jesus Christ. He promised His followers a cross. That was a very odd promise for someone running for office. But of course Christ wasn't running for any office; He was and is the Word made flesh, and He left us free to reject Him or take Him into our hearts. Again, wasn't that rather foolish? Who wants to take a crucifixion into their heart? Certainly not the liberals of either the mad-dog or classical mold. We dare not fall into the trap of choosing between the liberalism of the mad-dog liberal and the classical liberal, who is now called a conservative, because both forms of liberalism lead us to hell.

I have quoted Thomas Mann's story before, but I want to reference it again because it is apropos. Back in ancient times a Greek servant, an Athenian, was doing the shopping for his master. While going about the business of shopping he saw Death in the marketplace, and Death looked at him with what the servant considered a threatening look. He stopped shopping, ran back to his master's house, and started packing his meager belongings. His master asked him what he was doing. "I'm sorry, I must leave you for a time. I was in the marketplace, and Death looked at me with a threatening glance, so I'm going to Crete to escape him."

So the servant left for Crete. His master then went to the marketplace to find Death, and when he found him, he asked him why he had looked at his servant with a threatening glance. Death replied, "I did not look at your servant with a threatening glance. That was a look of surprise. You see, I have an appointment with him today in Crete."

The tragic irony of the coronavirus crisis is that it is a man-made tragedy; it is the result of the liberals' (both classical and mad-dog) attempt to escape from Christ. We all suffer and die, but our suffering increases tenfold when we try to avoid the cross of Christ. The European people have had devastating plagues when they were a Christian people, but this particular plague, or virus, is the result of liberalism; it was not an inevitable part of the European story because we would not, if we were a Christian people, have opened up our borders to the heathens of color. A Christian nation is a provincial nation; the leaders of a Christian nation care about the particular people within their nation and they endeavor to protect their people from the dangers that come from the pestilence that walketh at noonday through open borders. The coronavirus deaths, the unemployment, the despair that has led to increased suicides, are all the result of the liberals' hatred of Christ and the classical liberals' indifference to Christ.

In order to highlight the differences between a Christian people with Christian leaders and the current European nations led by liberals and classical liberals, let us pretend that the coronavirus has entered into a fictional Christian nation. What would and would not be the Christian response to the virus? Let us start with the scientists, the 'experts.' If they looked at existence through a heart connected to Christ, they would try to provide their nation's leadership with accurate information about the virus. They would not invent an end-of-the-world-plague scenario in order to give their liberal cohorts the excuse to place the nation under martial law. And what would the fourth estate and the respective houses of Congress do in a Christian nation? They would rally around their king or their president in his attempts to combat the virus. They would not automatically oppose the use of a drug that seemed to offer people a cure for the disease simply because their king or president recommended it. Nor would they close down the country in an effort to ruin the economy so they could destroy their political opponent. But of course we do not have a Christian nation, and the Demoncrats have tried to destroy Trump by rolling up the death tolls and destroying the economy.

Now let us look, through the eyes of the people in our fictional Christian nation, at the classical liberals. At first glance the conservatives, who consist of the intellectual Christians, the libertarians, the Jeffersonians, and the Darwinian capitalists, seem to represent the good because they oppose the mad-dog liberals. But the conservatives have their own agenda that is also opposed to Christ's reign of charity. It is unChristian to destroy another man's livelihood in order to destroy your political opponent; that is what the Demoncrats are doing. But it is also unChristian to 'open up' your nation, citing the Darwinian Swedes, because nature is all and nature does not care about the individual, it only cares about the herd. The conservatives are the greatest danger to our faith because they seem preferable to the Demoncrats. However, there should be something inside of us that is horrified by the cold rationality of the conservatives such as Heather MacDonald: "Conservative values like small government, self-reliance, and liberty can be defended without recourse to invisible deities or the religions that exalt them." That immoral imbecility can only come from a mind that has been thoroughly 'educated' in modern universities specializing in the 'Ye shall be as gods' theology of Satan. We cannot decide anything of importance — and how we respond to a plague or virus is important — without reference to that "invisible deity" within, whom our ancestors believed to be that very visible God who suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, died, and was buried; and on the third day He rose again from the dead.

We, as a people, have lost touch with the miracle culture of old Europe, the culture of Christ Crucified, Christ Risen, because first our churchmen, and then, following in the churchmen's footsteps, our secular rulers, have damned the God-given divinity within man; they blasphemed against the Holy Ghost in order to champion that which was outside of man, the natural world which could be dissected by the mind of man. The new faith became an outward thing held together by science. The mad-dog liberals accuse their enemies, the classical liberals, of being unscientific, and the classical liberals fire back with the same charge against the mad-dog liberals. But neither side is willing to repudiate the new holy ghost, which is science.

The professed Christians in modern Europe have managed to keep faith with the mad-dog liberals by wedging Christ into the first part of the liberals' trinity, which is the abstract intellect. If faith in Christ becomes a philosophy, it is still possible for the 'Christian' to maintain the liberals' faith in the noble black savage and science. That is why organized Christianity does not give the white grazer an alternative faith to liberalism. The churchmen have forsaken Christ for the promise of



liberalism: “Ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.” But why then can the churchmen, the conservative liberals, not see the evil of liberalism and the good that was in the antique Europeans? Why are the liberals deemed good and the antique Europeans deemed evil? Is it because the latter were racist and sexist? Yes, it is. But why is pietas evil? And why is a recognition that women, the life-bearers and the life-nurturers, have a different role than men, the Christ-bearers, evil? All of the maniacal, satanic hubris of modern man can be summed up by the words of St. Paul in Romans 1: 22: “Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools.” Our modern European civilization, which is in reality an uncivilization, was built on the Tower of Babel assumption that man’s intellect, unaided by the grace of God, can reach the heavens. The end result of that ‘exalted’ reasoning has placed us in hell on earth.

There are a number of James Fitzpatrick films from the early 1950s in which he visits rural communities in Holland, Denmark, and Switzerland. Those communities, which are racially and ethnically homogeneous, seem to be, in Fitzpatrick’s eyes, and in my eyes, as close as human beings can get to heaven on earth. Death and suffering still exist in those communities, but the man-made tragedies that increase human suffering and the religious despair at the hour of death that exist in the more ‘advanced’ nations are not a part of those communities. However, at the end of those marvelous vignettes, Fitzpatrick and I part company, because he attributes the magnificence of those provincial white communities to democracy. Au contraire! It is democracy, the government of diversity and equality, that ultimately brought down those white, provincial cultures. The people depicted in the Fitzpatrick films were living in nations that still adhered to a Christian ethos, and many of the older members of those communities still retained a faith in the miracle culture of old Europe. When that faith faded, the ethos started fading, and by the 21st century those white Christian communities were non-communities in a non-nation. Neither capitalism, socialism, distributism, nor any other theory of economic development can restore such non-nations. They are dead, as we are dead as individuals if we do not reject the theories of liberalism, classical and mad-dog, and return to the faith of the people who walked on water because they believed in the Son of God.

The mad-dog liberals and the classical liberals seem to be at odds during this coronavirus crisis, but they are not at odds on that which is essential, that the culture of the antique Europeans should be seen through the eyes of the heart and recognized for what it was – the miracle culture of the people who saw His blood upon the rose. They made His incarnation, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead part of their blood. The statistical culture of the mad-dog liberals and the classical liberals is built on the assumption that what is essential is not essential. The mad-dog liberals say that Christ be not risen, and the conservatives tell us that whether Christ be risen or Christ be not risen is irrelevant – what is necessary is that we adhere to the proper philosophy. What unites the liberal and the conservatives is their love of the negro and their rejection of the miracle culture of the antique Europeans.

Mankind must have a personal savior; if they will not have Christ because His resurrection from the dead is unscientific, then they will have the noble savage as their savior. During this so-called health crisis, the real crisis, the vicious, unrelenting attack on the white race by the heathens of color has increased tenfold. And the liberals who encourage the attacks and the conservatives who are indifferent to the attacks still keep arguing about economics. (1) The only economy that we should worry about is ignored – we should preserve our spiritual economy, the miracle culture of the antique Europeans. Go and learn what Dostoevsky’s Stepan Trofimovich meant when he said that Shakespeare was more important than shoes. Our lives are indeed a miracle; we are either connected to His miracle or we are nothing. Our modern uncivilization is a wheel of fire. If we look back to that other civilization, to His Europe, we can know something of the divine love which transcends statistics, plagues, and economic theories. There must be more to our faith than an adherence to the laws of an organized church. We must have something inside of us that allows us to transcend the law in order to live in Him and through Him. +

(1) On a daily basis innocent whites are murdered by black barbarians. The black murder plague is far worse than the plague called the coronavirus. When Tommie Lindh, the white, 19-year-old, Swedish man, was murdered trying to stop a black barbarian from raping a white girl, the liberal and conservative media were silent, as they are always silent in the face of the murder of a white by a black. But when a black criminal dies while being arrested by white policemen, the media explodes with condemnations of white racism, and the black barbarians seize the moment to increase their burnings, lootings, rapes, and murders. We live in the midst of diversity-created plagues – coronavirus and black – that have one source: the hatred of the Christ-bearing race. When our churchmen stop hating the white race and start defending His Europe, when the liberals are opposed instead of appeased, then we will begin to see some light in the darkness.

---

## **Sweet Fields Beyond the Plague of Rationalism - May 23, 2020**

Whatever is left in this world of God’s grace comes from human hearts which are not completely closed to St. Paul’s vision of that lonely figure, the son of the living God, standing before the religious atheists and the outright atheists of the Sanhedrin. –CWNY

The conflict between the demonic little dwarf Tony Fauci, who insists there is no clinical evidence to support the claim that the coronavirus is the Wuhan virus, and the conservatives, who assert that the Chinese plague came from the war laboratories in Wuhan, is a microcosm of the tragedy of Western man ever since the beginning of the 20th century. There are the forces of evil, represented by Fauci, the liberals, and the Chinese communists, but there are no corresponding forces of good to counter the forces of evil. And we cannot have a happy conclusion to the fairy tale of European civilization without the forces of good.

Are not the conservatives the forces of good? No, you cannot represent an opposing force to evil when you are a shadow, to once again borrow Dabney's term, of the evil force which you oppose. The liberal openly disposes of the Christian God in order to adhere to his triune God of the abstract intellect, the noble savage, and science. The conservative wants to keep Christ in the framework of the abstract intellect – he wants Christ the philosopher rather than Christ the savior – while maintaining the noble savage as his savior and science as his holy ghost. It is only when we return to a fairytale vision of life, the vision bequeathed to us by Christ, St. Paul, and the antique Europeans, that we can respond to the forces of evil as Christ would have us respond. What then is missing in the conservative's response to the evil dwarf and his liberal cohorts? The prophetic fire is missing, the prophetic fire of Isaiah and St. Paul, which is grounded in the charity that never faileth:

It is now sixteen or seventeen years since I saw the queen of France, then the dauphiness, at Versailles; and surely never lighted on this orb, which she hardly seemed to touch, a more delightful vision. I saw her just above the horizon, decorating and cheering the elevated sphere she just began to move in; glittering like the morning star, full of life, and splendor, and joy. Oh! what a revolution! and what an heart must I have, to contemplate without emotion that elevation and that fall! Little did I dream when she added titles of veneration to those of enthusiastic, distant, respectful love, that she should ever be obliged to carry the sharp antidote against disgrace concealed in that bosom; little did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more, shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honour, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness.

– Burke, *Reflections on the Revolution in France*

Can “that charity of honour” be seen? Can we bring charity and honor into the duel of statistics between the liberals and the conservatives? No, we cannot, because charity is not so nominated in the democratic bond we have forged with the devil. We can only bring ‘clinical facts’ that can be seen with the eye of science into the arena, we cannot bring that which can only be seen through the eye into battle. That is the democratic rule. But the liberals’ ‘facts’ come from Satan – they are satanic lies he uses to attack the living God. We cannot counter those lies and the people who live by those lies by referencing the rationality of conservatism and the irrationality of liberalism, because that false definition of good and evil – “We, the conservatives, are good because we are rational, and the liberals are bad because they are irrational” – is part of the great lie, that abstract reason, divorced from the grace of God, can arrive at the truth.

Must we always find some abstract theory of God, must God be put in a golden bowl so that He can be validated by man's abstract reason? “Yes,” the conservatives tell us. So God resides out there somewhere while the conservatives enter the lists, armed with good solid statistics, but without the full armor of Christ, which can only be worn by those men and women who have allowed the fairytale God into their hearts. In contrast, the liberals enter the lists armed with statistics and the full armor of Satan, because they have allowed the demonic angel of darkness into their hearts. The mad-dog liberals always defeat the classical liberals because they follow that which is within, while the classical liberals, the conservatives, follow that which is without, an abstract God who cannot sustain a man in the day of battle. If liberals demand statistical data to decide whether a nation that has never been Christian and is committed to the ideals of Jacobin France and Stalinist Russia is good or evil, then they have already told you they are beyond the ken of all things human. Why then do the conservatives try to deal with them? You can't expect to convert the devil, you can only oppose him as our Lord did when he was tempted by him in the desert.

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.  
And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred.  
And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.  
But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.  
Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple,  
And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.  
Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.  
Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them;

And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.  
Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.  
Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

—Matthew 4: 1-11

The conservatives caved in to the temptation of the devil. Our Lord refused to give the devil empirical evidence of His divinity by casting Himself down from the pinnacle of the temple. So they, the conservatives, have taken it upon themselves to present their own miracle to Satan's minions. They present their marvelous theories to the liberals, which are designed to dazzle them by their rational brilliance. But the liberals are never dazzled by the rational brilliance of the conservatives. They remain unmoved by the proliferers' scientific proofs that the child in the womb is a living, breathing personality, and they remain adamantly opposed to the slightest suggestion that the Chinese communists created the Wuhan virus with malice aforethought, despite all the conservatives' empirical evidence of the malice aforethought. Perhaps something besides an appeal to the liberals' reason is necessary to defeat liberals. Where your treasure lies, so lies your heart. The liberals treasure their triune faith, which is diametrically opposed to Christ's reign of charity. They will make common cause with any individual or group that attacks Christ through His people – the Chinese communists, the Moslems, the Jews, the colored savages – all are a treasured part of Liberaldom. You can't, Mr. Conservative, defeat the liberals by showing them how irrational they are. The liberals are rational: they have made a rational decision to defend the faith that is within them – the hatred of Christ and His people – with the cold, rational malignity of the devil. You can't deal with creatures who hate with that intensity by reasoning with them or appealing to their compassionate nature; those who worship Satan have left compassion behind. You must have something inside, you must have Christ inside, in order to fight the devil and his minions.

The liberals, with an unerring instinct to destroy even the symbolic remains of Christian Europe, have dug up Nathan Bedford Forrest's and his wife's remains in order to remove them from hallowed ground. Lee and Stonewall Jackson were great heroes and should always be honored by white Europeans, but Forrest was a hero who stood above them all. I doubt if he ever read Burke, but he was the one man who understood, as Burke understood, that the enemy, the Jacobin liberals, could not be dealt with as if they were Europeans who still remained within the fold of Christ, the Good Shepherd. They were a new breed of unmen who scorned that charity of honor which once was the distinguishing mark of the European. The European civilization of I Corinthians 1:13, the civilization that the theologians tell us never existed, only existed as a civilization in the North American hemisphere in the nation that Nathan Bedford Forrest defended. He was the last fairytale knight of old Europe. It is quite fitting, from Satan's viewpoint, that he and his wife should be posthumously tried and condemned by the liberal Sanhedrin who hate all those men and women who loved Christ in and through their people.

The liberals and their allies in the organized churches (Pope Francis the blasphemer recently issued a happy Ramadan to the Moslems) have decreed that white people are the major source of evil in the world. And in a certain sense they are right – they, the liberals who have repudiated their European heritage, are the major source of evil in the world. But those other whites, the white people of old Europe who loved Christ, were they evil? That is what the illuminati tell us, but I don't see my people with the mind of an illuminati; I see my people through the interior eye of the heart. And there I see faith, hope, and charity. Christ entered human history so that we could be part of His story, which is the story of, "For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son." We cannot separate ourselves from the people who took Christ into their hearts, who became part of His story, without losing our souls. The white race is the Christ-bearing race. Even the white grazers who have lost a clear vision of our Lord still show us every time there is a crisis such as a plague, flood, or famine that it is only white people who know what charity is. It is only the liberals, who make war with their heathen allies against the white race, that have not charity because they have repudiated their people, the people who saw a great light.

In Shakespeare's *The Taming of the Shrew*, the shrew, Katherina, has taken herself out of our Lord's loving embrace. She will not serve Him through the channels of grace He has provided. She wants autonomy from all divine-human restraints. But she gradually becomes aware of how His grace works through human channels. And in her submission to her husband, she submits to our Lord:

Such duty as the subject owes the prince,  
Even such a woman oweth to her husband;  
And when she is froward, peevish, sullen, sour,  
And not obedient to his honest will,  
What is she but a foul contending rebel  
And graceless traitor to her loving lord?—  
I am asham'd that women are so simple  
To offer war where they should kneel for peace,  
Or seek for rule, supremacy, and sway,  
When they are bound to serve, love, and obey.  
Why are our bodies soft and weak and smooth,  
Unapt to toil and trouble in the world,

But that our soft conditions and our hearts  
Should well agree with our external parts?  
Come, come, you froward and unable worms!  
My mind hath been as big as one of yours,  
My heart as great, my reason haply more,  
To bandy word for word and frown for frown;  
But now I see our lances are but straws,  
Our strength as weak, our weakness past compare,  
That seeming to be most which we indeed least are.

The modern conservative needs to see that his reason is not what our Lord wants: He wants our hearts. If we love much we will know how to deal with evil dwarfs and their liberal minions.

The insufficiency of abstract reason to combat liberalism was brought home to me recently when I saw an exchange between a conservative and a liberal, who were discussing the Chinese method of dealing with the coronavirus. The liberal defended the Chinese purging of the virus by the murder of the victims of the virus. The classical liberal was appalled. But why was he appalled? If abstract reason is our touchstone of reality, isn't it rational to kill the sick so that the healthy can live? The classical liberal, the modern conservative, is Ivan Karamazov. He makes abstract reason his God and then reserves the right to be appalled when Smerdyakov, acting on that premise, commits murder. If Christ be not risen, there is no reason why we should not commit murder for the greater good, the greater good being the biological survival of the herd. Let us step back into the divine narrative of His redemptive love. Our story must be, once again, interwoven with His story. There is indeed, "A Land of Pure Delight," but we cannot get there except through Him, the Christ of old Europe, whom the liberals mock and the men of reason regard as a poetical triviality, fit for fireside tales at Christmas time but not suited for the serious business of life. Let us shun that rationalism, which is the true plague, and embrace His realm of charity, which passeth the understanding of abstract reason.+

---

### **A Different Realm - May 16, 2020**

I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. —John 17: 23

---

It has become abundantly clear in this coronavirus crisis that the liberals' concern is not for the well-being of the American people, black, white, or other. If they were concerned about actual human beings, they would stop the virus in its tracks in the nursing homes by firing all the low-wage illegal immigrant custodial staffs and authorizing the use of the hydroxychloroquine drug at the beginning of the illness, not right before the hour of death. And secondly, they would not shut down businesses that are in safe areas, which constitute most businesses in the United States. What is largely a problem for New York City should not become a problem for the whole nation. And thirdly, they would not use science as a God word to scare the living hell out of people who are at their mercy in a 'crisis' such as this.

Let me dwell on that third point. I avoid both the liberals and the conservatives (the classical liberals), because both groups place an inordinate emphasis on man's abstract reason, independent of an indwelling spiritual connection to Christ. I don't want to listen to the narrative of either camp, because I don't want to be drawn into their orbits. The classical liberal generally says kind things about Christianity, and the non-classical liberal says bad things about Christianity, but both parties do not believe, as I believe, that it is the Christian heart, not the abstract intellect that will guide us safely through the labyrinth of existence. So in all things spiritual I do not consult liberals of either the classical or mad-dog liberal mold.

Christians of old Europe used to see themselves as spiritual entities who had to pay attention to their biological outer crust for the sake of the spiritual essence within. It is quite different with the classical liberal and the mad-dog liberal: they believe that nature is all. The antique European rejects that biological view of existence, but there are times when he must rely, to some extent, on the wisdom of the mere nature experts, those who have come to be called the men of science. For instance, if you have a medical problem or if you need to know when a plague is a plague or not, you need someone who knows a little more about science and medicine than you do. But what if the men of science have no conscience? What if they believe, not in "through Christ and in Christ," but in man's god-like reason abstracted from the living God? Then, as Ludwig von Drake says, "You've got a horrible mess."

Even in the case of the coronavirus plague, what seems like merely a matter of accumulating the scientific facts is not just a matter of accumulating the scientific facts. Our vision of existence, our spiritual core, even if that core consists of no spiritual substance, will determine how we marshal and interpret the 'scientific facts.' That is why there are such divergent

views in the scientific community regarding this recent plague, or this recent flu, depending on which authority you believe.

Let me, a non-scientific expert, highlight the problems of a European Everyman during a 'crisis' such as we now face: Because I believe, as Burke believed, that if you "suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, he will become our master," I do not pay much attention to the liberals' or the classical liberals' news sites. So I heard about the coronavirus rather late from one of my sons, who informed me of it. My reaction to the news was much like my reaction when I have just settled down for a long winter's nap and I hear some kind of commotion on the street in front of my house – "I suppose I'd better get up and see what is happening, because it is right in front of my house." Like it or not the coronavirus was coming and I had to make certain decisions about it.

So I listened to the various news outlets, news outlets that I usually avoid. With only one exception, Rush Limbaugh, the authorities, both conservative and liberal, said that what was coming was a plague of Biblical proportions. A whole host of scientific and medical experts were projecting death rates that indicated the end of the world. What is an Everyman, a non-expert, to make of such predictions? Do you curl up in a fetal position and refuse to leave your bed? Do you run out in the streets and leap in front of the first speeding car you see? Do you assume sackcloth and ashes and start doing the penances that you always resolved to do someday, but just not today? Or do you do none of the above, and disregard the scientific experts?

I was aided by a certain skepticism in regard to medical experts that I acquired in my early teens, as a result of my interest in weight training. I read *Strength and Health* magazine, published by the father of American weight-lifting, Bob Hoffman. Mr. Hoffman regularly criticized the medical establishment for their lack of attention to good nutrition and exercise. I came to believe that, "Doctors be all swabs," and that there was no illness, except one's final death, that could not be cured by exercise and/or diet. Subsequent events, particularly once I became a father of children, forced me to alter my opinion of doctors – sometimes they were necessary, and all health problems could not be solved by diet and exercise. But I still retained a certain distrust of what the 'medical experts' proclaimed; if doctors were not essentially evil as I first believed, they were still not the infallible gods that my fellow countrymen believed them to be.

Hence, I did not quite believe the scientific prophesies of doom that were being so authoritatively bandied about. Now it appears that the medical experts were not experts, they were humbugs in the service of the liberals who wanted there to be a perception that there was a plague so that they could move toward their final solution, the extermination of the white race, at an accelerated pace.

If we grant what has now become obvious, that this virus is not the greatest plague in the history of mankind, what then do we make of it? Some of the conservatives who were screaming pandemic, gloom, gloom and doom, are now saying it was all a hoax. But can they be trusted? Is it an either/or, is it either a pandemic of global proportions or a hoax? Most certainly the food lines and the unemployment have been created by the hoax of the 'global pandemic.' But is this a serious illness that warrants some special measures? Perhaps the school and church closings in certain urban areas were warranted. This flu does seem to be more serious than most, although I can't even be sure of that, because the medical experts have an agenda, a liberal agenda, that they are pushing. So the central problem during this 'crisis' is the central problem that a European Everyman faces every day of his life in modern Europe. How can he trust leaders who have rejected Christ as the lodestar of Western civilization?

I concede that in medicine and certain public health issues we must be cognizant of the fact that a man has a biological nature. But if we make abstract reason contemplating man's biological nature our touchstone of reality, instead of an indwelling spirit, the indwelling spirit of Christ, we will live our lives according to the statistics of the scientists. The most depressing aspect of this 'pandemic' is the willingness of conservatives and liberals to base their cases for/or against – panic or hoax – on statistics that ignore individual human beings. For instance, you don't approvingly cite the Swedes' 'herd immunity' plan even if it flattens their curve. They are murdering their elderly. And you don't cite the statistics of the coronavirus deaths in urban locations in order to impoverish and starve human beings living in rural areas by 'shutting them down.' We have lost our vision of the God-Man, Jesus Christ, the non-utilitarian God who loves particular human beings, not abstract statistics.

"That's rebellion," Alyosha said softly.

"Rebellion? I wish you hadn't used that word," said Ivan feelingly. "I don't believe it's possible to live in rebellion, and I want to live! Tell me yourself—I challenge you: let's assume that you were called upon to build the edifice of human destiny so that men would finally be happy and would find peace and tranquility. If you knew that, in order to attain this, you would have to torture only one single creature, let's say the little girl who beat her chest so desperately in the outhouse, and that on her unavenged tears you could build that edifice, would you agree to do it? Tell me and don't lie!"

“No, I would not,” Alyosha said softly.

*-The Brothers Karamazov*

Christ stood before a tribunal, a tribunal presided over by the high priest of Judaism, and He was condemned as a blasphemer because He said that He was God incarnate. But there was a people who saw, in the humiliated and crucified Christ, the Savior of the world. The European people's descent into hell, their abandonment of the vision of the God-Man is a tragedy far greater than this so-called pandemic. The pandemic crisis is in fact part of the ongoing attack against Christ. Once Christ was brought before the tribunal of man's abstract reason, first by the religious atheists, the scholastics in the Catholic and Protestant churches, then by the outright atheists, the Voltaires and the Shaws, He was condemned again. He has been found wanting by the men of statistics, the philosophers, theologians, and scientists. And He has been condemned as a blasphemer by the liberals. Both groups, the religious atheists and the outright atheists, have told us that Christ is a liar. The theological atheist has felt the need, like Dostoevsky's Grand Inquisitor, to rework the Christ story because Christ did not return to earth as He promised. And the liberal has felt free to look to a new trinity more in keeping with the needs of modern man. St. Paul stands in contradiction to both camps — he claimed that he lived “through Christ and in Christ.” He felt alive because the grace of God was alive inside of Him. That was also the faith of the European people: they saw, in their inmost hearts, the Savior that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus. Whatever is left in this world of God's grace comes from human hearts which are not completely closed to St. Paul's vision of that lonely figure, the son of the living God, standing before the religious atheists and the outright atheists of the Sanhedrin. Has Christ left us? No, we have left Him.

When Donald Trump went before the liberal Sanhedrin, the Fourth Estate, he was trying to include them in his mission of compassion. He was inviting them to join with him in the fight against the coronavirus, but the Sanhedrin wanted no part of Trump's mission. They wanted to condemn Trump, because they view him as the font of all evil: He is a white man, and as such a creature he has a connection to the God-Man whom they hate. The ‘press conferences’ became min-trials at which Trump was always found guilty. Haven't we, the remnant band of Christian Europeans, faced such tribunals in our lives? The home schooling parent, the politically incorrect teacher, the blogger who has been condemned for ‘hate speech,’ the anti-abortion protestor, and every other man, woman, or child who has deviated from the norms of the liberals have felt the wrath of the modern defenders of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth.

A drowning man will grasp at any life preserver he can, so I do not blame the whites who have been thrown out of work and impoverished by the liberals' coronavirus onslaught for organizing protests in the name of their civil liberties. But there are no civil liberties outside of Christian Europe. There is no freedom, no civil liberty, in a republic dedicated to Satan. It is only when we see liberalism for what it is, and Christ for what He is, that we will have the grace, the will, and the heart, to depose Satan who currently rules the European nations through his liberal minions.

We can't reason with demons. The liberals are not misinformed, they know what they are doing when they withhold medicine from those who are ill in order to inflate the pandemic statistics. And they know what they are doing when they ‘close down’ people's livelihoods. They are pure evil. We can't fight them by way of demoncracy. We must see that we belong to another realm of existence, a realm of human hearts connected to His divine heart. Our prayer is always the non-liberal prayer, it is His prayer: “Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven.”+

---

### **Shall Malice Bear Down Truth? - May 9, 2020**

It is thus, and for the same end, that they endeavor to destroy that tribunal of conscience which exists independently of edicts and decrees. Your despots govern by terror. They know, that he who fears God fears nothing else; and therefore they eradicate from the mind, through their Voltaire, their Helvetius, and the rest of that infamous gang, that only sort of fear which generates true courage. Their object is, that their fellow citizens may be under the dominion of no awe, but that of their committee of research and of their lanterne. —Burke, *A Letter to a Member of the National Assembly*

---

And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory. And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain, And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds. —Book of Revelations 16: 8-11

---

In Shakespeare's Merchant of Venice Shylock seeks to use the law to cut the heart out of Antonio whom he hates because he is a Christian and because he lends money without charging interest. Shylock's subterfuge is exposed and his bloody

purpose is thwarted when Portia steps in and enforces the spirit of the law, which stands in stark contrast to Shylock's twisted interpretation of the letter of the law.

The white grazers and the white conservatives have not yet come to the same conclusion as Portia came to – they do not see that behind the liberals' façade of democracy and fairness is pure, dephlegmated evil. The liberals want to destroy the white grazers, not because the grazers are Christian as Antonio was, but because their ancestors once were Christian. Nothing will deter the liberals from pursuing their desired blood-path, no appeal to their better nature (they have none), no appeal to their sense of justice (they have none), and no appeal to their humanity (they have none) will avail.

I pray you, think, you question with the Jew.  
You may as well go stand upon the beach  
And bid the main flood bate his usual height;  
You may as well use question with the wolf,  
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;  
You may as well forbid the mountain pines  
To wag their high tops and to make no noise  
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;  
You may as well do anything most hard,  
As seek to soften that—than which what's harder?—  
His Jewish heart.

—*Merchant of Venice*

The liberals have interiorized Satan's hatred of the Christ-bearing race. They will not cease from their satanic course until the white race is destroyed. Their sacrificial altars must flow with the blood of white people in order to satisfy their internal bloodlust. "We will have sacrifice, not mercy," is the war cry of the liberals.

The grazer cannot see the evil of the liberals because he has been spiritually anesthetized by intellectual Christianity in the churches, which is religious atheism, and by democracy, which is a system of government conceived in hell and dedicated to the proposition that everything humane and Christian is undemocratic and therefore evil. Hence the grazer has nowhere to turn. He can't turn to organized Christian atheism to find redress for the evils of democracy, because organized Christian atheism has decreed that Christian Europe was not Christian Europe, it was racist and sexist Europe and its people are damned. Their descendants must repent, they must become liberal, or else they too will be damned. So the grazers put on sackcloth and ashes and return to democracy. And there they are told the same thing: you must show true contrition by democratically consenting to your own destruction.

The liberals' 'take no prisoners' assault on the white race through the coronavirus crisis is the result of the white grazers' refusal to self-destruct by way of democracy. They voted for a man, a Prometheus, who wanted to keep them alive. The Fourth Estate's vicious attacks on Trump are attacks on the constituency that he represents, white people begging for a chance to live and breathe within the confines of a charnel house dedicated to Satan. If you cannot see that the liberals' hatred of Trump, which is a hatred so intense that it can have only one source, is an attack on the Christ-bearing race you are either a liberal yourself or else you are a spiritually anesthetized grazer. No man can stand up to the satanic hatred that Trump has had to endure. No man should have to. What did he do to warrant such hatred? He took pity on white people – that is what he did. The liberals' attack on Trump is an attack on thee and me. Every single death from the coronavirus is a result of the liberals' refusal to stop all dealings with the Chinese communists. And how can you look at the unemployment lines and the food lines without feeling pity for the whites in those lines and hatred for the liberals who have brought such devastation among us? When Ariel relates the sufferings of the refugees on the island, he says to Prospero –

That if you now beheld them, your affections  
Would become tender.  
Prospero. Does thou think so, spirit?  
Ariel. Mine would, sir, were I human.  
Prospero. And mine shall.  
Hast thou, which art but air, a touch, a feeling,  
Of their afflictions, and shall not myself,  
One of their kind, that relish all as sharply  
Passion as they, be kindlier mov'd than thou art?

—*The Tempest*

The conservative Olympians in church and state have not come down from Mt. Olympus to defend Prometheus or the people for whom he stole the electoral fire because they do not believe there is a bond between them and the white race. They have no kith and kin, they are pure mind. What is needful, in their minds, is an intelligence that is above human

passions and sentimental attachments. They do not believe in the old notion of, “One of their kind.” And that philosophy makes them useless in the battle that is raging, the battle of Satan and his liberal minions against the white race, which once championed the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

Rush Limbaugh is one of the few conservatives who has stepped down from Mt. Olympus to support Trump. He recently stated that the liberals have lost all control of themselves. Their hatred of Trump has reached the level of insanity. That is true, but I would change ‘insanity’ to ‘satanic.’ And I would add that the liberals have always been satanic, but now they no longer are capable of hiding their passionate hatred of Christ and His people. What has Trump done that has drawn the liberals out? We must deal with their hatred because we should take pity on Trump and any man who is facing what he is facing, and we must deal with the liberals’ hatred because it is not just directed at Trump, it is directed at every single white who will not agree to the destruction of the white race. And that really is the crux of the matter. Yes, the liberals are angry because they thought the election was a done deal, and they saw it wrested away just as it was in their grasp. But they have lost before and managed to control their emotions and wait for the next election. What made Trump’s victory different? First and foremost, he did not accept the ruling premise of liberalism that the white race must self-destruct. He was not and is not a white supremacist, which is a pity because the white supremacy that the liberals abhor simply means that whites should love their own people, but he is not a believer in the liberals’ doctrine of “The white race must perish.” And the second reason that Trump has made the liberals take off their masks and reveal themselves in all their satanic fury is that Trump has shown a sincere Christian desire to stop legalized infanticide. The demons who run our nation cannot tolerate such an outrage. And they will rage, rage against even one small ray of light in the dark night that they have worked so hard to spread over the face of the earth.

Theoretically we are governed by a system of checks and balances with a judiciary, a Congress, and a chief executive. That theory is incorrect. We are governed by the Fourth Estate, which consists of an intellectual elite – academics, journalists, media pundits, scientists, and the usual assortment of psychiatrists and sociologists. That Fourth Estate is in reality a fifth column. They do everything in their power to break down any and every regime that ‘stinks’ of Christianity. They always support regicide in the name of liberty, equality, and fraternity.

What direction the French spirit of proselytism is likely to take, and in what order it is likely to prevail in the several parts of Europe, it is not easy to determine. The seeds are sown almost every where, chiefly by newspaper circulations, infinitely more efficacious and extensive than ever they were. And they are a more important instrument than generally is imagined. They are a part of the reading of all, they are the whole of the reading of the far greater number. There are thirty of them in Paris alone. The language diffuses them more widely than the English, though the English too are much read. The writers of these papers indeed, for the greater part, are either unknown or in contempt, but they are like a battery in which the stroke of any one ball produces no great effect, but the amount of continual repetition is decisive. Let us only suffer any person to tell us his story, morning and evening, but for one twelvemonth, and he will become our master. –Burke, *Thoughts on French Affairs*

Trump’s ‘victory’ was not a victory because he can do nothing to supplant the liberal Fourth Estate that rules our nation and all the European nations. But Trump’s crucifixion has shown those who have eyes to see the truth about liberals – they are demonic. This is the fourth outbreak of the liberals’ naked-fist demonism; the French Revolution, the Russian Revolution, and the Northern war of extermination in the 1860’s were the other three. Will it just be business as usual when the coronavirus war is over? We cannot know such things for certain, but it appears highly unlikely that the white grazers will repudiate intellectual Christianity or democracy in order to embrace His Europe. (1)

We always will believe a lie when we accept the enemy’s definitions of existence. The liberals’ death wish is not a death wish. They will surely die from their attempt to strike out at God through the white race. But in attacking the white race, the liberals think they are fleeing from death. In their minds Christ represents pain, suffering, and death. The hard-eyed atheist, George Bernard Shaw, excoriated Christianity as the cruelest of all religions. What is cruel about Christianity? We are not promised a kingdom of God on earth, we are not promised lives devoid of suffering and death. It is the liberals’ hope that science, their Holy Ghost, can relieve them from suffering. But what about death? Can the abstract intellect of man, the noble black savage, or science save them from the death they seek to avoid by rejecting Jesus Christ? It would seem, from a Christian perspective, that the liberals’ flight from Christ does not free them from death, it only places them with the swine as they go over the cliff. However, if a man foreshortens his vision, if he focuses only on the ecstatic moment, on the demonic fire within, he can convince himself that death cannot overtake him so long as he avoids the God-man. Is that insanity? No, it is something even larger than insanity, it is pure demonism. And that is the inner dynamic of liberalism. The liberals have interiorized the hatred of Christ. They cannot be defeated by intellectual Christians or democracy-loving conservatives. They can only be defeated by a people who have interiorized the love of Christ, the love of Him who died on the cross to save us from sin and death. Such people will hate where they should hate: they will hate the liberals and all their works; and they will love where they should love: they will love His people and fight to perpetuate His reign of charity here on earth rather than conserving Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth.

The lack of His influence in the European nations is crystal clear when we look at the European governments’ willingness to trade with the communist Chinese. Aren’t such trade deals, in which China receives most favored nation status, a direct



deal with the devil? What can we say of a people who willingly trade with the devil? In this coronavirus crisis, the devil that the liberals worship has once again shown himself to be a liar. We were supposed to recognize Red China because, 'You can't just ignore a whole country.' So the eager capitalists and their liberal allies dealt with China; it was the practical, worldly thing to do. Was it right? No, it wasn't, but what is right is never practical, so we were and are told. But now the devil has betrayed his minions. The juggling fiend has brought them down in the practical realm as well as in the spiritual realm. He has ruined their economies. Will it make a difference? Will the Demon-crats be held accountable for trafficking with Satan? They most certainly will be held accountable at the last judgement, but I doubt that there will be a reckoning in any court of justice in this world, because our modern courts of justice are courts of injustice: they are liberal courts. What justice there is in this world comes by way of men with hearts connected to Him, not by way of men with minds connected to intellectual Christianity and democracy. The hero in C. S. Lewis's novel *Perelandra* is given the rare privilege of coming face to face in single combat with Satan, and he is able to fight without holding back. Perhaps, now that the liberals have become so openly satanic we too will be called upon to fight them without holding back. If we fight in His name, if we interiorize our love of the Jesus whom the liberals hate, they will face an army like they have never faced before. And by the grace of God, we shall conquer. Tis a consummation, a victory, devoutly to be wished. +

---

(1) The two great commandments of the Fourth Estate are – 'Stay home' and 'Wash your hands.' But if I'm staying home because the coronavirus is out there and not in my home, why must I wash my hands one-hundred times a day? Because I ponder such existential paradoxes, and because I grew up hearing radical sixties' folk songs about Billy Joe McCallister and answers that were blowing in the wind, I took the time to compose a new-old folk song for the coronavirus era. To be sung to the tune of *Blowing in the Wind*:

How many months can a man stay at home,  
Before he jumps off a bridge?  
REFRAIN  
The answer my friend,  
Is blowing in the coronavirus wind,  
The answer is blowing in the coronavirus wind.

How many times can a man wash his hands,  
And still retain his skin?  
REFRAIN  
The answer my friend,  
Is blowing in the coronavirus wind,  
The answer is blowing in the coronavirus wind.

And for how many years will white people hide in their homes,  
And pretend the liberals are their friends?  
REFRAIN  
The answer my friend,  
Is blowing in the coronavirus wind,  
The answer is blowing in the coronavirus wind.

---

## **Out of the Shadows - May 2, 2020**

As a rood was I raised up; I bore aloft the mighty King, the Lord of heaven; I durst not stoop.

– "The Dream of the Rood"

---

When I was a child growing up in the 1950's my parents allowed me to watch a television show called *Captain Kangaroo*. The star of the show wore a captain's uniform with big pockets like a kangaroo's pouch. I knew that Captain Kangaroo was not really a kangaroo, even as a child, but it wasn't until I got older that I discovered Captain Kangaroo was not a captain. I think I should be forgiven my naiveté about Captain Kangaroo's false identity, because after all I was only a child. But what are we to make of seemingly grown-up people who regard the World Health Organization as a world health organization? It is quite obvious that the W.H.O. is a branch of the Chinese communists' war department, a war department that is concerned not with world health, but with death and destruction. So again, what do we make of people who defend that organization? Are they just naïve, as I was naïve when I thought Captain Kangaroo was a captain? No, that is not the case; they are not children. Are they stupid? No, that is not the case either. Are they morally blind because they have rejected the light of the world? Yes, that is the case. "There are none so blind as those who will not see." All liberals refuse to see evil because they have given their souls to the evil angel of darkness who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. Nothing can make them declare that the communist Chinese are evil, just as nothing will make

them declare that legalized abortion, homosexual marriage, and the demonization of the white race is evil. They have crossed a moral Rubicon, and they do not plan on going back.

The white liberal — and there are no non-white liberals — has set himself against the white race because white Europeans once built a civilization dedicated to the Light of the world. No other people, as a people, loved so much that they saw, “His blood upon the rose?” Now that Old Europe has been condemned by the liberals and its reality has been denied by the churchmen, from what moral ground can the European Everyman condemn and fight Chinese communists, Muslim terrorists, black murderers, Aztec warriors and liberal adherents of Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth? They have no moral ground to stand on. The clergy bids them take comfort in a mind-forged God that is impersonal and forever changing, the colored heathens continue to rage against the white race simply because they are heathens who have never known the light, and the liberals attack the white race because the continued existence of white people gives them a vague fear of that which once was and they hope shall never be again. But is that hope a certainty? Can the liberals ever be sure that they have banished Christ from Europe forever? No, they can’t, which is why they attack the white race with a maniacal fury infinitely greater than the colored heathens’ rage.

I once had the misfortune to share a 45-minute train ride with a nun who was returning from some kind of Eastern mysticism conference where she met with mystics from the Orient. She shared her mystical experience of the divine oneness with me. I was in my mid-twenties, having fairly recently come to a belief in the Christ of the Gospels, of St. Paul, and of the antique Europeans. The nun’s ecumenical, mystical atheism sickened me. But I politely listened to her — perhaps I should have silenced her — as we rather slowly, all too slowly, made our way home. The woman finally became aware that I was not responding to her mystical rapture with the proper enthusiasm, so she asked me point blank what I thought. I told her. The substance of my response was the words of our Lord: “I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.” We passed the rest of the way in silence.

We cometh to the Father through Christ, and we cometh to Christ through our humanity. If the people who took Christ into their hearts are damned, if they didn’t know Christ, to whom can we turn for the words of eternal life? The liberals tell us we can turn to them, to their triune faith, and the theologians tell us we can turn to their systematic theology or to their Chardinian mysticism. But we must not turn to the antique Europeans, we must not turn to the Word made flesh in Old Europe because, the theologians tell us, the Word never was made flesh in Old Europe; we cannot find the heart of Christ in that culture.

“As a history of the world, the empirical history after Christ is qualitatively not different from the history before Christ if judged from either a strictly empirical or a strictly Christian viewpoint.”

Karl Lowith’s words of ‘wisdom’ are not atypical. He presents the intellectuals’ Olympian view of Christian Europe: It never existed! All those men and women who lived and died with the vision of the Rood in their hearts never really existed, there is simply no evidence from an “empirical” or “strictly Christian” viewpoint of their existence. If we strike the words, “strictly Christian” and substitute the word “utopian,” we will come to the crux of the matter: There never was a Christian Europe unless that Christian Europe can be proven to be a utopian paradise. But such a paradise can never come about on this earth. And to denounce Christian Europe and her people because Christian Europe was not utopia leaves us bereft of our history and our hope in ages past. If the people who loved much did not show us the way to God, through the eyes of the heart, then how can we know God? “You can’t,” the theologians tell us. “Your God is a myth,” the liberals tell us. Then both sets of experts bid us turn to their intellects as a guide. What will happen if we reject the experts and return to the Dream of the Rood Europeans? We will recover our souls, we will respond to existence with the heartfelt passion of a people who have seen a great light in the depths of their heart.

The cold malignity of the thoroughbred metaphysician that Burke writes about has cast a pall, a satanic pall, over the European people. In this new phase of the war against the Christ-bearing people, the crisis of the communist Chinese virus, the liberals have made explicit what was always implicit in liberalism. The liberals hate humanity as Satan hates humanity. And the liberals most particularly hate white people because of their past connection to that “mysterious stranger” who died on a cross for our sins. Some conservatives have told me that the liberals have over-played their hands; they should not have been so explicit with their support of the Chinese communists, because now the American people will reject them. Is that true, will the blatant attack on the white race turn the white grazers against the liberals? No, it will not, because the “conservatives” are not conservative. Let us go back a few decades.

In 1949 the quintessential liberal, Arthur Schlesinger Jr., published a book called *The Vital Center* in which he criticized the far left progressives who would not admit that communism in Russia had failed and that communism posed a threat to liberal democracy. Such views in today’s political climate would mark Schlesinger as a conservative. But of course Schlesinger was not a conservative, he was the type of conservative that Dabney labeled “the shadow that follows Radicalism!” We can’t oppose communism in the name of liberal democracy, because liberal democracy and communism proceed from the same Jacobin roots. If we go deeper into Schlesinger’s book, we see just how thoroughly liberal he was.

He denounced Burkean conservatism as “the ethical afterglow of feudalism... inappropriate in a non-aristocratic, dynamic, progressive business society of the United States.” Schlesinger wanted the same thing the far left progressives wanted, the kingdom of God on earth without God, but he favored a more moderate march, a less bloody march forward. And so it is with our modern “conservatives” who want to oppose the communists while preserving our “democratic ideals,” when it is our democratic ideals that have left us naked to our communist enemies and all the enemies of Christian Europe. If the white European Americans had been asked, “Do you want America to be overrun by Mexicans?”; if they had been asked, “Do you want your economy and your access to essential medical supplies to be dependent on the communist Chinese?”; and if they had been asked, “Do you want to allow a strong, Islamic presence in your country?”, do you think they would have voted ‘yes’ on any of those issues? Yet we have been invaded by Mexicans, we are dependent on the Chinese communists, and we do have a strong Islamic presence in our nation. Why? It is because the liberals do not frame their questions to the white grazers in terms of invasions and economic independence, they ask the question, “Do you want democracy and all the magnificent freedoms that come with democracy?” Then the grazers scream, “Give us Barabbas, give us democracy!” and Christ is crucified again through His people, who are crucified by the purveyors of democracy.

When this so-called pandemic started, which has turned out to be a flu like all other flus, great medical experts were telling us that we could no more stop this, the communist Chinese virus, than we could stop the wind. The ‘experts’ were really referring to liberalism, not to a virus. They were and are telling us that we shall not try to impede liberalism or we shall be punished. The shutdowns are not because of the virus, the shutdowns are punitive. To the liberals, Trump’s election represents an impediment to the forward march of the liberals. The disgusting white pigs who voted for him must be punished. And they are being punished. Look at the food lines, look at the unemployment figures. But we can’t turn to the conservatives who are the shadows of the liberals to save us. Stephen Tonsor, a 1960s conservative, echoed Schlesinger’s criticism of Burke, and even Richard Weaver castigated Burke for his rejection of forms in favor of the particular. Yes, Burke did reject formal theology and philosophy. He preferred a particular, personal God, the God of our ascending race, instead of the unknown God of philosophy and theology, and he preferred a particular people, the antique Europeans, to a universal aggregate called mankind. Burke’s and Dabney’s conservatism was grounded in our Dream of the Rood ancestors. That ground, the ground consecrated by the blood of Christ, is the ground we must stand on and never yield even though the liberals tell us we must yield or be crushed.

This communist Chinese virus attack has devastated the European people because they have turned their eyes away from the cross to that which is without, to science, reason, and the gods of nature. Our true faith lies within –

“Now I have joy of life that I can seek the triumphant cross alone more often than all men, do it full honour. Great is the desire for that in my heart, and to the cross I turn for help.”

It was not wrong to shut down the schools and churches in an attempt to stem the virus. God knows, considering what is taught in both places, it would be a great good to shut those twin towers of atheism down forever, but the liberals didn’t shut down the private businesses and the family gatherings because they wanted to help their people. They shut down businesses and family gatherings because they wanted to impoverish white people and drive them to despair. They used statistical aggregates to justify their treacherous onslaught. And the ‘conservative’ shadows of the liberals are no better. The conservatives are now pointing to Sweden as our model. (1) Sweden? The nation that has destroyed itself from within by handing their country over to Moslems? The nation that has made sexual perversion the law of the land? I don’t care about your statistics, Mr. Conservative, or your theories of the herd and the greater good – “Let us let the virus run its course.” The statistics of expedience belong in hell, in Satan’s kingdom of eternal night. We need to look to that which is within, to His kingdom come. Before Christ became a by-product of a syllogism, He was Our Lord and Savior who could, when seen with the eyes of the heart, guide us through an existential maze that our rational minds could not pass through. There is no ‘solution’ to the communist Chinese virus crisis from without. The solution lies within. ‘Dream of the Rood’ Europeans do not yield to statistics, plagues, or the devil’s minions. They still dream dreams and see the vision of Him who died on the cross to save them from sin and death. +

---

(1) In *Tom Brown’s School Days* Thomas Hughes tells us that Dr. Arnold closed down Rugby for a term when a deadly virus was sweeping through the school. Arnold of Rugby was a Christian of the old school — he sought to do what Christ would have done. The Demon-crats did not close the schools and churches out of concern for the health of American citizens, they closed the schools and churches to get Trump. And they closed the white businesses and instituted house arrests in order to get white people. The Swedes did not keep their schools, churches, and businesses open to help white people. They didn’t have any Trump to get, so they decided, based strictly on utilitarian principles, to risk the lives of the expendable elderly whites in order to keep their satanic kingdom in working order. It is morally reprehensible, it is a sin without pardon, for ‘conservatives’ to laud the Swedish model. We cannot continue to look only at systems, without judging what is inside, at the heart of the systems we are supporting. Give us Christ, not Barabbas.

---

## Demon-crats - April 25, 2020

Now that society is satanic, Satan is a conservative. – CWNV (2012)

---

And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us.

And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed.

And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God,

And fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan.

And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?

There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

–Luke 17: 11-19

---

In the 1959 Disney movie *Sleeping Beauty*, Prince Phillip must face “all the forces of hell” when he faces Maleficent, who throws off her human façade in order to assume her true identity — a reptilian, satanic fiend. That is what is so striking about the liberals in this new phase of their onslaught against God — all attacks on God must proceed through His people — they no longer feel the need to hide their satanic essence behind a human mask. They have ‘come out’ in all their satanic fury. They tell us quite openly that they would rather see millions of people die of the virus than see Trump reelected. They openly sanction gay pride marches, women’s marches, and Islamic worship services while suppressing white businesses and all gatherings of whites — “where two or three are gathered together.” But will the liberals’ unmasking do them any harm? The old adage is apropos — ‘If a tree falls in a forest and there is no one there, does it make a sound?’ If there are no Christian Europeans left in the European nations, will anyone notice that the liberals are satanic?

Unfortunately the liberals’ unmasking will not awaken the white grazers to the satanic nature of the liberals. Many of them are angry at the Demoncrats, but they are angry without a sustaining faith. Their anger will dissipate when the plague dissipates. What is needful will still be missing — a people who see that the liberals, and the democratic governments they have created, are satanic. It is not possible to live according to the liberals’ laws and God’s laws. There is a huge difference between an imperfect government grounded in a faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ, such as the French monarchy prior to the French Revolution, and a Jacobin-democratic government grounded in atheism, regicide, and a faith in the man-god, the noble savage. The Christian seeks to mitigate the imperfections of the former government from within, he does not seek to destroy the moral essence of that government through revolution. But the latter type of government, a government grounded in atheism, regicide, and a faith in the man-gods of nature, must be destroyed, it cannot be reformed. That is why Burke remained passionately opposed to the revolutionary French Jacobins even after Robespierre’s death. The evil Jacobin entity, disguised as democracy, still remained at the heart of the French government. When liberals hold the reins of power, the conservative has to become a counter-revolutionary, otherwise his conservatism is merely liberalism in disguise. Robert Lewis Dabney made the same observation as Burke in his criticism of the conservatives of the North. Having destroyed the Christian South they proceeded on their merry way to utopia by staying just slightly behind the liberals who were busy destroying all the channels of God’s grace.

It may be inferred again that the present movement for women’s rights will certainly prevail from the history of its only opponent: Northern conservatism. This is a party which never conserves anything. Its history has been that it demurs to each aggression of the progressive party, and aims to save its credit by a respectable amount of growling, but always acquiesces at last in the innovation. What was the resisted novelty of yesterday is today one of the accepted principles of conservatism; it is now conservative only in affecting to resist the next innovation, which will tomorrow be forced upon its timidity and will be succeeded by some third revolution; to be denounced and then adopted in its turn. American conservatism is merely the shadow that follows Radicalism as it moves forward towards perdition. It remains behind it, but never retards it, and always advances near its leader. . . . Its impotency is not hard, indeed, to explain. It is worthless because it is the conservatism of expediency only, and not of sturdy principle. It intends to risk nothing serious for the sake of the truth, and has no idea of being guilty of the folly of martyrdom. It always when about to enter a protest very blandly informs the wild beast whose path it essays to stop, that its “bark is worse than its bite,” and that it only means to save its manners by enacting its decent role of resistance: The only practical purpose which it now serves in American politics is to give enough exercise to Radicalism to keep it “in wind,” and to prevent its becoming puffy and lazy, from having nothing to whip. No doubt, after a few years, when women’s suffrage shall have become an accomplished fact, conservatism will tacitly admit it into its creed, and thenceforward plume itself upon its wise firmness in opposing with similar weapons the extreme of baby suffrage; and when that too shall have been won, it will be heard declaring that the integrity of the American Constitution requires at least the refusal of suffrage to asses. There it will assume, with great dignity, its final position. —Robert Lewis Dabney

Have we reached the final position in this, the 21st century? I think we have ‘progressed’ beyond Dabney’s final position. We have extended suffrage to Demoncrats who are infinitely inferior to, and more dangerous than, asses. “Fit to govern?

No, not fit to live,” should be our response to the Demoncrats. Yet when the coronavirus fades away, the conservatives will go back to defending Demoncracy. They will continue to place their hopes in elections to determine who shall reign in hell.

Liberalism is grounded in a faith in the man-god that emanates from the mind of the liberal. Whether that god is the noble savage or the Übermensch, it is still the same god, it is the mind of man. There has been no conservative reaction to the liberals’ mind-forged religion of the man-god because the conservatives in the church reacted to the deification of the man-god by demonizing man. They championed a God without humanity, without a human heart, in order to oppose the man-god of the liberals. But does our faith depend on a false either-or? Is it a choice between God and man? No, it is not. The liberals and the ‘conservative’ theologians are one, in that they both deny the divinity within man, the grace of God, in order to place their faith in the God without, which is human reason. That great champion of Pauline, Christ-in-man Christianity, Pastor Grundtvig of Denmark, fought the good fight when he championed the “living wellsprings” of the human heart that bind us to the living God. Those “living wellsprings” are the only weapons we have to combat the Demoncrats of Demoncracy. Without those wellsprings we are naked to our enemies, our conservatism will not help us because it is grounded in the preservation of liberalism.

Chesterton lauded St. Thomas Aquinas for engineering the only successful revolution in the Church. Aquinas placed God out there, in man’s abstract reason, and left St. Paul’s injunction to “search the Scriptures with your heart,” back in the days of unreason and superstition. After that revolution, clerical conservatism became the defense of scholasticism rather than the defense of a heartfelt faith in Jesus Christ; the religious conservatives and the secular liberal became one in their defense of abstract reason and their condemnation of the divinity, the God-given divinity, within man.

The same ‘conservative’ defense of liberalism that took place in the church has taken place in our secular Demoncracy. First the conservatives opposed the deification of Martin Luther King Jr. by pointing out that a whoremonger and a communist should not be set up as a national icon. But once he became part of the fabric of democracy, the conservatives lauded him just as much, if not more, than their liberal colleagues. So it was with the feminists. I recall a debate that William F. Buckley had in England with Germaine Greer. Buckley began the debate by surrendering. He stated he was not in England to dispute the equality of women, he was only there to question whether it was necessary to pass an equal rights amendment in order to reach that admirable goal of equality. Thus the desire to conserve Demoncracy doth make moral cowards of its adherents.

Bruce Catton, the Lincoln apologist who masqueraded as a historian of the Civil War, once wrote that American democracy, when implemented properly, namely with the full enfranchisement of negroes, represented “freedom from all fears.” Really? Do we no longer need to fear the pestilence that walketh in darkness and the arrows that flieth at noon day if we adhere to the principles of Demoncracy? Do we no longer need to fear death itself? With no due respect I disagree with Catton. If we believe in “We the People” democracy rather than His Europe, we become part of an incorporate union of demons committed to a flight from Christ, which can only have one end – over the cliff with the swine.

In the U.S. (the other European nations differ only in degree not in kind) over half our population, the Demoncrats, are completely satanic; they have left all things human behind. And the Republicans, the party that Dabney described as the “party which never conserves anything,” are committed to a more gradual implementation of the satanic principles of the Demoncrats. They do not have any heartfelt convictions that lead them to say, “Stop, this must not go on.” They have only a moderate, rational objection to change they think is too violent and sudden. That is not sufficient. We must be composed of sterner stuff. We must, we Europeans, say, “Stop, this must not go on!”

An acquaintance, who is an Olympian conservative, recently asked me why I have such sympathy for Trump since he has accomplished so little, when viewed from the Olympian heights of conservative theory. I told the Olympian I admire Trump because he is Prometheus. If you recall, Prometheus was a minor god in the Greek pantheon who stole fire from the major gods in order to give it to mortals, whom he took pity on. Prometheus was punished for his concern for insignificant mortals; he was bound to a rock while vultures pecked at his liver. Trump, as a billionaire, was a minor god in Liberaldom. He could have remained materially happy and comfortable, keeping his friendships with the Hollywood celebrities and enjoying his later years by jetting around the world spending his money on luxuries. Instead, he stole electoral fire from the gods of Liberaldom and sought to give that power to white people. He failed to defeat the liberals and save white people, because you can’t defeat the demons of Liberaldom from within the confines of Demoncracy. Now Trump can only endure while the Coulters, the Drudges, and the rest of the liberal vultures peck out his entrails. The original Prometheus was saved by the God-Man, Hercules. Trump needs, like all of us, the real God-Man, who Aeschylus saw through a glass darkly; he needs Christ the Lord to come and release him from the Promethean rock. Our Jesus comes to us through the Christ-imbued hero. We must attack the Demoncrats in His name, not in the name of Demoncracy.

Democracy is Demoncracy because there is no place for the Christian hero within the democratic system. (1) We are told we must dialogue with inhuman fiends rather than deal with them in the only way possible to deal with demons, the way Prince Philip dealt with Maleficent. If we take that spirit into battle, the spirit of the Christian warrior who fights in

defense of His realm of charity, we will truly have a solid ground from which to launch a counter-revolution. We will be moving away from Yeats's rough beast, the demonic man-god of Liberalism, who is a composite of Nietzsche's Übermensch and Rousseau's Noble Savage, back to that stable in Bethlehem where all counter-revolutions against Demoncracy begin.

The Demoncrats' selective shutdowns of white business and their passionate hatred of the use of any drug that helps stem the coronavirus-related deaths has given us a rare glimpse of liberalism unmasked. We will remain in the liberals' merciless clutches if we treat their satanic power over us as something that is written, something akin to fate. If we remain pagans, if we deny that we are the Christ-bearing people, then we will be fated to serve the liberals on this earth and serve Satan in the next world. Far better to adhere to the foolishness of the cross, to the God who transcends fate and bids us follow Him. That is the exact opposite of the Demoncrats who command us go over the cliff with the swine. Jesus came and stood in the midst of His disciples after His resurrection from the dead and told them, "As the Father has sent me, even so send I you." We are called to fight the devil and all his works just as our Lord did. We are called to advance His reign of charity, not to conserve Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. +

---

(1) Democracy never works because truth is always diluted in a democracy. You must compromise with evil in order to form a majority coalition. By doing so you become like unto the Nicolaitanes condemned by our Lord in the Book of Revelations: you have elevated the blending of Christ and paganism into a doctrine.

Christ is truth, paganism is falsehood, and never the twain shall meet. We have left Christian monarchies behind. Let us pray for a good dictator, a man who rules in His name.

---

### **Clinically Unproven - April 18, 2020**

Love now consists in word and not in deed,  
Faith depends on reason not on the Scriptures, as it used to be;  
Religion has ascended from the heart to the head  
It now dwells in the brains, and the heart, alas! is empty.

-Jeremias de Dekker

---

There can be no middle ground between Satan and Christ. We either worship our own minds, which can be easily manipulated by Satan's superior mind, or we can give our hearts to Christ and venture forth, armed with the grace of God, in opposition to Satan and his minions.

-CWNY

---

David Horowitz, a former mad-dog liberal who converted to classical liberalism (conservatism) recently stated that he had never seen anything in American politics that even came close to the hatred the liberals have for Trump. Their hatred is so great that they cannot join with Trump to combat the coronavirus. Horowitz wanted to know the reason for the liberals' hatred beyond hatred. We already have told the classical liberals why the mad-dog liberals hate Donald Trump, but let's go over it again.

Our modern liberals go back all the way to their father, who is Satan. Why does Satan hate God? He hates God because he wants to be God: "I shall not serve." And Satan has instilled his desire to be as God into his followers, the liberals. After World War I there was still a remnant of Christian Europeans in the European nations, but the European governments were run by liberals, who were acting upon Thomas Paine's faith, "My own mind is my church." By the 21st century the liberals had a stranglehold on the European people, and they were getting closer, in their minds, to heaven on earth. Once the last non-illuminated whites, the Christians, were eliminated, paradise would be achieved. The 2016 election was only permitted because it was supposed to be a walk-over. The liberals told the American people that Trump was evil and Hillary was good. How could anyone who had been properly taught fail to vote the right way? But the impossible happened. The white grazers did not do as they were told, they voted for a white male who did not want to exterminate the white race. A heretic had become President! And he has been treated as a heretic who must be burnt, along with his followers, at the stake. Now, the liberals didn't have to panic. They own the courts, they control Congress, and they control the fourth estate. Trump cannot really damage them. But they can't control their hatred. That a public official, the highest public official in the country, has had the courage to include white people in his American dream is more than the liberals can stomach. And when you add the fact that Trump has tried to stop legalized abortion and has invoked the Christian God in his war against the coronavirus, you can see why Satan's minions hate Trump.

I am not an American exceptionalist, I do not think America is a sacred city built on a hill. Nor am I a modern dispensational Christian. But I love Donald Trump for the moral courage he has shown in this crisis and in his ongoing war with the liberals and their Chinese communist allies. (1) This is not a time for an Olympian indifference to the onslaught against Trump, as if we are above the fray. If you are white and/or Christian, Trump is fighting for you and for me. I hate the conservative Olympians who attack Trump just as much as I hate the mad-dog liberals.

Even if the coronavirus plague dies out and Trump is reelected, the evil entity of liberalism will remain at the heart of our culture. There are too many liberals in the European nations, and there are too many white grazers devoid of a heartfelt faith in the liberals' divine antagonist. We do not need more theologians and philosophers in order to restore the faith that we have lost, the faith that moves mountains. We need heroes, we need men such as Nathan Bedford Forrest:

The hero saves not only by his prowess; he saves by the divinity within himself. Indeed his prowess depends upon this divinity. The hero's most perfect image is, of course, Christ the man-god. There is no hero unless the odds are overwhelming against the thing he stands for, or the rescue which takes him upon his quest. They are the powers of darkness; they show in the brutal weight of matter, the seemingly irresistible forces of mass. Since fear and desire make all of us tremble, the first quest of the hero is triumph over himself; and afterwards he follows the quest, a selfless and devoted individual on the way of becoming an archetype. Indeed because he is devoted, he is fearless. We do not know all the circumstance of Forrest's triumph over himself. We know it only in his actions and because of one statement; he bought a one-way ticket to the war; that is, he had committed himself without reservation of goods or person. This is of the very quality of heroism, because it is a triumph over death. It is also the secret of his triumph over great odds. Never thinking of himself, he is free to think of the enemy; and so he finds the weakness which will topple all the weight and mass. There was never a greater half-truth than the statement that God is on the side of the biggest battalions. Moscow and Napoleon's retreat stand for refutation of this.

– Andrew Lytle in *Bedford Forrest and His Critter Company*

There is a pathetic macho posturing that goes on among many of the conservative pundits. They vie with each other to prove that they, armed with statistics, can project the gloomiest outcome for whites. (2) They seem to take a particular delight in describing the hopeless state of the European people. But the European people's state is only hopeless if you believe that history is determined by the "brutal weight of matter, the seemingly irresistible forces of mass." I hear the statistics-men sneering, "Forrest lost!" Did he? When the war was over and the Jacobins descended upon the South like wolves licking their chops at the prospect of easy meals, the Southern people turned to Forrest. They asked him to rise and ride again, in their blackest hour. And he responded to their pleas. The Wizard of the Saddle became the head of an invisible army of confederate veterans who fought back against the forces of darkness, the "seemingly irresistible forces of mass." He did not win a victory for all time, that is not possible on this earth, but he was victorious in that he saved, through his heroism, a people and a civilization that would have perished if he had taken an Olympian view of existence and bid his people take refuge in Plato and Aristotle. The God of Battles is Christ the Lord, because He bids us practice charity. Is it charitable to abandon your people in the name of an elevated philosophy or theology that has no room for individual human beings, the same human beings whom Christ died to save? We must stand against "the seemingly irresistible forces of mass," because that "charity of honor" is what distinguishes a Christian European from the devil's own, the liberals. We cannot remain philosophically distant from our people when the enemy has invaded our hearth fires.

She had not the heart to finish, but laid down the pen and pushed aside the ink-stand, the little bronze drum, which casual chance had saved from the wreck, with only a few of the gilt cords bent. She sat gazing at her fingers, as they lay on one of the other parts of the book, and beyond her fingers she saw the writing there. "November 29. We heard today of new orders in the town and that the Yankees had men on the roads coming this way. My husband was at Bayou Sara, where our plantation is falling to ruin, and we did not think it prudent to wait till he should return. We hastened to prepare for the coming soldiers. This was not easy, perched in this open field as Don's Retreat is, and the negro quarters between us and the forest. We did what we could and waited, listening to the sound of negro voices mingled with the jangling of spurs and the clatter of sabres. I pictured to myself our former gardener Aleck, inflated with pride at his new dignity of corporal, coming in with insolence and insults demanding watches and money. This perpetually recurring dread and horror makes night a terror and life a torment. Oh, if we women and helpless old men and children were only where we might feel safe from negro insults, negro violence, and from the constant fear of these things! God help us – I look at the graves of our beloved ones and think with thankfulness of the rest which is theirs."—New Year's Eve, 1864—

She closed the book, already praying, her eyes fixed on the last embers of the fire, her whole body quiet with some strong force that made life dear to her—and believed that God saw in every heart its own sorrows.

–Stark Young, *So Red the Rose*

This coronavirus war is an extension of the American Civil War, which was an extension of Robespierre's French Revolution. The French Jacobins, the Northern Jacobins, and our modern liberals were and are at war with the same enemy – white, European Christians. The coronavirus war has been successful because liberalism has gone deep into the vitals of the European people. The European people will not fight back against the liberals because they do not see that the liberals are totally evil with only one reason to live – to attack God by attacking His people. The theologically-minded clergy and the philosophically-oriented conservatives hope to avoid the wrath of the liberals by maintaining a Buddhistic

distance from their people. But we, as Christians, cannot remain aloof. The divinity within, the grace of God, commands us to fight for our people in spite of the democratic aggregate of liberals arrayed against us.

If we lose elections, if there are no candidates who will stand up for white people, we need not despair. Why should we place our hopes in the democratic process which has never been good for white people? The liberals only use the democratic process when it serves their ends. Have they ever, for one moment, viewed Trump as their President who is fighting a virus that attacks all Americans? Of course they haven't. At every turn, they oppose Trump. They have fought tooth and nail, and continue to fight, to limit the use of the hydroxychloroquine. They lie about the number of the dead, they lie about the possibility of ever opening up the country again, they continue to slavishly worship the Chinese communists and treat them as their bosom allies, and they continue to command European Americans to despair and die. They are the enemy, implacable, unyielding, and without mercy.

Trump's electoral victory was the realization of the late Samuel Francis's populist dream – to elect a white man who would represent white people as well as the colored races. That was also Tyndall's desire in Britain. But what both populist leaders failed to come to terms with was the evil of liberalism, an evil so deeply rooted in the fabric of Western civilization that only a people whose hearts burned within them with the spirit of Christ crucified, Christ risen could effectively counter the evil of liberalism:

The result of Hardy's management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the "Apology" had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, "You needn't have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson."

"I don't understand," said Tom.

"Well, there's something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn't there?"

"Yes, a great deal," Tom answered, after a pause; "but it isn't the same thing."

"Why not the same thing?"

"Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning."

"Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not."

"How do you mean?" said Tom.

"Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can't name it—know no more of it than he knew about his demon, of course, we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens."

-Thomas Hughes, *Tom Brown at Oxford*

Trump's victory was not a victory, because liberalism remains the ruling ethos of the European people. If we go back to Horowitz's observation about the liberals' maniacal opposition to every Trump initiative to ease the suffering of the American people during this coronavirus crisis, we can see the futility of placing our hopes in a material solution to a spiritual problem. The European people must be the Christ-bearing people. If they can't be the Christ-bearing people because He does not dwell in their hearts, they will never be a people again. The counter-revolution will come when the theological and philosophical filth is cleared away – we cannot find God in the Olympian heights of our mind-forged systems, we must find Him in our hearts. That is the way of the cross, the way of our people when they were a people.

The French doctor Didier Raoult recently made an incredible, heartfelt critique of the "clinical" theory of medicine. He said that you cannot ignore the observations that a medical drug is curing people of an illness by claiming that the cure is not a reality until it is clinically proven to be a reality in a science laboratory. Hasn't that clinical theory of the Catholic and Protestant scholastics been the cause of the spiritual sickness of the European people? The scholastics denied the 'observational' fact of Christian Europe that was built by people who followed St. Paul's injunction to search the Scriptures with their heart, and bid us look instead to the men who had a purer intellectual vision of God, a God who was always in the abstracted reason of their minds, a God who had never made His presence known in one particular civilization. Where does such a clinical philosophy of God leave us? It leaves us naked to our enemies, the liberals, just as the clinical theory of medicine leaves us naked and defenseless against the coronavirus.

It looks like the death tolls of the liberal-communist virus will not, despite the liberals' and the Chinese communists' efforts, exceed the death tolls of the flu of 1917 or 1957, but the damage has been done. Many whites have lost their jobs –



one of my sons is included in that hated white aggregate – and many people, white and colored, have lost their lives; it has become increasingly difficult for those of us who cannot “skin a buck and run a trout line,” to get food, and a general feeling of hopelessness and despair has settled into the hearts of the European grazers.(3) And men such as Didier Raoult and Donald Trump, who are trying to alleviate human suffering, are excoriated by the mad-dog liberals and the managerial conservatives who want to bring the whole world into the camp of the demon-possessed swine who are going over the cliff. We shall not go over the cliff with the swine if we face this crisis, and every crisis that the liberals send our way, with the faith of our Christian ancestors, the men and women who built a clinically unproven civilization grounded in the love of a clinically unproven Savior who was, is, and always shall be our only hope in this world and the next – our Jesus. +

---

(1) Trumps’s courage in severing our ties with the World Health Organization, which is in reality the Communist Chinese Department of War, makes him the greatest President the United States has ever had.

(2) “It’s romance,” said the professor.

“Very well. Then the point is: not what the colonel is, being Southern, but what he would be if he were not Southern.”

The professor regarded this remark as mere bombast. He had not been invited to Montrose, but had felt free to call because he was collecting statistics. Collecting statistics was already a new kind of entre. Nobody in the country had heard of statistics before, but the negroes were very much impressed. They welcomed investigation so heartily that what had at first seemed to the professor a gold mine of data began to irk him as excessively African detail, as communicative as it was imagined.

–*So Red the Rose*

(3) After over one hundred years of damning everyone who advocates states’ rights, the liberals have now become states’ righters. The democratic governors have assumed dictatorial powers. They are openly defiant, declaring that they will not open up their states again no matter what the President says. The maniacally insane governor of Michigan has banned garden seeds, motorboats, and family gatherings. The liberals will not cease from mental strife until they have built hell on earth.

---

## Emmaus - April 11, 2020

Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures? And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread. And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. –Luke 24: 25-36

---

A brilliant morning shines on the old city. Its antiquities and ruins are surpassingly beautiful, with a lusty ivy gleaming in the sun, and the rich trees waving in the balmy air. Changes of glorious light from moving boughs, songs of birds, scents from gardens, woods, and fields—or, rather, from the one great garden of the whole cultivated island in its yielding time—penetrate into the Cathedral, subdue its earthy odour, and preach the Resurrection and the Life. The cold stone tombs of centuries ago grow warm; and flecks of brightness dart into the sternest marble corners of the building, fluttering there like wings. – The Mystery of Edwin Drood

---

I know very little about Mike Lindell, the “My Pillow Man” from Minnesota, but he did something that is never done in the public arena. He spoke the truth about the media: “This is evil.” If the European people had said that about all of the French Jacobins, not just the Robespierre Jacobins, and then acted upon that insight, there would not have been a communist revolution in Russia in 1917, and there would not have been a coronavirus revolution in 2020.

Our decline as a people has come about because we have lost the ability to distinguish between good and evil. It is an extraordinary thing, now that the liberals have shown themselves to be completely evil, without any trace of humanity: the white grazers seem unable to see the liberals’ for what they are. They are satanic, devoid of all the attributes the European people once considered the mark of a human being. It was once considered noble and honorable to love your own people, to practice charity and mercy, and to honor, revere, and love the Savior, Jesus Christ. Now it is considered just and good to hate your own people, to be devoid of charity and mercy, and to denigrate our Holy Savior. And that is really what is behind the weakness of the West in the face of the Chinese communists’ assault on the European nations.

Our people are dying of the virus, and the liberals, who are one with the Chinese communists in their hatred of all things European, are maniacally resisting all the efforts of anyone — that French doctor Dr. Didier Raoult is an example — trying to help victims of the virus and give the Europeans hope that the virus does not have to become another Black Plague. But of course the liberals want another Black Plague, because the *raison d'être* of the post-Christian European, the liberal, is the hatred of the people who once were the Christ-bearing race. Such people must be eliminated because they might revert and take up the discarded burden, the cross of Christ, of their ancestors.

Thomas Paine spoke for all liberals, past and present, when he said:

Of all the systems of religion that ever were invented, there is none more derogatory to the Almighty, more unedifying to man, more repugnant to reason, and more contradictory to itself, than this thing called Christianity. Too absurd for belief, too impossible to convince, and too inconsistent for practice, it renders the heart torpid, or produces only atheists and fanatics.

If we say an atheist is someone who does not believe in a God, then no man is an atheist. Paine believed in a false God, he believed in his own abstract intellect, the noble savages, and science. And so did his idol Robespierre, and so do all our modern liberals believe in the triune God of Thomas Paine. But if we say that all those who do not believe in the living God, Jesus Christ, are atheists, then we see before us an army of militant atheists totally committed to whatever is diametrically opposed to what Paine called the most “repugnant” of religions. And what does Paine suggest as an alternative to our ancient faith in the God-Man? He suggests the second oldest faith, a faith in our own minds:

I do not believe in the creed professed by the Jewish church, by the Roman Church, by the Greek church, by the Turkish church, by the Protestant church, nor by any church that I know of. My own mind is my church.

That is the credo of all liberals, the deification of man's original sin, which the liberals do not believe in, the pride of intellect. So long as liberalism is the ruling doctrine of the European people, we will continue to remain in fetters, subject to whatever evil the liberals decide to thrust upon us. In Paine's day the purge took place via the guillotine, and right now in 2020, it is the coronavirus purge. We must see the connection. Just as Paine called the slaughtered aristocrats, “so few sacrifices, for the greater good,” so do our modern liberals, who vehemently oppose the use of any drug that might reduce the death toll of the coronavirus, feel that a “few sacrifices” are necessary in order to destroy Trump and move all mankind, minus the white race, closer to utopia.

A doctor, who was interviewed by Laura Ingraham about successfully treating coronavirus patients with the chloroquine drug, asked why there was such hostility to a drug that was helping people. Why indeed? The answer is rooted in the debate between Paine and Burke. In Paine's *Rights of Man* he castigated Burke for impeding the building of utopia by his concern for just a “few sacrifices,” who were undeserving of life in the brave new world. So it is today. A few sacrifices are necessary so that the liberal utopia, which is always in the future and never quite materializes in the present, can come to fruition. Paine lost his debate with Burke. Melville's *Billy Budd* is an attack on Paine and his *Rights of Man*, and such poets as Wordsworth and Coleridge, after their initial enthusiasm for the French Revolution, turned on the revolution and sided with Burke. Such men turned on the French Revolution and its defenders because they came to see what Burke saw — the French Revolution was a satanic assault on Christian Europe. There can be no middle ground between Satan and Christ. We either worship our own minds, which can be easily manipulated by Satan's superior mind, or we can give our hearts to Christ and venture forth, armed with the grace of God, in opposition to Satan and his minions.

The devil must, like our Lord, work through humanity. He can inflame men with his own satanic will, he can create a satanic tempest, but he cannot control the results. The grace of God working in human hearts is an ever present challenge to Satan. The satanically inspired liberal is always working for the destruction of all things Christian. But throughout our history, the liberals have chosen to subvert by subtle lies, by perversions of the truth, rather than by outright attacks on Christ and His people. The Robespierre French Revolution, the American Civil War, the Russian Revolution are exceptions to the general *modus operandi* of the liberals. Those revolutions were naked-fist revolutions; there was nothing subtle about them. And now this present revolution, this communist-inspired revolution (which is the same as liberal-inspired, they are all part of the same ideological package) is a naked-fist attack on the white race. The liberals have destroyed the economies of the white nations, they have taken many white lives, but will this new naked-fist revolution advance liberalism? I'd like to say there will be a Burkean reaction, but I cannot say with any certainty that the white grazers, when they see that the liberals are working with might and main to increase the death tolls, to create economic chaos and to increase human suffering, will turn from liberalism in order to embrace His Europe.

The President of Brazil has issued the chloroquine drug to his people in defiance of the liberals (he uses the term ‘cultural Marxists’). And the good doctors, those who still believe that a doctor should attempt to heal the sick, are issuing the drug to their patients. What are the liberals doing? They are attacking anyone who suggests the drug can cure the disease and they are attacking anyone who suggests that the disease has anything to do with Communist China. And what are the liberals' spiritual brethren, the Chinese communists, doing with their coronavirus victims? They are burning them alive. Is

not the spiritual metaphor obvious? The liberals' crusade against anything that reduces human suffering during this crisis and their alliance with the satanic Chinese communists reveals their spiritual essence. They hate Christ, who is our hope in this world and the next, and they have formed an alliance with Satan in order to kill that hope within us.

It is Easter, Christ has risen! Indeed He has! Our faith in His resurrection from the dead and His assurance that He will be with us always, even unto the ending of the world, will sustain us during this current onslaught of the devil and his liberal minions. It is not a little thing, it is everything, that Christ has given us His word that He, and not the devil, shall prevail. The old hymn enjoins us to be faithful in spite of dungeon, fire, and sword. Let us add, "in spite of the liberals' coronavirus" to that list. Our Lord "suffered these things" so that we might have eternal life. Nothing can alter that: "Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day." +

---

### **St. Paul and Anders - April 4, 2020**

And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds. Many of them also which used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver. So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.

– Acts 19: 18-20

---

"But surely you would like to change caps with me," said the king, and he lifted his shining gold crown from his head.

Anders said never a word but when the king came nearer to him with his gold crown in one hand, and the other outstretched toward that beautiful cap, then, with one jump, Anders was out of his chair. Like an arrow he darted out of the hall, through the palace, down the stairs, and across the yard. He ran so fast that the necklace the princess had given him fell from his neck, and all the cakes rolled out of his pockets.

But he had his cap! He had his cap! He had his cap! With both hands he clutched it tight as he ran back home to his mother's cottage.

– "The Cap that Mother Made" (a Swedish tale)

---

The Swedes recently announced that they were going to follow the Italian model in dealing with the coronavirus. Illegal immigrants of color will receive treatment while old white folks will be placed on the 'deplorable' list and left alone to die. This is not really a new policy in the European nations. My father, a veteran of the 'Big War,' which the liberals always claim as 'their' war because it was against Hitler, was neglected in favor of the colored illegals when he entered the hospital in his last days. And what is wrong with such a policy? Isn't it practical to let the old white people die off and try to save the people of color, who are the noble savages? Yes, it is practical if you are trying to build a new world, free of white Europeans and their God.

The liberal-created coronavirus crisis has given the white grazers, if they have eyes to see, a rare glimpse behind the liberal curtain. What we see behind the curtain is the liberal expert. In the name of his scientific expertise – in religion, medicine, politics, and in every other aspect of our lives – the liberals bid us trust the expert. But the expert is in reality the Emperor who has no clothes. His expertise is a lie. That is what we can see so clearly during this coronavirus outbreak as the liberals' experts predict 7 million deaths in the U.S. while simultaneously forbidding the use of the chloroquine drug, which has not been "clinically proven"; it has only been proven "observationally" as a cure for coronavirus. And if it is not "clinically proven" by an expert, it is not a reality. So it is in the liberals' brave new world. That which is not liberal cannot be. Reality is false, and the liberals' lies are true. (1)

The first liberal expert, the expert who spawned the legions of liberal experts throughout our history as a people, was Satan. Satan told Adam and Eve they would not die if they ate the forbidden fruit. And he made that claim based on his scientific expertise. He knew the natural world better than God. How could a delicious fruit produce death? But of course Satan, like all liberal experts, had a hidden agenda. He hated God and he sought to strike out at God by attacking his creatures. And that has always been and always will be the case with the liberals. Through the scientific expert they attack God and humanity.

The European people's inordinate respect for and fear of the experts in religion, medicine, law, and politics stems from the original sin of Adam and Eve, who were deceived by Satan, the religious expert, who offered them equality with God. Christ faced religious experts when He stood before Caiaphas. How could the son of a carpenter, a non-expert, challenge the combined expertise of the Sanhedrin? It was blasphemous. So the experts sentenced the Word made flesh, our Lord and Savior, to death.

As it was with our Savior so it was with His greatest champion, St. Paul. St. Paul stood before the Jewish religious experts and the Athenian philosophical experts and preached Christ crucified, Christ risen, without any respect for the Jews who rejected their own prophets and the philosophers who would not acknowledge a God with a local habitation and a name. What is so striking about St. Paul's Christian faith is that he does not see Christ as a stepping stone to a higher faith. For him the grace of God of is everything: "Through Christ and in Christ." Is not that in keeping with the words of our Lord in the Revelation of St. John? "I am the beginning and the end." Teilhard de Chardin was not an aberration, he merely made explicit what was implicit in the theological approach to God, which enjoins us to believe that the religious expert has something to tell us that is greater than the provincial God championed by St. Paul. In theological Christianity, we are not enjoined to take Christ into our heart; instead we are enjoined to partake of the wisdom of the religious experts. But the religious experts are juggling fiends who will steal our souls, "with honest trifles, to betray's in deepest consequence." They will leave us, if we believe in their expertise, bereft of a heart that loves, which is our only way to the Savior whose divine love surpasseth the understanding of the experts.

The coronavirus revolution is another outbreak of Robespierre Jacobinism, just as the communist uprising in Russia was an outbreak of Robespierre Jacobinism. Such outbreaks occur when the liberals feel that the construction of their utopian society, which necessitates the destruction of all things Christian, is proceeding too slowly. And the revolutionary purges are always arranged by metaphysical experts devoid of all humanity:

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil.

—Edmund Burke

"The frailty and passion of a man." Our weakness is our humanity, but it is also, through Him and in Him, our strength. If we admit our frailty, our dependence on the Suffering Servant, He will grant us the grace to set our passionate love against the passionate hatred of the devil and his liberal experts. And in that battle the passionate European shall bear it away.

True conservatism, Burkean conservatism, does not consist of the support of a system in religion or politics. It consists of St. Paul's vision of Christ as the Beginning and the End. If we do not see Christ as a stepping stone to a larger cosmic vision of God, if He remains the Word made flesh, who was born in a stable in Bethlehem, crucified under Pontius Pilate, and rose from the dead on the third day, He will be the God of the little things, the God of our hearth fires and our hearts. We will support His channels of grace, because His grace is our salvation. But when the cosmic Christ becomes our Lord, when we worship a new Athenian vision of God that satisfies the egotism of the theologians who want to be the first to give us a new improved theology of God, then we lose God and we lose the civilization of the men and women who asked the dear Christ to enter into their hearts.

The liberals have managed to get the European people to kneel to their false gods because the theologically minded churchmen have not taken Christ into their hearts. Without a heartfelt faith of their own they cannot present the real Christ to their people. They are like unto the vagabond Jewish exorcists in Acts, who thought they could use Christ's name to fight the demons without having first taken Christ into their hearts:

Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. — Acts 19: 13-16

If we attack the demon-possessed liberals with the pseudo-Christianity of the churchmen and/or the pseudo-conservatism of the system-dependent conservatives, we will have to flee our house naked and wounded.

It became glaringly apparent in *The Merchant of Venice* that Shylock had plotted Antonio's death beforehand when he refused thrice the money of the original bond. Shylock wanted his pound of flesh and nothing else. So it is with the liberals. When a French doctor has found a cure for coronavirus which the liberals refuse to even consider, some states have even banned the chloroquine drug as a treatment because Trump recommends it and because the doctor who prescribes it does not believe in the liberals' doctrine of climate change, then we can see that the liberals have a satanic plan that is all and all to them. There must be a crisis that permits liberal experts to run every aspect of our lives. There must be such a crisis because white, Christian Europeans must be eradicated from the face of the earth. That is what liberalism is all about, Charlie Brown, and you too, Charlie Brown, will have to be exterminated.

Theologians know nothing about God, because the living God comes to us through the wellspring of the human heart, not through the abstract intellect. Doctors have a certain technical skill, but they know nothing about spiritual or physical

health. If they have a connection to the other world, Christian Europe, they can be of some use, but outside of that world they serve Satan. And what of the lawyers? They become like unto the archenemies of Christ in the Gospels when they use the letter of the law to destroy the spirit of the law. Should such 'experts' be our guides? To what end? Are they not guiding us off a cliff?

If we go back to the original expert in the Garden of Eden we can see what unifies all the modern experts of Liberalism: They hate the living God because He offends their pride. They must be as gods, so they attack the living God through His people. The Europeans once were His people, so the liberals have centered their attack on the Europeans. But the noble savages of color can only remain the liberals' gods so long as they stay outside of the orbit of Christian Europe; it is always that entity which is under attack. The theologians attack Christian Europe by pointing out the insufficiencies, from their utopian heights, of the antique Europeans. And the secular liberals attack the antique Europeans precisely because they were Christian. Thus the pride of intellect unites the religious expert and the secular expert in one great hatred, the hatred of Christ and the people who once called on Him by name.

The Swedes have not deviated from what has become the mainstream morality of the European governments. They are simply being more explicit – "The young must die in their mothers' wombs and the old whites must die quickly to make way for the non-whites." That is now the anti-white, anti-Christian ethos that rules Europe. Let me posit a different ethos, an old ethos, as an alternative. In an old Swedish fairy tale a young boy named Anders is given a hat by his mother: "A prettier cap was never seen, for his mother herself had knit it; and who could ever make anything half so nice as mother!" Throughout the rest of the story Anders is offered money, kisses from a beautiful princess, and bigger and finer hats, if only he will relinquish the hat his mother made for him. Anders refuses to give up the hat, even when his own brother calls him a fool for his many refusals. And in the end –

Anders' face grew red, very red. "I was not foolish," he answered sturdily, "I could never have bought a finer cap, not for all the king's crown. I could never have bought anything in all this world one half so fine as the cap my mother made me!"

Then his mother took him up on her lap, and kissed him.

We are to Christian Europe and to our Lord as Anders was to his hat and to his mother. There is no finer place for us than Christian Europe, because that is where our kith and kin and our Lord dwell. The land of the experts, the land of Liberalism, is not, and never shall be, our home. +

---

(1) Laura Ingraham tried to report on the benefits of the chloroquine drug, but she was locked out of her Twitter account because of her deviation from the liberals' party line, which is: "There is no cure, there is no hope, you must cease all work, all of life, and stay in your homes until the experts tell you it is safe to come out." That date, the date when it will be safe to come out, will always be in the future; it will never come about in reality, just like the liberals' utopia.

---

## **The Pestilence That Walketh in Darkness - March 28, 2020**

Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. – Psalm 91: 14

---

Life is inherently tragic because we are mortal men who must die, yet we have intimations of immortality. But life becomes even more tragic when those in authority, the principalities and powers of this world, work to destroy the unbought grace of life. Such is the case in Shakespeare's *King Lear*, when Lear turns his kingdom over to his evil daughters, and such is the case in the modern European nations ruled by the minions of Satan, who make Lady Macbeth, Goneril, and Regan seem like mild lambs in comparison.

This coronavirus crisis was born in the war laboratories of the Chinese communists, and it is being spread by their liberal allies in the Western nations. To oppose the spread of the virus by restricting travel to China or to suggest any kind of restrictions on immigration is to oppose all that is liberal and 'good.' It will not be permitted. What is there left to discover about the liberals? They, like Smerdyakov in the *Brothers Karamazov*, believe there is no God outside of their own intellects. So everything is lawful if they desire it. And what they desire is the destruction of everything good, noble, and honorable. Every remnant of that which was our glory, our hope, and our comfort, Christian Europe, must be destroyed. This latest liberal assault, the coronavirus crisis, has been a very, very successful gambit. It has destroyed small white businesses and further isolated whites from each other, making them even more dependent on the federal and state governments. Right now the crisis appears to have no end in sight, because the Democrats in the U.S. Congress are resisting any financial or medical aid bills unless they include all sorts of liberal agenda items, such as more funding for abortion, in the bills. And in Britain and Canada, the powers that be refuse to place any restrictions on foreign trade and travel, even in the face of an ever-widening circle of disease. The liberals are the demon-possessed swine, and they are

determined to take thee and me over the cliff with them. They might get their way in terms of ‘this world only’ – they might get our bodies – but will we save our souls? “That,” as Hamlet says, “is the question.”

The liberals have no differences with the Chinese communists because they are of one accord with the Chinese communists. N. G. Chernyshevsky’s book, *What Is to Be Done*, was studied by Lenin, who sought to put the principles described in the book into practice when he became head of communist Russia. Chernyshevsky asserted there was no essential difference between a plant, a mineral, an animal, or a man. Any view contrary to his view was part of the “prescientific era” and was self-evidently false. After placing man on the level of a vegetable, Chernyshevsky then goes on to tell us how reason, man’s reason, unfettered by the unscientific Europeans, will build a paradise on earth. Can mere vegetable and mineral matter really build a heaven on earth? And if that could be done, how can minerals and vegetables enjoy themselves? But Chernyshevsky’s ‘scientific’ viewpoint has become the liberals’ viewpoint, and it remains unchallenged in the Western world. Certain logical consequences of that viewpoint are rejected by more conservative-minded liberals, but the scientific determinism of the modern liberal-communist ruling elites is never challenged.

The liberals have taken Chernyshevsky’s vision of man into the 21st century. And they have forged that vision, which is really a vision of the unmen, into a fighting faith that has no room for the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. How can there be a place for Christ within the confines of an ideology that says we are created in the image of vegetable matter?

The coronavirus crisis is the liberals’ payback for Trump’s election. The white grazers, by voting for Trump, revealed they did not want to go quietly into the night, they wanted to be part of Liberaldom. That was not acceptable to the liberals, because white people represent the unscientific era of man’s history, the era when men did not realize they were vegetables. You cannot take people with such an unscientific past into the future. Even if the white grazer repudiates his past, which tragically he has, the white grazer will not be allowed into the future. He cannot be trusted to annihilate himself, so the liberals have been forced to step up the annihilation process. Won’t many of the liberals be destroyed by the virus as well? Yes, some will. But the liberals do not care about their fellow liberals either; they have no genuine feelings for anything human. They have progressed beyond humanity, to the higher scientific phase of the unmen, that of creatures who have no humanity.

Even if the death tolls of the coronavirus do not reach the levels the liberals hope for, the crisis has been a liberal success. The liberals have destroyed many small, white, independent businesses, and they have shown the white grazers their power. (1) Oppression works, particularly when the people who are being oppressed have no strong faith to sustain them against their oppressors and inspire them to launch a counterattack. That has been and continues to be the subject of these wars. The white grazers have no love or respect for the liberals, but they do fear them. And without a strong faith, they will not be able to overcome their fear of the liberals. They will appease them in all things in the hope that the liberals will withhold their wrath. It won’t work – it never has and it never will. Liberalism is from the devil, and the devil cannot be appeased; he hates humanity and the God who loves humanity. “There shall be no mercy,” is the devil’s credo, and it is the credo of his liberal minions.

When Burke wrote his anti-Jacobin salvo, he managed to persuade many of the European intelligentsia to condemn the Robespierre Jacobins. Only a small remnant, men such as Kingsley and Price, and later, Hilaire Belloc, remained Robespierre Jacobins. But Burke was never able to convince the European intelligentsia that the Jacobin ethos would remain in Europe so long as democracy was the new ‘God word’ throughout Europe.

Dostoyevsky also warned the West of the dangers of Jacobinism in its Marxist guise. He had less success than Burke – there were very few members of the European intelligentsia who were willing to condemn communism when it reared its satanic head in Russia. It was always the Czar and Christian Russia that were attacked. And right up to the 21st century, the first century since the Europeans first committed themselves to Christ that has begun under the auspices of a religion opposed to Christ, the liberals have always considered the communists their brethren while they view all those who oppose the communists as their enemies. And they are right, not morally right, but right in that they know their spiritual counterparts. They all believe as Chernyshevsky believed: “Blessed be the unmen, who are no different from vegetables, minerals, or animals. Blessed be our abstract reason, which shall lead us to paradise, when the unscientific Christians have been purged from the face of the earth.”

I hold with Pastor Grundtvig, the great Danish poet, who said that any theologian, be he Protestant or Catholic, who emphasizes man’s sinful nature to the exclusion of what is within man that bears the image of God, is from the devil. If you deny that there is anything worthy of redemption in man after the Fall, you denigrate Christ, you make His incarnation and subsequent crucifixion and resurrection from the dead a mockery, because Christ saw men as worthy of redemption. He loved us. I have heard the ‘hard guy’ theologians speak, and I cannot see any difference between the religious ‘hard guys’ and Chernyshevsky. Man becomes mere vegetable matter in both ideologies, and abstract reason, illogically divorced from sinful man, becomes all in all. If we are governed, in church or state, by illuminated minds detached from the human

heart, we will always be viewed as vegetable matter, easily disposed of, without any regard for such unscientific concepts as mercy and love.

When I look at the food lines and the deserted streets of our new coronavirus-afflicted world, I can draw only one conclusion: The liberals have made the transition from a war of persuasion to a war of destruction. They are forcing the white grazers to submit to liberal authority through sheer force, the force of germ warfare. This war was inevitable once we left Christ out of the European drama. If charity and mercy, His charity and mercy, are unscientific, then, "Humanity must perforce prey upon itself like monsters from the deep."

Monsters indeed! Yeats asked "What rough beast, its hour come round at last, Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?" It will not be the benign, intellectual paganism that Yeats hoped for. It will be the real beast, it will be Satan. The fruits of liberalism are before us. The liberals' brain child is mankind's ancient foe. The coronavirus germ warfare is just one more onslaught of the devil. We must think in terms of the Psalmist:

He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.  
I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust.  
Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence.  
He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler.  
Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day;  
Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday.  
A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee.  
Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked.  
Because thou hast made the LORD, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation;  
There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling.  
For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways.  
They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.  
Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet.  
Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name.

That psalm has always been a source of strength to the Christian Europeans. But it is so unscientific, and haven't Christians throughout the centuries cited that psalm in vain? Haven't they died from the arrows that flieth by day and the pestilence that walketh in darkness? Yes, they have. Still there is that vision of Christ on the Cross. He loves us and the liberals do not. To whom then do we turn?

"None but thee, Lord, none but thee."+

---

(1) It is the 'democratic' governors who are closing down white businesses by imperial fiat. Many of those businesses employ white males who are living paycheck to paycheck. They do not live on welfare checks nor do they make a living by robbing and stealing. They need to work. And most of the work they do does not put them at risk for the coronavirus. But thus far they have not been able to persuade their governors to let them work. Why? Because the coronavirus has allowed the liberals to govern us as Chernyshevsky wanted vegetables and minerals to be governed. "You bid me seek redemption from the devil," Isabella tells the Duke in *Measure for Measure*. And so do we ask redemption from the devil when we seek for mercy and fair-dealing from our liberal overlords.

---

## **Our Hope in Ages Past - March 21, 2020**

These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world. —John 16: 33

---

Let me start with some observations on the coronavirus crisis. First, Trump did try to do something to prevent the spread of the virus. On January 30, he instituted a ban on travel to and from China. What happened immediately afterwards? Biden said Trump's decision was, "hysterical xenophobia ... and fear-mongering," exaggerating the danger of the virus and picking on the nice, benevolent Chinese communists. Yet now Biden tells us that he and his liberal cohorts are the people who should lead us out of the crisis. If we follow the timeline, we can see that as the coronavirus was spreading, the Democrats were so busy trying to impeach Trump that they had no time to spend on the problem of the coronavirus. They are people with one priority, the same priority as the demons who went over the cliff with the swine.

Secondly, I have no desire to get the virus, nor do I want any of my family members to get the virus. I don't think the disease is a particularly funny topic, but humor, of the right kind, can be a catharsis. I highly recommend a music video that my daughter played for me by a country singer named Buddy Brown. He did us all a service by allowing us to laugh at the virus. The video is a kind of exorcism.

Now, back to a more sober aspect of the coronavirus crisis. What the crisis drives home to me is the fact that there is no Christian presence left in the liberal elites of the European nations. When the Italians just leave their elderly who are infected with the virus to die without medical treatment, because it is not cost-effective to treat them, and when politicians such as Biden cannot put partisan politics aside and rally around a leader who is trying to reduce the suffering of his people, you can see past the thin veil of the liberals' feigned humanity to their satanic core. The liberals who love to pontificate about their concern for humanity, and Pope Francis is one of the worst of the liberals, actually hate individual human beings. The 'open borders' Pope does not care about the people who are being and will be destroyed by open borders. He and his liberal cohorts in crime only care about the sign of their election — they are the intelligent ones who have gone beyond the boundaries of fear, prejudice, and superstition. They are not prejudiced against Orientals, blacks, or any other stranger; the only danger in their eyes are white people who believe that the European people should have a homeland that is theirs and theirs alone.

Will this crisis change the liberals' views on open borders and diversity? No, it won't. The liberals have committed themselves to a new religion, a religion without mercy, without love, and without that charity of honor. Such creatures must always support that which is opposed to Christ's reign of charity. And Christ's reign of charity begins in a non-diverse home and extends to a non-diverse village and nation. Have we ever seen a diverse Christian nation? No, we have not. Diversity dilutes love. In order to truly love, we must love with an intensity and passion greater than the generic love of the liberal purveyors of diversity. We must love much, we must love our Lord, and we must love our people in and through our Savior. Is it just a coincidence that the greatest proponent of diversified love, Francis the blasphemer, resides in a nation that has treated the coronavirus victims just as inhumanely as communist China has treated her victims? Quite probably it is a coincidence, but it is not a coincidence that the new religion of diversity, the religion of diversified love, is a religion with no room for the one particular God of love or for the people who once championed that God of love.

What about the white grazers? Will this coronavirus crisis shake their faith in the liberal elite? My anecdotal evidence, which I have gathered while standing in grocery store lines caused by the liberals' cries of "panic, panic, doom, doom!" is that the grazers no longer believe in the liberal elite. That doesn't mean they believe in Walter Scott's Christian Europe, but they no longer believe that the liberals, represented by the liberal news media and the Democratic Party, are the people to turn to in a crisis. They do not believe the Democrats' spin, "It is Trumps' fault." They believe this is a crisis caused by the Democrats and perpetuated by the media. Does that mean the white grazers are poised to reject liberalism? No, it does not. It simply means that the white grazers are in limbo; they are uncertain about the future, or should I say their future, but they still believe that intelligent people do not believe in the poetic of old Europe, and that is a tragedy. The European grazers are still not ready to answer Dostoevsky's question, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ," with an unequivocal, "Yes." Man's first fall from grace was grounded in the pride of intellect — the devil told Adam and Eve they were too intelligent to believe that eating from the tree of the forbidden fruit would kill them. And the Europeans' second fall from grace was grounded in the pride of intellect as well: "We are too intelligent to believe in the fairy tale of Christ's birth, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead." Thus the fear of being thought stupid, of being unscientific, doth make practical atheists of the European people. They are too intelligent to leave Liberaldom, despite the fact that Liberaldom is becoming increasingly uncomfortable for them, because they do not want to be numbered among the stupid people who are, according to the liberals, surely damned. But didn't our Lord, before He left this earth, warn us that the liberals, the creatures of 'this world only,' would hate us?

These things I command you, that ye love one another. If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. — John 15: 17

Dickens asks, in *Great Expectations*, why human beings always seek the respect of the people they most despise. Why indeed? Isn't the answer to that question rooted in our pride of intellect? And isn't our conquest of that pride our salvation? We can't love much and be forgiven if we are too smart to kneel before His Holy Cross and ask for His forgiveness. The devils in Matthew 8 sought to escape from Christ, so they asked to enter the swine, which promptly went headlong over the cliff. The liberals are devils; they are determined to go over the cliff with the swine. If the European grazers will not divorce themselves from the liberal devils, they too will go over the cliff with the demon-possessed liberal swine.

Irwin Cobb, author of the marvelous Judge Priest stories that describe, with humor and love, the people of the old South in the era just after the Civil War, wrote a very telling remark about the Gospel of Christ in his autobiography. He said the Gospel was a sublime book, but it was impractical to live your life by it. That has been, and continues to be, the attitude of the conservatives in church and state. They give a nod to Christianity the religion, and then they return to the Greek philosophers, to abstract reason, when they want to "solve" the problems of life. But the one great problem of life cannot be solved by the philosophers, the purveyors of abstract reason: We must die. That is what makes the problem of life insoluble. Sophocles' indictment of the philosophers is correct: "Better never to have been born," if there is no Redeemer.



To live outside of His love is pure hell. The wisdom of the worldly-minded conservatives is that we should live with their wisdom, the philosophers, in this world, and then at the hour of our death we should call on Him. But that type of philosophy undercuts the Gospel of Christ and Christ's personally anointed spokesman, St. Paul. "Through Christ and in Christ," was St. Paul's passionate response to the problem of life on this earth. St. Paul saw that Christ stood alone before the terrible horror of death, and He did not waver in His faith, because He and His father were one. It is "practical" to live "through Christ and in Christ," on this earth. It is the only practical course to follow.

St. Stephen seemed impractical; it was sheer folly to defy the rulers of the synagogue, wasn't it? Well, he did die, but he was given a vision of the risen Lord: "I see the heavens opened, and the Son of Man standing on the right hand of God." The liberals have not eliminated the tragedy of life, they have increased the suffering in this world one thousand-fold because they have "pragmatized" the care of the elderly, the infirm, and the children in the womb: They kill them, because it is practical. And they have left us spiritually bereft of our Comforter, the Holy Ghost, who bids us turn to Him in life and death.

I have a cousin, a mad-dog liberal, who works with people who are at death's door. Over her lifetime in that profession she has observed that people with faith are much better off in the face of death than those without faith, but that observation has not given her faith in Christ, because she is "too smart" to believe in fairy tales. You cannot become a Christian for practical reasons. You must feel that Christ is in you and you are in Him. The connection between our kith and kin and our God, which the Dream of the Rood poet and William Shakespeare in "Sonnet 31" speak of is something that we have lost as a people. Eric Voegelin, the Platonist, is referenced in conservative anthologies a thousand times more than St. Paul. But there is a wisdom of the heart, the circumcised heart, that tells us to listen to our blood. If we go back, if we join with our European ancestors, in spirit and blood, we will be one with them and with Him.

As I stated at the outset, I do not want to contract the coronavirus. I am not going to stand at the dock as the cruise ships come in and embrace coronavirus-infected Jewish millionaires as they leave the cruise ship. Nor do I want my family members, my friends, or even the liberals to contract the coronavirus. But in the end, whether it is the coronavirus or some other illness that gets us, we are going to die. So the larger question is – are we going to die in Christ's loving embrace or are we going to die within the satanic embrace of liberalism? The most serious illness of all is the one that kills the soul as well as the body. And that illness is liberalism. The coronavirus is being trumpeted as something more than it is, a flu, because of the satanic nature of the liberals. Everything must be used for the destruction of His reign of charity. When the coronavirus dies out, there will be other plagues that the liberals will use to try and make us turn our souls over to them in exchange for a plague-free existence. Don't believe them. They are the plague we should worry about, and His people, the people of old Europe, knew the antidote for that plague: "In Him and through Him. +

---

### **Liberalism Is the Virus - March 14, 2020**

Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith: To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen. –Romans 16: 25-27

---

It wasn't that long ago when the liberals were telling us not to panic over the Ebola virus, which was so deadly that even incidental contact with the virus, such as the touch of the hand of someone infected with it, could kill us. Now the liberals tell us that we should panic over the coronavirus even though the coronavirus is nowhere near as deadly as the Ebola virus. One account predicts 7 million deaths in the United States as a result of the virus. What is going on? Why are we witnessing such a disproportionate panic over what amounts to a case of the flu, which certainly can kill as flus have done in the past, but not on the level of another Black Plague. I think in this case Rush Limbaugh is right. The liberals are trying to manufacture a crisis – and judging by the stock market they are having some success – that will bring down Trump.(1) What the liberals are doing is the moral equivalent of screaming 'fire' in a crowded movie theater when they know there is no fire. People will be trampled to death, people will die as a result of the liberals' manufactured panic, but the liberals do not care; they have only one mission – to destroy Trump.

The liberals always bitterly oppose every Republican president, but their vitriolic hatred of Trump has gone way beyond bitter opposition. Not even Nixon, the man who successfully prosecuted Alger Hiss, was hated like Trump is hated. What is different about Trump, why has he earned the special hatred of the liberals? Hasn't he given his earnest endorsement of the second person of the liberals' trinity, the sacred negro? Yes, he has. Has he ever blasphemed against the liberals' holy ghost, which is science? Ah, there's the rub. He has never directly challenged science, but he has expressed a sincere belief in a blended Christianity, blended with Judaism, and by doing so he has indirectly challenged science. And that is no longer acceptable to the liberals at this stage of their descent into the abyss. They once could abide a few Christian glitches

in their machine, but no longer. Once you have achieved a complete victory on the battlefield it does not make any sense to make any concessions to your enemies.

What are the concessions that Trump wants? First, he wants white people to be included in the onward march of liberalism. The other Republican presidents simply wanted to exterminate the white race at a slower rate than the Democrats; they did not want to stop the extermination. That annoyed the Democrats, but it did not make them manufacture epidemics in order to defeat them. And secondly, Trump, because he has made a sincere conversion to a halfway-house, Jewish-Christian faith, has sincerely tried to appoint prolife judges. What is obvious when we view the liberals' hatred of Trump is that the liberals cannot abide even the smallest particle of Christianity. Anyone who is connected to Him, even slightly, must be destroyed.

After communism failed to be the god that George Orwell had hoped it would be, he was forced to consider, quite deeply, the problem of the European people's moral drift. They seemed to be a people without a soul. "What," Orwell asked, "could replace the European people's belief in Christ's resurrection from the dead?" He never found an answer to that question. I can answer it – Nothing can replace the European people's faith in Christ's resurrection from the dead. If our reason and our science will not let us believe that Christ rose from the dead on the third day, we will self-destruct as a people, while trying desperately to cling to the liberals' noble savage as our new Messiah. But how can the noble savage save us from sin and death? He can't, but there is no need for a Messiah who saves us from sin and death if there is no such thing as sin and death. The liberals promised the Christian Europeans freedom from sin and freedom from the fear of death if they forsook Christ for liberalism. The European people accepted the liberals' covenant, a covenant with Satan. How have they fared under their new covenant?

The European people's covenant with Satan was quite similar to Macbeth's covenant with Satan. At first Macbeth seemed to be getting what he wanted from the Witches. He was King and he did not have to fear any man born of woman, so the witches told him. We know the rest:

MACBETH. Thou losest labour:  
As easy mayst thou the intrenchant air  
With thy keen sword impress, as make me bleed:  
Let fall thy blade on vulnerable crests;  
I bear a charmed life, which must not yield  
To one of woman born.

MACDUFF. Despair thy charm;  
And let the angel whom thou still hast serv'd  
Tell thee, Macduff was from his mother's womb  
Untimely ripp'd.

MACBETH. Accursed be that tongue that tells me so,  
For it hath cow'd my better part of man!  
And be these juggling fiends no more believ'd,  
That palter with us in a double sense;  
That keep the word of promise to our ear,  
And break it to our hope

—*Macbeth* by William Shakespeare

The "juggling fiends" of liberalism told us that freedom from Christ meant freedom from our guilty sins. We could violate all the Ten Commandments and still be free of guilt. Solzhenitsyn references Lady Macbeth in his Gulag Archipelago. He says that she ultimately lacked the liberals' ideology, so she caved in to her conscience. Ideology, Solzhenitsyn maintained, allows the evil doer to continue in his or her evil without any pangs of conscience. But there are sins in the world of the "juggling fiends," the fiends of liberalism: Thou shalt not be racist, thou shalt not be sexist, thou shalt not be homophobic, thou shalt not be Islamophobic... Are not the new commandments of the liberals just as restrictive as the old Ten Commandments? We have given up our souls to live by the devil's covenant, which, in the end, only gives his devotees a new set of sins to atone for, and the devil does not forgive those who disobey his commandments.

While imprisoned on the Isle of Patmos, the apostle John was vouchsafed a vision of the man who was worthy to open the book which was sealed with seven seals. It was the "Lion of the tribe of Judah" – it was Jesus Christ. He had defeated the rider on the pale horse in order to give His people a world where "they shall hunger no more, neither shall they thirst any more, nor shall the heat of the sun strike upon them. But the Lamb who is in the midst of the throne shall lead them as a shepherd, and shall guide them into the fountains of waters of life. And God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes." I have wept without ceasing over the death of my loved ones. It is only my hope and faith in the Christ who comes to comfort John on the Isle of Patmos that keeps me from weeping unto despair. What can the liberals give us — what have

they given us — that can replace John’s vision of the Lion of Judah who turns our tears of sorrow into tears of joy? They have given us the opiates of liberalism. We are enjoined to immerse ourselves in sex without end, drugs that can anesthetize the pain of existence, and ideologies that can keep His holy cross away from our lives. But if we do not live with Him through His crucifixion we cannot live with Him in His resurrection. That is the Orwellian dilemma.

The European people, the people of the abstract intellect, the devotees of the sacred negro, and the great scientific thinkers, do not believe in Christ’s resurrection from the dead. Death remains unconquered in the liberals’ new covenant with mankind, but it can be obscured, it can disappear from our sight, if we take the opiates of liberalism. The liberal-created hysteria over the coronavirus is just one more attempt, by the liberals, to keep their kingdom of eternal night in order, a kingdom that can only be sustained by a constant supply of opiates. There must not even be a glimmer, which Trump represents, of that other world, the Apostle John’s world, in the midst of Liberaldom.

If a man with only a small particle of the light that once illuminated all of Europe can elicit such hatred from the liberals, what kind of reception would a Christian hero, a Quentin Durward or an Alfred the Great, receive if he suddenly emerged in the midst of Liberaldom? The hatred of the liberals would exceed hatred, it would become an all-consuming satanic fury that would destroy the liberals from within. And that is the great secret of Satan that he has kept from the liberals. He hates his minions just as he hates those who follow Christ. The liberals think they have discovered a great secret in their new covenant with Satan, but their new covenant ignores the evil intentions of Satan and fails to see the “revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began.” Is it possible that the “simple fools,” the antique Europeans, saw something that the modern Europeans do not see when they saw Christ as the mystery who taketh away the sins of the world and destroyeth the rider on the pale horse? It is possible and if we cannot believe what those “simple fools” believed we will become like unto the unmen of Liberaldom who have left God and humanity behind in order to reside in hell with the devil, who hates God and humanity.

When we look at the 20th century conservatives in church and state, it is shocking to see how little significance they placed on the antique Europeans’ faith in Christ as the beginning and the end of human history. They gave a brief nod to ‘religion’ as something that is good for the masses, but they seemed to have no idea how their great theories to save mankind from the communist menace and other such liberal panaceas were dependent on a people who believed, not in Socrates, not in Plato, not in Aristotle, but in Jesus Christ, the Man of Sorrows, who was born in a stable in Bethlehem, was crucified by Pontius Pilot, and rose from the dead on the third day. The unbought grace of life that Burke saw as our Christian heritage was given very little credit by the great conservatives who thought that liberal-conservative minds could defeat mad-dog liberal minds without reference to the heart of Europe, the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

The so-called coronavirus crisis is just another onslaught of the liberals against what little remains of the light that once illuminated all of Europe. Trump is a man who is in line with the classical liberals of the 1950s, but that is no longer acceptable to the modern liberals because the 1950s liberal was still acting upon certain Christian precepts. Now, there must be nothing left of Christian Europe. The entire white race must be aborted because there might be some remnant of grace left in some white hearts. That cannot be tolerated. That is the reason a flu, which is milder than the SARS flu of 2002-03 and the swine flu of 2009, has become a national crisis. The crisis exists in the minds of the liberals who have given their hearts to Satan. We don’t need Nietzsche’s Übermensch to combat the liberals, we need the Christian hero who knows that, “the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began,” was and is Jesus Christ. +

---

(1) Even if the coronavirus should prove to be worse than the Black Plague, haven’t Biden and his liberal cohorts proved the exact opposite of what they are claiming, namely, that it is only they and they alone who can halt the plague. We need a Kipling-type leader to stop the plague, a man who can keep his head when all about him are losing theirs:

If you can keep your head when all about you  
Are losing theirs and blaming it on you

Who is the lion in this “crisis” and who are the jackals?

---

## **The Evil of What Seems - March 7, 2020**

Hamlet. Ay, madam, it is common.

Queen. If it be,  
Why seems it so particular with thee?

Hamlet. Seems, madam! Nay, it is; I know not “seems.”  
’Tis not alone my inky cloak, good mother,

Nor customary suits of solemn black,  
Nor windy suspiration of forced breath,  
No, nor the fruitful river in the eye,  
Nor the dejected havior of the visage,  
Together with all forms, moods, shows of grief,  
That can denote me truly. These indeed seem,  
For they are actions that a man might play.  
But I have that within which passeth show,  
These but the trappings and the suits of woe.

—*Hamlet, Prince of Denmark* by William Shakespeare

---

For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for? But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it. Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. —Romans 8: 24-26

---

The liberals have invoked their holy ghost and declared Vice President Pence unfit to lead the fight against the coronavirus because he is a Christian and therefore unscientific. Christians usually respond to such attacks by attempting to prove to the liberals that ape-to-man evolution is unscientific. “We,” the creationists claim, “believe in true science.” I do not believe in the absurd ape-to-man theory of the liberals, but I also disagree with the Christians who defend God’s word by attempting to prove that His word is compatible with science. It’s a question of emphasis: If we spend all our time and effort defending God’s word against the onslaughts of liberals who call Christians unscientific for believing in God’s word, haven’t we given too much credence to science by trying to prove, with concrete, material evidence that which cannot be proved with concrete material evidence? The spirit goes where it lists; it cannot be put in a science laboratory and dissected.

St. Thomas highly exaggerated the compatibility of reason and faith, and as a consequence he gave the atheists, the Voltaires and the Rousseaus, the philosophic ammunition to destroy the Christian Europeans’ heartfelt faith in Christ as true God and true man. When Aquinas’s five proofs of the existence of God were shown to be unreasonable, the Christians who equated reason with faith lost their faith. The scientific trap is similar to the rationalist trap. Even if you prove Darwinism wrong on scientific grounds, you are still left with the hard fact that Christ’s resurrection from the dead cannot be proved by science. If we allow ourselves to be drawn into the scientific debate, we will be betrayed in deepest consequence when the liberals play their trump card: “Your faith is unscientific – you cannot prove that the dead shall rise again.” And if we cannot prove His resurrection by reference to science, are we then going to renounce our faith in the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost for the liberals’ faith in the abstract intellect of man, the sacred negro, and science? Yes, the European people have shifted to the new faith, because science, the liberals’ holy ghost, has replaced the comforter that our Lord gave us when He left this earth. If we don’t seek the Comforter in our hearts, He cannot aid us in our struggles against the principalities and powers of this world, which seek to do us harm. And the principalities and powers of this world have done the European people harm; aided by the holy ghost of science, they have torn asunder the European people’s faith in the Christ who enters human hearts. “If God’s existence cannot be verified by science, He cannot be God,” is the credo of the ruling liberal elites in the Western world.

The unholy trinity of abstract reason, the sacred negro, and science, is a uniquely European religion. How could it be otherwise since the Europeans’ faith, prior to their acceptance of the unholy trinity, was a belief in the holy trinity of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost? In order to destroy the Holy Trinity it was first necessary to turn Our Father Who Art in heaven into abstract reason. The medieval scholastics and the Protestant scholastics who followed in their train were the great proponents of a theoretical God who could only be known through the illuminated minds of the men of the new Sanhedrin. Then, the great natural philosophers, such as Rousseau and Voltaire, discovered, through the power of their abstract reason, the noble savage who was is and always shall be the second person of the liberals’ trinity. And finally it was necessary, if the abstracted intellects of the illuminated men and the sacred negro were going to long endure as gods, that the Holy Ghost of Science should appear on the scene to help sustain the first and second parts of the unholy trinity. The devil cannot create anything, but he can ape the good in order to perpetuate evil. His kingdom of hell on earth has replaced Christendom, because he has managed to replace the Holy Trinity with his unholy trinity. “God in three persons, blessed Trinity,” has become, “Evil in three entities, the archangel Satan.”

There are those who attack the second person of the holy trinity, the noble black savage, but their attacks are not effective because they do not attack reason, abstracted from the heart of God, nor do they attack science. Many times in my life I’ve had illnesses that ended when I broke out in a fever that purged the illness. Even though I was physically weaker than before, I felt something close to euphoria when the illness had left my body. The European people are, at present, spiritually sick. If they ever manage to purge their souls of the unholy trinity, they will feel what it is like to have been dead

and restored to life. They will be weak at first from the tremendous effort they made to throw off their sickness-unto-death, but they will proceed, guarding their new-found faith carefully because they do not want to relapse, to become what they were meant to be, the Christ-bearers, the people who saw a great light and bore witness to the truth of that great light to the whole world.

No man is an island. The unholy trinity was purged from my soul many years ago, but I can't help but grieve over the white grazers (never the liberals – they know what they do), who remain in thrall to the unholy trinity. What is it about the devil's trinity that keeps the white grazers in line? The first striking contrast between the Christian trinity and the devil's trinity is that the devil's new faith is something that can be seen. Reason, abstracted from the poetic of the human heart, can be used to place wisdom in a silver rod and love in a golden bowl. The sacred negro can also be seen and worshipped right here on earth; he is not an unseen God whose adherents claimed He rose from the dead. And science? The liberals' holy ghost is all around us. We see the wonders of science in everything we do. How could anyone be so irreverent, so stupid, so base as to blaspheme against science?

The second contrast between the Christian faith and the devil's triune faith has to do with deep, human intimacy and impersonal superficiality. Christ offered individual men and women, who called on Him by name, a heart-to-heart intimacy. What was lacking in the impersonal unknown god of the philosophers, the savage gods of ecstasy such as Cybele, and the impersonal god of nature in the science lab was to be found in the antique European's incorporate union with the Man of Sorrows. The modern Europeans broke that union to live in union with the devil, because they did not want intimacy with a God who could not guarantee them happiness in this world only. Can the devil? That is his promise, but can that "juggling fiend" be believed? No, he cannot. And even if he could deliver the material goods, would a man, a man imbued with that "charity of honor," accept the devil's bargain? Of course he wouldn't, but the modern Europeans have embraced the devil in the hope that he can give them, through the unholy trinity, what the triune God of the antique Europeans cannot give them.

If we worship what can be seen and what is superficial and inhuman we will become... we have already become such people, we have become laboratory specimens who have broken all ties to our kith and kin because such ties could lead us out of the science lab to passions and affections that give us intimations of a world beyond the grave presided over by a personal God whose love cannot be seen in the science lab.

In Shakespeare's *Hamlet*, the evil genius Claudius is worried about one man. That one man is, of course, Hamlet. Claudius cannot remain king if men feel deeply about the King who has just been buried. Hamlet, the man who "knows not seems," is determined to delve beyond what "seems" to the heart of existence. Claudius and he must clash. We, the European people, must clash with the liberals in the name of the antique Europeans, our spiritual progenitors who formed genuine human relationships with their kith and kin and the God-Man. "Seems, madam! Nay it is; I know not 'seems.'"

That should be our response to the unholy trinity of the liberals. The devil has destroyed the Europeans' heart-to-heart connection to the Savior by giving us science, which seems to be the real tangible holy ghost, the sacred negro, who seems to be the real natural savior that can be seen, and the real father, abstract reason, who seems to be in the tomes of philosophy and theology. We must not accept what seems. Like Hamlet, we must delve below the surface of life and claim our birthright: "It is I, Hamlet the Dane." Our defiant response to the unholy trinity should be like unto Hamlet's response: "In the name of what we have seen with the eyes of the heart, the Holy Trinity of the Father, Son, and the Holy Ghost, we defy what seems – the unholy trinity of the devil."

I have in my family library a six volume set of storybooks that were my mother's when she was a little girl in the 1920s. And I also have in my family library a sixteen volume set of storybooks that my parents bought for me and my siblings when we were growing up in the 1950s. In my mother's set of books from the 1920s, I estimate that about 85% of the stories and poems are stories celebrating our Christian European heritage, stories that lead us to Him by depicting the little way to God, how we proceed from the particular, the hearth fire and the village, to the larger world in general, instead of the cosmic way, in which the great philosophers and theologians start with a cosmic generality and never quite get around to particular human beings. In the sixteen volume set from the 1950s, I estimate that the kith-and-kin stories make up about 65% of the stories while 'edifying' liberal stories make up the other 35% of the stories.

Now, there are no European storybooks. The liberals still, however, have their stories. They are generally published over the internet as cautionary tales. They warn children about the dangers of racism and sexism to be found in that bad world, which Robert Louis Stevenson called his "dear, dear land of storybooks." Let us be absolutely clear about what is at stake in the battle of the storybooks. Robert Louis Stevenson's world of storybooks is a world where the Holy Trinity is ever present. The liberals' land of cautionary tales is the kingdom of the unholy trinity. Let me take one 'cosmic' story from the 1920s storybook in order to illustrate the liberals' universalism, a universalism that has no room for one particular people, the European people, and one particular God, our Lord and Savior. The story, written by Israel Zangwill, is called "The Melting Pot, A Story of True Americans." Included in the same volume are stories by Hans Christian Anderson, Edmund

Spenser, and Walter Scott — liberal universalism, back then, was still sharing the stage with Christian particularism. In “The Melting Pot,” a “true story,” Zangwill tells us how he left Russia, a land of prejudice ruled by a terrible Tsar, to come to the land of light where there was no prejudice and no “religious bigotry.” Zangwill’s American dream of a great melting pot has come to fruition throughout the countries of Europe. And what is this brave new world, this melting pot? It is a land that has no room for the white, European Christian. It is a land governed by the unholy Trinity. Is this what diversity comes down to, a kingdom of eternal night? Then I will cling to my God, my people and my prejudices, all through the night.+

---

## **Festering Lilies - February 29, 2020**

And Jesus said, “For judgment I have come into this world, that those who do not see may see, and that those who see may be made blind.” Then some of the Pharisees who were with Him heard these words, and said to Him, “Are we blind also?” Jesus said to them, “If you were blind, you would have no sin; but now you say, ‘We see.’ Therefore your sin remains. —John 9: 39-41

---

My fantasy house is the one overlooking the sea on the coast of Cornwall in the 1944 movie *The Uninvited*. Of course I would want the ghosts evicted before I claimed possession of the house. My second choice, if the house in Cornwall was unavailable, would be a house overlooking a lake in the Lake District of England or in Maine. I do not currently live near an ocean or a lake, nor is it likely I ever shall, so why bring up a frivolous house-show topic? I bring up such a topic because I want to make a clumsy analogy: During my children’s younger years we were lucky enough to live within driving distance (a half-hour) of a wonderful lake in the woods. We didn’t limit our visits to the lake to the summer time, we went there throughout the four seasons. Once in the early spring we visited the lake on two consecutive days. On the first day the lake was covered with ice, then on the second day the lake was completely free of ice. I had never seen such a dramatic, rapid deicing before. In previous years the ice on the lake had gradually melted away. No doubt something momentous had been taking place below the surface before that dramatic transformation, but externally it appeared to be an instantaneous process that had to be seen to be believed. Such has been the case with Western culture. Going into the 1960s it seemed that the European people retained all the customs and manners of their Christian forebears, but when those customs and manners were challenged in the mid 1960s, all those customs and manners dating back over a thousand years seemed to crumble, from a cultural standpoint, almost instantaneously. Obviously, something was going on internally for a long time, something within the soul of the European people, that made their transformation from a Christian people into a post-Christian people almost instantaneous. That something, the internal cancer, was of course the thing called liberalism. We have not yet come to grips with that hideous entity, which is why the European people no longer exist as a people; they are the first race of unmen that the world has ever known.

Burke was correct when he said that the first liberal was the devil. The devil hates God and His people with a deep and abiding hatred. Because of that hatred, the devil had to destroy Christian Europe; he had to turn Christendom into Satandom. He has accomplished that seemingly impossible task by patiently undermining all things human and Christian, using Christian rhetoric and maintaining the outward forms of Christianity to kill the substance of Christianity, a heartfelt faith in the Word made flesh.

There are no liberals to be found in the ranks of the colored people. Some, in the European nations, will ape liberalism to obtain a position in Liberaldom, but they always remain true inside to the non-liberal tenets of their race. They are worshipped by the white liberals who hate their own race, but the colored people do not love the white liberals, nor do they have anything in common with them. True, they hate the white race as the liberals hate the white race, but not for the same reason. The coloreds make use of the liberals’ hatred of the white race for their own ends, but they do not understand the reason for the liberals’ hatred of their own people. How can they? It is completely outside their frame of reference. The colored heathen, who loves his people to the extent that a heathen can love, cannot understand how a man can hate his own people as the liberals hate their people. The operative word is ‘man.’ The liberals are not part of humanity — they have become unmen.

In order to become a race of unmen you must have once, in your past, been a Christian people. Only when you have reached the pinnacle of human culture, when you have touched the heart of God through the God-Man, Jesus Christ, can you become less than human by repudiating the God-Man, Jesus Christ. There is a terrible judgement hanging over the heads of the European people. In the midst of mortal pain our Lord said, “Father, forgive them for they know not what they do.” The liberals know what they are doing; they are trying to eradicate the living God from the hearts of His people, because they hate the living God as Satan hates the living God.<sup>(1)</sup> The stink of liberalism is far greater than the stink of heathenism, because the post Christian liberal is closer to Satan than the heathens of color are.

The summer’s flow’r is to the summer sweet  
Though to itself it only live and die,

But if that flow'r with base infection meet,  
The basest weed outbraves his dignity:  
For sweetest things turn sourest by their deeds;  
Lilies that fester smell far worse than weeds.

“Sonnet 94” by Shakespeare

Satan is a coward. Byron and Milton invest him with a brave, pagan nobility, but they are wrong. He did not attack the Christian Europeans in a stand-up fight, he attacked by way of infection. Liberalism was and is the “base infection” that killed the Christian Europeans. The satanic liberals did not tell the Christian, “You must kill your kith and kin.” No, they, like the devil they serve, are far more subtle. They told the white Christian that it is not Christian to love your kith and kin more than the stranger. Then they worked on that initial break from our human ties of affection and love by extending the premise of, “You must love the stranger as you love your kith and kin” to “You must despise your kith and kin.” And on it goes: The code of chivalry, which includes a respect for the ‘fair sex,’ becomes a capitulation to the Lady Macbeths of feminism, who must kill their infants in the name of womanhood, womanhood as defined by Satan. And in the ultimate perversion of our faith, the liberals have transformed our love of Christ into a love for the sacred noble savages of color. Is it any wonder that the European lilies now give off an odious smell far worse than the heathen weeds of color?

When faith in Jesus Christ becomes a philosophy, when it becomes an intellectual construct, faith in Jesus Christ disappears because the Christian faith loses its distinctive character. Christ’s claim to be the one true God, to be God incarnate, is so shocking, so incredibly different from every mind-forged philosophy of God before or after Christ’s incarnation, that His claim must be dismissed as absurd unless we threw out all the laws of science and logic in order to see through and not with the eye. The ‘Christian’ empiricists refused to throw out their rationalism, their view of God as the sum of nature’s many parts, and as a consequence, our Lord and Savior became one God in a pantheon of nature gods. The comparative religion classes that sprang up in the ‘religious studies’ departments in U.S. universities in the 1960s were studies in atheism. When studied, the Christ story dissolves into a dew – a vague cosmic feeling. Our people who took the Christ story into their hearts dissolved into a dew as well, when the Christ story became a philosophy. Their identity as a people was inextricably linked with Christ as the beginning and the end of history; if He was not God, then they were not a people. The European people went from being the Christ-bearers to festering lilies that smell far worse than weeds.

In the same Chapter of Luke, Chapter 23, in which Christ says, “Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do,” the good thief rebukes his fellow thief for railing against Christ, and he asks Christ to forgive him his sins and remember him when He comes into His kingdom.

And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, Today shalt thou be with me in paradise. – Luke 23: 39-43

If we do not see that Liberalism is a garden of festering lilies, that it is a colony of sinners who know what they have done, we will become part of Liberalism and we will be “lost, lost, lost.” The thief on the cross should be our exemplar, not the Jewish rulers and Roman soldiers who mocked Christ while He was on the cross. What had He done to warrant their hatred? He dared to claim that He was the Son of the living God, the fulfillment of the prophecies that the Jewish rulers were supposed to believe in, and He dared to claim He was the God above the nature gods in which the Romans believed. And therein lies the key to the internal rebellion that had been building for centuries, which finally became manifest in what seemed like an instantaneous event in the 1960s. The Rousseaus, the Shaws, and the Voltaires could not accept the absurdity of a God above nature, a God who rose from the dead on the third day, nor could they accept the uniqueness of that God — they could not believe that there was one true God who would condescend to enter human history. There it is — the liberals are one with Satan, they hate humanity, so they refuse to believe that God took flesh and dwelt among us. And every attempt to make Christianity respectable to the ‘intelligent’ men, the Shaws, Rousseaus, and the Voltaires, results in the naturalization of Christ; He becomes part of nature, and the European people become unmen who hate Christ and His people (2).

We cannot become natural weeds like the colored heathens. What seems disgusting when the colored indulge their appetites seems demonic in the Europeans because of the contrast between a lily and a festering lily. We can never go back, it is all or nothing. We cannot stand with the intelligentsia who mock and scorn our Lord, because they are the people who know what they are doing: They are one with Satan. Liberalism is hell; we must reject it in its entirety and join with the good thief.+

(1) It's possible that the Generation Xers and those following them no longer know what they are doing when they mock and scorn our Lord. After all, they have never known any culture other than the festering-lily culture of the Europeans and the weed-infested-garden culture of the colored heathens. But the European intelligentsia, our rulers, do know what they are doing. For the love of Him who died on the cross, we cannot stand with them as they "delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces His image in man."

(2) If there was any doubt, which there cannot be, of the Satanic nature of liberalism, you need look no further than the recent debate and vote in the U.S. Senate on two abortion bills. One group of liberals thought that abortion should be legal at every stage of development including birth, while another group thought that abortion should be illegal after four months because that is when the fetus (they never call the child a child) feels pain. Then the first group of Satanists replied that there was no scientific proof that the fetus (translation: child) felt pain. There is the tragedy of the European people. They are unmen deciding the fate of actual human beings created in the image of God. And they always decide in favor of Satan, who hates God and humanity. We cannot live on peaceful terms with such creatures without becoming like unto them.

---

### **By the Grace of God - February 22, 2020**

And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

– Matthew 13: 3-9

---

When you want to stop a plague from spreading, you must destroy the breeding ground for the plague. The devil, who hates humanity and the God who took flesh and dwelt among us in order to redeem humanity, looked on the spread of Christianity throughout Europe as a plague. He could not, in an instant, destroy such a widespread plague, but he could, over time, gradually destroy the breeding ground for the Christian faith, which was, is, and always shall be the human heart. With an unrelenting, all-consuming hatred, the devil set himself the task of severing the Europeans' heart to heart connection to the Savior by redirecting their vision from the "eyes of the heart," the organ of sight, to the "jewels of the head," the source of intellectual pride and all of the satanic evils that stem from that pride.

Satan's long term plan, to destroy the European people's faith in Christ by destroying their hearts, has succeeded. The European people have, like the seeds in the Gospel parable, been devoured, scorched, and choked out of their heartfelt faith in Christ. They no longer are the "good ground" where faith can flourish because they have not kept their hearts. They have allowed the devil to convince them that it is their great minds divorced from their hearts that can lead them from the darkness of prejudice and superstition to the light. To what light? The devil never defines that light, he simply fills men's minds with a contempt for humanity and a great dream of a heaven on earth. Heaven on earth will come about through the good offices of the enlightened minds of illuminated men and women who shun the plague-ridden ground of the antique Europeans, in order to stand firmly in the devil's kingdom of hell on earth.

We have all heard the phrase, "shun them as if they had the plague." That has been and continues to be the liberals' response to the antique Europeans. And the grazers in church and state have responded to the liberals' condemnation of the plague-ridden Europeans with stout denials of their connection to the antique Europeans: "We are not like them: we are not racist, we are not sexist." But the liberals always err on the side of caution. It is better to assume that all whites, even whites who do not seem to have any outward marks of the plague, are carriers of the fatal illness than to risk infection. "Eradicate them all," is the mantra of the mad-dog liberals. Of course such a credo will ultimately result in the destruction of the liberals themselves, as they turn on each other with the suspicion that "even thee, my fellow liberal, show signs of the plague." No member of the white race will ultimately be pure enough, but before the final purging of the carriers of the plague, the liberals will stave off their own end by convincing themselves they can become pure, they can be saved from the plague by a fierce, unequivocal condemnation of the white, Christ-bearing race.

Tragically, the grazers who are seeking to avoid the plague of the antique Europeans do not realize that they already have the real plague. They are not in the final stages of the plague as the mad-dog liberals are, but they most definitely have the plague. It is the antique Europeans whom the grazers shun that are free of the plague. It has been my experience, sadly, that you cannot bring the white grazers back. You cannot get them to return to Christian Europe. You might be able to get them interested in a certain aspect of the antique Europeans' heritage, but as soon as the grazer realizes that aspect leads to the plague-ridden world of old Europe, he will draw back to what he thinks, because the illuminated liberals have told him so, is the safe, non-plague ridden land of Liberalism.



Let me mention one example, out of the countless ones I could give, of a grazer who would not be 'lured' back to 'plague-ridden' Christian Europe. A friend/acquaintance of mine had managed to maintain her 'Catholic to the Max' stance through the reign of John Paul II, but Francis the blasphemer got to her. She told me that she hated him, even though she knew it was wrong to hate the Pope. I told her that her hatred was well-placed, and I quoted Burke's statement about love and hate: "They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate." She liked the quote and asked me to tell her more about Burke. I did, telling her about his critique of modernity and his defense of old Europe, and I never heard from that 'friend' of over thirty years again. Is that just one isolated incident? No, it is not. Whenever I present old Europe to a white grazer as an entity separate and distinct from modern Europe, a separate and distinct world that we should enter leaving modern Europe behind, the white grazer flees from me as if I have the plague.

What is it that keeps the white grazer in the world that will surely kill him, body and soul, and makes him avoid the "good ground" of Christian Europe as the plague? Certainly the fear that the man born blind overcomes, the fear of being cast out of the liberals' synagogue, is at the root of the white grazer's fear. But how has the devil, through his liberal minions, managed to convince the white grazer that all that is good and noble and pure is contained within the liberals' synagogue, while all that is evil, ignoble, and impure stems from Christian Europe?

The first thing that comes to mind is that the liberals have managed to brand the antique Europeans with the racist and sexist labels: "We can't look to them, we can't go back, because they were racists and sexists." But that doesn't explain the white grazers' fear of old Europe. Why, if you are a Christian, would you allow the liberals to define the good? Why would you let them demonize your people who worshipped Christ rather than the noble savage and supported the Christian patriarchy rather than a Lady Macbeth matriarchy? You would do such a thing if you accepted the clergy's break from God. When the Grand Inquisitors decreed that the "good ground," which consisted of human hearts connected to His sacred heart, was not the "good ground," that their illuminated minds were all that was necessary for faith, the stage was set for Satan to enter into the heart of Christian Europe and turn Christendom into Satandom. It doesn't matter whether you are among the Protestant fundamentalists or the Catholic traditionalists, their attitude toward the "good ground" is the same: "That is merely culture and culture is of no consequence." Oh really? What the inquisitors dismiss as 'mere culture' is everything; it is our response, the human response, to God's grace. If men are not allowed a Christian culture, a solid "good ground" to stand on, because the theologians tell them that a Christian culture is an impossibility, then men will embrace Satan's culture while affirming an intellectual belief in a nebulous intellectual concept of God. This is why you have pro-abortion feminists distributing communion in the Catholic Church and evangelical Christians slavishly worshipping the unrepentant Jew in their churches. When God is pure intellect, you can make him into anything you want – a 'him' or a 'her,' an 'it' or a 'cosmic force.'

When I speak of culture I am not speaking of something that only an elite band of superior intellectuals can understand, such as opera or modernist painting. I am speaking of what Pastor Grundtvig called, "the living well springs" of life, which are and ever shall be human hearts responding to God's grace. The theologians look at the human heart and see evil, so they seek refuge from that evil in the human mind. But in that flight, they have embraced evil. Satan lies in wait for all men and women who shun the perilous journey through the human heart. There is great evil in the human heart, but there is also redemption. We can't come to Him through any other way: "Behold, the kingdom of God is within you."

The white grazer will continue to graze in the plague-infested ground of Liberalism because he is convinced that the other ground, Christian Europe, is the plague-ridden ground. So long as what is human is considered stupid and what is inhuman is considered intelligent, the white grazer will remain estranged from his people and His God. Is there no hope then? There is a seemingly impassable gulf between the grazer's world and Christian Europe. A mediator who is both divine and human is necessary to bridge that gulf. We can only bear witness to that 'little' God, the God who enters human hearts; we cannot make the grazer respond to that God.

It is easy for me to answer the question, "Do you hate the liberals?" Yes, I hate them as I hate the devil and all his works. But it is much more difficult to explain my feelings about the white grazers. They stand with the liberals, they do not love God or their people enough to defy the rulers of the liberal synagogue as the man born blind defied them. However, they do have some humanity, and some feeling for the Christ of the Gospels. My own parents were grazers, so how can I hate the grazers? Yet, the grazers are the enablers of Satan. Without their fear of being cast out of the liberals' synagogue into the plague-ridden ground of Christian Europe, the devil could not isolate and destroy the Christian remnant. There is no Christian communion because those in the 'Christian' community of grazers are afraid of the liberals who, like a perverse Satanic sower, are busily seeking out the 'bad seeds,' the men and women with hearts of flesh, so that those 'bad seeds' can be destroyed.

The courage exhibited by the man born blind, the moral courage to defy the Pharisees, came from a man who was touched to the heart by Jesus Christ. If we have no heart that can be touched by anything stemming from the European people who made Christ the center of their culture, we will never rid ourselves of the liberal plague. It will gradually consume us by killing our bodies and defiling our souls. What is to be done when the people who once saw a great light allow the devil to

kill the living well-spring of life, the human heart? There is only one thing that can be done. We can keep that well-spring alive by giving Him, our Lord and Savior, and them, the antique Europeans, our love and our loyalty. Christina Rossetti, that wonderful Christian poet, speaks to us from the other side, the “good ground,” of the divide between old Europe and new Europe: “Yet what I can I give Him: give my heart.” In order to live in Christina Rossetti’s Europe, we must have hearts of flesh. His grace still works through those “mysterious human relationships,” our love of our kith and kin, which Thomas Hughes writes about. Sisyphus could not push that rock up the hill within the confines of pagan Greece. We can, if we allow the dear Christ to once again enter our hearts. Simple prayers are best: Please God, give me the heart to love Thee in and through thy people. In Christ’s name, Amen. +

---

## **The Fear of the Devil and his Minions - February 15, 2020**

Hell is empty and all the devils are here. –*The Tempest* by Shakespeare

---

There is a courageous wisdom: there is also a false reptile prudence, the result not of caution but of fear. Under misfortunes it often happens that the nerves of the understanding are so relaxed, the pressing peril of the hour so completely confounds all the faculties, that no future danger can be properly provided for, can be justly estimated, can be so much as fully seen. The eye of the mind is dazzled and vanquished. An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will. This short plan of policy is the only counsel which will obtain a hearing. We plunge into a dark gulph with all the rash precipitation of fear. The nature of courage is, without a question, to be conversant with danger: but in the palpable night of their terrors, men under consternation suppose, not that it is the danger, which, by a sure instinct, calls out the courage to resist it, but that it is the courage which produces the danger. They therefore seek for a refuge from their fears in the fears themselves, and consider a temporizing meanness as the only source of safety. –*Letters on a Regicide Peace* by Edmund Burke

---

Herman Melville once wrote that, “No utter surprise can come to him who reaches Shakespeare’s core – All that we seek and shun is there – Man’s final lore.” But apparently the conservative-liberals see no need to look to the Bard of Avon when they need to come to some understanding of their mad-dog liberal cousins. Recently I saw one of those pretty, female newscasters on the Fox News Network ask her audience why mad-dog liberals such as Nancy Pelosi and her cohorts were being so historically uncivil to the President of the United States. Is she serious? Has she no understanding of the nature of evil? When you make the break from God, the one true God, there is no going back. You must push that break to its ultimate conclusion: the worship of Satan and the annihilation of all things human. Shakespeare, in *Macbeth*, shows us the end result of the liberals’ break with God, and he shows us the only way we can deal with liberals who have made that break with God. *Macbeth* loves his wife, who has made Satan her soulmate, outside of God’s love, and as a result he becomes a bloody tyrant who is wedded, through his wife, to Satan. Ultimately Lady *Macbeth* self-destructs, and *Macbeth* is slain on the field of battle by a man who doesn’t believe that evil can be vanquished by civility.

The mad-dog liberals understand that there is a war going on between the liberals, the unmen and unwomen committed to the rule of Satan, and the European remnant who still remain connected to Christ’s Europe and the values stemming from that Europe. The conservative-liberals of Fox News and the alternative news sites do not understand that there is a war going on. They refuse to understand that obvious reality because they do not want to give up their faith in democracy as a panacea for all the problems of life. You can’t vote evil out of existence; that is what the conservative-liberals refuse to come to terms with. They keep calling for more civility and more democracy when what is necessary, what is imperative, is that we respond to the liberals’ attack on all things humane and Christian with the same will and passion in defense of Him and His people as the liberals have shown in defense of their satanic faith. The violent and passionate shall bear it away. Why do we meet the liberals’ incivility with the imbecilic fudge of democratic civility? And why do we greet their calls for a war of extermination with Emersonian platitudes about toleration and democracy?

If there are no Shakespearean depths to life, if Ralph Waldo was right that superficiality is truth, then we needn’t take the liberals’ assault on God through their assault on the white race as a serious matter, because if there is no depth to life, then there is no God who dwells in the depths of the human heart. (1) If the human heart is as superficial as the liberals tell us, then good and evil are mere artificial constructs that can be manipulated according to the whims of Emersonian minds. But if Shakespeare is right, if there is good and evil, if a man can choose between heaven or hell, then it is not prudent to respond to the passionate hatred of the minions of Satan with a tepid faith in superficial platitudes about democracy and civility.

If we leave aside the scholastics’ disputes over God’s grace and man’s free will and simply state that everything good stems from the grace of God and man’s free will response to God’s grace, we can proceed with the defense of the entity which the theologians tell us was an impossibility, namely, Christian Europe. That entity was a magnificent tapestry woven by the hand of God, using His people as the strands in the tapestry. It has been and remains Satan’s task to unweave the tapestry of Christian Europe one strand at a time until there is nothing left of Christian Europe. The conservative-liberals,

represented by the previously mentioned newscaster who wanted to know why liberals were so uncivil, are people who want some of the strands of the Christian European tapestry to stay in place, strands such as civility, but they no longer want many of the other Christian strands, such as the patriarchal family, to remain in the tapestry. That cannot be. It is a case of all or nothing. If you don't defend the entire European tapestry, which is held together by a non-fusionist faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ, you will eventually witness the destruction of every single strand of the European tapestry.

Bernie Sanders, the freeze-dried hippie, was right when he held up Denmark as a model for all nations, but only if he was talking about the Denmark of the 1950s. The Danes at that time were a white, ethnically homogeneous people who had not yet taken their Christian tapestry completely apart. But now, some 70 years later, they have nothing left. Where there once was a beautiful tapestry, there now is a liberal-Islamic hellhole. The true conservative must be a counter-revolutionary: he must commit to the arduous task of reasserting the truth of Christ crucified, Christ risen, and then he must re-strand the fabric of his nation in accordance with that new-old faith. A vague belief in an ecumenical God, civility, and diversity will not suffice. Quite the contrary – we must believe in the Christ, who is the beginning and the end, the first and the last, not in an ecumenical Mr. Softie, and we must not treat Satan's minions with civility nor should we abandon white pietas in order to become racially diverse. We should be a non-diverse people with a diversity of gifts which we place at the service of the one true God.

From a Christian perspective, it is quite apparent – transparently apparent – that the liberals have totally given themselves over to the devil. Yet the 'conservatives' fail to see that the liberals are possessed by the devil. And in point of fact nothing will get you dismissed from the public debate quicker than an assertion that in dealing with liberals we are dealing with Satan. Ionesco's rhinoceros in the bedroom can only be seen by those who are 'stupid' enough to believe, quite literally, in the devil and the devil's Divine Antagonist. And that really is the key. Intellectual pride was slyly woven into the Christian European tapestry under the guise of 'knowledge of God.' That strand became the pretext for the removal of every single Christian strand of the tapestry. And once those Christian strands were replaced, once the patriarchal family was replaced by the worship of Cybele, once the code of chivalry was replaced by the law of the survival of the cruelest, and once that "charity of honor" was replaced by the merciless cruelty of democratic Jacobinism, then the 'pride of intellect' strand, disguised as the 'knowledge of God' strand, stood out in all its satanic splendor, surrounded by all the other supporting strands of a new satanic tapestry. The new tapestry is now complete. That other tapestry is only a memory, a memory that the liberals must attack whenever anyone dares to bring it up by advocating the restoration of even just one strand of that old European tapestry.

The reason Trump is hated by the liberals more than any Republican president has ever been hated before is because he is serious about removing the 'legalized abortion' strand from the liberals' tapestry. He won't succeed because it is necessary to first remove the 'pride of intellect' strand before any of the Christian strands can be rewoven back into the European tapestry, but the liberals still must oppose, with satanic fury, any and all attempts to regress to any of the customs, manners, and laws stemming from Christian Europe. Trump's dilemma is the dilemma of all the democratically elected officials who do not accept all of the premises of liberalism. They will be crucified because the liberals will have all or nothing: they will not rest from satanic strife until they have made Satan's law the only law on the face of the earth. They want war, a war without mercy, a war that will end with the victory of liberalism and the defeat of incarnate Europe. That is what liberalism is all about. We can't be civil with warmongering liberals nor can we look to the democratic process, a process created by Satan, to save us from the slings and arrows of the liberals who want our blood, just as Dracula wants the blood of his victims. The pestilence that has enveloped Europe is the pestilence of liberalism unchecked and unchallenged by white Christians.

In his *Letters on a Regicide Peace*, Burke observes that as the evil of the Jacobins became more apparent, the Europeans' reaction to that evil became less intense. Familiarity brought acceptance. That is the great danger of mistaking tolerance of evil with forbearance and charity. It is Christian to forbear and forgive those who trespass against us, but is cowardly and unchristian – it goes against that charity of honor – to be tolerant of merciless inhuman cruelty and blasphemy. The people of Europe do not see liberalism for what it is because their spiritual nerve endings are dead. First they tolerated liberalism, then they accepted it as the truth and the way. We have institutionalized the hatred of the white race, sodomy, abortion, and negro worship all in the name of tolerance and democratic civility. There are many people, perhaps a majority, who do not like one or more of the institutionalized evils of liberalism. My parents, for instance, were 1950s liberals who were uncomfortable with the legalization of homosexual marriage. But they had to accept it because it had become part of the liberals' democratic imperative. Their rejection of homosexual marriage would have necessitated the rejection of democracy and the rights of man. And where would we be without the rights of man? We would be right back with the Dream of the Rood and that would be wrong... Why would it be wrong? When the Moslems went on a rape fest on New Year's Eve in Cologne, Germany three years ago, a Danish female journalist asked, after the riot, "Where were the men, why didn't they do something?" Then she went on to say, however, that she didn't want to go back to the bad old days when women were confined, horrors of horrors, to the kitchen and the hearth fire, but she did want males to act like males when Moslems assaulted women. Life doesn't work that way. "Life is earnest, life is real," you can't breed men who will fight for the values of Christian Europe when you have institutionalized all the values opposed to His reign of charity.

In the end it all comes back to the words of St. Paul: “Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.” It is the knights of charity who can see the true God above the hell of liberalism. If we have no such knights left to us, we are indeed lost. The vision of His love only seems lost because we are afraid to rip that satanic strand, the strand of intellectual pride, from the tapestry of liberalism. Once we conquer that fear, we will have conquered, through the grace of God, Satan and his minions. ‘Tis a consummation most devoutly to be wished. We can tear the liberals’ tapestry asunder. +

---

(1) For, in the mysteries of Mercy, the one fore-knowing Spirit  
Outstrippeth reason’s halting choice, and winneth men to Him  
Who shall sound the depths? Who shall reach the heights?

-Martin Farquhar Tupper

---

## **The Liberals’ Utopian Hell - February 8, 2020**

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. –Letters on a Regicide Peace by Edmund Burke

---

All of the nations of Europe have been under the thrall of utopian ‘ideals’ since the original utopian state, the United States of America, reared its reptilian head in 1788. Most of the European nations prior to the 21st century, with the exception of Russia, rejected Robespierre’s ‘Utopia Now’ model of massive bloody purges, in favor of the American utopian model of a gradual purging of the non-illuminated white people who were not fit for utopia. (1) In an ironic twist we have seen, in the 21st century, a shift toward Robespierre’s model of utopia in the Western European nations while the Russians and many of the other formerly communist nations have shifted to the old American model of utopia. But the dominant theme in the European nations in the 20th and 21st centuries (in France and the U.S. it was the dominant theme since the 1700s) has been utopia.

The one essential in utopia is the illuminated mind, free from the prejudices and superstitions of the past. The ‘myth’ of the golden age in which the past is idealized is a pre-Christian ideal of the pagans. Plato is the one exception to the pagans, because the pagan Greek philosopher was ‘advanced’ in his philosophy: he was imbued with a pride of science that scorned the past before the Christian theologians made it their *raison d’être*.

The secular, totalitarian utopias of the modern era were made possible by the utopian thinking of the Christian theologians in the ranks of the clergy and the illuminated members of the laity. What seems obvious to the non-enlightened laymen such as I — namely that utopian states which always exclude the Christian God and institute laws violating the values stemming from a faith in Jesus Christ are not the type of incorporate unions that I or any other Christian should support — is not obvious to the ‘enlightened’ Christians, both clerical and lay. Let Hilaire Belloc speak for the entire pack of Christian utopians. He maintained to his dying day that the French Revolution was a necessary purging of the insufficiently Christian monarchy of France. He justified his monstrous, blasphemous credo by pointing out the imperfections of the Christian Frenchman of the 1700s. That is the great advantage the utopians have over every non-utopian regime: There are always major imperfections in a reality-based government, because human beings are imperfect. But a utopian government, which is always in the future, has no imperfections since a utopian nation does not consist of actual human beings; it consists of fantasy human beings who are born, as Athena was born from the brain of Zeus, from the illuminated brains of the utopian thinkers. The utopians have a perfect record, because their utopia is always in the future where the imperfections of the past will be eliminated.

What happens when the utopians come to power? Why are they not held accountable for the imperfections of their utopias when the imperfections become apparent? Why, for instance, did Belloc support Robespierre’s purges despite the fact that he killed good Christians as well as ‘bad’ Christians? Why wasn’t Robespierre’s regime of terror and the regimes of the utopian regicides that followed in his utopian train condemned for their sins as the Christian aristocrats who went to the guillotine were condemned? The answer lies in the illuminated minds of the utopians. They have no humanity themselves, so they do not think that the elimination of imperfect, non-illuminated human beings is wrong. Everything is lawful if it contributes to the construction of the perfect world of the future. But the perfect worlds are always built on the slaughtered bodies of actual flesh and blood human beings, in the name of an abstract ‘humanity’ of the future. How can

the inhumane, the men without human hearts, build a perfect, humane world? They can't. They can only build Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. (2)

The 'sins' of the non-utopian people of the past and the idea of the 'transition period' keep the utopians' kingdoms of hell on earth in order. Robespierre was an anti-capital punishment zealot before he came to power, and he remained an anti-capital punishment zealot when he was in power. But it was necessary to purge the impure, the French aristocrats, before the perfect France, a France where capital punishment was unnecessary, could be built. So it goes with all the utopias of the European nations – the liberals told us that abortion had to be legal until we had a nation where abortion was unnecessary, because enlightened human beings, human beings devoid of the prejudices of their Christian past, would use the proper birth control. And every atrocity that is possible to be visited upon a people can and should be permitted in South Africa if the atrocities are committed against the sinful, 'racist' whites. No matter that their 'sinful' world was a heaven for black and whites compared to modern South Africa. No, they were racists and impure, therefore we must allow the new black rulers their transition period. But such transition periods are not temporary, they represent the incarnation of Satan into the body politic of formerly Christian nations. Utopian states will not become something other than what they are until white Christians repudiate utopian thinking and return to their Christian past with a determination to take that past into the future.

All utopian thinking, with the exception of Plato, has its origins, whether the utopians are aware of it or not, in Christ's injunction to, "Be ye perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect." (Matthew 5:48) But there is a very big difference, the difference between heaven and hell, in looking at your own sins with the eyes of the heart in order to live the life that our Savior wants us to live, and looking at the sins of others with an illuminated mind in order to condemn those others, the original sinners of the past, so that you can proceed to build a future devoid of all non-illuminated humans. The 'illuminated' thinking is the product of the inhumane minds of post-Christian liberals. John Paul II was fond of apologizing, not for his own sins, but for the sins of the European Christians of the past. His apologies dovetailed with the secular liberals' condemnations of all things European and Christian. How can a Christian leader support the purveyors of a 'utopian' hell on earth? It's easy, if you make the Christ story into an illuminated philosophy. Then you can be one with the secular Illuminati of Liberalism while still holding a position in organized Christian Jewry.

When the European people took Christ into their hearts and placed Him at the center of their culture, it almost seemed, if you looked at their culture through and not with the eye, that they were a race of people completely distinct and separate from the heathens of color. And now? The European people seem to be a race of people completely separate and distinct from the Christian Europeans, and they also still seem to be a race of people completely separate and distinct from the heathens of color, but no longer separate and distinct for the same reason as the Christian Europeans.

The modern Europeans have taken utopian thinking, which is nothing less than a denial of the sovereignty of God, into their souls, and as a consequence they do not have, for all practical purposes, any soul left to call their own. They have only their illuminated minds to rely upon. And their illuminated minds are at the mercy of Satan, who cannot defeat the heart connected to our Lord but who can easily defeat men and women who have traded their hearts of flesh for illuminated minds. The 'purge' mentality of the modern liberals is the result of utopian thinking that has no room for individual human beings. The slaughter of the white people will continue so long as there is no Christian reaction against the utopian thinking of the liberals, the conservatives, and the neo-pagans.

Must we then become unenlightened? Must we become prejudiced reactionaries? Yes, we must. We must become so reactionary and so prejudiced that we come to believe that charity is greater than illumination. "But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless." (Matthew 12:7) The utopian illuminati must sacrifice millions on the altars of their utopian states while the knights of charity, the antique Europeans, fought to extend His reign of charity over the entire world. To whom shall we give our allegiance and our love?

In the confrontation between Alyosha and Ivan in Dostoyevsky's *Brothers Karamazov*, we see the contrast between the utopian and the Christian. Ivan asks Alyosha if he would consent to the torture of one innocent child if a perfect world without suffering could be built upon the suffering of that one innocent child. Alyosha's reply always makes my heart soar: "No, I would not." The modern Europeans have repudiated Alyosha's Christian response to the utopian mandate of the liberals: "Yes, we do consent to the slaughter of the unborn, the enfeebled, and the non-illuminated whites if it will lead to the kingdom of God on earth." But even if such a kingdom could be built, how can it be a kingdom of God on earth? Does our God sanction the ethos of the Grand Inquisitors of Liberalism? Does He sanction the slaughter of the innocent in the name of a utopian multitude of the future?

The utopians, who are legion, whether they are 'Christian' utopians or secularized utopians, are joined in one incorporate union of hatred for the God who took flesh and dwelt among us and for the people with hearts of flesh who still feel connected to that God. Even the elect – there is always an elect – whom the utopians claim they are striving to serve, have no real value in the cold, merciless eyes of the utopian metaphysicians. Look at our modern American utopians. Trump, a

man with some humanity, a man not completely tainted with utopian ideals, has done much to improve the economic welfare of the blacks whom utopian liberals such as Nancy Pelosi claim they serve. But what has been her reaction to Trump? “Better that every single black starve to death rather than one single non-utopian note be struck on the celestial harp of liberalism.”

An abstract love is not love. The liberals hate the white race, but they also hate the colored races to the extent that the colored races exhibit any humanity, because in the end game of liberalism all that is human must be destroyed so that a perfect inhuman world can be built over the ruins of humanity. The Word made flesh gives the lie to the liberals’ world. Is this the final battle? We know neither the day nor the hour, but we do know that the liberals and all their works come from Satan. That is all we need to know in order to rise and ride against the utopians of Liberalism. +

---

(1) From 1860 to 1874, the liberals in the United States government shifted from a gradual utopian state to a Robespierre-utopian state in their attempt to eliminate the undesirable, non-utopian element in their nation, namely the white people of the South. After 1874, the liberals shifted back to a gradual, incremental attack on the white Europeans in their midst. Should there ever be an anti-utopian uprising again, the liberals stand ready to out-Robespierre Robespierre as they did once before during the Civil War and the “Reconstruction Era.”

(2) The shedding of innocent blood never bothers the utopians —

From this sleep the queen was first startled by the voice of the sentinel at her door, who cried out to her, to save herself by flight—that this was the last proof of fidelity he could give—that they were upon him, and he was dead. Instantly he was cut down. A band of cruel ruffians and assassins, reeking with his blood, rushed into the chamber of the queen, and pierced with an hundred strokes of bayonets and poniards the bed, from whence this persecuted woman had but just had time to fly almost naked, and through ways unknown to the murderers had escaped to seek refuge at the feet of a king and husband, not secure of his own life for a moment.

This king, to say no more of him, and this queen, and their infant children (who once would have been the pride and hope of a great and generous people) were then forced to abandon the sanctuary of the most splendid palace in the world, which they left swimming in blood, polluted by massacre, and strewn with scattered limbs and mutilated carcasses. Thence they were conducted into the capital of their kingdom.

Two had been selected from the unprovoked, unresisted, promiscuous slaughter, which was made of the gentlemen of birth and family who composed the king’s body guard. These two gentlemen, with all the parade of an execution of justice, were cruelly and publicly dragged to the block, and beheaded in the great court of the palace. Their heads were stuck upon spears, and led the procession; whilst the royal captives who followed in the train were slowly moved along, amidst the horrid yells, and shrilling screams, and frantic dances, and infamous contumelies, and all the unutterable abominations of the furies of hell, in the abused shape of the vilest of women. —  
Reflections on the Revolution in France by Edmund Burke

One cannot help but think of women such as Nancy Pelosi and the legions of feminist harpies that now dominate the American political scene when we read Burke’s description of “the vilest of women.” History does indeed repeat itself. Men and women, and the women even more so than the men, become in the absence of any Christian restraints the most cruel, bloody, and inhuman creatures on the face of the earth. They rival Satan in their demonism. And in that equality, they have “become as gods” — they have become like unto the demigod of evil, the archangel Satan.

---

## **Our Common Hope Is Not the Noble Savage - February 1, 2020**

May the Lord, who here on earth suffered aforetime on the cross for the sins of men, be a friend unto me; He has redeemed us and has given us life, a heavenly home.

—*The Dream of the Rood*

---

Our hearts are small and so are our affections — we cannot mourn deeply for all humanity. Only Christ can and does mourn deeply for us all. Outside my small circle of family and friends, I have mourned for those whom I felt drawn to because they in some small way, and in some cases in a large way, have supported His reign of charity here on earth. Hence I mourned for the singer Glen Campbell, who in later life became a Christian and sang many great hymns in honor of our Lord and Savior. And I mourned for Samuel Francis, Alexander Solzhenitsyn, and Andrew Lytle, because they were Europeans of the old stock. (I know Samuel Francis was not wholly in the Christian camp, but he was not hostile to Christianity as so many of the neo-pagans are.)

The people we mourn for when they pass who are outside our small circle of friends and family, define us as a people. The incredible outpouring of sympathy and ‘love’ for the basketball star Kobe Bryant by white people is a very sad commentary on the spiritual state of the European people. Obviously, you don’t dance on the grave of your enemy, but to mourn the passing of a man who opposed His reign of charity and supported the liberals’ reign of Satan is the act of a people who

have nothing left inside of them that compels them to love what is true, noble, and beautiful, namely Jesus Christ and the people who followed in His train. That void in their souls has been filled with the love of all that is ignoble, false, and morally reprehensible – the gods of Liberalism.

Men must have a religion; it is a great tragedy that our people, who once were the Christ-bearers, have now made it their *raison d'être* to elevate the sacred negro to the pinnacle of their new pantheon of gods. Do they really love the negroes? No, they don't. Love cannot be an abstraction, it must be rooted in our love of Christ. Outside of that reality, there is no love, there is only intellectual posturing. Who is served when a black athlete is elevated to the status of a beloved god? Are white people served? No, because they debase themselves and lose the vision of Him who saves. Are the individual black athletes who are worshipped being served? No, they are not, because they too need the God who saves; they cannot, by virtue of being black, save themselves or white people from sin and death. When will all this end? When will the European people return to their God and reject the false gods of Liberalism? Satan gives us his answer to that question. Like the Raven in Poe's poem, he sits above the chamber door of the European people and says, "Nevermore." Is Satan's word the last word?

Poe's dark vision is infinitely superior to the non-vision of the modern Europeans who worship nature and nature's gods, the noble savages of color. Poe faces life without the Redeemer, and he despairs, because he knows that without His love all those we loved on this earth are lost to us forever.

"Prophet!" said I, "thing of evil!—prophet still, if bird or devil!—  
Whether Tempter sent, or whether tempest tossed thee here ashore,  
Desolate, yet all undaunted, on this desert land enchanted—  
On this home by Horror haunted—tell me truly, I implore—  
Is there,—is there balm in Gilead?—tell me—tell me, I implore!"  
Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

"Prophet!" said I, "thing of evil!—prophet still, if bird or devil!—  
By that Heaven that bends above us—By that God we both adore—  
Tell this soul with sorrow laden if, within the distant Aidenn,  
It shall clasp a sainted maiden whom the angels name Lenore—  
Clasp a rare and radiant maiden whom the angels name Lenore."  
Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

"Be that word our sign of parting, bird or fiend!" I shrieked, upstarting—  
"Get thee back into the tempest and the Night's Plutonian shore!  
Leave no black plume as a token of that lie thy soul hath spoken!  
Leave my loneliness unbroken!—quit the bust above my door!  
Take thy beak from out my heart, and take thy form from off my door!"  
Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

And the Raven, never flitting, still is sitting, still is sitting  
On the pallid bust of Pallas just above my chamber door;  
And his eyes have all the seeming of a demon's that is dreaming,  
And the lamplight o'er him streaming throws his shadow on the floor;  
And my soul from out that shadow that lies floating on the floor  
Shall be lifted—nevermore!

"The Raven"

Why is Poe's vision of despair superior to the modern Europeans' vision of celestial liberalism? Because Poe's vision faces the tragedy of death. From the depths of despair we can find the Redeemer. We can, in the depths of our soul, find the God who is the "grave where buried love doth live." But if we embrace superficiality, the superficiality of a naturalized vision of death, which tells us that man is a piece of vegetable matter who returns to nature, then we will indeed be lost. Satan's "Nevermore" will remain enshrined on our chamber door, and we will just yawn and continue to worship at the altars provided for us by our liberal overlords, the purveyors of a superficial faith in this world only.

In a speech at one of the Democratic Party presidential conventions several elections ago, Senator Bill Bradley said that the essence of America was that the American people refused to accept the tragedy of life. Americans believed, Bradley claimed, that tragedy could be overcome by democracy. Is that so? Can the ultimate tragedy, the tragedy of death, be overcome by legislation? No, of course such a tragedy cannot be overcome by legislation, but liberals of all stripes, white Americans and white Europeans, believe that they can build a world that is devoid of tragedy. How can such a belief be reconciled with the fact that we must die? Blissful happiness on this earth can't be reconciled with a soul that yearns for immortality. But the two irreconcilables, utopia and death, can be reconciled if we cease to look on man as a creature worthy of redemption and eternal life. If man is simply a by-product of nature, then it is no tragedy if he returns to the nothingness from which he came. In liberalism, the only tragedy is the tragedy of racism, sexism, and a lack of faith in the

liberals' utopia. When the last opponents of the liberals and the liberals' nature gods are eliminated, there will be no more tragedy, no more pain and suffering, there will only be natural creatures bent in reverence and homage to nature and nature's gods.

You cannot change the reality of the existence of Jesus Christ as true God and true man by denying His existence. But you can change the lives of the men and women of Europe by altering their vision of the one true God. The European people's belief in Christ crucified, Christ risen, has been destroyed by a philosophical blending process. Christ went from the status of the one true God above the natural world to that of a God who was the sum of the parts of the natural world. Then He was demoted to the status of a lesser God among the nature gods. That is why it is now possible for white Europeans to intellectually affirm their faith in Jesus Christ while giving their hearts to the greater gods, the noble savages of color. "What I can, I give Him, give Him my heart," has become, "What I can, I give them (the gods of color), give them my heart." But of course the heart must be dehumanized in order to become attuned to the gods of color. The cauterized heart, the heart that is a slave to superficiality of liberalism, is the building block for Satan's kingdom of hell on earth.

If we place the 'Dream of the Rood' Europeans, who are my people, up against the modern Europeans, we can see why modern Europe has been plunged into darkness while old Europe contained the Light that shineth in darkness. The 'Dream of the Rood' people followed St. Paul's injunction to circumcise their hearts: "Now with zeal we must search our breasts shrewdly, the vices within, with the eyes of the heart. With the other eyes, the jewels of the head, we cannot at all see through the spirit of the thought, whether good or evil dwells beneath, so that it may be pleasing unto God at the dread time." The theologians who believed that the wisdom of men was wiser than the folly of God cauterized the hearts of the European people so that their minds could be more receptive to God. But God comes to human hearts, hearts that have been circumcised; He cannot enter the heart that has been sealed by the surgeons of liberalism. The cauterized heart cannot see — it has lost its depth, and as a consequence it only sees the abstract superficialities of the godded men of reason. When the godded men say the negro is sacred and must be worshipped, the white grazers, the men and women whose hearts are dead, say, "Amen, blessed be the sacred negro."

Liberal-conservatives in the 1960s started referring to their mad-dog liberal cousins as 'bleeding heart' liberals. Nothing could be further from the truth. The essence of liberalism is represented by the heart that does not bleed. The liberals have taken the circumcised heart that is open to Christ and His people and closed it in order to infuse all mankind with their inhuman ideology of a perfect world of inhuman vegetables. The heart that truly loves responds to Christ's divine love by loving Him in and through other human hearts of flesh. The liberal heart, which no longer bleeds because its blood has congealed, only responds to abstract theories of life because it is governed by the superficialities of the men of ideology. The false sentimentality of the hallmark greeting cards is all that the liberal world can provide for the white grazers. When they mourn, they mourn for whomever the liberal Jacobins tell them is worthy. And when they rejoice, they rejoice for whatever cause or holiday the liberals deem worthy to celebrate. The absence of a genuine inner life, a life of the spirit, is the distinguishing mark of the modern Europeans; they have no genuine feelings that they can call their own, their sorrow and their joy is second-hand.

Poe, like the author of the *Dream of the Rood*, faces the black despair of death. But unlike the author of the *Dream of the Rood*, Poe does not see past death to the Beatific Vision. What prevented Poe from seeing that the God whom he professed was the "God we both adore" could turn the defeat of death into victory? I would suggest it was the non-poetical side of Poe's nature that prevented him from seeing through the eye to the Savior rather than with the eye to a vision of hell. Poe was a mathematical genius as well as a poetical genius. And the weakness of his poetry is that it was too mathematical. If existence is nothing but math, as the Raven above the chamber door tells us, then we must embrace the superficiality of the 'cauterized heart' culture of the modern Europeans or else we must commit suicide. Those are the two alternatives open to us in modern Europe. It is my contention, and it is a contention that did not originate with me, that there is a third alternative. There is the *Dream of the Rood* that our European progenitors adhered to just as Posthumus Leonatus, the hero of Shakespeare's *Cymbeline* adheres to the heavenly dream that he sees with the inner eye of the circumcised heart:

'Tis still a dream, or else such stuff as madmen  
Tongue and brain not; either both or nothing;  
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such  
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,  
The action of my life is like it, which  
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

The constant mathematical refrain of "Nevermore" did not originate with Poe. It originated with Shakespeare. King Lear, in the face of the death of his beloved daughter Cordelia, says:

And my poor fool is hang'd! No, no, no life!  
Why should a dog, a horse, a rat, have life,  
And thou no breath at all? Thou'lt come no more,



Never, never, never, never, never!  
Pray you, undo this button. Thank you, sir.  
Do you see this? Look on her, look, her lips,  
Look there, look there!

But at the end of *King Lear*, unlike at the end of “The Raven,” we do not despair, because in Shakespeare’s *King Lear* we get an overwhelming sense of a spiritual presence, a divinely human person who died on a cross, who has redeemed us from sin and death. It was not a misreading of Lear when Ernest Hemingway said that whenever he wanted to be cheered up, he read *King Lear*. We come to the beatific vision through the cross of Christ. If we recapture a true tragic sense of life, we will come to believe in the God-Man who is “the grave where buried love doth live.” That is the European vision, the vision of the people who circumcised their hearts and let the dear Christ enter in. +

---

### **The False Gods of Liberalism - January 25, 2020**

For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect. But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things. – Mark 13: 22-23

---

Another Martin Luther King Jr. day has come and gone, but the liberals have vowed, and they always keep their vow, to keep Martin Luther King Jr. in their hearts all 365 days of the year. Since that special day comes almost right after Christmas, we can get a very good idea of how the God-Man, Jesus Christ, fares in Liberalism. The most noticeable difference between the MLK holiday and Christmas is that the liberals, who are not comfortable with the term ‘Christmas’ because they do not want Christ mentioned by name, are very comfortable mentioning the name of Martin Luther King Jr. on his special day. In fact, they revel in the sacred name of Martin Luther King Jr. What should we think of a people who exalt a person such as Martin Luther King Jr. to a god-like status far above the status of Jesus Christ? And what should we think of the church-going whites who theoretically claim to believe that Christ was the Son of God, who accept the deification of Martin Luther King Jr.? I know what I think of them. I think the liberals are desouled unmen devoid of all humanity, and the church-going grazers are Ganelons who court the favor of the wicked, because they are too cowardly to stand with the few against the many.

There is no doubt that some of the Christian missionaries in Africa, men such as Edmund Hodgson, who was tortured and slaughtered by the Baluba for daring to preach Christ crucified, Christ risen to black Africans, were well-intentioned. But there is also no doubt that the missionaries, such as Dr. Livingstone, who went to Africa suffering from an Atticus Finch syndrome, turned from Christian missionaries into the devotees of the noble black savage. Their spiritual descent into darkness represented the spiritual descent of the European people.

The worship of the noble black savage is the main pillar of the liberals’ new religion. By elevating noble black savages such as Martin Luther King Jr. to divine status, the liberals are able to give a religious sanction to their brave new world, devoid of all things white and Christian. The European people could not go back to the paganism of the colored races or the paganism of their own people before the Christian era; something had happened to the European people that made a return to pure paganism impossible. That something was, of course, their conversion, as a people, to a faith in Jesus Christ as true God and true man. There is no going back once that acceptance has been made. What can be done, however, has been done. The Europeans have become pagans of the future; they have made for themselves a new paganism that has an unholy trinity, which is the new religion in the celestial, pagan future of the liberals. The new savior in the new trinity, the sacred negro, must be upheld against all the forces of hell, consisting of white Christians, in order to maintain the thrones and altars of Liberalism. Legalized abortion, feminism, and all the other institutionalized evils of our modern world are maintained by the people’s faith in the noble black savage.

A people without faith perishes. That is why the liberals’ have absorbed the grazers in the formerly Christian churches. They gave the grazers a new unholy trinity – reason, the noble black savage, and science. That is the liberals’ satanic equivalent of the Holy Trinity. The new Christless faith could not have triumphed over the old faith without the ‘good offices’ of the godded men in the ranks of the Christian intelligentsia. They condemned the human ties that connect us to the Savior and told us that we could only find God through their illuminated minds. But their illumination left us without the heart that loves. In the absence of that affective organ of sight, the European people made a descent into darkness. Chateaubriand’s description of man’s first fall describes the Europeans’ second fall from grace:

Observe, too, what is very important : man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tainted with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to undertake so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not

with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that overpowered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks.

–*The Genius of Christianity: or, The Spirit and Beauty of the Christian Religion*

The “ray of light” that overpowers us comes from Satan, who bids us illuminate our minds so that we can be as God. That other light, the Light that shineth in darkness, comes from the God who enters human hearts. Why do we study God instead of seeking Him by searching the scriptures with our heart as St. Paul enjoined us to do? I saw this destruction by illumination applied to the European poets when I studied literature in college. You must read an author’s works with your heart if you want to see his vision. If you want to put him in a laboratory and study him, you approach his work with an illuminated mind. Neither man nor God can be known by way of the mind divorced from the heart. There was too little care taken in our church-based universities, which all became secularized citadels of the devil, of the sin of pride. By seeking illuminated knowledge rather than affective knowledge, the European people became like unto the demonic angel Satan, and they lost their connection to the Son of God.

If a man wants to be one with the liberals and keep one foot in the Christless Christian church of his choice, he can do so by embracing cosmic Christianity, which allows for a vague, nondescript God who serves as a prop for the liberals’ gods. But such a man can never go to the depths of his own soul for comfort, because there is nothing there; he has given his soul to the devil through the mediation of the liberals, who have built Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth through the unholy trinity that is maintained and perpetuated by such festivals as the Martin Luther King Jr. holiday.

It is clear that the European grazers have placed their hopes in the new paganized utopia of the liberals, which is sustained by the new savior, the sacred negro. Why have they given their assent to the “cold malignity” of the liberal metaphysicians? What did they have to lose? Old Europe was built on the European people’s Dream of the Rood. They were the people who took the living God into their hearts. If that heartfelt vision, that *Dream of the Rood*, is condemned by the great ‘Christian’ theologians, then the Christian people will seek new gods. Look to our universities if you wish to see the new paganization embodied. They have become so imbued with the spirit of Satan that it is no longer possible for Satan to distinguish between the universities and his kingdom of hell in hell. As he prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls, he often does a double-take when he visits the local colleges – “Wait a minute, am I in my hell below, or in the new hell on earth? I can’t see any difference!”

Education is the key; we all must be educated. First the clergy told us that we must be educated before we could know God. Then the universities, founded by clergymen, told us we must be educated so that we wouldn’t fall prey to prejudice and superstition – the prejudice of love for our kith and kin, and the superstition of faith, faith in the Christ of old Europe. So long as we worship education, we will worship the liberals’ unholy trinity. I vividly remember a committed pro-lifer complaining to me while we were on the picket lines that his nephew was going to work at a blue collar job and get married rather than go to college. “Why is that bad?” I asked him. “Because you must get an education,” was his reply. Yes, we all must be educated. We must be educated to hate everything white and Christian. Every poll ever taken indicates that the ‘educated’ people are liberals. Why then do professed Christians continue to support education? Was Christ wrong when he chose non-educated men to be His disciples? Was St. Paul just being whimsical when he said that the folly of God was wiser than the wisdom of men? Was Christ Himself an idiot? Yes, He was, at least according to the dictates of liberalism, the liberalism that the European people have embraced.

The sign of contradiction to the liberals, and the man who puts the coward’s name on the modern Europeans, is the man born blind who was healed by that ‘idiot,’ our divine Lord and Savior. The man born blind defies the educated ones, the scribes and Pharisees, because he loves the man who gave him his sight. And when Christ tells him who He is, the man born blind falls to his knees and worships Him. We have come a long way from, “Yes, we’ll gather at the river... that flows by the throne of God,” to its opposite: “Yes, we’ll gather at the university... that encompasses the center of hell.”

The liberals have, in the name of education, extended their control over the Europeans so that they now have no real opposition left. Their hysteria over Trump is the hysteria of a fanatical cleaning freak who finds one tiny spot on her kitchen floor. All the roads in the modern European nations lead to Liberaldom, because all the major roads of Europe have been constructed according to the theories of the educated men in church and state. No matter what road the wandering European takes, he ends up in Liberaldom.

The liberals are Shylock: they cannot be converted:

You may as well go stand upon the beach  
And bid the main flood bate his usual height;

You may as well use question with the wolf,  
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;  
You may as well forbid the mountain pines  
To wag their high tops and to make no noise  
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;  
You may as well do any thing most hard  
As seek to soften that—than which what's harder?—  
His Jewish heart.

-*The Merchant of Venice*

And the white grazers are the parents of the man born blind; they will not stand with the Christian Europeans, because they are afraid of being cast out of the liberals' synagogue, which provides them with all the 'comforts' of life: a personal savior, who is the sacred negro, a promise of economic prosperity, and wonderful diversions such as Stupor Bowls and Twitter.

Is this the promised end or image of that horror? The liberals have had over one hundred years of dominance, yet, they still tell us that they need more time in order to build their kingdom of heaven on hearth. No, they have had enough time. This is their world. They have built the kingdom of hell on earth. Is this, our modern Europe, the apex of civilization? If this un-civilization is our final destiny, then we are of all men most to be pitied, because the men and women of modern Europe have no humanity; they have become formless, soulless pieces of inert matter. We need all of our faith to believe that there once was a European Narnia. The dead are not dead, they speak to us from across that seemingly impassable divide. They speak to us of a land of pure delight, presided over by the Man of Sorrows who gave the man born blind his sight and who will, if we see with our hearts, give us the faith, hope, and charity to transcend this world of un-men and see the God of our people: "Lord, I believe. And he worshipped Him." +

---

## **Our History is a Fairy Tale - January 18, 2020**

"Will you wear the armour that I bring you, for unless you do you will never succeed in the enterprise, nor kill the horrible monster of Evil? The armour is not new, it is scratched and dented with many a hard-fought battle, but if you wear it rightly no armour that ever was made will serve you so well."

-Lady Una's appeal to the Red Cross Knight, from *The Faerie Queene* by Edmund Spenser

---

I do not think, although I could not swear to it, that a week has ever gone by in the United States, and quite possibly in Europe as well, in which there has not been some sort of televised documentary on the life of Adolph Hitler. And in addition to the television documentaries there are enough biographies of Adolph Hitler to fill a huge wing of a vast library. We grant that Hitler was a significant historical figure during the 1930s and 1940s; however, this still doesn't explain the extraordinary amount of attention he continues to receive from the liberals. So we must ask the question – why are the liberals, after all these years since his death, still so obsessed with Hitler? Let us first dismiss the oft-stated liberal assertion that Hitler was some sort of supernaturally evil being, the likes of which the world had never seen before. Certainly, he was a vicious tyrant and a mass murderer, but the world had seen mass murderers and vicious tyrants before the advent of Adolph Hitler. And Hitler was not the worst of the mass murderers and vicious tyrants of the 20th century. He did not come anywhere close to Stalin, Mao Tse Tung, or the abortion doctors of the European nations. So the question remains: Why has Hitler been demonized by the liberals? The liberals have shunned and demonized Hitler for the same reason that Ivan Karamazov shunned and demonized Smerdyakov. Smerdyakov was the intellectual demon child of Ivan, who was acting on the intellectual premise of Ivan Karamazov's atheism: Everything is lawful if there be no God. And Hitler was the demon child of the liberals. He believed, as all liberals believe, that man is part of nature, nature as defined by science.

The meaning of the word 'natural' changed as the European people became more and more enamored and enslaved by the scientific view of life. In Walter Scott's Europe, what was natural to man were his spiritual connections to his fellow men and his God. Man's biological nature was merely the outer garment of his true spiritual substance underneath. But in modern Europe the outer biological garment became all in all. And if mere biological nature is all in all, then whatever is natural, as defined by science, is justifiable and meritorious. Hitler justified his cruelties by referring to the cruelty of nature, just as our modern liberals justify their 'family planning' by way of abortion by referencing nature as defined by science. Isn't motherhood more natural than the violent termination of the natural process? No, not if nature is devoid of the spirit of God, who created the natural world. Motherhood is of the spirit – that is what the Christian asserts. If there is no animating spirit in nature, then what is natural is what is cruel and merciless: We are all laboratory rats subject to the whims of the men and women in the white laboratory coats. That child must die, that child can live. That race, the white

race, must die out, and that other race, the black race, must be perpetuated. Why? Because science, the abstract science of the liberals, must be all in all. So it is written, so it shall be.

Internecine wars between liberals are the most deadly wars of all, because neither side sees human beings as anything more than biological collectives. And biological collectives have no real value. It is only the Christian who sees God in history rather than God in nature, who values individual human beings. We have gotten so far away from the God who entered human history that we cannot even imagine a time when the European people saw themselves as God's people, separate from the world of the natural sciences.

When Hamlet rebuked Rosencrantz and Guildenstern for trying to play upon him like a pipe, and when Dostoyevsky's Underground Man said that, "A man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key," they were asserting the European vision of existence, asserting their place in the Christ story. Our Lord took great pains to establish that His world was not the natural, mathematical world of  $2 + 2 = 4$ . Do you recall what He said in Mark chapter eight? After He warns His disciples to "beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the leaven of Herod," and they think that He is talking about eating bread, He asks them why they still do not understand Him.

And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened? Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember? When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven. And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

There is something in existence that is more than math. Christ was and is that something.

If I could paint like Gustave Dore I would paint a picture of liberalism as the kingdom of hell. And within that kingdom, the worshippers of Baal, the men and women of science, would be fighting eternally for supremacy in hell. The most depressing thing about the alternative news sites on the internet is that they offer us no Christian alternative to the hell of liberalism. The followers of Mithra, the neo-pagans, are forever attacking the followers of Cybele, who most certainly have the upper hand at present, but within that internecine warfare, there is no Christian presence. Mussolini, who started out as a communist and then shifted to fascism because, "Communism has no virility," embodied the two different sides, feminine and masculine, of the same pagan coin.

Time flies even when you're not having fun. It seems like yesterday, but when I count the years it was about thirty years ago that I had a series of conversations with a "hard science" conservative. "The whole problem in modern America," the hard science man maintained, "Is that there is too much emphasis on liberal arts and not enough emphasis on the hard sciences." The hard science man then went on an anti-liberal arts tirade, reminiscent of Thomas Gradgrind's apologia for "facts" in Charles Dickens' *Hard Times*.

Since the hard science man was my elder, I was respectful to him, but I made it clear that I was not in agreement with him. "The problem is not that we have too much of liberal arts and not enough of hard science, the problem is that science has encroached upon the liberal arts to the extent that we no longer have liberal arts in any of our universities. Our liberal arts, especially our literature, has become part of the science departments. Our poets are only read, when they are read at all, through the prism of the 'sciences' of psychology, sociology, and anthropology."

"What subject do you teach?"

"Literature."

"Ah ha, no wonder you hate the hard sciences."

"I don't hate the hard sciences, I just think they should stay where they belong. If we take science with us when we commune with God or with our fellow men, then we will destroy our God and our fellow men."

It was all to no avail; the hard science man went off into the night railing against the humanities and extolling the beauty and wonder of the "hard sciences." AS he wandered off, I thought not only of Thomas Gradgrind, I also remembered that Russell Kirk had written a letter during World War II to a hard science man who had recommended we dispense with the humanities for the duration of the war. Kirk wrote that if we did that we might as well join the enemy rather than fight them. I think Kirk was a little too late with his warning; the major reason for World War II was that science had already absorbed the humanities.

The pride of science, which is the original sin, was and is part of our fallen nature. But that sin, that original sin, gained an institutionalized position in the European world when Scholasticism, the scientific study of God, became the truth and the way in the Catholic and Protestant churches. Our modern European hell on earth is the final outcome of the internecine quarrels between the Platonists and the Aristotelians, the Thomists and the Calvinists, and the Jungians and the Freudians. The devil smiles and bids us choose one of the combatants over the other. But all scientized theologies lead to hell, because studies of God always become studies of the God-in-nature rather than God in our history. Our God is the fairy tale God, who came to us in the flesh in order to assure us that we are “more than nature,” we belong in the fairy tale of God, which is the fairy tale of Christ’s birth, crucifixion and resurrection from the dead.

In Shakespeare’s *The Tempest*, an assortment of sinners are set upon a seemingly deserted island. Unbeknownst to them, they have been placed there by Prospero, a man who possesses, through the power of prayer “which pierces so that it assaults Mercy itself and frees all faults,” the ability to bend the natural world to the spiritual realities of charity and mercy. In the face of one miracle after another, one of the sinners proclaims, “And there is in this business more than nature was ever conduct of.” Yes, that is what the historical drama of the European people is all about. Our people, as distinct from all other peoples and cultures, once saw that there was something in our lives here on earth more than nature. Through the gradual scientizing of God, we have lost that connection to Christ and substituted a vague, universalist pantheism for our historical consciousness of the living God.

During the era of the medieval scholastics, who were the architects of modern liberalism, the great thinkers first lined up behind Plato because his philosophy allowed for some unknown spiritual force, whereas Aristotle, the realist, was an atheist. After Aquinas, Aristotle rather than Plato became the Christian philosophers’ light bearer, and Plato was deemed, by scholars such as Ronald Knox, to be the source of all heresies. In subsequent years, the Plato vs. Aristotle debate was continued by Jung and Freud. Jung saw a cosmic force in existence while Freud adhered to the strict atheistic line. But such controversies were all within the confines of scientific naturalism, which has no room for the God above nature. Once our minds, abstracted from the heart that loves, are focused on nature and nature’s God, the true God and true Man becomes lost in the cosmic mists. When our moral imaginations are centered on Christianity as a cosmic melting pot of religions, we come up with a superficial God unable to sustain hearts of flesh, much like the God depicted by so many of the Renaissance painters. Rembrandt was one of those superficial painters in his early years, but he became something quite different in his later years. He became a man with a deep consciousness of the Christ who entered human history, the God that can only be seen by men and women who have given Him their hearts.

The sickness unto death of the European people has come upon them because they no longer see with their hearts. Like the dwarves in C. S. Lewis’s book *The Last Battle*, the modern Europeans are not going to be taken in by a fairy story. But what if that fairy story is true? It is truly astonishing that the European people no longer care to know about the Christ of old Europe. They have moved on to a new Christianity more compatible with the natural world. Dickens’ *Haunted Man* was desolate when he lost his connection to his fellow men and his God through his desire to remove all sorrow and trouble from his life. That is not the case with the modern Europeans. They do not feel the loss of their humanity when they embrace the liberals and their promise of an earthly utopia, devoid of all sorrow and trouble and all humanity, because they have left the Christ of history, our human history, and replaced Him with the gods of inhumanity, the gods of science. Everything cruel and unnatural, unnatural from a Christian viewpoint, has the divine sanction of science in our modern un-civilization of desolation.

The devil can create a tempest — he has done just that — but he doesn’t know what the extent of its damage will be, because he doesn’t know if there are any Europeans left on earth who will be willing to stand in the face of the tempest. When we take His love personally, when our hearts comprehend His sacrifice, we will take the attack on His Europe personally, and we will stand firm and resist the fierce tempestuous storms of liberalism, set in motion by the devil. We shall not return to paganism in any of its modern forms, not by way of Hitler, Stalin, or cosmic Christianity. We must dwell in His world, the world of the Word made flesh, and defend that world with our whole heart, mind, and soul. +

---

### **Liberalism Confounded - January 11, 2020**

Let us say you are a parent of an adult child who has either mothered or fathered a child out of wedlock. You do not approve of having children out of wedlock, but the child now exists, so you must try and help your adult child deal with his or her child as a Christian should. This is the way I feel about so many of the wars within our democratic, liberal culture. I don’t approve of democracy — it is anti-Christian — but it exists, so I can’t help but sympathize with the men and women who are struggling within the confines of democracy, however misguidedly, to support some values that are not wholly liberal values. I am referring to President Trump’s current battle with the democratic jackals over the Iranian bombing. I do not believe that we should have troops in Iran — I do not believe we should have troops anywhere in the Mideast — yet all of the American presidents in the 20th and 21st centuries, Democrat and Republican, have chosen to place American troops in Iran. So, with that as a given, just as the child out of wedlock is a given, I want to see those American troops

protected as a Christian leader should protect his own soldiers. Within that context what Trump did was right and proper. Pelosi and her legions from hell place themselves in the position of the Scribes and the Pharisees who had no concern for the blind, the sick, and the lame that Christ healed; they were only concerned with attacking Christ, so they used His miracles of healing that He performed on the Sabbath as an excuse to denigrate Him. So it shall always be with the mad-dog liberals. Any Christian act of a public official will be condemned because the liberals will always oppose that which is Christian; and it is Christian to defend one's own.

Trump's religion, which is a fusion of Christianity and Judaism, is not my religion. Nor do I believe, as Trump does, in America and the democratic way. But Trump is at least a man with some convictions not wholly incompatible with old Europe. He has actually tried, in contrast to Bush and Reagan, to do something about legalized abortion. And he has actually tried, in contrast to all the other presidents of the 20th and 21st centuries, to base his economic policies on the needs of individual Americans rather than on abstract utopian theories.

Trump is a rarity in public office, just as Andrew Jackson and Teddy Roosevelt were rarities: he is a man. And a man, in contrast to a self-serving politician, will fight for what he believes in. Trump's willingness to fight for a set of values that are not in complete harmony with the liberals' values has made him the most hated man in Liberaldom. Even Pope Francis the blasphemer has joined his liberal compatriots in their attack on Trump. Why should a leader of a white nation who is not a white nationalist, but who does not want to eliminate the white race, earn the hatred of the liberals and the pope? We know the answer to that question. There must be nothing left of old Europe in the new world of liberty, equality, and fraternity. Trump's moderate liberalism, which allows for a remnant of European civilization, is not acceptable. Everything that stinks of Christian Europe must be eliminated from the brave, new, utopian Europe. Hence Trump, the 1950s liberal who has retained a man's courage and a heart of flesh, must be opposed by all liberals, religious and lay.

I find it incredible that conservative-liberals such as Ann Coulter do not realize that we will never see another Republican president even remotely as good as Trump. It is quite obvious, if you take off your democratic blinders, that our vaunted democracy does not produce men with the courage to defy the liberals, it produces unmen who grovel before the liberals in the hopes that they will allow them a place in Liberaldom. Trump represents the last dying gasp of the white man's participation in American politics, just as Hendrik Verwoerd was the last genuine white man to govern South Africa.

Tragically, the white grazers who voted for Trump did not see his election as a rearguard defense, giving them a little breathing room to get ready for the liberals' final assault on the white race. Instead they viewed his election as a victory for the onward and upward movement of the American people. To proceed upon the assumption that progressive, democratic ideals can replace white pietas is not a progression, it is a descent into hell. The modern European democracies are grounded in the satanic ethos of the French Revolution. You can't restore that which has been lost, white pietas, by clinging to a slightly higher elevation on the slippery slope leading to hell. You must climb out of the slippery slope and put an iron-clad Christian roadblock in front of that slippery slope.

The Christian barrier to our descent into hell consists of our love for our kith and kin in and through the Savior, who is Christ the Lord. The conservative-liberals who want to live on a higher elevation on the slippery slope are constantly looking for white leaders and white protest movements that are within the framework of democracy. Such leaders are not leaders, they are men with a remnant of pietas, which they have retained because they have something within them that is undemocratic, something ancient and Christian. So it is with the protest movements. Can we build on such leaders and such protest movements? No, we cannot, because such leaders and such protest movements act on the assumption that we can compromise with Satan. You can't maneuver from within the devil's kingdom. There are no safe sanctuaries in Satan's house, which is a kingdom diametrically opposed to our Lord's house of many mansions.

Let me return, once again, to that courtroom in Act IV of Shakespeare's *Merchant of Venice*. Shakespeare poses the question: What if the devil's will, that charity and mercy should perish from the earth, becomes the law? Then every Christian will be at the mercy of the devil's Sanhedrin of liberals. The European people, over time, have buried Shakespeare's warning in the verbiage of democracy, pluralism, and diversity. As a consequence, we now live according to the ethical code of Shylock: "I hate him because he is a Christian." The love that once was there has been replaced by the liberals' hatred of everything stemming from old Europe, everything that is charitable, merciful, and morally beautiful.

Once the devil has institutionalized his will, once he has made white pietas and Christian charity illegal, then every lifeline that the white grazer clings to plunges him all the deeper into the pit of hell. But how is it possible for a drowning man to refuse the lifelines that are offered to him? If he refuses the devil's lifelines, how can he be sure that another lifeline will ever come his way? "You said you would come back, but you did not," is the accusation that the Grand Inquisitor hurls at Christ. Satan has taken advantage of Christ's absence to impose his will on the European people: "He is not coming back, which means He never really existed. Trust in me and what I can give you." The European people have accepted that Faustian bargain.

This a most singular tragedy, this tragedy of the European people. We see before us a people incapable of responding to the Ghost of Christmas Past, who bids Scrooge place his hand on the angelic ghost's heart in order to be sustained in his journey backward in time, a time when he still had a heart of flesh. Scrooge was an easy reclamation compared to the modern Europeans, because Scrooge could be moved by the little human things, namely his sentimental attachments to a Christian woman and a charitable employer. The modern Europeans possess something that Scrooge did not possess, which has allowed them to keep Christ out of Liberaldom. They possess an ideology that has banished the past from their lives, except as a thing of ridicule and disgust. They have utopian ideologies that 'free' them from any connection to old Europe. The feminist looks to the new woman who has left the nurture of children behind, the mad-dog liberal looks to a future without whites and their God, the Christian clergyman looks to a future in which the European Christ has been replaced by the cosmic Christ, and the neo-pagan looks to a future of brilliant neo-pagan minds purged of the sentimental prejudices and superstitions of the past. The strength of ideology has given the European people hearts that cannot be touched by anything humane or Christian. Can such people even be called a people? No, they cannot be called a people. They are an aggregate herd of subhuman creatures filled with the pride of their pathetic, imbecilic minds and the fear of being cast out of the aggregate herd of ideologically-minded monkeys, who are devoid of all the attributes of human beings.

Yeats saw that Christ was no longer the lodestar of Western civilization, but he didn't see it as a tragedy, because he thought that a new savior, a "rough beast," could be fashioned by great occult thinkers such as William Butler Yeats. Has the "rough beast" culture of the modern Europeans produced a savior? Yes, it has. It has produced the noble black savage. But the new savior is devoid of faith, hope, and charity. Can we live without those relics from old Europe? I can't and I won't. If a stubborn, unyielding defiance is all that is left to us, let us maintain that stubborn, unyielding defiance until the ending of the world. That is little enough to do for Him who has redeemed us with His blood. Christ has woven us into His story, which ends in His Kingdom come. At the poetic core of the European civilization that now stands condemned is that heavenly vision vouchsafed to all those who have kept their hearts alive, untainted and unsullied by the stink of the modern ideologies of liberalism. He has not left us alone, He has sent us a Comforter, and that Comforter resides in hearts of flesh.

It is very unscientific to rely on something that cannot be seen by the material eye. But that unseen something, that gentle voice of the Holy Ghost, enjoins us to look to Him who saves. In the midst of Liberaldom, which is a charnel house, we must look back and embrace the Suffering Servant who was the poetic center of old Europe. He can and must remain, as the old hymns proclaim, our strength and our refuge, even if the ideologues of modernity tell us we must look to a new future without the Christ of our dear, dear land of storybooks. Like unto a child, that is our faith; we are still and always shall be His children. +

---

### **O Holy Child of Bethlehem - January 4, 2020**

"The world is no doubt encroaching on our families and our Christmas. The hatred against traditional morality is becoming so intense as to be scarcely believable." – Letter from a friend, December 21, 2019

But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. – Matthew 27: 20

---

Let me begin the new year with a Christmas reflection – There are no longer Christmas truces. When the European people were still ethically Christian (ca. 1914-1965) and still in part Christ-haunted, you could have contact with liberals without feeling you were lying down with some kind of reptilian monster. They still, at least at Christmas time, showed some signs of humanity. But now it is quite different. The modern liberals, acting on the assumptions of their liberal progenitors – assumptions that their progenitors often did not act on – have pushed onward to liberalism's ultimate conclusion, the worship of Satan and the hatred of Christ. When the creatures called liberals have reached that 'beast in man' state of existence, or should I say non-existence, any contact with them brings us to the sadness beyond sadness and the anger beyond anger. And since the liberals are in power, the celebration of Christmas can never be just a peaceful family affair; it must be of necessity a continuance of the same war against Satan and his minions that we wage during the other 364 days of the year.

During Christmas in my family we read *The Christmas Carol* and the other Christmas stories I have mentioned previously rather than *King Lear*, but in terms of our stance vis-à-vis the surrounding liberal world, we remain just as opposed to the liberals at Christmas time as we remain opposed to them during the rest of the year. In fact, I find that the Christian ramparts must be even more fiercely defended at Christmas than at any other time of the year because Satan, through his liberal minions, intensifies his attack on Christ and his people during the Christmas season. And there is a Satanic logic behind the liberals' maniacal Christmas attacks – "Don't let them look back, don't let them get warm and fuzzy over the

Babe in the manger. Our world, which must be all of humanity's world, is in the future, a future without white Europeans who worship a fairy tale God."

In 1959 Walt Disney produced the last of his great animated films. It was a straight-forward retelling of Perrault's fairy tale, *Sleeping Beauty*. In the finale, Prince Phillip, having hewed through the thorns separating him from the Princess Aurora, who is *Sleeping Beauty*, prepares to restore the Princess with "love's first kiss." But Maleficent cannot permit such a consummation. She turns herself into a dragon as she declares, "Now prepare to deal with me and all the powers of hell!" The Prince does deal with her: he hurls the sword of truth into the dragon's heart. Maleficent disappears, and only the sword of truth, which is also a cross, remains in the ground. Little did Disney know, nor did I know when I saw that movie as a child, that some fifty years later another movie studio, still bearing the name of Disney, would produce a film in which Maleficent was the feminist heroine of the *Sleeping Beauty* film. There has been an immoral revolution in our culture. We have shifted from a people who revered the custom and manners of Christian Europe to a people who revere and venerate Satan and all the powers of hell. What has brought about this second fall of man and what prevents us, as a people, from climbing out of hell?

The European people fell from grace when they allowed the devil's sneer to replace their Lord's loving embrace. The classic Christmas carols of the European people all speak of a filial bond between Christ and His people—

"Let loving hearts enthrone Him"

"Son of God, love's pure light"

"Where meek souls will receive Him still, The dear Christ enters in"

"Love came down at Christmas"

"Born that men no more may die, Born to raise the sons of earth, Born to give them second birth"

"Yet what I can I give Him, give Him my heart"

"Lo, He abhors not the Virgin's womb"

Are the Christmas carols that sprang from the heart of Christian Europe out of line with the message of the prophets, the Gospel of Christ, and the epistles of St. Paul? No, they are not. They are completely in accord with the prophets, the Gospels, and St. Paul. We are connected to Christ through our humanity. The God who did not abhor the Virgin's womb cannot be known by way of the syllogism, He must be known through the human heart. The devil, after he was cast out of heaven, sought to sever mankind's filial relationship with God by appealing to their pride of reason. He succeeded beyond his wildest dreams only to be defeated by Christ's divine condescension on the cross. After that defeat, Satan retrenched; he began, all over again, to attack mankind using the same gambit that he had used in the Garden of Eden: "Ye shall be as Gods."

Have the liberals become gods? Yes, in their own minds they have; they are the first part of the new trinity. They are reason undeterred by prejudice and superstition. And their pure reason, backed by the Holy Ghost of science, has discovered that the noble black savage, in the abstract, is the Savior who must be worshipped and adored. This new faith is completely and unalterably opposed to the Christian faith. There can be no middle ground between the liberals' triune faith and the triune faith of the antique Europeans. The churchmen's attempt to deify their abstract intellects while maintaining their faith in Christ has only resulted in their capitulation to liberalism. When they denounced the heart-to-heart connection to the Savior by demonizing all the human ties that connect us to God, particularly our love of kith and kin, they left themselves and their followers bereft of the God who enters human hearts. You cannot make up a new Christianity based on pure reason and expect your people to maintain the same passion and intensity in their faith as their European predecessors who believed in the human Christ, the Christ of the Christmas carols and the Gospels. What you will get is soulless automatons who give an intellectual nod to God by attending church while they give their hearts to the liberals' world and the liberals' savior.

The European people have become like unto Sisyphus. They will never get the rock up to the top of the hill so long as they adhere to the Christianity of the Sanhedrin. Why, when Christ bid us worship in spirit and truth, have the European people given themselves over to the Sanhedrin? Why is "truth" confined to that which can be put in a golden bowl by men of reason? If our faith is always dependent on what the men of reason in the organized churches tell us, then our faith is always in the ever-changing future. We must always wait for the final results of their research before we can know and believe in the living God. The Catholic must wait for the next council and the next pope, a good pope, before he can know God, and the Protestant must wait upon new Biblical studies before he can know God. In the meantime, while the Europeans wait for the light, they have made their peace with liberalism. It is the grazers' adherence to the anti-Christian Christian Sanhedrin that keeps the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth in order. Liberalism is the antithesis of Christianity, it can only be defeated by Europeans who believe in the one true God, the God of the prophets, the God of the Gospels, the God of St. Paul, and the God of our people when they had hearts of flesh.

As the liberals become more blatantly Satanic, the grazers have become more bovine, completely oblivious to the evils of liberalism. Maleficent stands before them representing all the powers of hell, and the European grazers continue to chew their cuds and graze in the fields of liberalism. There is no liberal blasphemy that can stir the European grazer to the point



of outrage. There is no blasphemy, no evil that can make the grazer say, “Stop! This must not go on!” What you have are mild disagreements that can be worked out through the democratic process. Let me relate, once again, something that a veteran pro-life protestor told me when I entered the anti-abortion picket lines as a young man. I asked the veteran why we didn’t, because we were many, just storm the abortuaries and burn them to the ground. The long-time protestor told me that he had lined up hundreds of men when the clinics first started, who were willing to do just that. But their parish priest got wind of it and denounced such ‘violence’ from the pulpit. That is the essence of Sanhedrin Christianity – the men of intellect will always side with the powers of hell against Christ’s reign of charity, because in their own minds they do not believe that Christ entered human hearts and established a realm of charity on this earth that must be defended against all the powers of hell. What is hell to the churchmen? Hell is the parishioner who does not accept their word as law. They believe that only one thing is needful – that they, and they alone, should tell us what God wills. In the case of legalized abortion, it was the clerical apostate’s decision that ‘God’s will’ was that any opposition to abortion should remain within the confines of democracy. But what if democracy exists to ensure that Satan can rule in perpetuity? Must we submit, must we be ruled by Maleficent and all the powers of hell?

The shadows of hell have gradually enveloped the European people so that now they no longer believe there ever was a light in the darkness. Dylan Thomas, a religious atheist, raged against the dying of the light, but in the end he knew that, “darkness is right.” Is that the final word – is the darkness of hell our destiny? Is it the ultimate reality?

If we live in Liberaldom without rejecting Liberalism in its entirety, we will come to believe that “darkness is right.” When Gratiano, one of the Christian Venetians trying to save Antonio from Shylock, is brought face to face with Shylock’s unalterable determination to have his pound of flesh despite the Christians’ appeals for mercy, he says:

O, be thou damn’d, inexecrable dog!  
And for thy life let justice be accus’d.  
Thou almost mak’st me waver in my faith  
To hold opinion with Pythagoras,  
That souls of animals infuse themselves  
Into the trunks of men. Thy currish spirit  
Govern’d a wolf who, hang’d for human slaughter,  
Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet,  
And, whilst thou lay’st in thy unhallowed dam,  
Infus’d itself in thee; for thy desires  
Are wolfish, bloody, starv’d and ravenous.

Gratiano almost returns to intellectual paganism because he sees that Shylock’s merciless cruelty has seemingly been given the sanction of law. But of course Portia, acting the part of our Lord and Savior, brings true charity into the law, and the light triumphs over darkness. Gratiano’s wavering faith is restored, and all is right in Christian Venice.

We misread *Merchant of Venice* if we simply take the play as an anti-Semitic tirade. Shakespeare is not a neo-pagan — he does not think the Jews are irretrievably damned as a people. He makes that clear when he depicts the conversion of Shylock’s daughter to Christianity. But he does think that the unrepentant Jew, the Jew who has set himself against Christ’s mercy, is a “damn’d, inexecrable dog.” And so are all liberals, whether they be Jew or Gentile, inexecrable dogs, when they set themselves up as an organized Sanhedrin opposed to the Light of the world. And we will become pagans with the souls of beasts if we adhere to the blended Christianity of any or all of the modern branches of the Christian Sanhedrin.

Pride of reason and fear of being cast out of the liberals’ synagogues keep the European people in darkness. Will they ever rise up out of the slime pits of liberalism? Only if something inside them gives them the courage to defy the liberals’ and the clergymen’s intellectual sneer. Christ did not abhor the virgin’s womb. We shall not abhor the Christ Child, born of the virgin Mary. We shall love Him in spite of Maleficent and all the powers of hell. +

---

## Remembrances IX: Those Who Mourn - December 14, 2019

While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue’s house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole. And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden. And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise. And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

—Luke 8: 49-55

Act I. Scene 1.

Inn Keeper: Are the tables set in the banquet room?

Waitress I: Not yet, your wife told us not to set the tables too soon, because she doesn't want the tables to get dirty before the guests get here.

Inn Keeper: For God's sake, it's only a half-hour at most before they start arriving. Set the damn tables. You can get that idiot kid to help you. Now hurry up, I need to check on the dinner preparations.

[He exits, and the waitresses hear him yelling in the kitchen.]

Waitress II: He's a bear tonight.

Waitress I: Well, this is the night when he gets out of the red – it's Mandela-Cybele-Christmas Eve. He'll have over one hundred people from the ecumenical conference here.

Waitress II: He's lucky they put up that conference center so close. Business was bad before that came in.

Waitress I: It keeps me working.

Waitress II: This is my first Mandela-Cybele-Christmas Eve here – do these people tip a lot?

Waitress I: It depends on how much they drink.

Waitress II: I understand.

Waitress I: Well, I suppose I should find the idiot and get him to help us.

Waitress II: Mr. Marshal doesn't seem to like him much, why does he keep him around, particularly since the kid is deaf and dumb?

Waitress I: He's not really a kid, I think he must be in his mid-twenties, and he isn't deaf and dumb. He can hear, but he can't speak.

Waitress II: He gives me the creeps.

Waitress I: Well, he is a good worker. He does whatever you tell him.

Waitress II: Is that why Joe keeps him on?

Waitress II: No, Joe thinks he is worthless. He came here 6 weeks ago, two weeks before you started. Mrs. Marshal was sick at the time, nothing serious, but she needed extra help in the kitchen and with the errands. The idiot was just there; I think he was trying to get a handout. Mrs. Marshal hired him on a temporary basis and she has taken a liking to him. He is kind of like a family pet now, at least to Mrs. Marshal. She won't let Joe fire him.

Waitress I: There he is, Hey, over here, give us a hand.

[The 'idiot' proceeds to help with the tablecloths.]

---

Act I. Scene 2.

George Jackson, a slight, balding man in his mid-forties, his wife, Joan, an attractive woman in her mid-thirties, and their daughter, Louisa, aged eight, enter the restaurant.

Joan: This is a lovely view, you can see the snow falling on the mountains.

George: I just hope it doesn't fall on the roads below the mountains. If it does, we'll be stuck here. I didn't want to drive tonight...

Joan: You're such a gloomy Gus, why can't you enjoy the moment without worrying about things? We've just been to the most wonderful Mandel-Cybele-Christmas Eve ceremony I've ever seen. And to think that all over the civilized world people are worshipping Mandela and his people and Cybele just as we do.

Daughter: Mommy, why do we call it Mandela-Cybele-Christmas Eve, why don't we just call it Mandela-Cybele Eve?

Joan: Haven't they explained that to you in school?

Daughter: No.

Joan: Well, they should have told you about it. Jesus Christ was a very good man who lived a long, long time ago. He went around the country he lived in, teaching the principles of racial equality and feminism. His message was so unpopular with the white males in his country that they killed him. But by his death he paved the way for our true appreciation of the black race and womankind.

Daughter: But we are not all equal mother, teacher says that the black race is the holy race and the white race is the sick and sinful race.

Joan: That's right, but Christ didn't know all that in his time, he simply prepared the way for the worship of the black race and the liberation of women. His message was perverted by a terrible man called St. Paul, but ultimately truth won out and Christ became what he was meant to be, the forerunner of the sacred black race and feminism.

George: Dear, I don't know how much theology Louisa can understand.

Joan: She needs to hear the truths of our faith. I'm really surprised that her teacher is not telling her about our evolution as a people from darkness to light.

George: Just let her enjoy her meal.

Joan: I don't like that kind of irreverence, George.

George: Sorry.

Joan: I wonder who will be seated at the other three seats at our table.

George: I wish we could have gotten the Tuckers and their daughter to come to the dinner, then we wouldn't have to share our table with strangers.

Joan: Where is your spirit of adventure? We might get three very interesting people at our table.

George: I doubt it.

Joan: Look, George!

George: Where?

Joan: Over by the door. Those three people might be coming to our table. It looks like one is a priestess and one a priest. I don't know who the other man is.

George: Great, now you'll talk theology all evening, and I won't enjoy my meal.

Joan: Shut up, they are coming to this table.

---

Act I. Scene 3.

One female priestess of the new Roman Catholic African Church, Sister Jacqueline, age 26, one male priest of the Roman Catholic African Church, Father Mike, age 62. And one archivist of the Roman Catholic African Church, Herbert Broadhurst, age 46, are seated at the table with Joan and George and their daughter. They have all introduced themselves.

Joan: [Addressing the archivist, Herbert Broadhurst] What exactly does an archivist do, Father?

Herbert: I'm not a priest, you don't have to call me father, Herb will do.

Joan: Sorry.

Herb: Nothing to be sorry about.

Joan: What is it that you do, if you don't mind relating it.

Herb: I don't mind in the least, although I'm afraid what I do is rather boring.

Joan: I'll bet it isn't boring at all.

Herb: Well, an archivist collects and stores documents from the past.

Joan: Who's past?

Herb: The Europeans' past. I collect books, manuscripts, and historical chronicles of Europeans from long ago.

Joan: Doesn't that entail reading many books from the era of racism and sexism?

Herb: Yes, it does.

Joan: But aren't such works forbidden?

Herb: To the normal citizen they are forbidden. But I am an archivist, I have special permission to read and catalogue the old literature and histories.

Joan: It sounds like a pretty filthy job.

Priest: Filthy, yes, but necessary.

George: Why is it necessary, Father Mike?

Priest: Because sometimes it is necessary to reference the past in order to understand the present.

George: For instance?

Priest: Well, let's take our liturgy, for instance. We all, those of us who have white skin, kneel during the Mass and strike our breasts 17 times and declare we are white and sinful. Those 17 strikes on the breast and the accompanying declarations of white sinfulness is the result of the 17 black martyrs who were killed when the Free Republic of Banyon was dominated by white people. If we didn't have an archivist, we would not know why we beat our breast 17 times.

Joan: But why do we have to know that detail?

Herb: [laughing] I don't think you are going to convince them that I do something useful, Father.

Priest: Well, historical research can be useful if it is used properly.

Priestess: But what if it is not used properly? I for one have never approved of the archives. If I had my way, we'd simply burn the archives.

Herb: Then I'd be out of a job.

Priestess: So what?

George: [Laughing] Here comes the first course, it looks good.

[The food is placed on the table.]

Joan: Father Mike, will you say grace?

[Father Mike looks uncomfortable]

Priestess: He is not permitted to say grace. When a female priestess is present, no male priest is permitted to co-opt the female priestess no matter how many years seniority he has.

Priest: She is quite right.

Joan: I'm sorry, I forgot.

Priestess: [With a scowl] Never mind. [She says grace.] Dear Nelson Mandela, who represents all the sacred black race, and dear Mother Cybele, who represents all the oppressed female race, bless this food which we are about to receive and may we be ever mindful of the white male menace that always threatens us. Amen.

Joan: Yes, thank you, Sister Jacqueline, that was quite eloquent.

George: They certainly give you big portions here.

Joan: Shut up, George.

George: Yes, dear.

Daughter: [To the priestess] Are you really and truly a priestess?

Priestess: Yes.

Daughter: I'd like to be a priestess when I grow up.

Priestess: It takes a lot of work.

Joan: What, in your judgement, Sister Jacqueline, is the main requirement for being a priestess?

Priestess: You must hold the two great commandment in your heart. You must love the black race and the goddess Cybele with all your heart, mind, and soul, and you must hate the white male with all your heart, mind, and soul. Your average person is lukewarm in their love of the black race and Cybele and lukewarm in their hatred of the white male. A priestess can't be lukewarm in her love or her hatred.

Priest: Aren't you going to make a distinction between the white males who have renounced their whiteness and the white males, such as those inhuman monsters in the underground, who have not renounced their whiteness?

Priestess: Some make such distinctions, but I don't. I do not see why there should be any white males left alive on this earth. We have the means of determining the sex of the child in the womb, so it should be mandatory that all white male children should be aborted.

Herb: Most white male babies are already executed by the state.

Priestess: Yes, but not all are executed. And look at John Taylor, he was lawfully born and raised as a priest. And what happened? He became a member of the white underground.

George: I thought he went to England.

Priestess: Yes, he did, for two years. But now he is back and he works for the white underground. He is with David Morgan.

Priest: Surely because one white male, who was raised to renounce his whiteness, returned to the slime pits of whiteness, you don't condemn all white males who have renounced their whiteness?

Priestess: I don't trust any white males and I don't think we should allow any of them the opportunity to betray us.

[Joe Marshal comes up to the table.]

Joe: Everything all right here? How is the food?

Priest: It's excellent as always.

George: Yes, it's great.

Priestess: It's adequate. But let me ask you a question.

Joe: Ask away.

Priestess: Who was that young white male I saw come out of the kitchen a few minutes ago in order to wipe up that spill at the table near the kitchen?

Joe: He's just some idiot aide that we hired to help out during the Mandela-Cybele-Christmas season.

Priestess: Does he have papers?

Joe: Of course he does, do you think I'd hire a white male without papers?

Priestess: I want to see his papers.

Joe: What right do you have to tell me who I can hire?

Priestess: I have every right, I'm a priestess in the one Holy Catholic Church of Mandela-Cybele.

Herb: She does have the right, but I suggest you just let it alone and enjoy the meal.

Priestess: Yes, you would let it alone.

Herb: Can't you just relax for one night, must you always be on duty?

Priestess: Don't get male with me. Perhaps you were planning to romance me.

Herb: God forbid.

Joan: What God?

Herb: It's just an expression.

Priestess: Watch your expressions.

Herb: I'm sorry.

Priestess: [glaring at Joe] I want to see that young man's papers.

Joe: I understand, I'll go get his papers immediately.

Priestess: And bring him out here with his papers.

Joe, Yes, your... er...

Priestess: Sisterhood.

Joe: Yes, your sisterhood.

[As Joe heads for the kitchen, the priestess picks up her cell phone.]

---

Act I. Scene 4.

The Kitchen.

Joe: Who let that idiot out of the kitchen?

Waitress II: I told him to go clean up the spill.

Joe: Didn't you know that he was supposed to stay in the kitchen when there were other people in the restaurant?

Waitress II: Nobody told me.

Joe's wife: What is wrong, dear?

Joe: A priestess saw him and wants to see his papers.

Wife: What did you say?

Joe: I said I'd get his papers and send him out with the papers.

Wife: But he doesn't have any papers.

Joe: I know. If you remember I wanted no part of him when he came here. You insisted I give him a meal. Then you insisted that I should keep him on. He is probably a member of the white underground.

Wife: Oh no, Joe, you just have to look at him to know that he is simply a lost innocent.

Joe: Lost from where? He had to come from somewhere. And where is he right now?

Wife: I sent him to the wine cellar for another bottle of wine.

Joe: He's taking a long time, maybe he knocked the shelves down on himself and he is dead.

Wife: Don't talk like that.

Joe: It wouldn't do me any good if he was dead, that priestess would still want to see his papers.

Wife: Maybe if you tell her that you couldn't find him she'll forget about it.

Joe: Not her, she wants his papers and that's that. There is no getting around her. I wish she'd choke to death on her shrimp cocktail, but we can't count on that kind of luck.

Wife: What can we do then?

Joe: There is one chance. Remember that accountant that worked on the books off and on during the last five years?

Wife: Yes.

Joe: Well, he died of heart attack a couple weeks ago.

Wife: I didn't know.

Joe: Well, I didn't want to upset you, seeing that you had just been ill, so I didn't tell you. But this is what we can do. I'll say that he was in charge of the paper work and that he told me that the idiot had given him his papers. It's a long shot, but it might work.

Wife: What do you mean it might work? They'll imprison him – I mean the idiot – and they're liable to imprison Mr. Jenkin's family as well.

Joe: Jenkins didn't have any family. And it is better for the idiot to go to prison than us. Besides, for all I know he is a member of the white underground. In which case, he belongs in prison anyway.

Wife: No, I don't want him to go to prison. You can tell the lie about Mr. Jenkins to save us, but let's give the young man time to escape. I'll tell him right now.

Joe: Are you crazy? They'll know we helped him to escape and we'll go to jail. I don't see why you're so attached to that idiot.

Wife: I must tell you something. At first, I just felt sorry for him. You never did, but I did. But then there was something else. Remember when I was sick?

Joe: Sure, you had a bad case of the flu.

Wife: That's what I thought it was at first, but that night, when you slept in the spare room so I could get some rest, I felt the fever burning me up and I knew I was going to die. I tried to call for you, but I couldn't cry out, the fever had dried my throat up. All I could do was lie there and die. And then he came to me, that young man you call the idiot. He had a glass of water in his hand and he lifted my head from the pillow and helped me drink the water. Then he laid my head back on the pillow and placed his hand on my forehead. And Joe, you must believe me, at the moment he placed his hand on my forehead, the fever left me.

Joe: This is pure nonsense. You were delirious from the fever and you had a dream about the idiot. That's all it was. Fevers come and go, there is nothing miraculous about that. The only miraculous thing is your overwrought imagination. You really can come up with some doosies.

Wife: How can you account for the glass then?

Joe: What glass?

Wife: The water glass. When I woke up, there it was by my bedstead. It was full of water.

Joe: So what?

Wife: You see I drained that glass of water during the night.

Joe: How would you know, you were feverish.

Wife: I do know. I vividly remember draining that glass of water he gave me. And furthermore, we don't have any glasses like that glass in the house or the restaurant.

Joe: Where is the glass now?

Wife: I don't know, after I drank from it in the morning, I washed it and then put it in the cupboard, but when I looked for it the next day it was gone.

Joe: There you have it, it was all a dream.

Wife: Was it?

Joe: Of course, otherwise you would have to say that the idiot was some sort of angel or something like that – that he is right out of a fairy tale. But just look at him, he is an idiot.

Wife: Is he, Joe?

Joe: Of course, he is.

Wife: Still, we can't give him up to that priestess.

Joe: We must. It's him or us. [At this point the idiot comes up the stairs with a wine bottle and he walks over to Barbara Marshal and gives her the bottle.]

Wife: You must leave here quickly. Get your coat and see if you can find the Nelson's house. It's a mile or so away. Say that I sent you.



Joe: You'll do no such thing. [Looking at the idiot] I'm sorry about this, I have nothing against you, but we have to turn you in to a crazy priestess out there. I warned you not to leave the kitchen.

Wife: No, Joe, I won't let you turn him in.

[The priestess enters the kitchen with five policemen, four black and one white.]

Priestess: [Pointing to the idiot] Take him. [The policemen, having knocked the idiot down, put handcuffs and leg irons on him.] You're not out of this yet [Looking at Joe], but for now, he is all we care about. [The policemen and the priestess leave the kitchen with the idiot in chains.]

Joe: Well, now you've done it. If they don't believe my story about the papers, I'll be hauled off in chains as well. Is that what you wanted?

Wife: Of course not, but I can't bear to see him hurt.

Joe: Forget about him, there is nothing you can do for him now. You just concentrate on backing up my story, that should be your only concern.

---

## Act II. Scene 1.

The snow is coming down in great blankets now. The people in the restaurant, about one hundred and twenty, have been informed that the roads are currently impassable. The idiot was beaten and then tied to a tree in front of the restaurant. He was tied in a sitting position. The snow fall has already reached the level of his chest. The people at Joan Jackson's table are in the process of eating dessert.

George: My father used to say that no matter how much you ate during a meal, you always had a special place in your stomach for dessert.

Joan: Shut up, George.

George: Yes, dear.

Herb: The dessert is delicious.

Priest: I agree.

Priestess: Is that all men can think of, their stomachs?

Herb: No, sometimes we think of other things.

Priestess: What do you mean by that?

Herb: Nothing at all.

Priestess: I think you are trying to play sexual games with me. That is strictly forbidden in Article VI, section 2 of the Constitution of the American-African Republic. I intend to have you arrested to stand trial for sexual harassment and not only that...

Daughter: Mommy.

Joan: Don't interrupt when the Priestess is talking.

Daughter: But, Mommy.

Joan: Be quiet, Louisa.

Daughter: But Mommy, all I wanted to say was that the man out there is soon going to be covered with snow.

Priest: Oh, dear, the snow is getting rather high. Perhaps we should bring him inside and chain him in the wine cellar.

Priestess: There is no need for that. Let him stay out there.

Priest: But I really think he is either going to suffocate or freeze to death.

Priestess: That need not concern us.

Priest: But he is entitled to a trial.

Priestess: [Raising her voice to a level slightly below a scream, but well above a normal speaking voice] No, he is not entitled to a trial. He is a white male without papers, he has no rights.

[The Priestess gets up to go to the bathroom, and as she leaves the table she lets go a parting remark at Herb]

And don't think I've forgotten about you. [She leaves for the bathroom]

Herb: Well, this has been a very pleasant dinner.

George: Can she get you in trouble?

Herb: Sure, she can. She has a lot of power. But in this case, if she really intends to pursue it, there isn't much of a case.

Joan: What did you mean by that remark, when you said sometimes men think of other things?

Herb: I meant what I said. I meant that sometimes men think of other things besides their stomachs. She was the one who decided what the other things were.

Joan: Still, I think you meant something sexual.

George: All remarks are not sexual remarks.

Joan: Shut up, George.

George: Yes, dear.

Priest: I wish we could do something for that young man out there.

Herb: I think he is a goner, Father. She won't let anyone touch him.

Priest: It's a pity.

Herb: Yes, it is.

Joan: I don't think any white male has the right to judge the actions of a Priestess in the Roman Catholic African Church.

George: But Joan...

Joan: Shut up, George.

George: Yes, dear.

---

Act II. Scene 2.

Joe Marshal comes up to Joan Jackson's table.

Joe: I just got word that the power is going out all over the area. And the roads, at present, are impassable, so it looks like we could be here for a long while without any light.

Priestess: [Having returned from the bathroom] This is gross negligence. How can this be allowed to happen?

Herb: I think it is called nature.

Priestess: What do you mean by that?

Herb: Nothing sexual, I assure you. I simply mean that big snow storms can defy even all our modern technology.

Priestess: You seem to love to attack everything modern. Perhaps you prefer your old world of the archives, the world of racism and sexism?

Herb: I didn't say that.

Priestess: You implied it, which is the same thing. I'm going to charge you with counterrevolutionary sentiments when I leave this restaurant.

Herb: I suppose I'll have a lot of charges to answer for.

Priestess: Yes, you will.

Joe: Look, be that as it may, I'm passing out candles for every table. [Looking at Herb] Will you help me?

Herb: I'd be glad to.

[He begins to pass out candles with Joe]

Joe: I really don't need help with the candles, my waitresses can handle it, but I wanted to get you away from that Priestess in order to talk with you privately.

Herb: If it's about that young man and his papers, I'm afraid I can't help you, I'm under a bit of a cloud myself.

Joe: No, it's not that, I think I can wiggle clear of those charges. It's about the rest of the night. I still need to keep these people happy.

Herb: That won't be easy. People don't like it when the power goes out.

Joe: But that is not my fault.

Herb: I know it isn't, it's nature's fault, but try to tell that to a bitch like her royal sisterhood over there.

Joe: You take chances, I'd be afraid to use that term even in the privacy of my home.

Herb: You know something, I don't really think I give a damn anymore. Maybe I have spent too much time in the archives. When a man spends 8 hours a day, sometimes 10 or 12, in a different world than his contemporaries, he starts to think and feel about things differently than the people around him. I'm heartily sick of women who aren't women and men who aren't men. And I'm sick of trying to pretend I care about this nation we live in.

Joe: Look, that is more than I know about. I just wanted you to do that play you did here four years ago.

Herb: [Laughing] That was just a history play about some Christmases from long ago that I strung together. But I can't do it tonight because I don't have any copies of the play with me. If you remember, I picked volunteers from the audience who read the various parts, while I was the narrative voice.

Joe: I remember. And you do have copies of the play to give out. I recorded the play, had the words written down, and then made copies of the play. You can give out the parts to volunteer readers again.

Herb: Yes, but they'll have trouble reading their lines in the dark.

Joe: I have eight high-powered flood lights powered by a generator that I can shine on the stage. The audience will be at their tables with the candle lights while the stage will be illuminated by the flood lights.

Herb: I suppose it could be done. But as of right now the power is... [The lights go out] I was going to say the power was still on.

Joe: It will be off for some time, at least that is what the reports say. Will you do the play?

Herb: On one condition.

Joe: What?

Herb: Here is my coat. I want you to wrap that young man outside in this coat, give him something warm to drink, and shovel some of the snow away from him.

Joe: Are you crazy?

Herb: Possibly, but that is what I want you to do. Once the play starts nobody will notice you. And without the outside light, it will be too dark for anyone to see you helping him.

Joe: Why does everyone feel sorry for that idiot?

Herb: I don't know that everybody does feel sorry for him. I didn't notice any outpouring of sympathy for him when they chained him out there.

Joe: I guess there wasn't. But my wife has been in tears since they put him out there.

Herb: Good for your wife.

Joe: Okay, I'll do it. I don't know why you want to make a big deal about it, but I'll do it. First let me introduce you to the audience, then you hand out the parts. Once the play starts, I'll sneak out there and see what I can do for the idiot.

Herb: Don't just see what you can do for him, I'm telling you to do something for him.

Joe: Okay, but let's start the show.

Herb: One more thing.

Joe: What?

Herb: In the play, I speak, if you remember, of an old Christmas before it became a Mandela-Cybele-Christmas. She, the Priestess, wasn't here when I did that play on this stage a few years back. She won't permit it to be performed, so you'll have to slip something in her drink to put her asleep.

Joe: Permanently?

Herb: [Laughing] That wouldn't be a bad idea, but I think that would get you in trouble. What I had in mind was a sleeping potion, something that would put her out for two to three hours. Could you manage that?

Joe: If she drinks, I can manage it.

Herb: She drinks all right. She is quite old-fashioned in that regard; she is a stone-cold alcoholic.

Joe: Okay, then, as soon as I come to your table and give her the drink, you head up to the stage.

Herb: And then you visit that young man out there.

Joe: Agreed.

---

### Act III. Scene 1.

The play within a play. Herb Broadhurst gives out the parts to various volunteers from the audience, then he steps forward to introduce the play.

Herb: This is a one-act play that I wrote, mainly for a few close friends that I knew were interested in the subject.

Member of the audience: What is the subject?

Herb: If you let me finish, I'll tell you. The subject is the transition from Christmas to Mandel-Cybele-Christmas. The characters in the play are fictional, but they are based on real life people that I encountered in my job as a European archivist.

Joan Jackson: Is the play heretical?

Herb: Certainly not. How can history be heretical? I simply present this play as a history of a bygone era. An era that I'm sure everyone here is glad to know is over. How can the past, which we condemn, reach out and hurt us? It can't. So I give you the play, which, I hope, will amuse you until the lights go back on and the roads are clear.

~~~~~

Act III. Scene 2.

The study of a Roman Catholic parish. One old priest, about 75 years of age, is seated in the study as a younger priest, about 40 years of age, enters.

Younger priest: Isn't it exciting, Father?

Older priest: What?

Younger: The new missal in which we finally give true homage to Mandela and to Cybele.

Older: I don't know that I care for it.

Younger: Surely you can't object to it, we are simply making explicit what has been implicit for many years.

Older: I see that, but I wonder if now is the proper time. There are still, I think, a great deal of the laity who are attached to the old image of Christ as the Son of God.

Younger: He is still the son of God.

Older: Yes, He is, in the sense that all of us are sons of God, but He loses, in the new missal, His distinctive identity as the one and only Son of God.

Younger: Surely it is better that we make what we actually believe to be true the main focus of our worship?

Older: I suppose so.

Younger: You suppose so, Father. I'm surprised at you, do you or do you not believe that Nelson Mandela and the black race are the hope of mankind? And do you or do you not believe that Cybele represents the immortal spirit of womankind.

Older; I do believe both. But I am questioning the timing of the declaration of the Pope. Many Catholics are still attached to the old concept of Christ.

Younger: But that old concept was false, and it came to us from white supremacists.

Older: Yes, it did, but many people took comfort in that old concept of Christ.

Younger; Nonsense. I think you are exaggerating the emotional appeal of the old concept. The people love Mandela and Cybele. You'll see, the new missal will be a huge success.

~~~~~

Herb, the Narrator: And the new missal was a huge success. There were a few members of the congregation who walked out of the church, but they were arrested as soon as they stepped out into the street. No one ever heard from them again.

~~~~~

Act III. Scene 3

Narrator: An Anglican rectory. This time it is the younger priest who has his doubts about the transition from Christmas to Mandela-Cybele-Christmas while the older priest constitutes the 'Amen Chorus' for the Mandela-Cybele-Christmas.

Older priest: [65 years of age] Have you heard the great news?

Younger priest: [35 years of age] About the changes in the prayer book?

Older: Yes.

Younger: I don't have any problems with the theology. I was brought up to believe in Mandela and Cybele as our saviors. But my grandfather was a great believer in the old European Christ.

Older: Didn't he go to prison?

Younger: Yes, he was imprisoned, because he refused to accept Mandela and Cybele as co-redemptorists with Christ. In fact he died while in prison. I think his heart gave out on him.

Older: That is a shame, but whiteness must be purged.

Younger: I know, but I wonder if there aren't more people like my grandfather lurking out there. This change might set them off.

Older: How do you mean 'set them off'?

Younger: I mean it might drive them to take up arms against the American-African Republic of the United States.

Older: I doubt that there are that many closet European Christians out there. I think we have done a pretty good job of weeding them out of our nation.

Younger: Perhaps.

Older: You worry too much.

Younger: Perhaps, but I can still see that look in my grandfather's eyes the night they took him away. I was 10 years old at the time. "No man cometh unto the Father except by me," he screamed, and his eyes were pure fire.

Older: Did you visit him in jail?

Younger: No, my parents wouldn't permit it. But I'll never forget the look on his face.

Older: Well, your grandfather was an exception. The people will love the new prayer book because they love Mandela and Cybele and they don't love the Christ of old Europe.

Younger: I suppose everything will be all right.

Older: Of course, it will.

~~~~~

[At this point in the performance, Joan Jackson stands up and starts screaming.]

Joan: Sister Jacqueline is sick! She won't wake up!

Herb: Is there anyone here who can attend to Sister Jacqueline?

[A doctor goes over to Sister Jacqueline, who is asleep, face down, on the dinner table.]

Doctor: [After examining her] She is breathing normally and does not appear to be in dire straits. I think she simply had too much to drink. I suggest you place her on a bed or a couch somewhere and let her sleep it off.

Herb: That is your expert medical opinion?

Doctor: Yes.

[Sister Jacqueline is taken to a back room.]

Herb: Now we can proceed with the play.

Joan: Wait, I don't think the play should proceed.

Herb: Why not?

Joan: It's offensive.

Herb: Why is it offensive?

Joan: It is blasphemous.

Herb: Why is it blasphemous?

Joan: It insults Mandela and Cybele.

Herb: I don't see how an accurate depiction of the process by which the European people moved from the worship of Christ to the worship of the black race and Cybele can be seen as blasphemous.

Joan: It just is, and I won't let it continue. And Sister Jacqueline wouldn't let it continue if she was...

Herb: If she was awake and sober? [The audience laughs and Joan starts to sputter in red-faced rage and hysteria.]

Joan: Father Mike, I want you to stop the play.

Father Mike: I really haven't the authority to stop the performance, as Herb says, it is not blasphemous.

Joan: Then I'll stop it, I'll....

George: Joan.

Joan: What do you want?

George: I want you to sit down and shut up, you are making fool of yourself. [The audience applauds George's statement and Joan sinks to her chair in disbelief as if her pet dog has just turned on her and bitten her.]

Herb: All right then, let's pick up where we left off.

~~~~~

Act III. Scene 4.

A Protestant parsonage, next to the church. One minister, the pastor, is fifty years of age, and the other minister, the assistant pastor, is in his late twenties.

Pastor: This is great news, the Ecumenical Council of Churches has declared that Christ is no longer to be considered the Son of the living God. He has been reduced to a minor prophet.

Assistant: That is good news. Will it be announced in all the churches this Christmas Eve?

Pastor: Yes, all nativity scenes of Christ and Mary will be removed and replaced by nativity scenes of Nelson Mandela and Cybele.

Assistant: How will they be depicted?

Pastor: Mandela will be depicted as a child in a manger with Mother Cybele hovering over him, surrounded by black tribesmen.

Assistant: That sounds wonderful! Will the Orthodox churches be following suit?

Pastor: Yes, they will, but they will stick to their own dates for the Mandela-Cybele-Christmas.

Assistant: Praise be to Mandela and Cybele.

Pastor: Amen to that.

Assistant: Do you expect any resistance from the laity?

Pastor: There is always some resistance to change, but it is our job to help the people adjust to the changes in their faith. We must be gentle, but we must also be firm. We can't let them backslide into superstition and racism.

Assistant: I don't personally know of anyone who won't welcome this news.

Pastor: I know of one man.

Assistant: Who?

Pastor: My younger brother. He is forty years old, married, with four children, three boys aged nine, seven, and five, and one daughter, aged three. He never goes to church. He always puts up a nativity scene with the baby Jesus, Joseph, Mary, and the three wise men every Christmas.

Assistant: That is disgusting.

Pastor: Yes, it is. I must at least try to reason with him. I'm not looking forward to it, but I must try.

Assistant: Well, good luck, I don't envy you the task.

Pastor: Nor do I.

~~~~~

Act III. Scene 5.

It is Christmas day in the study of the offending brother. His wife and children are in the living room.

Pastor: I see you have the nativity scene out again this Christmas.

Brother: Of course.

Pastor: You know that the church frowns on such things.

Brother: What church?

Pastor: The Christian Church.

Brother: We've been all over this before. The church you serve is just an organization, it has no soul, no life.

Pastor: There is no other church outside of what we, as modern Christians, determine to be the church. And I must tell you that all the organized Christian churches, including the Orthodox churches which celebrate Christmas on a different date, have decided to dispense with the traditional nativity scene and to go with the Mandela-Cybele nativity scene.

Brother: You do what you like, but I will stay with Christ and His people.

Pastor: That is heresy, that is racism.



Brother: So be it then.

Pastor: I must warn you that...

~~~~~

[Sister Jacqueline has staggered out of the backroom where they laid her down.]

Sister Jacqueline: Stop this performance! [She has the five policemen with her as she steps out onto the stage] I won't have it, I simply won't have it.

Herb: But it's just a little historical drama depicting our transformation from the darkness of Christianity to the light of liberalism.

Sister Jacqueline: It is blasphemy, disguised as history. You are under arrest.

[The guards handcuff the archivist and place chains on his legs. As they are in the act of restraining Herb, Louisa goes up to Sister Jacqueline.]

Louisa: Sister Jacqueline, Sister Jacqueline, the snow is still coming down and I'm afraid it's going to go over that man's head.

Sister Jacqueline: Will someone shut that little brat up? [One of the black policemen strikes Louisa. She goes down as if she has been struck dead, which, in point of fact, she has been.]

Joan: [Running up to her daughter] She is dead, she is dead!

Sister Jacqueline: I'm sorry to hear that, but she should not have interfered. That is what happens when you don't obey your superiors.

Joan: I know she was wrong, but...

Sister Jacqueline: There are not buts, she was wrong and she died for it.

George: You foul, loathsome witch, I'll kill you [He rushes at Sister Jacqueline and manages to get his hands on her throat, but he is beaten down by the police officers.]

Sister Jacqueline: Chain him and him [pointing to Herb and George] outside by that idiot.

Joe Marshal: I can't believe it.

[The front door has fallen off its hinges, and the Idiot is standing in the doorway. There is no snow and no chains on Him, only a light that is neither moonlight nor candlelight, emanating from His face. Sister Jacqueline, the policemen, and the rest of the people in the restaurant simply stare at Him, too stunned to move. He goes up to Louisa and lifts her up into His arms.]

George: They've killed my daughter. [The Idiot simply raises his hand to tell George to be calm. He places his hand on Louisa's forehead for a full minute after which Louisa sits up as if she has just woken up from a nap.

Joe: I'll be damned.

Barbara: I told you, Joe, he is more than an idiot.

Herb: No, Joe is quite right. He is an Idiot. Who but an Idiot would die on the cross, descend into hell, and rise from the dead on the third day for the likes of me and thee?

George: What are you talking about?

Herb: Did you notice that you are no longer in chains?

George: That's right. And neither are you. [He takes his daughter in his arms.] But I still don't know what you are talking about.

Herb: Isaiah told us all about that Idiot:

"Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth."

Father Mike: It can't be. What about Mandela and Cybele?

Herb: Let's make this the beginning of a new old Christmas. Let us sing praises to the one and only Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world.

[Herb starts to sing "God Rest You, Merry Gentlemen." At first he sings alone but as he starts the song for the second time, everyone else joins in except Sister Jacqueline, the five policemen, and Joan Jackson, who still seem too stunned to respond to anyone or anything.]

---

Act IV. Scene 1.

Christmas Eve day, some six hours prior to the events just depicted. We are in the headquarters of a white resistance organization, somewhere in the mountains of what was once called Tennessee.

David Morgan: This will be your first Christmas here since your conversion.

John Taylor: Yes, I was part of The Christmas Carol for two straight years in Britain, but Christopher Grey orchestrated the whole production. I'm a little nervous about being in charge of this production.

Morgan: You come highly recommended, Christopher Grey said you'll do a "wonderful" job.

Taylor: I hope so. I'm sorry that you won't be able to see it.

Morgan: I'll see it on tape.

Taylor: You're filming it?

Morgan: Sure, how could we not film the directorial debut of John Taylor?

Taylor: Will you be back by Christmas day?

Morgan: Yes, if all goes well. We have a quick strike planned against an official who's been very, very aggressive in her persecution of our people. She will be celebrating Mandela-Cybele-Christmas at an ecumenical center and then eating supper at a nearby restaurant. We plan to take her there.

Taylor: Will you kill her?

Morgan: Probably not. We'll take her prisoner like we took Father Todd prisoner three years ago in that rectory where you once resided with him.

Taylor: He is still a prisoner, isn't he?

Morgan: Yes, we don't seem to be able to get through to him. He remains in that other world.

Taylor: I pray for him regularly.

Morgan: Well, there is always some hope. As for Sister Jacqueline, she will not, after tonight, sign any more death warrants against our people.

Taylor: I finally heard from Britain again.

Morgan: From Christopher Grey?

Taylor: No, I heard about Christopher Grey. Father Bontini wrote me a long letter about him.

Morgan: Please let me hear it.

Taylor: I'll condense it somewhat and leave out some of the parts not related to Christopher, but this is what Father Bontini wrote about Christopher.

~~~~~

"Christopher received a letter from Pope Francis II, the son of Pope Francis the blasphemer and the same pope who presided over the trial and condemnation of Christopher Grey a few years back, at which he received the death penalty. As you recall, Christopher escaped from his cell because of an earthquake and the aid of an angel of mercy.

"The pope's letter was an urgent plea to Christopher Grey and to Christopher Grey alone. He said that he was on his death bed and desperately wanted to hear about the 'real Jesus Christ' that Christopher Grey spoke of. He went on to say that he didn't expect Christopher to believe that he was at death's door and in need of a Christian presence at his death bed, but if Christopher could forgive him his sins, and if Christopher would trust in his word, he would like him to come to his death bed.

"I told Christopher that he shouldn't go. I told him that I thought Pope Francis II was lying, that he just wanted to get Christopher back in the hands of the Vatican authorities. Do you know what he said? He told me that, 'I suspect that he might be lying. In fact, there is a very good chance that he is lying, but I must go to him, because he might be sincere. He could be a fellow sinner who needs the comfort of our Lord at the hour of his death.'

"'But isn't there someone else who can give him that comfort?' I asked him. He just looked at me with that look of his, the look that says you have said something rather strange. 'Who among his followers, the people who have surrounded him during his pontificate, would preach Christ crucified, Christ risen to him?'

"'No one,' I answered at once.'

"'There you have it,' Christopher responded, 'I must go to Italy and to Rome itself.'

"So Christopher went to Rome to provide comfort to the dying pope. But Pope Francis II was not dying, he was alive and well. He had Christopher thrown into prison and beaten unmercifully for over a week. After seven straight days of the beatings, the Pope ordered the execution that had been held in abeyance after Christopher's escape two years ago. The execution was to be on the eighth day. The night before his execution was to take place, Christopher awoke and discovered that there was a man in his cell, who was washing his wounds with some kind of ointment.

"Christopher: Is this to make me presentable at the execution?

"Jailer: No, this was not ordered. I am not supposed to provide you with any medical treatment.

"Christopher: Then, why, my son, are you doing it?

"Jailer: Don't you remember me?

"Christopher: The light in the cell is not good, and you have just awakened me. Perhaps if you could stand in the small light by the door. [The guard obliges him] Yes, I do recognize you, you are the father of that young boy that was caught in the earthquake two years ago.

"Guard: Yes, I am the father of that child, who would have perished if you had not saved him. And I would have perished as well, because I would not have left my son trapped in the rubble, I would have stayed and died with him.

"Grey: How is your child?

"Jailer: He is a fine, healthy boy of eight years of age now.

“Grey: That is good news.

“Jailer: He is waiting for me at the White Table Inn with two friends.

“Grey: I don’t understand.

“Jailer: Much has happened inside me since that day you saved my son. Everyone that I called to for help simply kept running away. The earth trembled at our feet, and they all were afraid, thinking they would be victims of the earthquake if they didn’t take refuge on what the scientists told them was safe, solid ground, so they ignored my pleas for help. Except you. You stopped and looked at me, you knew me as the man who had, by order of the pope, beaten you while you were chained to the Vatican walls. ‘Don’t worry,’ you said as you lifted the rubble off of my son, ‘There doesn’t seem to be any broken bones.’

“Then you led us out of the center of the earthquake to solid ground. I tried to put into words how I felt, but I was speechless before you. I feel ashamed. You gave me a copy of Christ’s Gospel, in my native tongue, and told me to read it with my heart. Then you blessed me and my son and left for Britain.

“I have searched the Gospels with my heart during the last two years, and I have discovered Christ. And I have tried to provide the comfort of Christ, as you did for me, to the men and women imprisoned within the Vatican dungeons.

“Grey: Bless you for that.

“Jailer: But it is time to leave this place. My son and I, and my two friends, my late wife’s brother and cousin, are coming with us, if you’ll give us sanctuary in Britain.

“Grey: Of course, I will. Arthur’s Britain is open to all the European knights of the cross.

“Jailer: Then we shall leave this place and the Vatican death chamber will lose one of its victims.

~~~~~

#### Act IV. Scene 2.

“The jailer and his son, the jailer’s brother-in-law, the cousin of the jailer’s wife, and Christopher Grey have managed to procure a ship to take them from what was once called Brindisi, but is now called the port of Mandela, to Christian Britain. AS the others on board sleep, the jailer’s brother-in-law approaches Christopher Grey, who also is not asleep, but is standing alone on the foredeck, looking out to sea.

“Brother-in-law: I’m sorry to intrude on you.

“Grey: You are not intruding, I was just looking at the sea; it is truly beautiful.

“BIL: You English are all in love with the sea.

“Grey: Possibly, it is all around us. But I grew up in the middle of England, of farming stock.

“BIL: They say you are well over a hundred years old, so I assume that you lived in England before it became part of the Islamic Republic.

“Grey: Yes, it was before that time.

“BIL: That must have been a wonderful period of history?

“Grey: It wasn’t paradise, life was still hard, but yes, they were better times. But, my son, you haven’t come on deck to talk about the sea or about merry old England. You have something on your soul that is troubling you. Why don’t you confide in me?

“BIL: I hate the present rulers of Italy. They will countenance any cruelty, they will approve every atrocity against the white Italian people, so long as the atrocities are done in the name of the noble savages of color. That is why I wanted to

come to Britain with you and my sister's husband. But I am troubled in my heart. I don't think I belong in Christian Britain.

"Grey: Why is that, is it because of the language barrier? Because if that is all, I must tell you that we have many Britons who...

"BIL: No, it is not that.

"Grey: Then tell me, my son.

"BIL: I don't believe in Jesus Christ. I don't believe, as my brother-in-law believes, that Christ rose from the dead. How can I hope to belong in a country where people do believe that Christ rose from the dead?

"Grey: Let me ask you this. Do you want to believe that Christ rose from the dead and that all those who die believing in Christ do not really die?

"BIL: Yes, I would very much like to believe that, but I cannot believe.

"Grey: Why can't you believe?

"BIL: Because four years ago, I saw my sister waste away before my eyes. She was only 22 years old. At the hour of her death, there was no light in her eyes. And when the mortuary police came to take her body away to be cremated, my sister ceased to exist. It was the same with my wife. How can I say that I believe in the resurrection of the dead? It would be a colossal lie. Yet, I want to live in a place other than this hell on earth called Italy. So I didn't tell you, till now, that I am not a believing Christian.

"Grey: Did you ever hear of Thomas, also called Didymus?

"BIL: No, is he someone from the Bible?

"Grey: Yes.

"BIL: The Bible is banned in Italy. My brother-in-law has a copy that he has offered to share with me, but I was never interested.

"Grey: Thomas was one of the twelve apostles. You have heard of the twelve apostles who were the followers of Christ?

"BIL: Yes, I've heard of them. And I have also heard the Christ story. How He was supposed to have died on the cross and then rose from the dead.

"Grey: Well, after Christ's resurrection from the dead, He appeared to ten of the twelve apostles. Judas, of course, was missing and so was Thomas. When Thomas returned from wherever he had been, the others told him Christ had just appeared to them in the flesh. Thomas did not believe them. "But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe. And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed."

"Most of us are in the position, vis-à-vis our Lord, of Thomas. We love Him, but we can't quite believe in His resurrection from the dead.

"BIL: But some people, our people, the white Europeans, did once believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead, didn't they?

"Grey: Yes, most of the European people, prior to the 20th century, did believe that Christ rose from the dead.

"BIL: I thought so. The Vatican officials keep telling us that the churches never said that Christ rose from the dead.

“Grey: They are lying, because they no longer believe in Christ’s resurrection from the dead, they have rewritten the Christ story to make it compatible with their un-faith.

“BIL: Which is?

“Grey: The worship of the abstract collective mind of the white liberals, which is the father, the worship of the noble black savage, who is the savior, and the worship of science, which is the holy ghost.

“BIL: Yes, they do worship those three entities.

“Grey: OF course, they do.

“BIL: But how can I have faith? I don’t believe in the noble savage, but I’m afraid that I do believe, against what I would like to believe, in reason and science.

“Grey: Let me tell you a story, a true story, from my childhood. I grew up on a farm in England. My parents, as with most farmers in those days, could not afford to leave the farm. There were too many things to take care of. Twice a year they spent an evening away from the farm. Once on Christmas Eve, at a big church fest, and once at Easter. Well, it was Christmas Eve, the day before my first birthday. Yes, I was born on Christmas Day. That evening my parents left me with my fourteen year old cousin. She was a reliable young girl, who know how to take care of a baby.

“On that night she placed me in my crib and sat beside it, waiting for me to go to sleep. It was unusually warm that night for a late December evening, so the window in the bedroom was open. As my cousin went to close the window, a hawk landed on the window sill. He flew straight for my crib and perched on the side, apparently ready to strike. My cousin screamed – she was, as she said later, too paralyzed with fright to move. But Smokey, our gray and white cat, who was mainly an outside cat but was permitted inside for his meals, was not too afraid to act. He leaped on the hawk and broke his neck. Then he simply stood there with no more interest in the hawk than if it was a piece of wood.

“My cousin made much of Smokey, giving him the cream that was usually reserved for desserts, and she told the story in vivid detail when my parents came home. From that day onward, Smokey had the run of the house. And when I left the crib, Smokey slept with me in bed.

“Smokey was about four years old at the time he delivered me from the hawk. I grew up hearing about his heroic deed and we became inseparable. Then it happened, as it must happen to all those we love, humans and pets, Smokey died when I was thirteen years old. It was the first time that death, the death of someone I loved, had entered my life. I’m afraid I didn’t take it very well. No one, not my parents, nor the pastor, could console me. After my parents went to bed, I would go out to Smokey’s grave, and lay on the grave weeping and begging God to take Smokey into His Kingdom.

“One night, about four weeks after Smokey’s death, I was lying at his grave and weeping, as I did every night, when I felt a hand on my shoulder. It was an angel, and the angel had Smokey in his arms. He took my hand and placed it on Smokey’s head so that I could pet him. I felt him purring. Then the angel spoke: “It’s all right, he is with the Lord and he will be safe with Him until you come.” Then he was gone.

“BIL: Was it real, the vision you saw, or was it madness?

“Grey: It was real. I don’t know why I was vouchsafed that vision. Maybe it was because Our Lord wanted me to comfort all those who mourn, like I was comforted that night. I know I have tried to do that my entire life. And I want to comfort you. Christ is there for us and our loved ones, we, and they, do not die.

“BIL: I want to believe that. And I do, right now, in your presence, feel that it is true.

“Grey: Stay with that feeling. Stay amongst people who give you that feeling, that is what the communion of Saints entails. Will you pray with me?

“BIL: Yes.

~~~~~

Taylor: I won’t read any further, because I know you have work to do tonight.

Morgan: Yes, we do. But so do you. Good luck with the play.

Taylor: And good luck to you. May Christ be with you.

---

Act V. Scene 1.

Back at the restaurant, Sister Jacqueline has once again taken charge. The ‘Idiot’ has disappeared, and Sister Jacqueline has ordered George and his wife, their daughter, Joe Marshal and his wife, Herb, and Father Michael arrested.

Joan: Why am I being arrested?

Jacqueline: Because you were part of the trick.

Joan: I had nothing to do with any trick. It was those others [pointing to Herb and her husband] who were in on the trick. They made my daughter pretend that she was dead.

George: She was dead.

Jacqueline: Silence that man. [George is gagged]

Father Mike: I protest this treatment. I had nothing...

[At this point, David Morgan and his European dragoons enter. The policemen go for their guns and are shot and killed.]

Morgan: [Referring to the captives] Untie those people.

Jacqueline: What is the meaning of this? I forbid...

Morgan: You shall never have the power to permit or forbid anything again. Take her away. [Two of the European dragoons take her away.]

Joan: Who are those men?

Joe: It's the white underground.

Joan: Then we will all be killed.

George: I'll tell you once more and then I'll gag you – Shut up!

Morgan: [Turning to Herb] What went on here?

Herb: We had a visitor, if you'll step outside with me. [They walk to the tree, where the empty chains are still lying by the tree] I'll explain what happened here. [He motions to Barbara Marshal and Louisa.] You two might want to come along with me.

---

Act V. Scene 2.

Outside by the tree, after Herb has told David Morgan about the events of that night.

Morgan: You three saw and believed — what will be the reaction of the rest of the people?

Herb: I think it will be the same as before [He quotes from memory] “And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go. Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him. But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done. Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation. And one of them, named Caiaphas, being

the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.”

Morgan: What should be done with that woman? [referring to Joan Jackson]

Herb: I’m tempted to say leave her behind and let her be killed by the liberals she serves, but I suppose we must take her with us.

Morgan: But as a prisoner.

Herb: Yes, of course.

Morgan: What about the others?

Herb: I think her father [pointing to Louisa] has had a genuine conversion, and he can be part of the underground.

Morgan: [Looking at Barbara Marshal] What about your husband?

Barbara: Please take him with us, I think he believes, or at least he will in time.

Morgan: “Lord, I believe, help my unbelief”?

Herb: I think so. Let’s take him with us. What about Father Michael?

Morgan: He’ll have to come along too, but he’ll have to join Father Todd in prison. The members of the Sanhedrin are the hardest ones to convince. Okay, let’s pull out of here, we can still reach the mountains in time for the Christmas Eve festivities.

---

Act V. Scene 3.

The Christmas Eve performance of The Christmas Carol has ended. The white Europeans, the counterrevolutionary remnant, are gathered together. George Jackson, Louisa, Joe Marshall and his wife, and Herb Broadhurst, the former archivist, are amongst the faithful.

Morgan: Christopher Grey has asked us to sing, in fellowship with him and our brothers and sisters in Christ across the waters, “Abide with Me.”

Abide with me; fast falls the eventide;  
The darkness deepens; Lord, with me abide;  
When other helpers fail and comforts flee,  
Help of the helpless, oh, abide with me.  
Swift to its close ebbs out life’s little day;  
Earth’s joys grow dim, its glories pass away;  
Change and decay in all around I see—  
O Thou who changest not, abide with me.  
I need Thy presence every passing hour;  
What but Thy grace can foil the tempter’s pow’r?  
Who, like Thyself, my guide and stay can be?  
Through cloud and sunshine, Lord, abide with me.  
I fear no foe, with Thee at hand to bless;  
Ills have no weight, and tears no bitterness;  
Where is death’s sting? Where, grave, thy victory?  
I triumph still, if Thou abide with me.  
Hold Thou Thy cross before my closing eyes;  
Shine through the gloom and point me to the skies;  
Heav’n’s morning breaks, and earth’s vain shadows flee;  
In life, in death, O Lord, abide with me.

Morgan: Merry Christmas!

The End



## For Unto You Is Born - December 7, 2019

When the Christ-Child to this world came down,  
He left for us His throne and crown,  
He lay in a manger, all pure and fair,  
Of straw and hay His bed so bare.  
But high in heaven the star shone bright,  
And the oxen watched by the Babe that night.  
Hallelujah! Child Jesus!

Oh, come, ye sinful and ye who mourn,  
Forgetting all your sin and sadness,  
In the city of David a Child is born,  
Who doth bring us heav'nly gladness.  
Then let us to the manger go,  
To see the Christ who hath loved us so.  
Hallelujah! Child Jesus!

-Hans Christian Andersen

---

When I look at modern Europe I feel a sadness beyond sadness and an anger beyond anger. The sadness that goes beyond sadness stems from the knowledge of what has been lost, and the anger that surpasses anger is centered on the liberals who have destroyed Christian Europe. Acting with malice aforethought, the liberals have cut the European people off from their Christian past.

The modern churchman feels no sadness at that which is lost nor does he feel any anger toward the liberals. You can't mourn for what is lost if you don't believe that what was lost was of any value. Nor can you be angry with the people who destroyed your cultural heritage if you don't believe that heritage was of any worth.

If there is no sadness for our loss, if we do not weep by the rivers of Babylon, then our anger will be misdirected. That is the great tragedy of Neopaganism. The neo-pagans are one with the liberals in their hatred of Christian Europe; they do not mourn its passing, but they are angry with the liberals for not proceeding into a future designed and organized by the neo-pagans. Despite their seeming differences, the liberals, the churchmen, and the neo-pagans are in agreement about the central issue, "which was and is the question of these wars." They are united in their hatred of Christian Europe.

What I see when I look at Christian Europe, and what the liberals, the churchmen, and the neo-pagans see, is something entirely different. They are in the majority, and I am in the minority. Shall I then cede the field to them? No, I shall not, because I maintain that what I see through the eye, in contrast to what they see with the eye, is true and what they see is false. Let us bring a beautiful actress from Hollywood's golden age onto the stage. Life would be a lot simpler if the soul of a beautiful woman was in harmony with her outward beauty, but that is seldom the case. So I make no claims for Linda Darnell's spiritual beauty. She may have been a wonderful woman, or possibly something less than wonderful. That is more than I know or want to know. What I do know is that she was a radiant beauty (see *The Mark of Zorro*). That of course is my subjective opinion, based on my perception of outward womanly beauty. But someone else — I don't know who that could be — might find Linda Darnell singularly unattractive or even repulsive. By way of analogy, let us say that Christian Europe is Linda Darnell. The liberals find her repulsive and ugly, the churchmen find her too flawed according to their theory of what a beautiful woman should look like, and the neo-pagans claim she is too Jewish-looking to be considered beautiful. All three groups bid us look to the future in order to find a truly beautiful woman.

The mystical entity called the 'future' is the linchpin of the liberals', the modern clergy men's, and the neo-pagans' mind-forged world dominated by their theories of perfection. The past, filled with imperfections, must be eradicated so that the future can triumph. But what kind of future is there if we leave Christian Europe behind? "We will have a wonderful future," the champions of a science-dominated future inform us. The "You ain't seen nothing yet" of Ronald Reagan was and is the mantra of all the warring factions of futurists.

Keats said that truth was beauty and beauty was truth. Yes, that is correct. But we are still left with the question, "What is truth," because we still must determine what is beautiful. I claim that true beauty is moral beauty and that there is no greater beauty in heaven or earth than the moral beauty of Christ the Lord, as seen through the hearts that loved Him, the hearts of the antique Europeans. To look to a future based on the demonization of our Christian past, which constitutes a rejection of the beatific vision of Christ, is to look to a future devoid of faith, hope, and charity. But of course we no longer need to look to such a future, that future is here now; it is our present reality: Modern Europe is a world devoid of the

faith, the hope, and the charity that once sustained the European people when they cherished, and did not renounce, their past.

In his magnificent speech before Confederate veterans on May 31, 1904, John Sharp Williams, a U. S. Representative, praised the Southern people for keeping our European civilization alive during the so-called “reconstruction” years after the war.

But there was something else, and even a greater cause than local self-government, for which we fought. Local self-government temporarily destroyed may be recovered and ultimately retained. The other thing for which we fought is so complex in its composition, so delicate in its breath, so incomparable in its symmetry, that, being once destroyed, it is forever destroyed. This other thing for which we fought was the supremacy of the white man’s civilization in the country which he proudly claimed his own.

Then he goes on to say,

Slavery is lost, and it is certainly well for us and the public – perhaps for the negro – that it has been lost. But the real cause for which our ancestors fought back of slavery, and deemed by them to be bound up in the maintenance of slavery – to wit, the supremacy of the white man’s civilization, the supremacy of the ethical culture, which has been gradually built up through countless generations – has not been lost.

William’s speech is a two-edged sword. On the one hand, it inspires us to know that our people, white Europeans, once stood tall and fought back against the liberal leviathan. But on the other hand is the horrible fact that the Southern people who came after John Sharp Williams, and the people of all the other European nations as well, caved in to the liberal leviathan. That civilization which Williams depicted as “so complex in its composition, so delicate in its breath, so incomparable in its symmetry,” has been destroyed. What then? How should we then live if that civilization is no more? We must go deeper – that is how we shall survive. If we go to the heart of that ancient European civilization, we go to Christ the Lord.

It is certain that old Europe, championed by the Southern people during the Civil War and the reconstruction era, is no longer in existence as a civilization. It is of the past, a past that has been condemned by all the various champions of a utopian future. But if we do not try to restore that civilization by adhering to the inconsequential outer forms of that civilization, such as the democratic process, Greek philosophy, and/or the Roman legal system in church and state, but go instead to the *Dream of the Rood*, which is the real heart of Western civilization, we will be able to regain that which was lost. (1)

I do not say that we shall ever see old Europe as it once existed again. I do say that so long as two or three are gathered together in His name, in union with the antique Europeans who built a civilization consecrated to Him, then the old South, the old Europe, still lives. Lost causes only become lost when the ‘defeated’ people no longer believe in what they fought for. The Southern people, like the European people throughout the world, only lost the war with the Jacobins when they came to believe in the same faith as the Jacobins. The resistance to Jacobinism must start from within. Do we believe that we are created in the image of God or do we believe we are created in the image of the beast? If we believe the latter, then we will not restore European civilization, because the image of the beast culture is the image of the future. What is past is the ‘image of God in Man’ culture that our dear old folk of long ago built in defiance of the pagan gods of nature. Have we ‘progressed’ beyond those people? Why is the demonism of infanticide, homosexuality, feminism, and negro worship considered a progression? We have supped full of liberalism, and that hideous, foul-tasting repast has left us too spiritually stupefied to live as Europeans should live, in loving remembrance of our honored dead who rest in the arms of the Lord, and in loving remembrance of Him, the God who lives.

There is a song in the magnificent movie called *The Wonderful World of the Brothers’ Grimm* in which the children sing of Christmas Land. Our Europe was Christmas Land. There was love, honor, beauty and faith in that town. I, for one, do not intend to leave it, not ever. Which is a good place to leave off for this year.

For December 14th, December 21st, and December 28th I will post another remembrance of Christopher Grey. The next regular post will be in the New Year, January 4th. The remembrances were and still are intended as depictions of a dystopian future dominated by the liberals and their heathen allies. Tragically that future has come upon us at such an accelerated rate that the dystopia is no longer in the future, it is here. But the last word will not be spoken by the liberals and their allies. In the beginning was His word, and in the end His word shall prevail. I will dwell in Christmas Land again this year and every year, and it is my hope and prayer for thee, that you are able to dwell in Christmas Land this Christmas and in all the Christmases to come, on this earth and in His house of many mansions in heaven.

“Christmas is coming, the goose is getting fat,” — although I must admit I’ve never tasted goose —, “who’ll put a penny in an old beggar’s hat?” I will. God bless the old beggar and God bless the European remnant. Merry Christmas! +

---

(1) Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.

There He tasted death; yet God rose up again with His mighty power to help men. Then He ascended to heaven; hither again will the Lord Himself make His way to this world to seek mankind on the day of judgment, Almighty God and His angels with Him, when He who has power of judgement will judge each one according as he merits in this fleeting life. No one can be without fear there at the word the Lord says: He will ask before the multitude where the man is who for God's sake would taste bitter death, as He aforetime did on the cross; but then they will be afraid, and think little of what they begin to say to Christ. No one need be terrified there who erstwhile bears in his breast the best of signs, but each soul which desires to dwell with the Lord must through the cross seek the kingdom which is far from earth.

–*The Dream of the Rood*

---

## **The Love That Frees Us from Satan's Power - November 30, 2019**

And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise. – Luke 23: 43

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. – John 9: 35-38

---

Nathaniel Hawthorne has been and still is, if he is read at all, condemned by the modern literary critics for his obsession with one theme – the hardened heart. In such short stories as “Dr. Heidegger's Experiment,” “The Birthmark,” “Rappaccini's Daughter,” and “Ethan Brand,” Hawthorne depicts the fatal consequences of a life lived according to the scientific principles of dissection rather than the passions of the human heart. And in the *Scarlet Letter*, Hawthorne puts an exclamation point on his ‘obsession’ by making Roger Chillingworth, the wronged husband of an adulterous wife, a man who sins mortally by looking into the human heart with the eyes of a scientist, and by so doing, detaches himself from humanity. Hawthorne was not alone in his opposition to what he saw as the scientizing of man. His 19th century counterparts, Scott, Dickens, and Dostoyevsky, also saw the essence of modernity in rationality detached from humanity. And before them was Edmund Burke, who saw, in the new world order of the French Jacobins, a soulless scientific world completely opposed to the religion of Christ, who comes to men through their hearts of flesh. In science-based cultures, hearts of flesh are proscribed, because men with hearts of flesh are opposed to the progression of man from the ‘superstition’ of faith to the world of ‘enlightened’ reason.

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls the “compunctious visitings of nature” will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians and the chemists bring — the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces — dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes which are the supports of the moral world.

It certainly was not easy for the liberals to “eradicate humanity from the human breast.” Lady Macbeth tried but ultimately failed because she lacked a scientific ideology to sustain her. A modern psychiatrist would have told her that she was just realizing her human potential, by fighting against white male stereotypes about women that said women should be weak and submissive. She would have left the psychiatrist's couch and gotten a job teaching ‘women's studies’ at Stanford or Harvard. The point being that we have allowed the scientizers in church and state to replace the Christ-centered European culture of the heart that loves for the scientized culture of the mind that hates all things humane, noble, and beautiful. The liberals have labeled Burke and the European poets ‘obsessive’ while they have institutionalized their own obsessions, their passionate love of the noble savages of color, and their passionate, obsessive hatred of all things white and Christian. It is not obsession itself that is wrong, it is what a man is obsessed with that counts. And I maintain that Burke's and the great European poets' obsession with the evils of a science-based culture that views man as a glorified ape without a heart for God, was the right obsession. And if you read through the Gospels and the epistles of St. Paul, you will discover that Christ and St. Paul were also obsessed with the hardened heart.

The man of science, the psychiatrist who scientizes man, and the man of theology, the theologian who scientizes God, are one in spirit. Both see the human heart and all passions emanating from the human heart as evil. The psychiatrist sees only animality in mankind, so he declares animality to be normality and absolves mankind from sin: "I'm okay, you're okay." How can there be any sin if we are apes? Can apes sin? The theologian who damns the human in order to praise the divine is looking at man with the same eyes as the psychiatrist. He sees nothing worthy of redemption in the human heart, so he places that worthless entity aside and looks to his own mind, his science-trained mind, to guide the beasts called men toward the light of his vision of heaven, which is really a vision of hell, a scientized, inhuman laboratory of test tubes with the distilled essence of brain cells in them.

The scientific view of existence which says everything is of nature and nothing is of God was promulgated to make man eased with being nothing. In exchange for eternal life, if they repented of their sins, men were told that they need not repent because there was no God before whom a man could repent. But then of course this meant there was and is no loving divine presence in our lives: We can't weep and be forgiven and share eternity with Him who died for all. Is this brave new world really superior to old Europe?

To harden one's heart against all things humane and Christian is indeed the "unpardonable sin" that Hawthorne's Ethan Brand discovers. It is the "unpardonable sin" because the man of the hardened heart does not think he needs pardon. The hard-hearted liberal and the hard-hearted metaphysician feel they are not in need of God's mercy or forgiveness because, like Shylock, they are not conscious of their own sinfulness: "What judgement shall I dread, doing no wrong?" The thinking man, the theologian, can do no wrong because he has no heart, which is where he thinks wrong resides, and the liberal thinks he can do wrong because there is no wrong, there is no sin as the antique Europeans defined it; there are only sins against liberalism, the 'racist' and 'sexist' sins.

In direct contrast to the liberals and the theologians is the good thief. He is quite conscious of his sinfulness:

And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. —Luke 23: 39-42

And then our Lord, who is still going about His Father's business even on the cross in the midst of mortal pain, says to the good thief, "Verily I say unto thee, Today shalt thou be with me in paradise." What a moment! To know that a lifetime of sin and sorrow can be turned into a victory over sin and sorrow through a heart-to-heart connection to the Suffering Servant is worth more than anything that the world of science can offer us.

We know nothing of the good thief's life apart from the moment he shared with Christ on the cross. Did he ever hear Christ speak before that moment? Perhaps he was there, possibly to pick pockets, when Christ gave His Sermon on the Mount. What we do know is that the good thief was able to recognize, in his heart, the Heart of hearts. He loved much and was forgiven. Christ does not abrogate the rites of confirmation and baptism by telling the good thief that "today shalt thou be with me in paradise." What He does is point to Himself as the Lord of those rites; they exist to place us before Him in spirit and truth, and the good thief is already there, he has received Christ in spirit and truth.

I love the good thief. The man who feels he is without sin and needs no redeemer will never know what the good thief knew – only Christ can forgive sin and heal the heart laden with sorrow, wrong, and trouble. Outside of His grace, there is no grace. The men and women of modern Europe, the liberals, have spent the "unbought grace" of life handed down to us by the antique Europeans, which they received from Christ the Lord. The liberals will never know what it feels like to be forgiven their sins, because they, in their mind-forged religion of cruelty and impiety, know themselves to be without sin. If we follow in their train we shall never hear the blessed words of forgiveness and hope that the good thief heard.

It's possible to get a Ph.D. in literature in our modern universities without ever having read a work of literature. All a literature major needs to know is the psychological theories of the literary critics. There is no need, if you want to succeed in academia, to actually read the great works of Western literature. After all, how can we expect Shakespeare, Scott, or Dickens to tell us anything about life that the scientized experts, the psychiatrists, can't tell us? I would prefer a complete ban, which is now taking place, on all the literature of the West, rather than watch the great works become mere grist in the psychological mills of the experts.

The same process of desoulment that took place in the literary circles of academia also took place in the church. Just as a man can become a Ph.D. in literature without any direct contact with literature so can a man become a Christian in good standing with his local church without having any contact with God. In fact, that is what our churchmen desire. They want the laity to empty their hearts and open up their minds to their clergymen, who will cram God into their heads. That way

nothing human gets in the way of the streamlined, scientific faith of the clergy. But what if the clergy's plan is not God's plans; what if He really does enter our lives through the human heart? (1)

Throughout the Gospel, Jesus makes the lame to walk, the blind to see, and the dead to rise again. And in the case of every miracle, the Pharisees who govern the Jewish people do not look at Christ's miracles of compassion and love, instead they focus on Christ's breaches of the law. They claim He has violated "The Law" by healing on the Sabbath. And they claim He casts out devils because He is in league with the devil. Let us bring the man born blind into the lists once again. If we are reading the Bible as little Arthur in Tom Brown's School Days read the Bible, with the belief that the men and women of the Bible were real, historical persons, we encounter, in the man born blind, a heroic example of how we must respond to His divine love. After Christ gives the man born blind his sight, the Pharisees try to deny the miracle by claiming it never occurred — it is a fraud. But the parents of the man born blind confirm that their son was indeed born blind. That is all they will say; they do not make any claims about Christ "because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue."

Having failed to discredit Christ's miracle of compassion through the parents of the man born blind, the Pharisees then go after the man himself. What happens? The man born blind refuses to back down to the Pharisees.

Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is. The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out. — John 9: 26-34

There, in that confrontation between the Pharisees and the man born blind, we see where true faith resides. The man born blind has a heart of flesh; he has the courage to defy the Pharisees because he loves the man who gave him his sight. We must realize what it meant for a Jew to be cast out of the synagogue. The life of the synagogue was everything to the Jew; without that life there was no community and no comfort in this world. But still the man born blind stands tall. "Of course he stands tall," the modern man retorts, "Christ gave him his sight." Then why don't we, the modern Europeans, stand tall? Haven't we been the recipients of an even greater miracle than the man born blind? The Man of Sorrows has borne our sins; He has given us eternal life through His sacrifice on the cross. Shouldn't that give us the courage and love to defy the modern Pharisees of Liberalism?

Our European ancestors did defy the Pharisees of science as the man born blind defied them. But the modern Europeans are only concerned with their place in the liberals' synagogue. They have forsaken the God-Man who gave them sight and life eternal. If, and that 'if' is all in all, we denounce the Pharisees of Liberalism, the Pharisees of science and theological speculation, we shall know the living God because He shall seek us out when we are cast out of the liberals' synagogue.

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth. —John 9: 36-41

The good thief, the man born blind, and the antique Europeans, were one in that which was and is essential: They had human hearts of flesh that responded to the love emanating from His divine heart. We can conquer the scientific world of Liberalism if we also, like the good thief, the man born blind, and the antique Europeans respond to His love with our renewed hearts of flesh. +

---

(1) I know it is not Christmas yet, but I want to give the reader enough time, if he or she so chooses, to read, along with their loved ones (the stories always are best read aloud amongst those we love) one or all five of the greatest Christmas stories ever written.

1. "The Shepherd Who Watched by Night" — Thomas Nelson Page

(I cannot read this story without weeping)

2. The Christmas Carol — Charles Dickens

3. The Haunted Man and the Ghost's Bargain — Charles Dickens

4. Old Christmas — by Washington Irving

5. "What Christmas Is As We Grow Older" — Charles Dickens

This last one is not a story, it is a prose poem dedicated to Him and all the living and the dead who are connected to Him through the love that is always present, but is particularly present at Christmas time.

## Forgive Us Our Trespass - November 23, 2019

Merciful Heaven,  
Thou rather with thy sharp and sulphurous bolt  
Splits the unwedgeable and gnarled oak  
Than the soft myrtle; but man, proud man,  
Dress'd in a little brief authority,  
Most ignorant of what he's most assur'd,  
His glassy essence, like an angry ape,  
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven  
As makes the angels weep; who, with our spleens,  
Would all themselves laugh mortal.

-Isabella, *Measure for Measure*

---

'Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.'

-*The Dream of the Rood*

---

By way of preface, I haven't put any links up on my blog since my removal from Word Press in April, because I don't want to bring some other blogger down who might be found guilty by his or her association with me. That is the nature of the times we live in. The European people live under the rule of the Babylonian liberals, and their rule is not a benevolent one.

At the beginning of *The Christmas Carol*, Dickens lays particular stress on the fact that Marley is dead. "There is no doubt that Marley was dead. This must be distinctly understood, or nothing wonderful can come of the story I am going to relate." I must lay 'particular stress' on the fact that the European people are a captive people living under very cruel and merciless overlords, who have allowed the devil to fill the void in their souls created when they left Christian Europe to forge a new realm, where people were 'free' of the constraints of the Man-God, Jesus Christ.

It's quite possible, even quite probable, that the European people will remain under the rule of their liberal overlords for many centuries to come. "Then why, if we are doomed to be captives of the liberals, should we bother to oppose them?" We should oppose them because men are not merely biological beings. Never let the fact that we have biological needs obscure the fact that we are of the spirit; our real need is for communion with our people and our God, in spirit and truth. And the spiritual truth of our existence here on earth is that it is better to be spiritually connected to the living God, even though we live under the rule of Babylonian liberals, then to deny our captivity and practice the same religion as the rulers of Babylon in order to appease the rulers of Babylon. Daniel was one of the Christ-bearers; it was his task to hold to the Christian faith even in the midst of Babylon. That is our task: We, as a people, must be faithful to the prophets, the apostles, and our European progenitors who kept the faith alive in spite of dungeon, fire, and sword.

It is not a good thing, the Babylonian captivity of the European people; I weep by the rivers of old Europe just as the Jews wept during their captivity by the rivers of Babylon. But we go beyond sadness to tragedy if we deny our captivity, because that denial constitutes an acceptance of all or part of the liberals' faith, a faith which will send us to hell. What did our Lord tell us? He told us to beware of those who could kill our souls; they were far more dangerous than those who could merely kill our bodies. "And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell." (Matthew 10:28) Liberalism is a soul-killing faith; we must put on the whole armor of God in order to protect ourselves against it. From whence comes the armor of God? It comes from within: "Behold the kingdom of God is within you."

I had a friend who tried to become a priest in the Novus Ordo branch of the Catholic Church, and then, when that attempt failed, managed to get ordained in a traditionalist branch of the Catholic Church. But like David Copperfield, who tried life on his own and found he liked it no better than his former life, he found that he didn't get along with the traditionalists any better than he got along with the Novus Ordo Catholics. What was the problem? Was my friend simply a trouble-maker, unable to get along with anybody? No, that was not the case. The friend in question was an unpretentious, mild-mannered man who wanted to serve Christ. "The problem was here," said my friend, pointing to his heart. "They don't have a heart for God," was the verdict of my friend. His experience with organized Christian Jewry has been my experience with organized Christian Jewry, Protestant and Catholic: The clergy have decided that Christ didn't know what He was doing when He appealed to the hearts of humble fishermen rather than to the brains of the 'smart guys' in the Sanhedrin. But Christ knew the Sanhedrin had hardened their hearts against Him; they were too smart to believe that love came down from heaven in the person of Jesus Christ.

The religious wars in Christian Europe were never wars between Christians who held to the true faith, the faith of the apostles and St. Paul. The so-called religious wars were in reality theological wars, men adhering to one mind-forged theory of God fought against other men with differing mind-forged theories of God. And when theories of God collide, the dear Christ, the Christ who enters human hearts, is left out of the picture.

Theological speculation is the root of liberalism. The devil told Adam and Eve to speculate about God. And their theorizing about God led to their betrayal of their Father who loved them in return for... what? The reason organized Christian Jewry is defenseless against the liberals is because organized Christian Jewry wants to be part of Liberalism. The churchmen would like a more moderate liberalism than their secular counterparts, but they do not want to go back to the 'stupid' faith of the antique Europeans who believed in the whole Christ story. Really, how can an intelligent man believe in talking snakes and a non-evolutionary creation of man? But if we can't trust God to tell us the truth in the beginning of the Christ story, how can we believe Him when we come to the end of the Christ story? The reason our modern churchmen have not declared war on the liberals is because they are ultimately not opposed to them; they have no heart for God, because their minds have killed their hearts. They have become like unto Uncle Silas in J. S. LeFanu's novel:

Of my wretched uncle's religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zig-zags and parallels.

Perhaps our clergymen once had a vein of sincerity in their faith, but they forgot the beginning of the Christ story. The devil always appeals to our pride of intellect. It is not 'racism' we need to worry about — au contraire, we need to be racist in that we need to love our own in order to conquer that greatest of all sins, the pride of intellect, which makes us think we can reorder God's world so it is in harmony with our reason rather than His folly. What did St. Paul mean when he said that the folly of God was greater than the wisdom of men? He was telling us that the human heart connected to the Divine heart, through love, is the truth and the way.

Charity never faileth; when we forget that, we become either cannon fodder for the liberals, or worse yet, we become liberals. Jacob Marley warned Scrooge of the chains he was forging for himself because of his hardness of heart. The European people have allowed themselves to be chained, link by link, to liberalism. And they will never break the chains of liberalism until they respond to Christ's divine condescension with the same passion that animated the prophets, the apostles, St. Paul, and the antique Europeans.

Our existence here on earth cannot be explained by science alone. How could mere biological entities create a civilization such as Christian Europe? How could mere biological entities exhibit the faith, hope, and charity of the antique Europeans? Are not such manifestations of the spirit something more than nature? Yet the liberals tell us we are not of the spirit, we are mere vegetable matter. But somehow, by a great scientific miracle, the anointed ones, the liberals who have gone beyond whiteness, beyond their God-given humanity, can build the kingdom of God on earth with the colored people of the world as their raw material. It's an absurdity on top of an absurdity, yet that is the 'scientific' reasoning of the liberals. And that 'scientific' faith has been institutionalized throughout the European world. Each incremental link of the liberal chain that binds the European people to the liberals was forged in hell, but each link was presented to the European people in the form of a perverted Christianity. Negro worship started out as civil rights. Who could be against that? But if we exempt the black race from original sin and make that race an object of worship, savage gods devoid of mercy, who is served? There is only one who is served, and that one is Satan.

Feminism started out as an organized movement to make the white male 'respect women.' The astounding assumption that the antique Europeans, particularly the Victorians, did not 'respect women' stands as an everlasting testimony to the deranged demonism of feminism. Why is the ethos of Lady Macbeth holy while the sanctity of the life-bearing and life-nurturing women of old Europe, women such as Little Dorrit, considered to be demonic? And now, we are told that heterosexuality itself, or at least white male heterosexuality, must be condemned in the name of feminism. And our churchmen acquiesce to that condemnation because it is compatible with their mind-forged Christian faith, which condemns all passions emanating from the human heart because such passions can lead a man astray. Of course reason can never lead a man astray. Is that true? We have only to look at our very rational 20th and 21st centuries to see the wonders of a mind-forged, rational, man-made world, in which human creatures, devoid of hearts of flesh, dance like puppets on strings. And it is Satan who pulls the strings.

When I was growing up, my history teachers generally led off their classes with the old maxim about the nations who didn't learn from history. Such nations, we were told, were doomed to repeat past mistakes. There is a certain amount of truth contained in the old maxim. But there must be a genuine desire to know the truth in history, otherwise the old maxim will do you no good. European history today is only used by the liberals as a battering ram to break down the last

remnants of white resistance to liberalism. They either make up 'historical' events that place the European people in the worst possible light or else they put the worst possible interpretation on an isolated part of the Europeans' history, a part that does not represent their whole history. The liberals have already come to a conclusion about the European people's past before they look into the past. The verdict was decided on before the trial of history began: The antique Europeans are guilty.

The two fatal errors of the modern historical studies of the European people are that the studies do not look at our people's whole history, and the studies do not go beyond factoid history. Our history starts in the garden of Eden and continues onward, not always upward, through the prophets who foretold of the coming of Christ, and then culminates in the Christian centuries in which our people wrestled with Satan in order to defend His realm of charity here on earth. Our sword was always the cross of Christ and our shield was always the heart that truly loved. When the academics, the new Sanhedrin, persuaded us to abandon our spiritual sword and forsake our heart's first love, we became defenseless against the wickedness and snares of the devil.

The second fatal historical error we made and still make, is that we confuse factoid history, the study of dates and outward events, for the real history. Dates and historical events are only the outer crust. To know history, we must see history through the spiritual eye, not with the material eye. Our bards are the true historians: "Poets, under various denominations of Bards, Scalds, Chroniclers, and so forth, are the first historians of all nations." (Walter Scott) The poets are the "first historians" because they tell us of the spirit behind the facts of the pedestrian, factoid historians. Our first historians, the European poets, tell us of a people who saw a great light; they saw the Word made flesh and believed in the Word made flesh. And our poets told us of a great people's battle with the devil and his minions to preserve their faith in the Word made flesh. Now our true poets tell us of the lost people, the people who have repeated the original sin of Adam and Eve. The European nations have institutionalized the pride of intellect from which flows all the sins of our modern age; they have become the hallmarks, or to be more accurate, the hell-marks, of our Western un-civilization. Negro-worship, Christian fusionism, feminism, homosexual marriage, transgenderism, and the degradation of all things humane and charitable are the fruits of the pride of intellect which dominate the European people. Only the love that once was there, our love for our people in and through Christ, not our hatred of our people in and through Satan, will kill the 'pride of intellect' culture of modern Europe and set us back on the Road to Calvary which leads us to His redemptive love and His house of many mansions. +

---

### **Rejecting the Liberals' Ghostly Bargain - November 16, 2019**

—Except this. That as they were assembled in the old Hall, by no other light than that of a great fire (having dined early), the shadows once more stole out of their hiding-places, and danced about the room, showing the children marvelous shapes and faces on the walls, and gradually changing what was real and familiar there to what was wild and magical. But that there was one thing in the Hall to which the eyes of Redlaw, and of Milly and her husband, and of the old man, and of the student, and his bride that was to be, were often turned, which the shadows did not obscure or change. Deepened in its gravity by the fire-light, and gazing from the darkness of the paneled wall like life, the sedate face in the portrait, with the beard and ruff, looked down at them from under its verdant wreath of holly, as they looked up at it, and, clear and plain below, as if a voice had uttered them, were the words: 'Lord, keep my Memory Green!' — *The Haunted Man and the Ghost's Bargain*

---

When I was a child there was no question which season was the best season of the year. It was summer. There was no school in summer, and you could do so many outdoor activities in summer that you could not do in winter. And my love of summer continued into my adulthood, because when I married and had children I enjoyed the summertime activities with my children. However, now that my children have grown, I find, much to my surprise, that the hated autumn, hated because it meant the end of summer, has become my favorite season. Physically and spiritually autumn now appeals to me more than summer. But I can still understand why so many people adore summer and do not welcome autumn. So I understood and sympathized with a young woman, about 30 years of age, standing next to me in line at a local amusement park this past August, when she said that she hated to see the end of summer. I said, "Yes, it is sad to see 'the last rose of summer.'" The woman's response surprised me.

"That is beautiful, did you just think it up?"

Now, I wasn't quoting Proust or Joyce, or some other esoteric writer of the past, I was quoting one of Thomas Moore's songs that used to be as widely known as the Beatles' Let It Be. I suppose I shouldn't have been so surprised, because I frequently encounter, in this brave new world of diversity, white people who have no knowledge of Christian Europe. Apparently a diverse education no longer extends to our spiritual progenitors, the antique Europeans. (1)

The Christian Europeans were intimately concerned with history, particularly their history, because they believed, unlike all other people, that their God had entered human history. Once you believe in the Christ story, once you have taken that



story into your heart, you can no longer view history as a cyclic process; you believe human history began in the Garden of Eden and will end with the second coming of our Lord. And in between those two events the history of every single human being is of “eternal moment,” because He has created us in His image, to share all eternity with Him or to go to hell, if we choose to go to hell. So it is of no small consequence — it is of eternal consequence — that the modern Europeans have chosen hell over His kingdom come.

There are warning labels on alcohol, cigarettes, and a good deal of our food products, but there are no warning labels on our culture. We don't see any signs in our schools — “What you learn here, if taken to heart, will send you to hell.” Nor do our churches have any warning signs as we enter — “Warning, we believe that hell is heaven and heaven is hell, abandon Christian Europe if you enter this church.” And on it goes. If the liberals were honest and forthright, they would warn people that all the major institutions of Liberalism lead us to hell, but if the liberals were honest and forthright they wouldn't be liberals. So the great lie, the lie that says the liberals' hell is really heaven, goes unchallenged.

In Christian Europe the European everyman served the King because the King served Christ. Kings who forgot their rule came from Christ frequently ceased to rule. It is quite different in Liberalism. The liberals have instituted the principles laid forth in Plato's Republic. The state does not serve God, God serves the state. So long as your religion does not conflict with the religion of the state, you may have a religion. But is such a religion really a religion if you must make your vision of God subordinate to the state's vision of God? If Christ is only invoked to condemn racism, but is not invoked to condemn negro worship, feminism and legalized abortion, is He really the same Christ that was worshipped by the antique Europeans, the Christ who rose from the dead on the third day? Of course, He isn't. That Christ, the Christ of old Europe, has been banned from the liberals' republic.

The liberals are correct, not morally correct, but tactically correct, to ban all remembrances of Christian Europe, because when a man, a European man, remembers Christian Europe, he will know what he once was, a child of God, and he will remember what he has lost, His kingdom come, by accepting a place in Liberalism. What then? He will challenge the liberals' right to rule, and that challenge, the challenge of a European imbued with the power of faith, faith in the living God, is something the liberals cannot abide, because such a challenge will mark the beginning of the end of Liberalism.

There is a Christmas story by Charles Dickens called “The Haunted Man and the Ghost's Bargain,” which should be placed on an equal footing with The Christmas Carol, but for some reason it is not as well known. In the story, the Haunted Man makes a bargain with a ghost. The ghost will give him peace of mind by removing his remembrance of all “sorrow, wrong and trouble.” Of course when the Haunted Man loses his remembrance of all sorrow, wrong and trouble, he loses all contact with humanity. He becomes a walking abstraction, unable to share in the happiness of others, whose happiness is woven in with sorrow, wrong and trouble, and unable to truly empathize with the suffering of others because he has left suffering behind. The story is so contemporary, because the plight of the Haunted Man is the plight of the European people. We have renounced incarnate Europe, we have not kept our memory of that sacred place and those blessed people green. Instead, we have become like unto the living dead — we walk through the valley of the shadow of death-in-life liberalism, completely immune to the suffering of others and the happiness that once was mixed in with the sorrow, wrong and trouble of the antique Europeans. The devil's lie rules the European people — “You can be happy here on earth; you can avoid all the sorrow, wrong and trouble found in Christ's Europe if you just follow the liberal way, which is my way.”

At first glance the modern Europeans seem one with Buddha. Didn't he and his followers believe that an intellectual detachment from suffering humanity was the key to “inner peace”? Yes, there are great similarities between Buddhism and modern liberalism, but the white race can never be exactly like any of the colored races. When whites go wrong — and there is no wrong greater than liberalism — they forge their wrong in a perverse caricature of the faith that their ancestors once held. Thus the modern Europeans are abstracted from humanity just as Buddhists are abstracted from humanity, but the modern white liberal has added a Christian's evangelical zeal to his Buddhistic abstraction from humanity. We must, the people of the liberal captivity, become abstract humanoids devoid of all humanity or the terrible swift sword of liberalism will cut us down. The Buddhist seeks to avoid evil by intellectually removing himself from it, and the liberal institutionalizes evil in order to avoid the source of all suffering, the people who saw beauty on the cross. Those people are an evil that cannot merely be avoided, they must be purged. The vision that reclaims the Haunted Man and brings him back from death in life to eternal life is the vision that has been banned from the liberals' Europe:

‘O Thou,’ he said, ‘who, through the teaching of pure love, hast graciously restored me to the memory which was the memory of Christ upon the cross, and of all the good who perished in His cause, receive my thanks, and bless her!’

It is the remembrance of the vision of Christ on the cross that restores the Haunted Man. But the Haunted Man wanted to reclaim his soul; he was not content with death in life; he wanted his humanity back. Is there any indication that the European people want their memory of Christian Europe back? Do they feel the loss of their humanity as the Haunted Man did? No, they do not. They are still wallowing in the pig slime of modernity in the hope that if they consume enough pig slime they will enter the kingdom of God on earth. Because they have no remembrance of what they once were as a

people, the Christ bearers, they have become what the science of the liberals tells them they are – mere beasts, fit for one thing, the liberals’ nightmarish world of death in life, stripped of all capacity to love God or man.

Let us put the European people’s tragic fall from grace in simple terms. Suppose there once was a young man, born of God-fearing parents who nurtured him, loved him, and gave him, through their love, an intimate knowledge of the living God. When he became an adult his parents died. At first he grieved and vowed, in his heart, to keep their memory green. And so long as he kept their memory green, he was able to love God and bear up under the sorrows and troubles of the world. But then tragedy ensued. The young man began to listen to the surrounding din of men called academics. From state pulpits and ecclesiastical pulpits they told him of the evil of his parents. They demonized such parents and commanded him and others like him to put the remembrance of their parents out of their minds and hearts and place all their hopes in the new world that the academics were forging, a world devoid of sorrow, wrong and trouble. What would we think of a young man who listened to the academics and let his remembrance of his parents die out? Wouldn’t we call such a man a moral pariah, a reprehensible coward? I would. And that is what I call the modern Europeans, moral pariahs who do not have the moral courage to challenge the liberals’ utopia in the name of the people who bequeathed to them a vision of the living God.

Never, never lose sight of the fact that the liberals’ attack on ‘racist’ whites is an attack on the living God who comes to us through our humanity. If we denounce white pietas, we denounce Him. The Lord has blessed me with many children, and they are indeed a blessing, because they have brought me closer to Christ. In loving them, I have learned so much more about His loving heart than I could ever have learned from theology or philosophy. But if I thought happiness consisted of the absence of sorrow, wrong and trouble, I would have taken the academics’ bargain and rejected fatherhood, because each and every child has increased my burden of sorrow and worry in this world. I love my children, hence I suffer because their sorrows and troubles are my sorrows and troubles. But would I have any happiness in this world, or hope of happiness in the next world, if I did not share the suffering of my loved ones? No, I would not; therefore, I reject the liberals’ bargain, the same bargain the ghost offered to the Haunted Man, a bargain he ultimately rejected. And we should all, we Europeans, reject the liberals’ ghostly bargain and return to His Europe where there is a multitude of sorrow, wrong and trouble, but where there is also the love of God, which passeth the understanding of the liberals, the creatures who have left His kingdom come in order to live in their mind-forged hell on earth.

Pietas, pietas, the passionate love of our own – that is our challenge to liberalism! We shall not yield, we shall not cease to love, even in the face of an avenging army of maniacal, liberal inquisitors who are determined to eradicate the Christian Europeans from the face of the earth. We will counter their hate with our love of Him in and through our people, of happy memory, who loved much and received His forgiveness and His blessing. +

---

(1) There are always certain gaps in every man’s or woman’s education. For instance, I was surprised to hear William F. Buckley, an educated man, confess, in his mid-sixties, that he intended to read *Moby Dick* for the first time. So you might think I am making too much of one woman’s ignorance of “’Tis the Last Rose of Summer.” But that was just one example of what I insist is the loss of something more significant than a lack of knowledge of certain European classics. That woman’s ignorance was representative of a severance, a severance from our people’s incomparable, irreplaceable moral heritage. That moral heritage, which connects us to Him, is much more important than our democratic heritage or our scientific knowledge. Nor is a mere academic knowledge of the great works of Western literature enough. We must have an organic connection to the spirit of the people who produced and loved those great works. “Lost, lost, lost,” says the evil dwarf in Scott’s *The Lay of the Last Minstrel*. And so are we if we don’t see life feelingly and reconnect with those “dear old folk from long ago.”

---

## **Lost - November 9, 2019**

Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me! You would play upon me, you would seem to know my stops, you would pluck out the heart of my mystery, you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ, yet cannot you make it speak. ‘Sblood, do you think I am easier to be play’d on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me. – *Hamlet*

---

I have never had the so-called American sympathy for the underdog. I wept when the New York Yankees lost to the ‘underdog’ Pittsburgh Pirates in the 1960 World Series. The Yankees represented to me, at that point of my childhood, all that was noble and good; they were the heirs of the Lou Gehrig Yankees. I saw the Pirates as a pack of jackals picking at the entrails of a noble lion. Of course I was placing my own fantastical construction on that World Series event, a construction that had very little basis in reality. Lou Gehrig was indeed the noblest ball player of them all, but it did not follow that the 1960 Yankees inherited his mantle of nobility. But the point I want to emphasize is that I did not and do not automatically support the underdog in the battle simply because he is the underdog. Now, if the underdog is the noble one, as was the case with David in his battle against Goliath, then I do support the underdog. However, when I see nobility

in the vilified favorite, I support the favorite. And doesn't the favorite become a kind of underdog, when he is a noble lion facing an overwhelming pack of ignoble jackals? Wasn't Maximilian the noble one in his contest against the Mexican revolutionaries? Weren't the British the noble lions in their battle against the American revolutionaries? And certainly the Cossacks who defended the Czar against the Russian Jacobins were the noblest lions of them all.

I wrote the above as a preface to what follows, because I do not want what follows to be misconstrued as an abstract defense of the underdog. What I am defending is the human personality, in all its God-given nobility, against the scientized intellects of a committee of inhuman purveyors of abstract theories, with no connection to the realities of man's spiritual life. The restoration of the misplaced Europeans of the 21st century, the 'Lost Patrol,' will take place when the European people once again side with the human personality, joined with His divine humanity, over and against the scientized committee men in church and state.

All the military men of the South, despite their noble intentions, failed to defeat the Yankees. There was one exception to that general failure — that exception was Nathan Bedford Forrest. Forrest lacked a diploma from West Point, but he had something far better than a West Point diploma, he had a genius for war as it was waged in reality rather than a theory about war that had no basis in reality. As a result Forrest never presided over a loss, and when Jefferson Davis was captured toward the end of the uncivil war, he was trying to make his way to the ranks of the man who had held the Yankees at bay for four years despite his lack of a West Point education.

Now let me move forward to the 20th century, to Reykjavík, Iceland in the year 1972. The Russian chess master and reigning World Champion, Boris Spassky, had all the advantages over Bobby Fischer. Spassky regularly played against an array of chess experts to sharpen his skills, and he played according to the book of scientific chess. Yet, the isolated genius who practiced against himself defeated Boris Spassky. It was a great victory for the human personality, the solitary genius defeating a collective body of experts. Of course it would have been an even greater victory had the United States really been a Christian nation. Then the battle would have truly been a clash between good and evil as was the case when Forrest, who was ironically called "that devil" by the demonic General Sherman, fought in defense of the Christian South against the ungodly government of the North.

The modern liberal heresy that says all that is ignoble and inhuman is good, and everything that is human and noble is evil, began, as all heresies begin, in the ranks of the Christian clergy. The clerical heretic thinks that it is easier to control men, for their own good, if you dissect them and remove all that is ungodly from their hearts. Unfortunately, or, more appropriately, tragically, the heretic soon determines that everything emanating from the human heart is ungodly, so he eliminates the human heart and commands all men to view the abstract intellect, his intellect, as their ruling principle. But when you eliminate the human heart and all the passions emanating from the human heart, you destroy man's connection to the incarnate God. If man is totally evil, if what is inside of him is irredeemable, then why did our Lord take human flesh and dwell among us? Pope Francis the blasphemer now tells us that Christ our Lord did not take human flesh and dwell among us. That is the end result of a theology that dignifies the abstract intellect of man and demonizes the human heart.

Our bards, the European poets who were attuned to the hearts of their people, have shown us the end result of a theology that is not of God, but of men. In Dickens' *Great Expectations*, Miss Havisham loves a man unworthy of love who leaves her at the altar, and as a consequence she closes her heart to all emotions and passions that reside in the human heart. She raises her adopted daughter, Estella, to despise humanity as she despises humanity. Of course tragedy ensues, and Miss Havisham dies asking Pip's forgiveness. The Grand Inquisitor in Dostoyevsky's *The Brothers Karamazov* takes the same position vis-à-vis his parishioners as Miss Havisham took toward Estella. He circumvents God's will, who wants men to seek Him in their hearts, in order to serve them better than God does. The Inquisitor eliminates the erring human heart and gives men what they need to survive in this world. But can we survive with the certainties of science, the things of this world, without something that speaks to our heart's desire to transcend the things of this world?

Is it not remarkable that the Jewish clergy, the men who were supposed to be the guardians of the faith, crucified the living God? Why, with the prophets before them, with the whole history of their people's covenant with God before them, did they reject and kill Christ? They committed that unspeakable crime because the God they worshipped was a scientized God devoid of humanity. What should have been a sign unto them of Christ's divinity, that He made the blind to see, the deaf to hear, and the lame to walk, was a sign unto them of Christ's pact with the devil. That is and always shall be the mark of the heretic. He believes whatever is humane and compassionate is evil and whatever is inhumane and cruel is godly. The Christian heretic and the liberal are one with the high priests of the Sanhedrin, the men who scientized God into a cruel, vengeful God made in the image of their minds.

If God can only be known when He is scientized, then men must be scientized as well so they can know God. When the church seemed to be at its strongest in the Middle Ages, it was in reality sowing the seeds of modernity throughout the nations of Europe. When God is scientized, when He becomes an object of study that can only be known through the

human mind, His image in man is defaced. There are always those in the ranks of the clergy who are willing to kill the humanity in man in order to purify the church of God. But if, as St. Paul tells us, the church of Christ consists of hearts that love Him, then you attack Christ's church when you demonize the human heart, because you have left the dear Christ without a place to "enter in."

Hamlet would not be "played upon" by Rosencrantz and Guildenstern as if he was a recorder. And Dostoyevsky's Underground Man said that "a man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key." Whenever we side with the men of the scientized intellects who profess to 'help' men by scientizing them, we side with the powers of darkness, because science, in the name of enlightenment, has obscured, and in many cases obliterated, His image in man.

The 20th century has produced competing ideologies of science that all lead back to the same charnel house of death-in-life liberalism. The capitalist can ignore the 14-hour a day misery of the coal miner because the 'scientific' capitalist system produces the greatest economic good for the greatest number of people, people in the aggregate, not individual people, who were and are created in the image of God. And the neo-cons can eliminate the jobs of thousands of truck drivers with the same rationale that the overlords of the coal miners used – 'It benefits mankind in the aggregate if we use machines instead of men to drive trucks.' The communist response to capitalism came from within scientism. The communists claim their system is the correct scientific solution to the bad science of the capitalists. Lost in the conflict is the man created in the image of God. There is nothing divine in the aggregate herd. The capitalists and the communists do not see His image in men with their statistics, so they think they can do what they will with their statistical human beings who have been divested of their souls, their God-given humanity.

Modern wars are now fought by one group of statistical entities against another group of statistical entities. The Novus ordo Catholics champion the scientized God of de Chardin while the traditionalists champion the scientized God of Aquinas, but in both cases, the divine humanity of Christ and the divinity in man is obscured by the scientific theologies of the religious experts.

The same conflict goes on in the secular arena. The conservatives want to conserve, through the good offices of scientific analysis, our 'democratic way of life' while the liberals want to build a new way of life based on their scientific analysis. Again, what is lost in both cases is man. Show me a conservative in the 20th or 21st century that links his conservatism to the white race. Where are the Dabneys and Fitzhughs in the ranks of the conservatives? The post-World War II conservatives simply wanted to integrate more slowly than the mad-dog liberals. And that is still the conflict today. The Republican and the Tory want to liquidate the white race at a slower rate than the mad-dogs of the various democratic parties and labor parties throughout the European nations. The scientific conservatives want a more orderly white genocide than the mad-dog liberals. That will not do. The European Christian will not consent to the sacrifice of his people on the altars of science, democracy, and diversity, because he knows that without pietas he and his people are lost: they are the people without a home in this world or the next world.

We come to God through pietas, the love of our own. If our blood ties to our kith and kin are scientized out of existence, we will lose our faith in the living God. And of course that is what has happened: the Europeans now have a scientized image of God, the natural savage, to worship instead of the living God who used to preside over our racial hearth fire. Why is it that only the white race has been ordered to give up 'racism' in the name of science? Why is it unscientific for the European people to love their own, yet it is not unscientific for the colored races to love their own? Is it because white pietas leads to His kingdom come and colored racism leads to hell on earth? Yes, that is the reason. White pietas revealed the image of God in man; it benefited white humanity and colored humanity because it allowed the dear Christ to enter into our lives. Now that white pietas has been scientized out of existence, we have seen the demise of all things good, noble, and true, and the triumph of all things ignoble, evil, and false. The mystery of existence is contained in the God-Man. When we comprehend that mystery with our non-scientific hearts, we will fight for our own with our whole heart, mind, and soul, and in that fight we will once again know and love the living God. +

---

## **A Place Beyond Science - November 2, 2019**

But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.

And it came to pass, as he sat at the table with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.

And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.

And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

—Luke 24: 29-32

---

I once read that Wilkie Collins, author of *The Moonstone* and *The Woman in White*, took laudanum to alleviate the pain of a recurring illness. Over the years he was forced to take larger and larger doses to keep the pain of his illness from overwhelming him. One day, for whatever reason — perhaps because of idle curiosity or because he had a severe headache — Collin’s manservant took less than half a dose of the laudanum that Collins took regularly. Tragically, the manservant died. That sad incident comes to my mind a lot lately, because it has a certain relevance to the spiritual sickness of the European people. The European people are still standing after taking doses of liberalism that the Europeans of 100 years ago would have been unable to absorb and still live. When liberalism, which is Satanism, comes to a civilization incrementally, the people of that civilization do not “feel the flame” — they live in hell without any perceptible knowledge of their hellish existence. The European people’s plight would not be so desperate if a foreign invader had forced them to accept the satanic principles of feminism, Islam, negro worship, and the other derivatives of liberalism as their ruling principles. If liberalism had been forced upon them, the European people could still have held onto their souls, like the Jews during the Babylonian captivity who kept the dream of their true homeland alive while suffering through their captivity. But such, unfortunately, is not the case with the European people. No enemy from without has made them accept the major tenets of liberalism. They have made all that is Satanic — feminism, the worship of the negro, and the incorporation of all faiths, save the Christian faith, into the European nations — part and parcel of their civilization. How long can such a satanic union endure? The liberals have made it their task, their exalted mission, to ensure that the union between Satan and the European people endures for all eternity. And who will say them nay? Who will refuse to be in union with the devil?

It is useless to talk about getting the proper conservative candidate to run against a left-wing candidate. There is no such thing as a conservative candidate within the context of democracy as practiced by the European people. Yet that is all the so-called conservatives talk about. “Le Pen got 35% of the vote in France, we are on our way!” Or, “The Nationalists in Britain won two seats, people are beginning to wake up!” And in our own country, it is always the next Republican candidate or some third party “populist” candidate who is going to “restore America’s greatness.” What constitutes America’s greatness? America as a nation state was never great, it was and is an abomination. But her people had greatness to the extent that they shared in the common civilization of the European people, the people who took the Word made flesh into their hearts.

A conservative must be a counter-revolutionary, or else he is merely a wolf in sheep’s clothing. Under the guise of conservatism, he perpetuates Satan’s realm, which is held together by “Give us Barabbas” democracy. There are two incorporate unions in the lives of the European people. The first incorporate union is in our past, a union formed between the European people and Christ. The second incorporate union is in our present, the incorporate union that the Europeans have made with Satan. We cannot restore anything of value by voting for candidates who remain within the liberals’ kingdom of eternal night. Something more is needed. We need to make a complete break with the liberals and the liberals’ god in order to renew our ties to His Europe and His people.

In my early twenties, for reasons I need not go into, I roamed through Europe. And during the course of my roaming, I made a very un-profound discovery: the youth of Europe were going through the same spiritual upheaval as the youth in America. They, the post-World War II generation, had left the old ‘Christ is Risen’ culture behind and were searching for something or someone to fill the void. I vividly remember a discussion I had with some young Brits who were studying at a university in London. They were all materialists in that they were either Marxists or Socialists who were not interested in anything connected to the spiritual realm of existence. In fact there was only one student, a Scot from Inverness, who was even remotely interested in something other than leftist politics. The Scot was absorbed with aliens, not aliens from other nations, but aliens from other planets. Once he made it clear that he was not Christian, the young Scotsman was tolerated by the other students. I listened to the sci-fi Scot for a while and then I stated what seemed to be obvious. Coming from the position of Shatov in Dostoyevsky’s novel *The Possessed* — “I shall believe in God” — I told the Scot that he was talking rot.

“You don’t believe in people from outer space?”

“No, I don’t.”

“What do you believe in then?”

“I believe there is only one question worth considering: Did Christ rise from the dead on the third day? If He didn’t, we should all blow our brains out, and if He did, then we should stop talking about Marxism and spacemen and follow Him.”

The hostile silence was palpable.

The 20th century was the century of spiritual laudanum. The European people were incrementally anesthetized against all things Christian. Had they been given a large dose of liberalism at the beginning of the century, had homosexual marriage, feminism, transgenderism, and fusionist Christianity been jammed down their throats in large, unhomogenized, and unadulterated amounts, they would have died outright. But they lived through the small doses, and their 21st century heirs, the creatures of the 'Christ be not risen' anti-civilization, have become the walking dead. They have a certain outward resemblance to human beings, but inwardly there is nothing; they are spiritually dead. But here is where the laudanum parable stops. Mere physical organisms die when the poison spreads. But if, as our faith tells us, we are not mere physical organisms, cannot a people who are spiritually dead return to life? Yes, it is possible, but only in and through Him. And there's the rub – our people have left the civilization of Christ is Risen for the anti-civilization of Christ be not risen. All 'restorations,' all political programs, to 'make our nation great again' are useless if we don't seek to go from here, Satan's realm of death in life, to there, His realm of charity, in which there is life eternal for all who love Him.

I had a philosophy teacher in college who was an exception to the general rule of academics at the time. He did not, like his fellow academics, attack Christ indirectly by claiming Christ's followers had misinterpreted His message. No, there was no indirection in that man of philosophy, he attacked Christ directly, claiming that His ludicrous, egotistic claim to be the Son of God had taken hold of His followers who were unable to live with His death so they invented the story of His resurrection from the dead. Wasn't that what the Sanhedrin claimed when confronted with the empty tomb? Isn't that the claim our modern anti-civilization is built upon? "Christ's resurrection from the dead is a fairy story just as Jack and the Beanstalk is a fairy story." But our people once believed that the Christ story was true. What or whom has come between them and Christ to make them leave His Europe for Satan's Europe? The degenerate playwright George Bernard Shaw identified the source of the European people's flight from Christ: It was science. Christ's resurrection from the dead was incompatible with science; therefore, since science was truth and truth was science, it followed that Christ did not rise from the dead. Christ could be kept around as a facilitator of all causes that were not in conflict with science, such as the worship of the sacred negro, but He could no longer be worshipped as the font of divine love who had redeemed mankind from sin and death through His crucifixion and His resurrection from the dead.

We can't return to a belief in Christ crucified, Christ risen, by an appeal to pragmatism. There are currently a large number of T.V. evangelists who tell their audiences that faith in Christ will bring them riches untold in this world. Is that true? Rembrandt became impoverished in his later years when he painted the Word made flesh. All the original apostles, save John, died martyrs' deaths. It does seem that the European people thrived as a people when they believed that Christ was the Son of God, but there is nothing to indicate that individual Europeans thrived in the material realm because of their faith in Christ. And we must hold all 'pastors' who suggest that we shall have financial success if we trust in Him as moral pariahs.

The appeal of science is that it can deliver the material goods that Christ cannot deliver. If you trust in science and in the men who think scientifically, you will prosper in this world. What about the next world? Well, if your clergymen blend science and faith, you may obtain a measure of hope in the next world while retaining the things of this world. But such moral juggling is from the devil. Macbeth found, to his horror, that he had traded his soul for what the devil could give him in this world, and the devil double-crossed him:

And be these juggling fiends no more believ'd  
That palter with us in a double sense,  
That keep the word of promise to our ear,  
And break it to our hope.

The devil does not love us, nor does he want our love, so he always appeals to that which is inside of us that is not of God. He seems, through the gambit of science, to have succeeded beyond his wildest dreams: he has the European people in the palm of his hand.

It's impossible to exaggerate the extent of the European people's thralldom to the devil. No appeal to something beyond the realm of science can reach them. What are we to make of such a people? Leave them to heaven. We know, as the antique Europeans knew, that there is a divine love beyond science, and that divine love has a local habitation and a name. His name is Jesus and He resides in hearts that love Him. After years of imbibing the soul-killing laudanum of liberalism, the European people have lost their heart to respond to Christ, but that should not deter us from seeking Him in the recesses of our heart. We are one with the men of the Titanic who went to their deaths, after placing the women and children in the lifeboats, singing "Nearer My God to Thee." Even if it is a cross, that leadeth me? Yes, even if it is a cross.

The end of liberalism and the beginning of a new chapter in the lives of the European people can be found in the remarkable book *Tom Brown's School Days*, written by Thomas Hughes in loving remembrance of his hero, Arnold of Rugby. In Part 2, Chapter 2, Tom, the hero of the book, discovers through the good offices of young Arthur that the Bible is

not a thing to be studied by theologians who then dispense its contents to the great unwashed in the pews, it is the living word of God that can and should be the book that those with hearts of flesh turn to in order to know the font of love.

Tom was at first utterly astonished, and almost shocked, at the sort of way in which Arthur read the book and talked about the men and women whose lives were there told. The first night they happened to fall on the chapters about the famine in Egypt, and Arthur began talking about Joseph as if he were a living statesman—just as he might have talked about Lord Grey and the Reform Bill, only that they were much more living realities to him. The book was to him, Tom saw, the most vivid and delightful history of real people, who might do right or wrong, just like any one who was walking about in Rugby—the Doctor, or the masters, or the sixth-form boys. But the astonishment soon passed off, the scales seemed to drop from his eyes, and the book became at once and for ever to him the great human and divine book, and the men and women, whom he had looked upon as something quite different from himself, became his friends and counsellors.

We once did love Him, not without cause. If I forget thee, incarnate Europe, and if I should cease to love thee... That shall never be. There is a "land of pure delight," where He resides with His people; that land, not Liberaldom, is our home. Let us vote with our hearts and leave Liberaldom for His house of many mansions. +

---

## **The Beasts of Liberaldom - October 26, 2019**

Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea. And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another. – Daniel 7: 2-3

In the 1950s and 1960s the liberals used Trotsky's racism gambit to help them undermine the last vestiges of the white European civilization in the Northern hemisphere. But by the 1970s the mere charge of racism against white Southerners and right-wingers had lost some of its sting, for the simple reason that it was hard to find individual whites who used the 'N' word and attended Ku Klux Klan rallies, so the liberals started using the term, "institutionalized racism." No longer was it just whites who used the N word and attended Ku Klux Klan rallies that were racist, it was every single white man, woman, and child who lived and breathed in nations established by white people. By their mere existence they were racist, because racism was part of white people's innermost being, a heinous disease of the spirit that could not be cured; it could only be eradicated by killing the patient. How then were the liberals going to escape the 'cure' for institutionalized racism? They would become the Elect, they would build a new civilization based on institutionalized anti-racism. And the sign of their election, which meant, in their minds, that they would not be purged along with the racist whites, was the extent of their religious fervor, the extent of their passionate hatred of all things white.

The anti-white dogma is the central dogma of the liberalism that has been institutionalized throughout the European nations. And the corollary of the anti-white dogma is the worship of the black race. We cannot effectively challenge the liberals if we do not challenge their doctrine of the sacred negro. The anti-communist conservative William Schlamme wrote that, "Communism is the final synthesis of all heretical tendencies that have pervaded western civilization for many centuries. Communism is the culminating hubris of Promethean man who reaches out for the world and means to remake creation. It is scientism gone political." Is that accurate? Well, communism is certainly a great evil. But is it the "final synthesis" of evil? Schlamme was a former communist who looked the communist Medusa in the face, so we can understand why he thought it was the final evil, but communism is a derivative of liberalism, just as Jacobinism, Americanism, Islam and Judaism were and are derivatives of liberalism. The essence of liberalism is the worship of nature and the denial of mankind's filial relationship with God. All heresies, modern and ancient, are derivatives of that first liberal revolt against God, which came about because of Satan's hatred of the living God and the human beings created in His image. Once we grasp that reality we can understand why the love of the noble black savage and the hatred of the ignoble white race is essential to liberalism. The noble black savage represents all that is good, all that is natural and pure, while the ignoble whites represent all that is unnatural and impure. Of course what is ignoble and impure is whatever Satan deems to be impure and ignoble – the people who support what is humane and Christian.

If you make communism alone your synthesis of evil, you will still be under the thrall of liberalism, which is the true synthesis of evil. Whittaker Chambers, for instance, turned from communism to American democracy and negro worship. And it is the American version of liberalism that has proved to be the longer lasting version of liberalism. When the Russian communist empire fell, the European people should have said, "We have scotched the snake, not killed it," instead of proceeding onward to a synthesis of evil that has surpassed Russian communism. Russian communism was a derivative of French Jacobinism, which was a derivative of Satan's liberal revolt against God. That revolt has been institutionalized throughout the Western world in the form of democracy, which is incremental Jacobinism. Judaism is also part of the liberal revolt; it is not the synthesis of the derivative parts of the revolt, as the neo-pagans, who are spiritually akin to Caiaphas and his Sanhedrin gang, try to make it.

What the Jewish governing body did, institutionalizing Satan's revolt against God in order to become gods, was what the democratic rulers of the Western democracies did during the era of liberty, fraternity, and equality. The people of the West

did not heed Burke's warning about the new religion of nature that the democratic fervor represented. It makes a difference if we are ruled by sophisters, economists, and calculators committed to Satan's anti-Christian world of science or by men such as Alfred the Great, who had that "charity of honor," which is in the heart of every true European Christian. We "have taken too little care of this"; our souls belong to the God above nature — we cannot hide from Him in the bowels of democracy, science, and the sacred negro without participating in a second fall of man.

The various derivative branches of the liberal leviathan — democracy, negro worship, science, Islam, and Judaism — seldom mesh together as they are supposed to mesh together; the various adherents of the derivative faiths are often at war with each other. But they are one in their hatred of the God above nature and they are one in their hatred of the people who once championed that God. Thus the women of science and democracy declare, "Better rapists than racists," as they welcome the Moslem invaders, and the Roman Catholic Pontiff declares that the people of the rain forest, not Christ, are the gods we must look to. "It is nature that leads us on, there is our refuge and our strength," so say all the adherents of the derivative faiths, which are part of the great liberal revolt against God.

During the Civil War Lincoln said that we were engaged in a great war which would decide whether any nation conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal could long endure. What liberty, and what equality? It was liberty from God and the supremacy of the noble savage that Lincoln championed. For the four years of the un-Civil war and the subsequent "Reconstruction" years, the United States shifted from incremental Jacobin-liberalism to Robespierre's version of Jacobin liberalism. That period of American history, in which over a half-million whites were slaughtered in the name of democracy and equality, was just as bloody as Robespierre's reign of terror, and in both cases, the French and the American reign of terror, we were told that the terror and the bloodshed were necessary so that liberalism, the revolt against God, could long endure.

That great Civil War that Lincoln spoke of, the war to ensure that Satan would rule on earth as he does in hell, raged on into the early 20th century and did not end until the latter half of the 20th century. Now, there is no war, at least there is no war between Satan's minions and the followers of Christ. There are only internecine wars between the various branches of liberalism. It is the dream of the blaspheming liberals to bring all the warring factions together under the banner of nature and nature's god, the noble black savage, but there will always be discord in Babylon, just as there will always be discord in hell.

There is a diversity of heresies. Satan does that to ensure that "poor, bare, unaccommodated man" shall be forever seeking refuge from one heresy to another. Daniel saw the Four Beasts that were "diverse one from another," but yet he also saw that our Lord would triumph over the Beasts.

Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces.

And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings.

And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.

But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end.

And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him.

Hitherto is the end of the matter. As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart.

The Beasts of liberalism can only survive if men's minds remain attuned to Satan's promise, "Ye shall be as gods," and men's hearts remain unmoved by Christ's love. Would hearts that love embrace the Beast called democracy, especially now that the mask has been removed and we can see the satanic evil of feminism, sexual perversion, and negro worship staring us in the face? Only people who have no heart could accept such moral ugliness. The moral rot has gone too far to be expunged by voting. Liberals openly call for the torture-murder of Trump and any other white who even hints at a sympathy for anything white and humane. What can be done with people who have embraced the beasts of democracy, science, and the sacred negro? First we must weep as Ezra wept —

And at the evening sacrifice I arose up from my heaviness; and having rent my garment and my mantle, I fell upon my knees, and spread out my hands unto the LORD my God, And said, O my God, I am ashamed and blush to lift up my face to thee, my God: for our iniquities are increased over our head, and our trespass is grown up unto the heavens. —Ezra 9:5

And then we must refuse to be like unto the liberals who worship the beasts of liberalism.

When Edgar is a wretched outcast he reflects on his condition:



Yet better thus, and known to be contemn'd,  
Than, still contemn'd and flatter'd, to be worst.  
The lowest and most dejected thing of fortune  
Stands still in esperance, lives not in fear.  
The lamentable change is from the best;  
The worst returns to laughter. Welcome, then,  
Thou unsubstantial air that I embrace!  
The wretch that thou hast blown until the worst  
Owest nothing to thy blasts.

—*King Lear*

But then he sees his father, who not only is an outcast, but also has had his eyes put out.

But who comes here?  
My father, poorly led? World, world, O world!  
But thy strange mutations make us hate thee,  
Life would not yield to age.

Edgar then concludes he was wrong to say he was at the worst:

O gods! Who is't can say, "I am at the worst"?  
I am worse than e'er I was.

With that piece of wisdom before us, we cannot say that this is the worst of all possible worlds we live in. But we do live in a world that has become terribly biblical. Liberalism has provided the European people with institutionalized blasphemies and cruelties that mirror the blasphemies of Sodom and Gomorrah and the cruelties of Jezebel and her ilk. Such blasphemies and cruelties turn us to Daniel and the Book of Revelation in an effort to understand a "synthesis of evil" that is unfathomable without reference to the Bible. Daniel was deeply disturbed by his dream of the four beasts.

Hitherto is the end of the matter. As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart.

He kept the matter in his heart. That is the only way he could live in the face of that vision of evil. The living God is in Daniel's heart, and that God will sustain Daniel in the face of a horrific synthesis of evil that will consume the man who has not taken God into his heart. We, the modern Europeans who are staring the beasts of Liberalism in the face, will not be able to live in the face of that horror if we do not take the Suffering Servant into our hearts. There is no philosophy, no intellectual construct that can sustain us against the beasts of Liberalism. The darkness, the horror, of liberalism has become so widespread, so pervasive, that a man is forced to take refuge in one of the derivative branches of liberalism that seem least offensive, or else he must go deeper, to the heart of Europe where the Savior dwells.

If we can't believe that Christ was at the center of the antique Europeans' civilization, then to whom or what do we turn? If we don't believe that the antique Europeans' faith and the virtues stemming from their faith were real, then what is real? Is there no such thing as Christian women, women who have a special gift for nurturing and caring for children? Is there no such thing as men who feel bound to defend the weak and helpless and fight for their kith and kin? Is there no such thing as honor, charity, and love? "No, there isn't," the united beasts of Liberalism proclaim, "There is no charity, honor, or love, and there is no Savior." The four beasts, the beasts of Liberalism, are upon us. Listen to what the liberals say, look at what they do. Are we not, when in the presence of liberals, amongst creatures from hell with no vestiges left of the humanity that was once the mark of a European? First we weep and pray as Ezra did. Then we vow to keep the living God in our heart, as Daniel did. In the two books that tell us of the Great War with the beasts of liberalism, Daniel and the Book of Revelation, we are told of the only comfort there is on this earth:

"And behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last." +

---

## Love's Own Light - October 19, 2019

Whether unto grace or guilt, all must live through Him,  
Live in vital joy, or live in dying woe:  
Death in Adam, life in Christ; the curse hung upon the cross:  
Who art thou that heedest of redemption, as narrower than the fall:  
All were dead,—He died for all; that living, they might love:  
If living souls withhold their love,—still, He hath died for them.

Eve stole the knowledge; Christ gave the life:  
Knowledge and life are the perquisites of soul, the privilege of man:  
Mercy stepped between, and stayed the double theft;  
God gave; and giving, bought; and buying, asketh love:  
And in such asking rendereth bliss, to all that hear and answer,  
For love with life is heaven; and life unloving, hell.

-Martin Farquhar Tupper

---

**We** cannot understand the European people outside of their Christian history. Many modern conservatives have suggested we do so, that we treat the European people as a generic people who can be studied and probed in order to be cured, without ever considering their past history. But this is akin to the doctor who treats a patient for an illness without taking the patient's medical history into account. We must take the European people's Christian past into account if we are going to effectively eliminate the wasting disease, the disease of liberalism, which is killing them.

Satan countered God's creation of man with a successful coup d'état in the Garden of Eden. He appealed to Adam and Eve's pride of intellect in order to get them to renounce their filial relationship with God. They were told to forget the fairy tale about the tree with the forbidden fruit and embrace the reality of man's intellect responding to and controlling cosmic nature. That coup d'état of Satan was countered by the incarnation of Christ, His subsequent death on the cross, and His resurrection from the dead. If you are Satan, how do you nullify Christ's divine act of mercy? You do what you did before, you appeal to man's pride of intellect.

The man who worships his own intellect has no room in his heart for the living God. Upon that principle, Satan has built his church, and he maintains that church by continually denigrating all human feelings that reside in the human heart. When we understand this stratagem of the devil, we can understand why the scholastic movement, the scientific study of God, is from the devil. The humane God, the living God who took flesh and dwelt among us, can only be known through the human heart. When the Catholic and the Protestant scholastics demonized the human heart in order to deify their intellects, they cut the European people off from God. We, like the Ancient Mariner, were cut adrift from the font of love:

Alone on a wide, wide sea,  
So lonely 'twas that God himself  
Scarce seemed there to be.

Pope Francis the blasphemer was recently reported as saying that Jesus Christ was not the Son of God. You can dismiss Pope Francis as an isolated madman who doesn't know what he is saying, but I do not see isolated madness in Pope Francis; I see the logical, maniacal, satanic madness of our age behind the anti-Christian ravings of Francis the blasphemer. What is the essence of our modern civilization? It is the pride of intellect, or to be more accurate, it is the pride of science. If you believe in the Christ story in its entirety – the creation of the world in seven days, the creation of man in the image of God, man's fall from grace in the Garden of Eden, and Christ's mission of divine mercy that was completed when He rose from the dead on the third day – you place yourself among the stupid people, the unscientific people who believe in fairy tales. Balzac summed up the essence of modernity when he remarked that, "In Paris if you tell a man he has a good heart, it is the same as telling him he is as stupid as a rhinoceros." Yes, that expresses the issue quite succinctly. The antique Europeans, when viewed scientifically, are stupid. They believed, quite literally, in the Christ story.

The liberals' worship of the negro is not based on a belief in the intrinsic worth of individual members of that race. In fact any time a person of color demonstrates a sympathy for the intrinsic moral value of the white people's ancient civilization, he is condemned by the liberals. What the liberals worship when they worship the blacks is their own intellects. They are proving their superior 'intelligence' by worshipping that which is antithetical to the older, 'stupid' civilization of the white Europeans; they have made what is natural, the noble savage, their God. In their natural religion, racism, which is really white pietas, has become synonymous with stupidity. And who among us wants to be regarded as stupid? Isn't intelligence the sign of our election? But what is the essence of our election? To what and to whom are we connected when we enter the ranks of the illuminated men of intellect who have rejected the living God? We are connected to the liberals' world, which is without faith, hope, and charity, and we are united to him whom the liberals serve – the proud angel of science, Lucifer.

When we reject the stupid and unscientific faith of the antique Europeans, we are back with the Athenians whom St. Paul confronted. They were men who "spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing." They considered themselves to be the illuminati, the intelligent ones, yet St. Paul calls them ignorant:

Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, To The Unknown God. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

The modern Europeans have decided in favor of the ignorant Athenians; they have proclaimed their intelligence by rejecting the stupidity of St. Paul. Surely such intelligence makes the angels weep and places a sword in the heart of our Lord. But what is that to the liberals, who do not believe in the divine humanity of Jesus Christ?

A common theme in 'Christian' circles is to emphasize the similarities between Christianity and the other faiths such as Islam, Judaism, Hinduism, Buddhism, etc. But those 'faiths' are non-faiths, based on a rejection of the living God. When 'conservatives' such as Peter Kreeft recommend that Christians unite with the Jews and Moslems against liberalism, they reveal their own non-faith. Liberalism is the synthesis of all the non-Christian faiths; what they have in common with liberalism, a hatred of the God who took human flesh, makes their devotees the kissing cousins of the liberals. They will never unite with a European Christian; it is only Christian apostates who can make common cause with the liberals and the heathen faiths. Of course they can only be called apostates from the standpoint of the antique Europeans. If they got it right, if the faith they held in their hearts was the true Gospel of Christ, then the modern Christians who seek to fuse Christ with science, democracy, Judaism, Islam, and negro worship are wrong.

St. Paul was and is the saint for all people, but he is most particularly the saint for the European people. He represents our people at their best, when they loved much and would not compromise on that which was essential – faith in Christ and Christ alone as our salvation. St. Paul was not a theologian, he was something far greater: he was a poet of the spirit. With a passion emanating from a heart on fire with the love of Christ, he preached before the Athenians, the Romans, and the Jews, that Jesus Christ was the Son of the living God. It was not St. Paul's belief in God that made the Athenians laugh at him and the Romans and the Jews persecute him. All those pagans, even the Athenians, believed in some kind of God. It was Paul's claim that Christ was the Son of God, which placed him at odds with the world. He found himself in the same position as Christ before the Sanhedrin, when Christ made it clear to Caiaphas that He was the Son of God. Was it madness that made Paul think he saw the risen Lord on the road to Damascus? Our people did not think so when they built a civilization based on St. Paul's assertion that the folly of God was greater than the wisdom of men. And that really is the crux of the matter. Christ's wisdom was not and is not the wisdom of this world. Faith in Him cannot be reconciled to any of the faiths – Judaism, Islam, or liberalism, which emanate from the natural world. Christ's love passeth the understanding of any mind-forged system of men. But does His love passeth the understanding of the human heart? St. Paul enjoined us to search the Scriptures with our hearts because in that union, that of the Word made flesh with hearts of flesh, is the consummation devoutly to be wished, the consummation of Christ with His people.

The story of the European people is not finished. We now live in hell, but we can climb out of hell if we cease to fuse the gods of liberalism with Christ. That was the key to St. Paul's strength of faith. He was not a fusionist. When I worked in academia, I took note of the fact that very, very few of the academicians attacked Christ directly. None, of course, believed He was the Son of God, but they left Him alone as a figure of hatred. Like Francis the blasphemer, they generally regarded Christ as a good guy. It was St. Paul who earned their wrath and their hatred. Paul did not say anything about Christ that Christ did not say of Himself, but somehow the liberal academics managed to dismiss Christ's claim to be the Son of God as a later addition, an addition of St. Paul. Bless that unclubbable, unrelenting Apostle of Christ crucified, Christ risen! Our Apostle did not compromise with liberalism, and because he did not compromise, our people were able to know and love Christ. Why are we now too intelligent to believe in St. Paul's vision of the risen Lord?

Four authors that I keep coming back to again and again for spiritual sustenance are William Shakespeare, Walter Scott, Charles Dickens, and Edmund Burke. I find in those authors the true Christian mysticism that St. Paul writes about in I Corinthians 13, "charity never faileth." At the heart of our ancient civilization is that undefinable entity called charity. It was the belief of St. Paul that charity was the primary attribute of the God who took flesh and dwelt among us, and it was the belief of my people, the antique Europeans, that they were most like unto God when they practiced charity, not when they sought to rival God by out-thinking Him. The triumph of liberalism has resulted in the end of charity. Yes, we still have what are called 'charitable institutions,' but what the liberals call charity is not the charity that St. Paul spoke of. He spoke of Christ as the connection between human hearts and true charity. When our incarnate Lord is cast aside and what is inside the human heart is demonized, there can be no genuine charity. In fact, what is charitable becomes satanic. It is now 'charitable' to kill babies in the womb lest a young woman's life becomes damaged due to an unwanted pregnancy. And it is now 'charitable' to stand by while the creatures of color from without and within the white nations murder, rape, and assault white people. Never mistake His reign of charity for their reign of Satan.

St. Augustine placed a wedge between Christ and his people when he declared that there was the city of God, which was the church of enlightened minds, and there was the city of man, which consisted of the barbarians from the fens and bogs of Europe. But is St. Augustine's church the Church? Those 'barbarous' Europeans took Christ into their hearts and made Him the Alpha and Omega of their civilization. Throughout the Christian centuries of European history, the theologians

have clung to the Augustinian view of the church. “The hearts of the faithful are sinful, but the minds of the theologians are pure. Isn’t that obvious?” No, it is not obvious to me. The theologians’ focus has been on the sins of the Europeans, which are no different than the sins of the pagans; therefore, the theologians tell us, we must look to them to escape the desolation of sin and destruction. But there is something different about the Christian Europeans which is quite obvious to those who see through, not with the eye. The Europeans had, when they were a Christian people, that which no other people before or since have possessed. They had the faith, hope, and above all, charity, that comes from touching the heart of God. You can’t acquire that faith, hope, and charity by thinking ‘correctly,’ in the mode of Aristotle and Plato. You can only come to that inner vision, that faith, by committing to the heart of God as St. Paul did and our people, the ancient Europeans, did. The theologians and the philosophers of the West, as Fitzhugh tells us, have been “so busy with the worst features of human nature (the Europeans’ human nature) that they have not even found a name for their better feature.” The managerial Christians of yesterday and today have taken it upon themselves to ‘fix’ the faithful. And when you set out to ‘fix’ people you focus on what is wrong with them. The problem with such a cold, scientific approach to human souls is that the Mr. and Mrs. Fixits often become like unto the scientist in Hawthorne’s short story “The Birthmark”:

In those days when the comparatively recent discovery of electricity and other kindred mysteries of Nature seemed to open paths into the region of miracle, it was not unusual for the love of science to rival the love of woman in its depth and absorbing energy. The higher intellect, the imagination, the spirit, and even the heart might all find their congenial aliment in pursuits which, as some of their ardent votaries believed, would ascend from one step of powerful intelligence to another, until the philosopher should lay his hand on the secret of creative force and perhaps make new worlds for himself. We know not whether Aylmer possessed the degree of faith in man’s ultimate control over Nature. He had devoted himself, however, too unreservedly to scientific studies ever to be weaned from them by any second passion. His love for his young wife might prove the stronger of the two; but it could only be by intertwining itself with his love of science, and uniting the strength of the latter to his own.

Of course we know how the story ends. Aylmer becomes obsessed with a birthmark upon his wife’s cheek, and in attempting to eradicate the birthmark he kills his wife. The antique Europeans have been placed in the position of Aylmer’s wife. They were not perfect Christians, therefore their civilization and the heirs of their civilization must be destroyed in order to produce perfect human beings fit to live in the liberals’ kingdom of heaven on earth. The attack on whiteness will continue and intensify so long as liberals rule in the European nations, because that birthmark, the birthmark of whiteness, must be removed so that scientific mankind can progress.

I contend, against all the world if necessary, but hopefully in union with a few kindred souls, that the antique Europeans, when seen through the visionary eye, represented the ‘best feature’ of man. They were the people who saw the Word made flesh and believed in the Word made flesh. The liberals in church and state have declared war on those people and on every man, woman, and child who dares, even tangentially, to stay connected to the antique Europeans. But we will cleave to those people because our Lord dwells with them; He does not dwell in Aylmer’s laboratory of science. The greatest tragedy, the institutionalized tragedy of liberalism, is the rejection of His love in preference for the approval of Satan and his minions. +

---

### **The People without a Heart - October 12, 2019**

Oh, learn to feel from what a stock thou’rt sprung;  
Cast not, for tinsel trash and idle show,  
The precious jewel of thy worth away.

-Schiller, *William Tell*

---

The conservatives of the post-World War II era, men such as Richard Weaver and Russell Kirk, have been completely dismissed by the modern conservatives, who are not conservative. They are liberals who differ with their liberal cousins on certain economic issues, but in the main they agree with their cousins on that which is essential, the supremacy of the material realm over the spiritual realm, thus proving the truth of Burke’s prophecy about the new age that was upon us: “But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded...”

It was and remains my contention that unless we, the European people, come to see that democracy is antithetical to Christ’s reign of charity, whether it comes to us in the French or American mode, we will never break free of the liberals’ kingdom of hell on earth. “He did not die but nothing of life remained,” will continue to be our destiny. The people of color can reject incarnate Europe and continue on their merry, pagan way, but the European people cannot go back to paganism without committing suicide. Their past, unlike the past of the people of color, is inextricably bound to incarnate Europe; if they seek to sever themselves from His Europe they will become the unmen, the people without souls. Like the Man in the

Danish fairy tale, “The Man Without a Heart,” (1) the European people are now a mind and body without a heart. They live in a purely material realm of existence without the spiritual sustenance that once sustained them. They have given their hearts to the men of science and democracy. And the men of science and democracy have placed those European hearts in a science lab where they can be regulated and controlled by the superior minds of the liberals. The grazers are allowed access to their hearts when the liberal lab technicians call all the whites together to worship at the shrines of the colored heathens. Then, after the services, the Europeans’ hearts must be placed back in the science lab to prevent them from being aroused at the destruction of their people and the liberals’ attack on the living God who dwells in hearts of flesh.

The modern liberals, under the guidance of Satan, have accomplished what the Rousseaus and the Voltaires set out to do: They have convinced the European people that their salvation lies in a repudiation of their past. “If you embrace the future,” the liberals tell them, “You shall be as gods.” They will be purged of their whiteness and their souls, but that is no tragedy because sophisters, economists, and calculators have no need of a soul. Those creatures, the sophisters, economists, and calculators, must be providing the European people with something that I can’t see, because they have kept the European people in their power for the past century. I suppose – but I’m only guessing – that when a people have only known one reality, the reality of Satan’s hatred for humanity, particularly white humanity, they spend their lives trying to live and survive within that reality. That there could be a divine love at the heart of existence is now an alien concept to the European people. There is no personal love of God or man in the new Europe, there is only the impersonal love of cosmic nature, the type of love the psychiatrists call the “oceanic feeling,” that makes a man or woman feel at one with the natural world. Speaking only for myself, I must say that I have no love for nature or the cosmos – I don’t want to be one with cosmic nature – because that type of nature, dress it up how you will, is nothing but an impersonal dung heap.

The Kirk and Weaver conservatives missed that which was and is essential. Both men supported the idea of God and the idea of a godly people, but because of a philosophical avoidance of the human heart, they failed to name the particular God and the particular people necessary to sustain European civilization. Jesus Christ was and is the Word-made-flesh, He is not some vague, shadowy figure contained within the framework of something called our ‘Greco-Roman-Judeo Christian tradition.’ He is the alpha and the omega, the beginning and the end of our existence. That is what our people believed, the people who took Him into their hearts and their civilization. When He is the unchallenged King of your civilization, it is possible to simply reference your “religious tradition” without undermining your civilization. But when Christ has been dethroned by the Utopian heralds of a new civilization based on the custom and manners of Satan, you cannot simply make reference to “our heritage,” because “our heritage” has become our democratic heritage, bequeathed to us by the Voltaires and the Rousseaus. In order to exorcise the democratic demons from our society, we need to call upon our Jesus, not our ‘Greco-Roman-Judeo Christian tradition.’ If we don’t call on Him by name, the demons will declare, “Jesus we know, but we do not know the Greco-Roman-Judeo Christian tradition.” And because they do not know or fear that abstract entity, they will stay within the body of European civilization and continue to work their will upon the European people.

Richard Weaver concluded his masterwork, *Ideas Have Consequences*, with a recommendation that we take our stand on the metaphysical right of private property, which was one of the few metaphysical rights left us as a holdover from old Europe. That won’t do. The right of private property became a metaphysical right because the people who made it a metaphysical right believed that Jesus Christ was the Son of God. You can’t hold onto that right, or any other right stemming from old Europe, while holding the central issue in abeyance: Did Christ rise from the dead on the third day?

We must consider the great difference between the pagan Greco-Roman culture and the Christian European culture. If we consider rightly we will not blend the two cultures, as the intellectual conservatives do, and we will not equate Western civilization with the pagan Greeks, as men such as Victor Davis Hanson do. The pagans did not reject the living God; they never knew Him. The modern Europeans have rejected the living God, and they have built a culture based on that rejection. Think on the enormity of that crime! How can we have anything to do with liberals – how can we dialogue with them or engage in polite debate with them – when they preside over a civilization grounded in the hatred of the Light of the world?

I had a sociology professor in college who kept ranting about white people who hated change and sought to go through life safe and secure in their “white bubble.” The liberals, for all their self-proclaimed originality, are all cut from the same cloth. I have heard the “white bubble” attack ad nauseum in the last forty years, and the ‘given’ in the attack is that the whites’ culture as it once existed was evil, and to resist the destruction of European civilization is to perpetuate evil and defy the good. Instead of defending their past and stating their determination to go into the future holding onto the threads of the past, the European grazers have responded to the attack on their past by agreeing to repudiate their past. And in return for their betrayal of old Europe, the grazers hope they will be allowed to continue to graze in the fields of Liberalism, even though the grass is becoming scarcer and scarcer and is starting to taste like dirt.

The first and primary reason why we cannot repudiate our white civilization, what the liberals call our “white bubble,” is because He resides there with the people who had hearts of flesh. He does not live in modern Europe, the Europe conceived in regicide and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal as part of nature’s dung heap. But within that dung heap, by a leap of faith, we must believe that the colored races are more equal; they are the lords of the dung heap. Is this the promised end? Do we really think that the utopia of the dung heap is superior to His Kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven?

The second reason we cannot repudiate our past for a place in the liberals’ dung heap is that the liberals are liars — they will not give white people a place in their world even if they agree to leave their “white bubble.” Witness the case of Donald Trump. Has there ever been a President more vilified by the liberals than Donald Trump? No. He is hated more than Richard Nixon, who previously wore the ‘most hated’ mantle. Why the intense hatred? Is Trump unwilling to leave the “white bubble”? No, he is not. He has repeatedly, by word and deed, shown his Americanism, making ‘diversity’ one of the central tenets of his presidency. But — and herein lies the rub — Trump wants to make white people part of the liberals’ brave new utopian ‘paradise.’ And that is heresy. Whites must be destroyed, the “white bubble” must cease to exist. If you are against that religious tenet, the primary religious tenet of the liberals, you will be tied to the rock upon which Prometheus was tied, while liberal vultures peck at your liver.

An objective observer from Mars would think that a religious state dedicated to the supremacy of Satan and the eradication of European Christians would be opposed by the organized churches who profess to believe in Jesus Christ. That has not been the case. The organized Christian churches have either openly attacked Christian Europeans, which is the case with Pope Francis the blasphemer, or they have attempted to blend Christianity with Judaism in order to make it more compatible with the ethos of ‘this world only,’ which is the case with the largest branches of organized Protestant Jewry. Trump’s conversion was quite sincere, and it is natural that a man seeking water in a desert should take water from the only well he finds, but Judeo-Christianity is not the European Christianity of our European progenitors. The fusionism of Francis the blasphemer is more inclusive than the fusionism of the Judeo-Christians and the Greco-Roman-Judeo conservatives, which is why Francis the blasphemer and his cohorts have become more acceptable to the liberals than the other Christian fusionists. However, I wonder if ultimately even they, the Roman Catholic fusionists, will prove themselves to be too European for the liberals. Be that as it may, their fate is but a trifle here. What counts is the non-fusionist Europeans, the remnant band. It is hard to believe that Christ wants us to trust in Him and Him alone against all the forces of hell, but that is exactly what He does want. In life and death we have only our faith in His word to sustain us against the terror by night, the pestilence that walketh in darkness, and the destruction that wasteth at noonday. Look at all the well-planned programs of the 20th century conservatives that were designed to defeat the liberals and make the 21st century the conservatives’ century. They have all failed. The managerial conservatives of the 20th century helped to usher in the century of Satan. (2) It is Satan and his minions that now rule Europe. Why don’t we pick up the discarded sword of our non-fusionist ancestors and attack the liberals, armed only with that discarded sword? The European who forsakes all other helps save His help is the only force on earth that can defeat the liberals and their master. “When our grace we have forgot...” Do we believe that charity never faileth? If so, let us proceed to attack the liberals in His name, for charity’s sake. +

---

(1) When at home, this wise man was, as a rule, occupied with boiling, melting, and mixing the most remarkable things. One day he placed a small pot on a quaint-looking little oven, and was in the act of carrying out a very important experiment. The pot contained, namely: three drops of rat’s blood; forty drops of the juice of henbane and chelidonia; the finger of a thief, who had been hanged on the gallows; four slugs; the heart of a frog, and a bit of his own finger-nail. As soon as this began to boil, the wise man poured three drops of a green fluid into the pot. Instantly a white steam arose, spread itself above the stove, and assumed the shape of a ghost’s figure, surmounted by a large head with a pale, colorless countenance, large, round eyes, and a broad mouth.

The old sage was struck with astonishment, and wondered if this figure might, indeed, be Fortune itself.

“What do you wish for?” asked the figure, with its broad mouth.

“What do I wish for?” repeated the student. “Perfect happiness. Fortune herself is my desire.”

“Explain what you mean by Fortune,” pursued the spirit.

“Fortune,” began the other, “is a power of nature, and—“

“Be quick!” cried the ghost. “Do you wish for money?”

“No, no,” answered the wise man; “the greatest happiness is to have no heart. I wish that you would take mine from me.”

“Shall I take your heart?” asked the spirit again.

“Yes, take it, and hide it so well that it will never be found.”

—Danish Fairy & Folk Tales

(2) It was striking to me when I would read the intellectual conservatives that although they professed to be very traditional, they were proceeding under very nontraditional premises; paramount among those premises was that a man did not need his own personal kith and kin so long as he could hold onto an idea of a universal kith and kin. That did not, from my perspective, seem to be the way God had ordered our lives. But then that is the way with great planners and great thinkers: they always assume they are smarter than God.

## The Acorn and the Pumpkin

God's works are good. To prove this truth  
I need not search the world, forsooth!  
I do it by the nearest Pumpkin!  
"Fie! Fruit so large on vine so small!"  
Exclaimed one day a wise young bumpkin! "What could He mean who made us all?  
This Pumpkin here is out of place.  
If I had ordered in this case,  
Upon that oak it should have hung—  
A noble fruit as ever swung  
To grace a tree so firm and strong.  
Indeed there's been a great mistake!  
Had my opinion but been sought,  
When God set out the world to make,  
All things had then been as they ought!  
All things had then in order come!  
This Acorn for example,  
No bigger than my thumb,  
Had not disgraced a tree so ample.  
The more I think, the more I wonder!  
The Pumpkin on the oak should grow,  
The Acorn on the vine below;  
God surely made an awful blunder!"  
With such reflections proudly fraught,  
Our Sage grew tired of mighty thought,  
And threw himself on Nature's lap,  
Beneath an oak, to take a nap.  
It chanced that during his repose,  
An Acorn fell plump on his nose!  
He wakened with a mighty start;  
He shrieked and seized the injured part!  
"Oh! Oh! alas! I bleed! I bleed!  
This acorn 'twas that did the deed!  
I see that God had reasons good,  
And all His works were understood,  
For truly, what had been my woes,  
Had, then, a Pumpkin whacked my nose!"  
Thus home he went in humbler mood!

—La Fontaine

---

## The Fruits of Compromise - October 5, 2019

There is a courageous wisdom: there is also a false reptile prudence, the result not of caution but of fear. Under misfortunes it often happens that the nerves of the understanding are so relaxed, the pressing peril of the hour so completely confounds all the faculties, that no future danger can be properly provided for, can be justly estimated, can be so much as fully seen. The eye of the mind is dazzled and vanquished. An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will. This short plan of policy is the only counsel which will obtain a hearing. We plunge into a dark gulph with all the rash precipitation of fear. The nature of courage is, without a question, to be conversant with danger; but in the palpable night of their terrors, men under consternation suppose, not that it is the danger, which, by a sure instinct, calls out the courage to resist it, but that it is the courage which produces the danger. They therefore seek for a refuge from their fears in the fears themselves, and consider a temporizing meanness as the only source of safety.

—Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

---

'Tis still a dream, or else such stuff as madmen  
Tongue and brain not; either both or nothing;  
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such  
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,  
The action of my life is like it, which  
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

—Shakespeare, *Cymbeline*

---

Let me continue last week's thread: "All political revolutions are preceded by a moral revolution in the hearts of the people." Burke, and then his spiritual counterpart, Dostoyevsky, faced the brave new world of the liberals and saw the "principle of evil himself" that was and is the font of liberalism. We must fully grasp that depressing fact, but none the less true, even if it is depressing, before we can respond to liberalism as Christian Europeans should respond. "Stop! This must not go on!", Nicholas Nickleby commanded as he stepped forward and began to beat Wackford Squeers with the same cane Squeers had been beating the defenseless and crippled Smike with. I do not see, in the European people, the same righteous indignation about the evil liberals do that Nicholas Nickleby showed toward Wackford Squeers. And Wackford Squeers was a gentleman compared to the liberals; he lacked the "cold malignity" of the liberals; he could not quite descend to their level of evil.

Of course Nicholas Nickleby is a fictional character, so we can discount him and continue to capitulate to liberalism. But can we? Let us pause a moment. Nicholas Nickleby's response to evil cannot be dismissed as a mere storybook response to evil. Dickens was describing a spiritual reality. The European people, when they were a people, believed that heroes should respond to evil with the same charity of honor that Nicholas Nickleby demonstrated when he beat Wackford Squeers. Only a few heroes lived up to that creed, but the fact that a hero in old Europe was expected to fight the devil and his minions rather than debate and dialog with them indicates why old Europe, with all her imperfections, gave us a glimpse of His kingdom come while the new, improved liberal Europe gives us a foretaste of hell.

What we now find acceptable, even laudatory, has been made acceptable and laudatory by the revolution that took place in the hearts of the European people. Negro worship, legalized abortion, gay rights, feminism, and Islamic terrorism are just some of the horrors that our ancestors would have responded to with the command, "Stop! This must not go on." And then they would have acted on that command. The first outward manifestation of the liberals' moral revolution, or should we say their immoral revolution, was the French Revolution. Pure evil emerged, spewing forth from the hearts of academics – lawyers, philosophers, and theologians – and the French people did not oppose that evil.

[L]ittle did I dream that I should have lived to see such disasters fallen upon her in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour, and of cavaliers. I thought ten thousand swords must have leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened her with insult. But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators, has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever. Never, never more, shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom. The unbought grace of life, the cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honour, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil, by losing all its grossness.

–Burke, *Reflections on the Revolution in France*

Is it possible to preserve the "unbought grace of life" while enjoying the fruits of a satanic revolt against God? "Yes, it is," the incremental Jacobins of Europe proclaimed. "If you reject the extremism of Robespierre, if you grant tax-exempt status to the churches that support the liberal state, if you do everything that Robespierre did, but do it gradually and democratically, you can have the 'freedoms' and 'pleasures' Satan can give, and you can have God as well." But such a compromise is a mirage, a trick of the devil. Where your treasure lies so lies your heart. You cannot treasure the things of Satan and still retain God in your heart. That is where intellectual Christianity comes to the fore. The immoral revolution in the hearts of the European people could not have taken place if the theologians – Roman Catholic and Protestant – had not damned the human heart as impure and unchristian. If we can only approach God through the intellects of enlightened clergymen we are ultimately left to the mercy of the evil one who has no mercy, because metaphysical speculation, detached from the human heart, is Satanism. The reason our modern clergy have joined the liberals in their condemnation of the antique Europeans is because they do not think a heart of flesh is the bedrock of faith. They are pagan philosophers who are uncomfortable with the illogic of the God who took on human flesh. Thus, our past, our Christian past, has been eradicated by the liberals and the anti-European, and therefore anti-Christian, churchmen.

If the European people were one with their progenitors, they would not be the confused, cowardly creatures they now are. They are confused because they think they can actually be part of Liberaldom if they voice their disagreement with certain aspects of liberalism in polite terms. And as the mad-dog liberals become crueler, divesting themselves of all humanity, the grazers and the 'conservatives' become more polite and self-effacing. But I ask you, was Robespierre gentle to the people who were civil to him? Did civility and politeness make Stalin feel warm and gushy so that he stopped killing millions? Civility should be the byword when Christians meet to discuss how best to advance His reign of charity, it should not be the byword – in fact it should have no place at all – when we confront liberals whose stated goal is the elimination of all things white and Christian.

Civility in the face of liberalism is a cowardly betrayal of Christ. Only men who are taking the hallucinogenic drug called democracy can think that liberals will stop their murderous campaign against the white race if we, the whites, will only be



civil to them. Are they civil when they slaughter the innocents? Are they civil when they invite Moslems into the white nations to rape and murder whites? Are they civil to any white politician, such as Trump, who tries to include white people in the liberals' 'diverse' world? Civility, kindness, mercy, and above all charity, stemmed from Christian Europe. How can you expect liberals who have made the hatred of Christian Europe their reason for being, to be civil, kind, merciful, or charitable? You can't, unless you have become so spiritually anesthetized that you no longer are able to distinguish good from evil. We are back with Peter on the night they took Christ away to be crucified. "Do you know that man?" And of course Peter, with an instinct for self-preservation, denied our Lord thrice. But there is one instinct stronger than the instinct for self-preservation, an instinct that the liberals and the theologians do not believe in: the instinct to return the love bestowed upon us by the living God. Peter, after his denial of Christ, died on the cross because his loyalty to the font of love was greater than his fear of the liberals. The fear of God is the beginning of wisdom, but the love of God is the ultimate end of wisdom. We arrive at that consummation through the human heart. Do our minds tell us to deny His Europe and embrace Jacobin Europe? If that is the case, then we have no heart, because we have denied the living God who comes to us through the human heart.

It has been the self-appointed task of the 'Christian' theologians to destroy the wellsprings emanating from the hearts of the faithful so they can remain on the straight and narrow, undeterred and uninfluenced by the dangerous passions emanating from the human heart. Life is not that simple. You can't destroy the human in order to get to the divine. You must go through the labyrinth of the human heart, with all its pitfalls and temptations, in order to reach the God with the divinely human heart. Without Christ as the moral exemplar within our hearts, we are left with only our feeble minds as our moral exemplars. Which leaves us at the mercy of Satan and his minions.

I referenced Burke at the beginning of this post because what he described as the compromising spirit of his fellow Europeans toward the Jacobins – "an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will" – is what has been taking place within the ranks of 'conservatives.' The crackdown on all websites to the right of Hillary Clinton has made the 'conservatives' try to be more civil and more submissive to the liberals. But such a policy is not only immoral, it is also impractical. The liberals are possessed by the devil, they are determined to go over the cliff with the swine. They will not have anything to do with anyone remotely connected to Jesus Christ. And white Europeans were once intimately connected with Jesus Christ; therefore, white people must be eliminated. You might think you will save yourself by denouncing your past, your people who loved much, but you will then be part and parcel of Liberaldom. You too will go over the cliff with the swine. We lose everything if we seek to make peace with the liberals; we lose the battle in this world, and we lose the ultimate battle, to obtain a place in His house of many mansions.

R. L. Stevenson observed that, "a man could not vary from his faith, unless he could eradicate all memory of the past." That has happened to the European people. The liberals demonized the antique Europeans by calling white pietas 'racism' and the Christian patriarchal family 'sexism.' The churchmen went along with the liberals, jettisoning the actual flesh and blood Europeans for a new, abstract, nondescript, universalist type of Christian without the racist and sexist tendencies of the older European Christians. But such 'perfect' Christians are not Christians. They are liberals. They do not worship the God who enters human hearts, they worship the archangel Satan who enters human minds in order to tell the unfaithful that, "You shall be as gods."

Robespierre discovered that his revolution based on pure reason could not sustain itself. The people needed something for their hearts. So Robespierre went from the execution of all those who were not atheists to the execution of all those who were atheists. But his state religion was not the Christian religion, it was paganism revisited. He failed because he moved too quickly and too harshly, but his method, the blending of Christianity in many of its outward forms with the spiritual substance of paganism, was accepted, over time, by the French people and the rest of the European people. The romance of liberalism, which consists of the European people's love affair with reason, science, and the noble savage, has replaced, in the hearts of the European people, the romance of Christ crucified, Christ Risen. Why has that romance triumphed over the Christ-centered romance of old Europe? Why did Judas, who seemingly saw the same Christ as the other apostles, decide to betray Christ? Obviously there was something he failed to see. Why did Burke see "pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil" in the Jacobin regicides, while Price, Fox, and Priestley, his contemporaries, and later men such as Belloc and Sarkozy, see the triumph of good over evil in the victory of the cannibalistic regicides over the Christian monarch of France? Who are we compromising with when we try to please the liberals? Why doesn't the romance of His Europe inspire us to rise and ride? I do not understand the modern Europeans nor do I want to. Blessed are they that lived, loved, and mourned under the shadow of the cross, which once enveloped all of Europe. They are my people, which I'll keep close to my heart, for sympathy's sake. +

## The Liberals' Orphanage of Horror - September 28, 2019

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. – Edmund Burke

---

Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him. – Matthew 26: 3-4

---

I have not seen a news story from the official establishment media for over three years. There is no need to reference such 'news' sources because they are simply propaganda outlets for liberalism. The alternative news sites such as Breitbart and the Conservative Coalition provide you with much more accurate information than the propaganda 'news' of the liberals. However, even though the alternative news sites are more accurate than the mainstream ones, there is a great danger involved if we do more than dip our toes into the world of news, even if that news is gleaned from the alternative sites. Because, whether the news comes from the formal propaganda agencies of the liberal establishment or the alternative news sites, we are still swimming, or at least attempting to swim, in the moral quicksand of liberalism. We are trying to find a spiritual homeland amongst a people, the liberals, who despise the spiritual homeland of the European people. Why did "Dixie" become the national anthem of the Southern people? It became their anthem because the song spoke to their hearts, invoking the sacred image of a spiritual homeland that they could love and defend against the invader. "I'll take my stand to live and die in Dixie." All political revolutions are preceded by a moral revolution in the hearts of the people. We live under a political oligarchy opposed to all things white and Christian because the European people have given up their spiritual homeland, incarnate Europe, in return for the right to live in Liberaldom. We are now spiritual orphans, dependent on the mercies of the liberal overseers of the orphanage for our every need. Have they tended to our needs? No, they have not given us anything close to what was provided for us in incarnate Europe; they have left us bereft of everything that makes life bearable – the love of kith and kin and the love of a personal Savior greater than reason, science, and the noble savage.

The mere reportage of the atrocities that have come about under the liberals' regime of reason, science, and the noble savage does not really offer the white Everyman any hope. He must have a spiritual homeland in which he can take his stand against the liberals. In the absence of such a homeland he must make himself content in the liberals' orphanage. Which means he must anesthetize himself against his past. He must learn to hate all things white and Christian lest he be cast out of the liberal orphanage, the only home he has. It is not a real home, it is not of the spirit, but it is the only home the liberals will permit him.

In order to make the orphanage acceptable to whites as a place where they are made ready for the slaughterhouse, it was necessary to trivialize white civilization. Deep-rooted family and racial ties were replaced by a commitment to sport teams, and faith in the God-Man was replaced by the worship of the sacred negro and the cosmic force. Can such trivialities sustain a people who once believed in the God of Handel and Rembrandt? On the surface it seems like such trivialities can sustain the European people. They don't seem to need a spiritual homeland. But what is going on below the surface? The increased suicide rate among young white males, the increase in drug use, the increased addiction to sexual perversions all indicate that life in the liberals' orphanage is not what the liberals purport it to be.

Still, white people cling to their tenuous place in the liberals' orphanage. And they cling to their place in the liberals' orphanage with their whole heart, mind, and soul precisely because their place in the orphanage is so tenuous. The atrocity stories about the torture murders of whites by blacks, the mass rapes and murders of whites by Moslems, do not make the white grazers want to fight the liberals and their colored minions, it makes them divorce themselves from 'other' whites, the 'bad' whites who have brought ruin upon themselves by being too overtly white. "The good whites, like us, will be accepted in Liberaldom," is the belief of the white grazers. And as they go to the execution block they will still be hoping against hope that their benevolent liberal rulers will discover they are the good whites who do not deserve to be killed. They will never grasp the fact, because they have given their souls to Liberaldom, that all whites are evil by virtue of the fact that they are white. This is not an abstract principle to me, it is a horrific reality. My father, for instance, was a white grazer, a World War II veteran, who believed in racial diversity and the American flag. During his final illness he suffered through the living hell of a hospital committed to racial diversity, which translates to the torture of white patients through neglect in favor of the treatment of black and brown patients. Grazers never stop believing — like a mistreated dog they keep looking to their masters, the liberal overlords, fully confident they will be treated with compassion and kindness. But compassion and kindness are relics of another world, a world we have left behind for the great modern world of Liberaldom. Let us all hold hands and join in a psalm of praise to that brave new world of diversity, cruelty, and spiritual desolation.

The 'get the information to the people' alternative news sites are closing the proverbial barn door after the horses have already escaped. You must have rulers and a people with the heart to address and correct wrongs in order to get anywhere with your atrocity stories. In the Western world the rulers have created a culture in which whites are offered up for sacrifice. And they have created a culture of non-resistance to liberalism amongst the people who are being made ready for sacrifice. It will take something much more potent than alternative news sites and elections to combat the liberals' culture of white genocide.

What is that something more potent than alternative news sites and elections? Oft this stage I have repeatedly said what that something is, much to the disgust of the enemies of Christian Europe. But it is the antique Europeans who felt connected to their people and their God, in spirit and blood, who carved out a spiritual home for the European people in the midst of heathendom. The anti-Christian enemies of the antique Europeans started out as isolated figures in the halls of academia and organized Christian Jewry, until, in the American and French Revolutions, they managed to institutionalize their mind-forged religion of hatred. The rest of the European nations have followed in the footsteps of the American and French Jacobins.

The liberals institutionalize evil by damming up the channels of grace. They criminalize pietas, the love of our kith and kin, so that we cannot form an alliance with the God of mercy and love who comes to us through those ties. The better way, better than philosophy and the speaking in tongues, which St. Paul told us about, was charity. If that charity is proscribed, that charity which can only be known and then practiced by those people who have a spiritual homeland, then what becomes of the European people? They are left bereft of a homeland, they are dependent on the liberals' state-operated orphanage.

The European culture of Christ crucified, Christ risen, is now so remote to the European people that any serious presentation of that culture as an alternative to the modern liberal orphanages is met with scorn, ridicule, disbelief, and in some cases fierce persecution. One thinks of Acts 5: 40:

And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

When the liberals command us not to reference the 'racist' and 'sexist' faith of the antique Europeans, haven't we been commanded not to speak in the name of Jesus? Yes, we have been so commanded. But we shall not cease to speak of those people and their God, who is our Jesus as well as theirs.

The liberals, having forsaken the living God, have become as hard-hearted as Satan; they cannot be moved by charitable pleas to stop white genocide. Nor can the grazers be compelled to abandon their liberal orphanage. They fear the unknown world outside the orphanage walls too much. So what must be done? It appears that nothing can be done. But in this world, this liberal world of institutionalized blasphemy and cruelty, there is a narrow mountain pass in the hinterlands of Europe. That pass is guarded by griffins, dragons, and evil trolls. If a European, a third dumb brother, is willing to approach that mountain pass armed only with the charity of honor which was the distinguishing characteristic of the heroes of old Europe, he will discover that the griffins, dragons, and trolls are no match for a European knight of charity. They will fall before him. And he will then make his way through the mountain pass and destroy the dam holding back the water of pietas from flowing into the European valley. When that river once again nourishes the blighted European valleys, the liberal trolls and wizards will flee and the European people will come back to life again.

I refer to the European fairy tale of the third dumb brother, because that tale, which occurs again and again in the folklore of our people, tells us what our people learned about existence. They saw that at the heart of this world of pain and sorrow was a Heart that had overcome this world of pain and sorrow. "If the world hate thee, know that I have overcome the world." We need to see the visions and dream the dreams of our people when they had faith. If we remain in the liberals' orphanage where there are no visions of the Christ of old Europe and no dreams of the love which passeth all understanding, we will continue to be the 'death in life' people, the people without souls.

All heresies, Protestant and Catholic, stem from clergymen who seek to make the Christ of the Gospels into Caiaphas, a religious leader who set himself up in opposition to the living God of mercy and love in order to champion his own narrow, mind-forged religion of cruelty. The ideologues of liberalism, be they the American sons of liberty, French Jacobins, Russian communists, or modern liberals have made, and in the case of our modern liberals, are still making, the religion of Caiaphas their religion. Then and now the main feature of the religion of Caiaphas is the hatred of the living God. This is why the liberals must always be about the business of destroying the spiritual homeland of white people. The Europeans must never have a place from which they can take their stand, because that place, that Europe, is His Europe. But we will take our stand – Alexander Smollet is our exemplar. Wherever a European Christian lives according to His lights and defies Satan and his minions, there, on that spot of ground, is Christian Europe, our homeland.

“Now you’ll hear me. If you’ll come up one by one, unarmed, I’ll engage to clap you all in irons, and take you home to a fair trial in England. If you won’t my name is Alexander Smollett, I’ve flown my sovereign’s colours, and I’ll see you all to Davy Jones.”

We will not plead for a place in the liberals’ orphanage of horror. We will insist on an end to liberalism. There is no other alternative for the white European. The Trump and Brexit ‘victories’ are perfect examples of the futility of trying to work within the framework of the liberal orphanage in order to obtain rights for white people. The white European will never be given a place to live and work within the liberal orphanage. Let us leave that charnel house, that orphanage, and return to our spiritual homeland, which was and is, Incarnate Europe. +

---

### **Sacred Tears - September 21, 2019**

Let the tears which fell, and the broken words which were exchanged in the long close embrace between the orphans, be sacred. A father, sister, and mother, were gained, and lost, in that one moment. Joy and grief were mingled in the cup; but there were no bitter tears: for even grief itself arose so softened, and clothed in such sweet and tender recollections, that it became a solemn pleasure, and lost all character of pain.

---

Time flies even when you’re not having fun. While talking with an acquaintance who has kept up his subscription to *National Review* for the last fifty years, I realized that I had not seen an issue of the magazine in the last thirty years. In my twenties I subscribed to the magazine and also went to the library and read all the back issues dating back to the magazine’s beginnings. The book review section of *National Review* gave the reader the chance, if he took the trouble to obtain the authors’ works, to catch up on the history of the conservative movement in the 20th century.

I bring this up because my acquaintance — actually he is somewhat more than an acquaintance and less than a friend — was lamenting the fact that *National Review* has become a liberal magazine. I commiserated with him and left it at that. But I do not think that *National Review* has become a liberal magazine: I think *National Review* always was a liberal magazine. Their liberalism was rooted in their rejection of Burkean conservatism. A case in point: I cancelled my subscription to the magazine when the editors published an article titled, “Abortion: A Spirited Debate.” In the article ‘conservatives’ on both sides of the abortion issue expressed their opinions. I don’t recall all the authors, but I do recall that the prominent conservative, Ernest van den Haag, was pro-abortion. I sent off a cancellation notice to *National Review* in which I told them that the sanctity of the child in the womb was not a debatable issue and that any person or magazine that treated it as a debatable issue was not conservative. The editors replied that I was a hopeless reactionary and that I would find life awfully lonely without *National Review*. Well, I did find life awfully lonely, but I would have felt my loneliness all the more acutely had I continued to pretend I was in sympathy with the *National Review* conservatives.

What conservatives in the 20th century lacked was what Christian theology lacks: A commitment to a personal savior above the intellectual theories about God and a commitment to the preservation of a particular people who took that very particular and personal savior into their hearts. Governments, Burke asserted, were not as important as customs and manners. In fact, governments only existed to protect the immemorial customs and manners of the European people. And those customs and manners were rooted in the European people’s faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ. Any government, be it a monarchy or a republic, that failed to preserve the Christian customs and manners of the European people was not a legitimate government. The Southern conservative George Fitzhugh echoed Burke’s sentiments:

All government proceeds ab extra. Neither individuals nor societies can govern themselves, any more than the mouse can live in the exhausted receiver, or the clown lift himself by the lapel of his pantaloons. The South is governed by a healthy conservative public opinion. Had the negroes votes, the necessity would be removed, because the interest of the government class would cease to be conservative.

James Burnham, who started out his career as a Trotskyite and then became an ardent anti-communist, was typical of the 20th century conservatives. He wrote many books such as *The Struggle for the World* and *The Suicide of the West*, which were considered conservative masterpieces. But the fatal flaw of Burnham’s anti-communism was that his anti-communism was rooted in pragmatism — it was ‘this world only.’ And because it was ‘this world only,’ Burnham failed to see that there was no spiritual difference between the American democratic experiment and the Russian communist experiment. The former was incremental Jacobinism and the latter was the ‘Jacobinism now’ of the Robespierre Jacobins. The incremental Jacobinism of the American experiment in democracy has been more long-lasting than the Russian experiment, but that won’t necessarily stop the triumphant incremental Jacobins of the United States and Western Europe from becoming Robespierre Jacobins. The New Age liberals lack the caution and the patience for incremental Jacobinism. But perhaps caution and patience are no longer necessary considering the spiritually anesthetized state of the European people. The democratic zeitgeist, be it Russian communism or Western democracy, can only be resisted by a spiritual force greater than the zeitgeist of modernity. There is no such force in modern Europe.

What would it take to defeat the purveyors of modernity? It would take a people who believe that Christ rose from the dead on the third day. Such a people, when united to such a God, would have the spiritual force to resist the zeitgeist of modernity. In the absence of that spirit, all Burnham's managerial programs and the countless other programs and political pamphlets of the 20th century conservatives amount to nothing. If you diagram and codify nothingness it still remains nothingness, it does not become a spiritual force.

The managerial conservatives, such as Burnham and Tyndall, ignored that which is essential for true conservatism, faith in something or someone beyond this world, and proceeded to unveil their plans to defeat the communist enemy from without and the liberal enemy from within while standing in the quicksand of democracy. The intellectual Christians, such as Weaver and Kirk, attempted to fuse the Western philosophical tradition with Christianity and democracy. That fusion eliminated the human element, the European people, which were and are necessary to defend the faith that made Europe Christendom.

The modern liberals tell us, "We will bring you hell." Is there anything in 20th century or 21st century conservatism that can counter such creatures? No, there is not. Thomas Aird says it all in his poem, "The Devil's Dream on Mount Aksbeck": "The dreamer knew the work he marred, and felt a Fiend's delight." The devil hates Christ and His people with a passion that cannot be understood or resisted by reason alone. We must be joined to Him, who loves much, in order to understand the love that is beyond reason, which is the only force in heaven and earth that can overcome the passionate hatred of the devil and his minions.

In Shakespeare's *King Lear*, the exiled Lear brought himself and his kingdom to utter ruin because of his failure to distinguish good from evil – he cast out his good daughter and placed his confidence in his two evil daughters. This is what the 20th century conservatives did and what the 21st century conservatives are still doing. They have cast out the good – the antique Europeans – and they have kept what is evil – the purveyors of democracy and racial diversity. But Lear, once he has lost his kingdom and seen the fruits of his daughters' evil, repents of the evil he countenanced through his moral blindness. I see no such repentance in the modern conservatives. They still look to democracy as their savior.

Sometimes we are told to look to democratic Hungary and sometimes we are told to look to democratic Russia, where the democratic virus seems to be less virulent. But we will always believe a lie if we look to democracies for our salvation, even if those democracies are professed Christian democracies. Throughout Latin America and Europe, the most manically anti-white and anti-Christian parties are the Christian democratic parties. The Voltaires and the Rousseaus will always "mock on," but should we become their lackeys by continually supporting liberal regimes that have institutionalized everything that is anti-Christian and anti-European just because those regimes are democratic? What is good cannot be synonymous with what is democratic. When that satanic premise rules, every evil under the sun is countenanced – legalized abortion, gay rights, feminism, and white genocide – because those evils have been democratically legalized. There must be a moral center in our souls that passes judgement on democracy. If there isn't, if democracy is at the center of our souls, we will never oppose the devil, we will be at his mercy. And the devil has no mercy.

The Southern people did not lose the Civil War in 1864. They maintained their civilization after 1864 because they refused to accept the verdict of democracy, they refused to accept the fact that their whiteness and their Christian faith made them moral pariahs simply because a democratically elected government decided they were moral pariahs. The Southern people lost the war when they accepted a place in the liberal government in 1877, because what was implicit in their re-entry was an agreement to abide by the incremental Jacobinism of the liberal leviathan. Men such as Andrew Lytle and Donald Davidson remained spiritually unreconstructed, but the Southern people, as a people, became like unto the men and women of the North, they became grazers in the liberal fields of white oblivion. They lost their souls because they allowed the democratic process and all its attendant evils to become the moral center of their souls.

The pro-life movement, which started out as a movement to make abortion illegal, became a movement to ensure that abortion remained legal in perpetuity, because the people involved in the pro-life movement placed the democratic process at the center of their souls and left the unborn babies at the periphery of their souls, where they hovered around in a sort of limbo. The pro-life credo was not, "We will not abide the slaughter of the innocents." Instead the credo was, "We will protest the slaughter of innocents within the confines of the democratic process, but we will not protest the slaughter of the innocents outside the democratic process." To whom are you loyal when you have chosen the democratic process as your moral touchstone? Is it Christ, or is it the devil?

Writing in 1950 the great English historian Herbert Butterfield commented that as the belief in original sin died out so did the give and take, the compromise necessary in democratic politics, die out. If you believe that you as well as your political opponent are tainted with original sin, then there will be some humility. You might believe your opponent errs, but you will not believe he is beyond the ken of humanity. But when the Christian belief in original sin disappears, the liberal concept of original sin comes to the forefront. Sin is no longer endemic to the entire human race, it is now endemic to one race and one sex – the white male. Democracy writ large as in Jacobin France and the United States of America should

never be acceptable to the European conservative, but even the smaller democratic structures, the village and county democracies, cannot work when the moral center of the democratic rulers is a liberal center. Christians can vote on which policy is best to ensure the continuance of the Christian customs and manners of European civilization. But they cannot vote on the best means to advance liberalism and destroy the white Christ-bearing race. Such a vote is blasphemy just as leaving the fate of the unborn to the mercies of the democratic process and leaving Christ to the democratic mercy of the Jewish rabble (“Give us Barabbas”) is and was blasphemy.

This world has been called, quite correctly, a vale of tears. But our Lord gave us the hope that our tears, when consecrated to Him, could soften and ultimately redeem the pain of this world. That is what our Europe, which is no more, was all about. Liberalism intensifies the agony of existence by destroying the white moments of the soul, those moments on earth when we feel connected to Him and to our kith and kin. There must be something inside of us that passes judgement on the culture of democracy. We can't live in that nightmarish world where there is no light, no love, and no God. The devil's dream on Mt. Aksbeck, to mar the work of God, cannot be our dream. We are not the democratic minions of the devil, we belong to non-democratic Europe, the Europe whose people did not disdain the God who made the deaf to hear, the blind to see, and the dead to rise again. Are such things so inconsequential that we can leave His Europe behind for democratic Europe? It cannot be, nor shall it be. +

---

### **Not of the World - September 14, 2019**

While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word. – John 17: 12-20

---

The Pharisees, seeking to “entangle Him in His talk,” asked Christ, “Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?” Christ's reply shut the Pharisees' mouths. “Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.” Christ never refuses to give an answer to anyone who is seeking the truth. But He knows the Pharisees. They have already made their decision about Christ; He must die so that they can continue to reign over the Jewish people in the name of a Messiah who will come in the future. If they acknowledge Christ as the Messiah, what would become of them?

Our modern Pharisees, the liberals, have made the same determination as the ancient Pharisees. The vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen, must die so that they, the liberals, can reign in perpetuity as the heralds of a new kingdom of God on earth, which is always in the future when all white Europeans have been purged from the face of the earth. And that is what liberalism is all about. Christ must die so they can reign.

The sum total of the liberals' politics is the denial and the hatred of the living God. They must always be at war with the European people, because it was the European people who championed the living God. You can try to hold on to your “Churchianity” and avoid the persecution of the liberals by denouncing the racist and sexist antique Europeans, which is exactly what our modern “Christians” have done, but that will not stop the liberals from throwing the Judases of Churchianity into the fire with the faithful Europeans. All Europeans must die so that pharisaical liberalism can live.

The modern pharisaical liberals have done the old Hebraic liberals one better. Whereas the Hebraic Pharisees claimed to be the rulers of all that belonged to God's realm, they still needed Caesar's approval to proceed against Christ, who was a threat to their ungodly realm of ungodliness. The modern liberal Pharisees do not need Caesar's approval to move against the ungodly Europeans, because they have control of Caesar's realm and God's realm. Church and State serve the liberals in a satanic unity of thought and purpose that has made the 21st century the first non-Christian century in the European people's long history.

Even though the faith in Christ as true God and true man died out in the 20th century, there was still an ethical remnant of that faith remaining. That is why I cite the 21st century, when the ethical Christian remnant has disappeared as well as the faith from which that remnant came, as the first completely non-Christian century in the European people's history. Horrific sins such as sodomy and abortion have been institutionalized in modern pharisaical liberalism along with the blasphemy of negro worship. And it is the liberals' plan to ensure that sin and blasphemy remain at the heart of modern Europe. They have created a vast international network to keep the European people permanently in bondage to Satan and the powers of darkness. That vast international network has a non-local habitation, the European nations, and it has a name: it is called Academia.

The European people have been educated out of existence. They have been taught that racism and sexism are the unpardonable sins, which cry out to the liberal Pharisees for vengeance. Racists and sexists must be purged. So it is written, so it shall be. But the white European, whom the liberals call a racist, is in reality a man who rejects the blood and sex cults of the heathens. It would be more accurate to call such a man the last man with pietas. And the sexist? It would be more accurate to call the white sexist a patriarchal Christian – a man who believes that men and women have complementary and distinct roles in life that have been ordained by God.

Certainly the most striking aspect of John, chapter 11, is the apostle's account of the raising of Lazarus. All our lives hinge on the truth of St. John's account: "Lazarus come forth." But what happens after Christ raises Lazarus from the dead is also quite striking. St. John tells us that "many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him. But some of them went their way, to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done." It is impossible to fathom people who could witness a man's resurrection from the dead and only be concerned about the persecution and punishment of the man who performed the miracle. But such are the Pharisees and such are they that serve them. The antique Europeans were like unto the Jews who saw and believed. The modern liberals are like unto the Pharisees who wanted to kill Christ and Lazarus. And our modern churchmen are those "who went their ways to the Pharisees" in order to tell them all about the treacherous Christ who was going around destroying the pharisaical religion of the Jews. "They are racist, they are sexist," the churchmen tell the liberals. "We must destroy them," the liberals respond. "Where your treasure lies so dwells your heart." Churchmen such as Francis the blasphemer attack the antique Europeans because they, the churchmen, treasure their positions in the liberal world. If they were to champion the Christ of the antique Europeans, the Christ who raised Lazarus from the dead, they would lose the favor of the principalities and powers of this world. But what did our Lord say about this world? "For what shall it profit a man if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?" It has been the assigned task, assigned by the liberals, of organized Christian Jewry to convince their charges that a man can have this world, he can worship at the shrines of the liberals' heathen gods, and still retain his soul. Is that possible? No, it is not. We can't exchange incarnate Europe for liberal Europe and still retain our souls.

Both my parents, who were of the World War II generation, were the first members of their families to go to college. And as a consequence they were much more liberal than their parents. As the offspring of "educated" parents, I and my siblings also went to college, and as a consequence we were more liberal than our parents, because in the Western world we are taught, in school and church, that life is a progression toward the light. What is old – monarchies, patriarchal families, a heartfelt faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen, are unenlightened prejudices and superstitions of the past, which are bad. Many people in the 20th century tried to hold onto a lukewarm Christianity by blending Christ with the progressive, evolutionary zeitgeist of liberalism. Teilhard de Chardin was the foremost exponent – "Everything That Rises Must Converge" – of that Christian blending. But the blending does not work. At the hour of our death we have only one hope. The hope expressed in John 11: 25-26: "Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?"

The belief in the progression of man toward the light of liberalism is incompatible with the faith expressed in John 11: 25-26. We must come to terms with that. We need to decide whether the antique Europeans or the pharisaical liberals and the lukewarm churchmen, who seek to blend Christ with liberalism, are right. I became spiritually older than my parents when I felt drawn to the vision of the antique Europeans. I could not find any beauty, faith, or love in modernity. Nor can I understand, from within, how my people can feel at home in modern Europe. Intellectually I see that they have embraced modernity, but I cannot understand their love of modernity in my heart. I still hope that there will be some that find their way back to an older, European vision of life that compels them to embrace Christ and His people and reject Satan and his minions.

The miracle itself, the rising of Lazarus from the dead, is the central event of John 11 just as the healing of the man born blind is the key element in John 9. But in both miracles what happens afterward amongst the Pharisees and the fearful unfaithful speaks to us across the chasm of time. The parents of the man born blind stepped away from their son because they "feared the Jews; for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that He was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue." And the Pharisees' reaction to Christ's healing of the man born blind is the same reaction they have to His raising of Lazarus from the dead. They seek to kill Christ to protect the corporate entity of pharisaical liberalism, because they, and they alone, as the corporate entity, can bring God to the people. So it has been in organized Christian Jewry throughout the European people's history. Once Christ rose from the dead the Pharisees couldn't kill Him directly so they had to kill His image in man, they had to kill the people who believed in Him. And the fearful and timid, whom we shall always have with us, still fear the treachery of the Pharisees' spies and the wrath of the Pharisees more than they love Christ. To be cast out of the synagogues of liberalism is a terrible thing. It seems, if we look at the modern Europeans, that it is the worst thing that can happen to a man. But is it the worst thing that can befall us? What happens to the man born blind when he defies the Pharisees by refusing to denounce Christ?

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

And the man born blind gets a direct answer from Christ because Christ knows that he loves much.

And Jesus said unto him, Thou has both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

My heroes, the heroes of Christendom, are the men and women who defy the corporate entity of pharisaical liberalism. The man born blind saw past the blind sight of Dylan Thomas to the source of all light. And our Lord sought him out! That is the reward of all those who defy corporate, pharisaical liberalism.

They have done it awfully well in this, the 21st century. Church and state are one incorporate entity, they are one synagogue: to be cast out from their synagogue is a fearful thing. But if we are not prepared to be cast out of their synagogue, He will not seek us out to give us comfort. We will not have a chance to say, "Lord, I believe," as we fall at His feet and worship Him. We will be allowed, if we deny Him before men, to fall at the feet of the liberals' shrines to reason, science, and the noble savage. Is that enough? If we settle for that then we are of all men most to be pitied. The culture of the incarnate Lord was built on the same faith in the divine humanity of God that Christ had when He decided to take flesh and dwell among us. He knew that He would not perish in Mary's womb nor would His death on the cross destroy His sacred humanity. He rose again on the third day. Every aspect of our liberal world has been set up to ensure that we do not believe in our God-given humanity. We must not, the pharisaical liberals tell us, believe that He, through His divine humanity, will draw us to Him through our humanity. All that is human must die so the corporate entity of liberalism can live. That is a perverse reversal of what must happen. Corporate, pharisaical liberalism must die so that the vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen shall live, once again, in the hearts of His people. He will seek us out if we reject the Pharisees and turn to Him. +

---

### **All Through the Night - September 7, 2019**

Sleep, my child and peace attend thee  
All through the night;  
Guardian angels God will send thee  
All through the night.  
Soft, the drowsy hours are creeping,  
Hill and vale, in slumber sleeping,  
I my loving vigil keeping,  
All through the night.

While the moon her watch is keeping  
All through the night;  
While the weary world is sleeping  
All through the night.  
O'er thy spirit gently stealing,  
Visions of delight revealing,  
Breathes a pure and holy feeling,  
All through the night.

Deep the silence round us spreading,  
All through the night;  
Dark the path that we are treading,  
All through the night.  
Still the coming day discerning,  
By the hope within us burning,  
To the dawn our footsteps turning,  
All through the night.

Star of Faith the dark adorning,  
All through the night;  
Leads us fearless toward the morning,  
All through the night.  
Though our hearts be wrapped in sorrow,  
From the home of dawn we borrow,  
Promise of a glad tomorrow,  
All through the night.



When I was a child, the arrival of the Labor Day weekend was bittersweet. It meant a picnic with my family – parents, siblings, grandparents, uncles, aunts, cousins, etc. – but it also meant the reptilian entity called ‘school’ was making ready to squeeze me to death in its coils as soon as Labor Day ended. I think the experience of school itself was horrible enough, but the anticipation of it was even worse. But let me leave the bitter for the sweet for a moment.

I vividly remember one particular Labor Day family gathering in the park when I was seven years old. My Welsh grandmother, who had nine brothers, was there along with many of my great uncles. There was a vast panorama of white working class people in the park, trying to get a little bit of family time before the work week started up again. When the various picnic activities were ended, we all sat down at the picnic tables and ate. After the meal one of my great uncles stood up and sang the Welsh song, “All Through the Night.” I still remember feeling my heart pounding as my great uncle sang. Why did it have such an effect on me? I don’t know, it just did. And I must stress that my great uncle was not a professional singer, he was a coal miner, but I never heard a better rendition than his on that Labor Day weekend over a half century ago. The words “unstudied from the heart” come to mind. It was not democracy that summoned that song from the depths of my great uncle’s heart, it was his connection to his people, the antique Europeans, in and through the Savior that inspired him to sing of our Savior’s love, which is with us always even “All Through the Night.”

As the presidential election approaches, we should remind ourselves that nothing that is good in America stems from democracy. The United States is not a beautiful city on a hill, a beacon light for other nations, it is hideous monstrosity of a nation conceived in Jacobinism and dedicated to the proposition that the wisdom of men is greater than the folly of God. The Democratic Party has recently made explicit what was implicit in our country from its foundations: that white Christians are not welcome in America. The so-called religious liberty granted to Christians in the early days of our nation was a calculated and successful gambit to remove any and all Christian influences from our government. “You can attend tax exempt church services on Sunday if you support secular Jacobinism throughout the week.” That ‘compromise’ still exists. So long as organized Christian Jewry, the churches of Christ without Christ, act as the ‘Amen chorus’ for liberalism, they will be allowed to exist. But any attempt by a European Christian to act according to the faith that is in him, the faith of our people when they had hearts of flesh, shall be condemned and dealt with. Modern ‘Christians’ have sold their birthright for the privilege of singing ‘Amen’ to liberalism in the church of their choice, with the added ‘privilege’ of avoiding the penalties inflicted on non-liberals, who are the people that must be dealt with.

I see in that park from long ago, a bit of country in the midst of the city, where I communed with my white kith and kin and listened to “All Through the Night,” a glimpse of heaven, the heaven that all of us see when we place ourselves in Christian Europe. Dickens, in *Oliver Twist*, describes that heaven as only he could:

Who can describe the pleasure and delight, the peace of mind and soft tranquillity, the sickly boy felt in the balmy air, and among the green hills and rich woods, of an inland village! Who can tell how scenes of peace and quietude sink into the minds of pain-worn dwellers in close and noisy places, and carry their own freshness, deep into their jaded hearts!... The memories which peaceful country scenes call up, are not of this world, nor of its thoughts and hopes. Their gentle influence may teach us how to weave fresh garlands for the graves of those we loved: may purify our thoughts, and bear down before it old enmity and hatred; but beneath all this, there lingers, in the least reflective mind, a vague and half-formed consciousness of having held such feelings long before, in some remote and distant time, which calls up solemn thoughts of distant times to come, and bends down pride and worldliness beneath it.

It was a lovely spot to which they repaired. Oliver, whose days had been spent among squalid crowds, and in the midst of noise and brawling, seemed to enter on a new existence there. The rose and honeysuckle clung to the cottage walls; the ivy crept round the trunks of the trees; and the garden-flowers perfumed the air with delicious odours. Hard by, was a little churchyard; not crowded with tall unsightly gravestones, but full of humble mounds, covered with fresh turf and moss: beneath which, the old people of the village lay at rest. Oliver often wandered here; and, thinking of the wretched grave in which his mother lay, would sometimes sit him down and sob unseen; but, when he raised his eyes to the deep sky overhead, he would cease to think of her as lying in the ground, and would weep for her, sadly, but without pain.

That is what Christian Europe was all about. The great monster death lost its horror when the horror was joined with the hope in His resurrection from the dead and our loved ones’ resurrection in and through Him. The antique Europeans had faith, they loved much. And we have lost their faith, the faith that He is with us all through the night. We cannot replace the loss of that faith by celebrating the end of racism and/or the triumph of democracy. Just the opposite is the case. We need a return to racism, which is white pietas, and we need an end to democracy, which is the reign of Satan, and a return to Christian Europe.

Four more years of Trump might mitigate, ever so slightly, the liberals’ onslaught on the white race. But his re-election will not change the course of liberalism nor will it do anything to restore that which must be restored, our Christian European heritage. We need to step outside the liberals’ realm entirely and embrace the Star of Faith that leads us fearless through the night of liberalism toward the morning of Christian Europe. We can’t be part of their realm. Yet, as their realm, the liberals’ realm, becomes more blatantly satanic, our churchmen have become more blatantly pro-liberal and anti-

Christian. At some point we must remember what we were and see what we have become. That which was lost was and is our hope and our glory; that which we have now constitutes “the horror, the horror.”

During my college and graduate years I met a great deal of academics like that music critic I mentioned last week, who thought you could enjoy Bach’s music without sharing Bach’s faith. Many of the professors I knew loved the great European poets, such as Shakespeare and Spencer, but not one of those academics believed in the God of Shakespeare and Spencer. They thought they could luxuriate in their poetry while immersing themselves in the culture of reason, the noble savage, and science. It doesn’t work that way. As the faith which inspired the artists and poets of Christian Europe disappears, so do the fruits of that ancient faith disappear. The white Christian artists and authors of long ago are now being systematically eliminated from our modern college curricula, just as the customs of our Christian ancestors are being eliminated from our common culture — which is really not a culture, but a non-culture which celebrates the triumph of Satan over all things noble, true, and beautiful, all things Christian.

There are no more loving vigils kept by the cradle of a Christian child, surrounded by guardian angels. Instead we have day care centers in which our young children are surrounded by bored, hard-as-nails, minimum wage ‘caretakers’ who torment children in the buildings consecrated to Nelson Mandela and Martin Luther King Jr. Our children are being violated not only in their bodies but in the depths of their souls. The liberals hate children and childhood, because our Lord said that we must all be like unto little children in order to inherit the kingdom of heaven. What must we be like unto in order to be part of the liberals’ kingdom of hell on earth? We must be like unto the archangel Lucifer who hates Christ with a passionate intensity and seeks to destroy Him by destroying His image in man. The outward physical ugliness of the modern whites who disfigure their bodies in the style of African tribesmen and tribeswomen mirrors their inner ugliness. There is no femininity, no gentleness, no kindness in the women, and no Christian masculinity, no charity of honor in the men. The election of a Republican who wants to destroy all things white and Christian at a slower rate than the Democrats is not going to turn our de-souled, inhuman men and women into human beings again. We need to restore our “All Through the Night” culture, a culture which bred men and women with faith, hope, and charity.

The liberals incrementally deadened the souls of the European people under the guise of democracy, science, and enlightenment. Now the European people live in hell without the knowledge that they live in hell — “Your soul deserves the place to which it came, If having entered hell you feel no flame.” It is no longer a case of ‘if these shadows are not altered, Europe will become hell.’ The European nations have become hell, and the most ‘enlightened’ nation of them all, the United States, has led the way to hell. Our nation is a synthesis of perversions and blasphemies. Whatever is perverted, whatever is ungodly is considered good and pure in our nation, and whatever is pure, noble, and humane is proscribed in our nation. We can hold elections from now till doomsday if we like, but when your democratic elections take place in hell, it is of no consequence who gets elected, because the option to leave hell and return to His Europe is not on the ballot. If we don’t feel the flame, nothing will avail us.

Karl Stern, a Jewish convert to Catholicism, wrote a book called *A Pillar of Fire*, in which he attempted to show that the insights of psychology (he was a psychiatrist) were compatible with Christianity. I read the book as a young man, and I kept thinking of Gremio in Shakespeare’s *The Taming of the Shrew*. He asks, “Who would be married to hell?” Modern psychology is the heir of scholastic theology. The scholastics, in contrast to our Lord and St. Paul, told us we could know God through reason and the study of nature, rather than through a sympathetic connection to God — our hearts joined with His sacred heart. The practice of psychology makes the same presumption about man that the theologians made about God: You can look at men through the eyes of science and “pluck out their mystery.” Is that possible? No, it is not. The scientizing of God through theology and the scientizing of man through psychology has led to an anti-vision, a purely biological vision, of man and God. They are both confined within the borders of the natural world. That world is hell. Our God is not from hell. He harrowed hell to save poor sinners, but He is not of hell, He belongs to heaven, and so do we unless we choose to stay with Satan in his kingdom of eternal night.

In a civilization in which the people have given a place to the incarnate God at their racial and familial hearth fires, a glimpse of heaven is given to all the men and women, no matter how lowly their station in life, who are part of the life of that civilization. Their daily lives become consecrated lives; they partake of His heavenly kingdom, the kingdom that is within human hearts imbued with a love for the Savior. What happens when He is not allowed into a civilization because that civilization is consecrated to reason, science, and the noble savage? The people of that civilization become the citizens of hell, because their daily lives are consecrated to Satan. We must feel the flame and fight back against all the forces of hell. We cannot be neutral: Satan does not take prisoners, he devours the lukewarm. Just as our Lord harrowed hell, we, in imitation of Him, shall defy the flames of hell and cling to our Savior all through the night, until we see His star of faith over Europe once again.+

## Who with Me My Burden Shares? - August 31, 2019

Lear. O, ho, are you there with me? No eyes in your head, nor no money in your purse? Your eyes are in a heavy case, your purse in a light; yet you see how this world goes.

Glou. I see it feelingly.

—King Lear

---

My best friend in junior high school and high school shared my hatred of school, and we also shared, as we advanced into our late teens, the existential angst of the modern age. We felt lost, just as those characters in the modern novels and movies, such as *The Loneliness of a Long Distance Runner* and *Cool Hand Luke*, felt lost. Let me dwell on *Cool Hand Luke* for a moment, because my friend Michael saw the movie a dozen times.

The movie is based on the true story of a man who escaped from a prison in Georgia, was captured again, escaped again, and then lived the rest of his life in freedom. Yet the people who made *Cool Hand Luke* chose to have the main character die at the end after making a plea for help to an unknown God who has forsaken him. The Man with No Eyes, the fearsome sharpshooter working as a guard, brings Cool Hand Luke down in an old abandoned church. Of course Luke had to die, forsaken by God and man, because that is the modern, Thomas Hardy vision of reality: “As flies to wanton boys are we to the gods – they kill us for their sport.”

My friend went one way after high school and I went another way. He progressed from existential angst to radical Jacobinism, living the Henry-Miller life in Paris, and embraced every radical cause he could find in order to anesthetize himself against the spiritual void of modernity. I went another way – I returned, not to the liberal, blended Christ of school and church, but to the Christ of old Europe. In that old Europe, I see a different ending for Cool Hand Luke. As the Man with No Eyes raises his rifle and has Luke in his sights, he suddenly sees before him someone other than Luke. He sees an image of Christ on the cross. He lowers his rifle, wipes his eyes, and takes aim again. But again, that image of Christ blurs his vision, and he puts down the rifle for good. As Luke is returned to prison, we hear the words from the hymn that a convict had been singing earlier in the film:

Through this world of toil and snares,  
If I falter, Lord, who cares?  
Who with me my burden shares?  
None but thee, dear Lord, none but Thee.

When Luke leaves prison a few years later he leaves with the knowledge that Christ will indeed his burden share. “None but thee, dear Lord, none but Thee.”

The liberals are still proceeding according to the internal dynamic of liberalism — they are ‘progressing.’ But toward what are they progressing? They are progressing to the kingdom of their god on earth. It is a man-made progression, inspired by the devil, independent of and hostile to Christ. The white Europeans will never be welcome in the kingdom of god on earth, because the new god, the god of the liberals, is a savage, man-god spawned by the forces of progress, which were and are reason and science. That new man-forged god, the noble savage, is a jealous god who will not share his throne with Christ; hence, the people whose ancestors championed Christ must be destroyed. All the liberals’ talk about inclusion and diversity is a lie, framed and inspired by the father of lies. The new world will not be racially diverse, it will be a savage, barbaric world of colored heathens. A few whites might be kept around as computerized beasts of burden, but that is doubtful. The colored heathens have not shown any inclination in South Africa or Rhodesia to keep whites alive in order to maintain their kingdoms of hell on earth.

The 20th century was the first century in the Christian European people’s history when the belief in Christ’s resurrection from the dead entered the realm of the nursery school — it became a pleasant story like “Goldilocks and the Three Bears” but it no longer was seen as a reality. As a result the modern age gave birth to paintings in which the human personality was unrecognizable and to literature — “Rage, rage against the dying of the light” — in which modern man voiced his despair. That type of art and literature was seen as a progression from the ‘unrealistic’ art and literature of old Europe. Is that true? Is Picasso’s art more realistic than Rembrandt’s art, and is Joyce’s *Ulysses* more realistic than Scott’s *Ivanhoe*? It all depends on Christ’s resurrection from the dead. If He be not risen, then modern art and literature depicts reality. But what if Christ did rise from the dead on the third day? Then the antique Europeans’ art and literature is the ‘realistic’ art and literature, and modern art and literature is trash. And we should stop trying to turn the trash we call democracy into a civilization. Instead we must turn to the people who believed in Christ’s resurrection from the dead and build a realm based on their faith.

I once read a music critic's commentary on the back of an album of Bach's music in which he stated we need not share Bach's faith in order to enjoy Bach's music. Au contraire, we must share Bach's faith in order to truly enjoy Bach's music. If we do not believe that Christ rose from the dead, then Bach's music only heightens our existential angst. We either weep because such a celestial vision is not true, or we ridicule Bach for his naiveté. That music critic represents the older conservative liberals who still want the fruits of a Christian civilization without the faith that built that civilization. Men cannot live with the existential angst of the avant-garde artists and the modern literati. They must either cling to the fruits of the older, Christ-centered Europe, like the music critic, or they must develop a new faith to replace the faith of the antique Europeans. Enter, stage left — the far left — the noble savage. He is the "rough beast" born in the liberals' new Jerusalem, but he was not born in a stable in Bethlehem, he was born in the abstract minds of a people who left Christ for Satan. In the late sixties we saw the transition from the existential angst of "Christ be not risen, we are alone in the universe," to "Christ was a fraud, we are now free to worship the trinity of reason, the noble savage, and science."

In the aforementioned movie *Cool Hand Luke*, we can see the beginnings of the new 21st century religion of the modern Europeans. In one of Luke's escapes he enlists the aid of two negro children. By this act he shows us that he is a really "cool hand." How else can a white man be cool? In and of himself he is nothing, he must graft his soul onto the black man. By the 21st century the white Cool Hand Lukes disappear and the noble black savages replace them, just as Christ was replaced by the colored heathen when Christian missionaries stopped trying to convert the colored heathens and worshipped them instead.

Liberalism is built on man's desire to avoid the cross of Christ. But the cross of Christ leads, according to the antique Europeans, to Christ's resurrection from the dead. If we avoid the cross of Christ, we will not share in His resurrection. That is the obstacle Satan, the first liberal, had to overcome. He had to make us see Christianity as a crucifixion without the resurrection. And he has done it. The resurrection, according to Satan, is irrational and unscientific, so who would willingly embrace a religion that places the shadow of the cross over our 'pleasures' here on earth and cannot deliver the goods at the hour of our death? At least science, the new Holy Ghost, can anesthetize us as we pass into non-existence. It's a horrible, nightmarish vision of reality, but Satan has managed to make that nightmare the new faith of the European people.

J. J. Pollitt, in his book *Art and Experience in Classical Greece*, points out that when the Greeks lost their faith in the gods, they had a period of existential angst, the golden era of Greek drama. However, that era metamorphosed into the era of vase painting, in which the Greeks showed an obsession with the trivial and superficial details of life. This is how it must be once a people has lost their faith. They cannot live with the "better not to have been born" vision of Sophocles' Oedipus or the "rage, rage against the dying of the light" vision of Dylan Thomas. They will move on to a religion of triviality.

We have moved on to a religion of triviality. Karl Barth's comment on the new religion as articulated by Feuerbach is on the mark: "We have heard Feuerbach speak, and we have heard something nauseatingly, disgustingly trivial." To be content with the banality, the perversity, and the triviality of modernity is the greatest tragedy that can befall a people. Is there any remedy for such a tragedy? Yes, there is — the remedy that King Lear finds. His religion of triviality disappears when he sees life "feelingly." Hearts that love will find Christ, they will embrace His cross, because they will know, through their love, that His cross leads to the resurrection.

In the early days of my marriage when I was struggling to keep my growing family financially solvent, I had a string of part-time and temporary jobs, one of which was teaching English literature. I had a student in one of my classes, of whom I became quite fond. He was a great reader, but his reading was of all modern authors. When he brought up his favorite authors in class, he was always frustrated when I spoke disparagingly of them. "Mr. \_\_\_\_\_, how can you say that?" he would indignantly ask, when I was dismissive of Stephen King and other such authors. In class and outside of class I took the trouble to show him the triviality of the modern authors, by exposing their lack of depth and by pointing out the inexhaustible depths of the antique European authors. A transformation took place. That young man saw, to paraphrase Hank Williams, "the light." It so seldom happens, but it can happen. A man can leave the culture of Satan, the culture of triviality and perversity, and return to the culture of Christ crucified, Christ risen. But he must have a heart of flesh.

The vase painting culture of the Greeks in their declining years could not sustain them. They fell to the Romans who absorbed their culture of perversity and triviality and syncretized that culture, along with the Jewish culture, the mystery religions, and every other culture on the face of the earth, save one. The Roman system could not absorb the Christian faith, because Christ was and is the God above the syncretic religion of perversity and triviality. When Rome sought to absorb Christ, the European tribesmen resisted Rome in the name of Christ. We now have come full circle: The United States of America, with all Europe following in her train, has become the new Rome. All religions are welcome in the united republic of perversity and triviality, save that one religion: The religion of Christ crucified, Christ risen, as believed in and championed by the antique Europeans.

Can perversity and triviality sustain the European people? The Romans maintained their empire for centuries upon centuries. So who can say that the liberals' modern Roman Empire cannot be sustained for many, many centuries to come? It certainly appears that the men and women of modern Europe are determined to go off the cliff with the swine. However, there is one crucial difference between the old Rome and the new Rome. The rulers of the old Roman Empire had to crush the new faith, the emerging Christian faith, while the rulers of the new Roman Empire must crush the old faith, the Christian faith of the European people. Will that make a difference? Will the European people claim their "rights of memory," will they insist on bringing the Christ of old Europe into the new Europe? It doesn't seem likely they will; they seem content to wallow in the pig slime of perversity and triviality. But Satan will not take any chances. He would rather destroy the entire white race than take a chance that even one European might invoke the memory of Christian Europe and sound a charge that will encourage other Europeans to strike back at the liberals' kingdom of hell on earth. The European people will never be welcome in the liberals' Rome. I claim my "rights of memory" in Old Europe. The European people who still have hearts of flesh will do likewise. As for the rest? They are no longer Europeans, they are the un-men, the servants of Satan. +

---

## **And Make Ourselves a Realm - August 24, 2019**

Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. – Colossians 2: 8

Once the revolutionaries have triumphed and institutionalized all things satanic, the conservative must cease to be conservative — he must become a counterrevolutionary, or else he will become an aider and abettor of liberalism, despite his claim to be a conservative. Franco and Pinochet were counterrevolutionaries; Reagan, Thatcher, Tyndall, Samuel Frances, and Trump were and are conservative liberals. They were and are against certain aspects of liberalism, but they did not and do not challenge the basic Jacobin assumptions of their nation nor the other European nations. And the Jacobin foundations of modern Europe must be challenged and destroyed because Jacobin Europe is Satan's Europe.

O here, where late our little city stood,  
And now this desolation darkens us,  
Friends, with rapid hand and heart renewed,  
Building, once more uprear we root and tower,  
And make ourselves a realm.

Our "little city" was Christian Europe, liberalism was the desolation that darkened our city, and the liberal tower of Babel built on reason, science, and the noble savage is what we must root out in order to rebuild our European city. However, I do not see, in this realm of Satan, anyone who thinks we should 'uprear' liberalism from its roots and build a Christian realm. Why is that? Why is there no one who believes we must destroy the liberals' realm instead of trying to work within the parameters of liberalism to affect "meaningful change"? The answer is quite simple — you do not seek to destroy that which you believe in. And all modern Europeans believe in at least two out of three of the linchpins of liberalism. They all believe in reason and science — who will be so base as to deny the validity of reason and science? Some neo-pagan conservative liberals such as Jared Taylor and some populist conservatives such as Tyndall and Francis do not and did not believe in the noble savage, but most conservatives believe in all three of the linchpins of liberalism. The liberals' kingdom of eternal night depends on the progenitor of science and the noble savage, and that progenitor is pure, abstract reason, divorced from the human heart.

My mother, who adhered to the ethics of the Christian faith all her life but was unable to believe in Christ, because His resurrection from the dead was in conflict with reason and science, had a book of fairy tales, which I inherited when she died. In that book is a remarkable fairy tale written by Hans Christian Andersen called "The Snow Queen." In that story we see the sickness of modern man diagnosed, and we see what the cure for that illness is.

If you know the story, you will recall that the two principle characters are a girl named Gerda and a boy named Kay. In the story some wicked Hobgoblins have "a mirror with the power of causing all that was good and beautiful, when it was reflected therein, to look poor and mean; while that which was good for nothing and ugly, stood out and looked worse than ever. In this mirror the most beautiful landscapes looked like boiled spinach, and the best persons were turned into frights, or appeared to stand on their heads."

One day the mirror breaks, "and now it worked much more evil than before; for some of these pieces were hardly so large as a grain of sand, and they flew about in the wide world, and when they got into people's eyes there they stayed; and then people saw everything perverted, or only had an eye for that which was evil. Some persons even got a splinter in their heart, and then their heart became a lump of ice. Then the wicked Hobgoblin laughed till he almost choked, for all this tickled his fancy."

Of course the evil splinters are the splinters of reason, and when one of those splinters pierces Kay's heart he falls victim to the evil Snow Queen and becomes unable to say the Lord's Prayer. "He was quite frightened and he tried to repeat the Lord's Prayer; but he was only able to remember the multiplications table." What should that simple story, told by a man regarded as a simpleton, tell us? It tells us what St. Paul told us. We should search the Scriptures with our hearts in order to discover that the folly of God is greater than the wisdom of men.

When Gerda finds Kay, he is a lost soul.

Little Kay was quite blue with cold; for the Snow Queen had kissed away his feelings, and his heart was a lump of ice. He was pulling about some sharp, flat pieces of ice, which he laid together in all possible ways, puzzling out how to make something with them. He fitted them into a great many shapes the most complicated, for they were the "Ice Puzzles of Reason."

What a remarkable description of reason divorced from the human heart – "The Ice Puzzles of Reason." Did Kay recover? Yes, he did because –

Gerda wept hot tears which fell on his breast, and they thawed his heart and melted away the bit of the mirror there. He looked at her, and she sang:

"The rose in the valley is blooming so sweet,  
The Child Jesus is there the children to greet."

Then Kay, like all the Christian Europeans who preceded him, wept and believed.

Jesus wept at Lazarus's death. If He knew that He was about to raise Lazarus from the dead, why did He weep? Was it because He, who could see into the future, saw all the suffering that death would cause mankind? How could the heart of hearts not weep in the face of all that suffering? Our hope is in our tears of grief. My mother had a heart that loved, but she also had a heart with a splinter of rationalism in it. Did my tears, shed on her deathbed, joined with the tears of our precious Savior, take the splinter of rationalism from her heart and leave only His divine love there? That is my hope. We all live in the valley of the shadow of death, which is made all the darker because of rationalism, but is it not possible that at the last hour many who seemed lost in the icy cold of rationalism will feel the warmth of His love? We must, for our own sake and for the sake of our loved ones, fight rationalism with all our heart, mind, and soul.

Our Lord told us that we must, if we are to inherit the kingdom of heaven, become like unto little children. Why then do we create a new language, a language not of the heart, when we speak of our Lord? Paul was not a theologian nor were the apostles. Shouldn't that tell us something? Why do we need a more scientized and rational exposition of the Christian faith than that which is presented to us in the Gospels and the epistles of St. Paul? We don't need theology, but the devil does need it. He wants mankind to study and scientize God until God becomes the sum total of the natural world, a world devoid of the personal Savior who gives us the hope that the grave is not the natural end of our lives.

The tears we shed at the deathbeds of our loved ones, if they are consecrated to Him, are sacred prayers. Surely He hears such prayers and surely He will come to our loved ones and us at that fateful hour. Christian Europe was built on the tears and prayers of those who wept and believed. I do not see how our rationalism, our science, be it the science of God or the science of the natural world, or our worship of the noble savage, has improved on the hope-and-prayer civilization of the antique Europeans. I don't want to read or hear about any more conservative plans for saving our Western democracies, I want to rise and ride to the sound of the trumpet of our Lord who bids us root out rationalism from our hearts and our civilization. All counterrevolutions start in the human heart and then extend to the greater world. In the European fairy tales the third dumb brother, the brother imbued with the foolishness of God, always goes forth into the great world armed only with a heart of flesh. He always triumphs where his older brothers, the rationalists, fail. So shall we triumph if we eschew rationalism and seek Him through the narrow gate of the human heart which leads us to His sacred heart.

St. Paul tells us that "faith worketh by love." If that is so, how can we have faith if we try to know God by way of abstract reason? We must come to God with hearts capable of loving that which is good, noble, and pure. Do we have such a capacity? Not if we accept the theologians' God of pure intellect as the true God. If God does not have a human heart, if the incarnation is a lie, which all the Gnostic churches assert, then we are lost. Let us take refuge in the fleshpots of Egypt, the only refuge for rationalists who have come to the conclusion that man is a glorified beast without a heart that longs for and can know the Savior, whose divine love has conquered death.

It doesn't seem that there are any Europeans left who will repudiate rationalist Europe and return to the fairy tale Europe of Hans Christian Andersen. It all seems so hopeless. And that is what the devil wants. He wants all Europeans to stay imprisoned within the walls of rationalism. He wants the only remedy for our loneliness to be the company of other rationalists. Such 'company' will only make us feel our loneliness the more acutely. But where there is one, there are others. I am not a rationalist. I do not accept the devil's world. The kingdom of heaven is within. Let us cling to the fairy

tale vision in defiance of the rationalist hell around us, and build ourselves a realm that honors the vision and heart of the antique Europeans who saw the God beyond reason, our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. +

---

### **Endeared with All Hearts - August 17, 2019**

And when Elisha was come into the house, behold, the child was dead, and laid upon his bed. He went in therefore, and shut the door upon them twain, and prayed unto the Lord. And he went up, and lay upon the child, and put his mouth upon his mouth, and his eyes upon his eyes, and his hands upon his hands: and stretched himself upon the child; and the flesh of the child waxed warm. Then he returned, and walked in the house to and fro; and went up, and stretched himself upon him: and the child sneezed seven times, and the child opened his eyes. And he called Gehazi, and said, Call this Shunammite. So he called her. And when she was come in unto him, he said, Take up thy son.

– II Kings 4: 32-36

---

Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,  
Which I by lacking have supposed dead;  
And there reigns love, and all love's loving parts,  
And all those friends which I thought buried.  
How many a holy and obsequious tear  
Hath dear religious love stol'n from mine eye  
As interest of the dead, which now appear  
But things remov'd that hidden in thee lie!  
Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,  
Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,  
Who all their parts of me to thee did give:  
That due of many now is thine alone.  
Their images I lov'd I view in thee,  
And thou, all they, hast all the all of me.

–Shakespeare, Sonnet 31

---

Prior to the coming of Christ the history of the Jewish people, beginning with Adam and Eve, was a history of a falling away from God and then a return to God. There were always prophets who tried to call the Jewish people back to God. They seldom were treated kindly, but they did keep a certain segment of the Jewish people connected to the living God; one thinks of Elijah and the seven thousand. But it seems, at the time of our Lord's incarnation, that the prophets had lost out to institutionalized atheism: The Pharisees had lost all touch with the living God and replaced Him with a 'practical' system presided over by 'smart men'. When Christ came before the smart men, proclaiming that He was the Son of God, the smart men had Him crucified.

The European people have repeated the spiritual journey of the Jews. Their history after their acceptance of Christ has been one of sins and revolts against God, but it has also been a history of devotion to, and the love of, Christ the Lord. The utopian Christian theologians, who are not Christian, have focused only on the sins of the Christian Europeans; they have refused to look at the love and devotion of the antique Europeans and have written them off as no different than the pagans. Actually the theologians tell us that the colored pagans are better than the Christian Europeans. Dismissing the theologians, who are not interested in the truth, let us state the obvious – the European people, prior to the 20th century, were a people who saw Jesus Christ as the Alpha and the Omega of existence. There was still a prophetic fire within the European people that made them seek Christ, even in the midst of their sins and their constant backsliding. But when we come to the 20th century of the Europeans' history, we no longer see hearts with a longing for the Savior. The prophetic fire has been replaced by a liberal Sanhedrin. The Pharisees of rationalism, science, and the Noble Savage have institutionalized sin and the revolt against God. And that is the difference between modern Europe and old Europe. Our ancestors sinned much and often revolted against God's will, as all mortals will do, but our ancestors did not institutionalize sin and revolt. They did not call sin virtue and revolt progress. The Europeans of the 20th century have entered the Caiaphas stage of their history; they have put Christ on trial and found Him guilty of blasphemy against their new gods of reason, science, and the Noble Savage.

That really is the crux of the matter. The European people have rejected Christ because belief in His resurrection from the dead is irrational, unscientific, and racist. Why is it racist? Because it was the white Europeans who believed, as a people, in the unscientific, irrational resurrection of Christ. The believing European Christian is now in the position of the original apostles who were on the fringes of institutionalized Jewry, trying to stay true to the voice of the prophets who urged them to adhere to the prophetic core of their faith and continue looking, in spirit and truth, for the true Messiah. A true

European Christian must be an exile from our modern 'Grand Inquisitor' Europe, he must stay on the outside of a world that has institutionalized, in church and state, the old Pharisaical religion of Caiaphas and the smart men. The conservatives, who want to conserve democracy and the Constitution, want to conserve that which should be destroyed, a system that is in line with the Sanhedrin whose members said, "Let us crucify Him."

In Shakespeare's *Macbeth*, two men, Macbeth and Banquo, stood on the heath confronted by witches. Both men were offered the world if they acted according to the will of the witches. Macbeth succumbed to the witches' will and Banquo did not. The European people also had their moment on the heath. They had a choice between the way of the cross, the way of the antique Europeans, who loved much and believed, and the way of the Pharisees, who were willing to make common cause with Satan and crucify the living God in order to retain their positions of power in this world. There must be a return to the spiritual realm of old Europe. The modern Europeans' decision to live and die with the Pharisees of modernity must be reversed.

The Pharisaical system of government, our vaunted democracy, and our Pharisaical churches have been designed to give us bread and circuses in this world and ease us into an anesthetized eternal sleep in the next world. What did old Europe offer us? It offered us the hope that if we shared His cross we would also share in His resurrection. But we can only believe in that through the faith that emanates from love. If we don't have the heart to love what is good, what is pure, what is noble, then we will not believe that Christ is with us in this world and has gone to prepare a place for us in the next world. The great fallacy of the 20th and 21st century leaders in church and state has been and is the mistaken notion that you need only appeal to a man's reason and then all will be well. If you present mankind with abstract theories of a utopian world, they will fall in line, rejecting old Europe, and help you to build a perfect society. But pure reason, divorced from the heart that loves, encourages men to turn on one another in an endless competition for the things of this world that the intellectual utopians have told them is their birthright. All will share in the new utopia, except the unreasoning people of faith who believe in the Son of God. All are equal, but some are more equal. The 'more equal' – not the meek – will inherit the earth in the Pharisaical system of the Illuminati because they are the second person of the Illuminati's trinity while the white race, collectively, is the devil.

Queen. No, no! the drink, the drink! O my dear Hamlet!  
The drink, the drink! I am poison'd. [Dies.]

Hamlet. O villany! Ho! let the door be lock'd.  
Treachery! Seek it out.

[Laertes falls.]

Laertes. It is here, Hamlet. Hamlet, thou art slain;  
No medicine in the world can do thee good.  
In thee there is not half an hour of life.  
The treacherous instrument is in thy hand,  
Unbated and envenom'd. The foul practice  
Hath turn'd itself on me. Lo, here I lie,  
Never to rise again. Thy mother's poison'd.  
I can no more. The King, the King's to blame.

–*Hamlet*

Let us lock the doors and seek out the villains who have separated the European people from their kith, their kin, and their Savior. Behold! The clergy, the clergy's to blame. Faith cannot exist without love, nor can love exist without faith. That incorporate union of love for the Savior in and through His people sustained the European people's faith in the Son of God. The rational wedge that the clergy placed between the European people and Christ was the equivalent of a dagger to the heart. And when the love that once was there disappears because there are no hearts of flesh left who truly love unto the end, then the Christian faith will disappear from the face of the earth.

From the 1850s to 1900 the European intellectuals who believed that Christ rose from the dead were in the minority. That is why Dostoyevsky said the main issue was, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ." Once that question was decided by the 'intellectuals,' that Christ did not rise from the dead, the stage was set for the non-intellectuals', the grazers', loss of faith in the 20th century. An ethical remnant of the Christian faith survived through the first half of the 20th century, but ethics without a religious core cannot last forever. Most Europeans in the latter half of the 20th century, and there are still a few left in the 21st century, thought the customs and manners that stemmed from a belief in Christ's resurrection from the dead could be maintained without that belief. The parents in the 1960s who believed that sex should be confined to the marriage bed of a man and a woman but who had lost their belief in Christ, were shocked when their offspring practiced free love. Why the shock? If Christ be not risen, are not all things permissible? Now, there is no longer any shock at such 'trivial' things as premarital sex because now even the ethical



remnant of faith in Christ as true God and true man has died out. But death has not been, nor can it ever be, conquered by a superficial faith in reason, science, and the Noble Savage.

The greatest tragedy that can befall an individual or a society is the tragedy of superficiality. Balzac, who accurately depicts the decadence of a Parisian society that has embraced superficiality as a substitute for faith, has the main character in one of his novels make a death-bed declaration both pompous and irreverent: "Now, I must take holy communion." Balzac tells the reader, "So you see, superficiality and vanity can be a substitute for religious faith." Balzac's Paris has become modern Europe. We have made superficiality and vanity a substitute for faith in Jesus Christ. No heart that truly loves can accept the death of his loved ones. Death is a sword in the heart. There are only three remedies for that stab in the heart. We can cling to His word that tells us death shall not triumph over His love for us; we can stay anesthetized with the opiates of drugs and alcohol until we pass into nothingness; or we can embrace the superficiality of a world governed by the European Sanhedrin, crucifying Christ anew by crucifying His people while we indulge our pagan appetites through our love of the Noble Savages of color.

If you are part of the new Sanhedrin's world order you have left the Christ of the Gospel, who is the Christ of old Europe, behind. There can be no blending of the new and the old worlds. There are two roads and they lead us to very different destinations. The one road leads to hell and the other road leads to His house of many mansions. Young Oliver Twist, forsaken by the whole world, strikes back against overwhelming odds, against the denizens of Satan, because they have denigrated the memory of his mother. I shall always love Charles Dickens and his progenitor, the bard of Avon, because they got it right. It is the heart that loves which sustains a truly Christian civilization. We must bear our cross and love much, because "He is the grave where buried love doth live." They have denigrated our Savior and our people who loved much: We must become like unto the apostles who stayed away from the Sanhedrin and clung to the true Messiah, their God and Kinsman, Jesus Christ. We must remain in the upper room where there is faith, hope, and charity. +

---

### **The Great Denial - August 10, 2019**

Of a 'people' all are members  
who regard themselves as such,  
find their mother-tongue sounds sweetest  
and their fatherland love much;  
All the rest like goblins evil  
turn their backs upon the people,  
bar themselves from kindred tie  
and their birthright too deny.

-N. F. S. Grundtvig

---

Why is white pietas, which is our only connection to the living God, proscribed in church and state? And why do white people submit to the proscription? – CWN

---

I see that some bloggers have tried to point out that the last two mass shooters in America fit more into the category of crazed liberals than right wing extremists, but that is an exercise in futility. The liberals are in power, and they will use their power to impose their vision of reality on the people that work and slave under the all-seeing eye of the liberal leviathan. Satan still prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls, but he no longer has to prowl about as an outsider trying to destroy the Christian culture of the European people. Now that liberalism, which is Satanism, has been institutionalized throughout the European nations, Satan prowls about the European nations, as an old-time inspector of the dikes in Holland might have prowled about the dikes trying to ascertain where they might spring a leak. Satan looks for weaknesses in his institutions. He checks on the pro-life movement to make sure it stays democratic and useless. He checks on the churches to make sure their Christianity is in lock-step with the liberalism of the academy. Nor does he neglect the elementary schools – he makes sure they stay liberal and satanic. And he checks the various media outlets to make sure there is a steady stream of vicious hate-filled rhetoric directed against the white race, and a steady stream of propaganda in favor of the sainted races of color.

I remember, back in the beginning of the internet era, listening to conservatives such as George Gilder, who told us that the internet would be a great means of countering liberal propaganda, because it would democratize free speech by taking it out of the hands of the mainstream media pundits. But the exact opposite has taken place. The internet has become the liberals' main means of attacking the white race and ensuring that all whites stay in line with the liberals' program, which is a program designed for the complete and utter destruction of the white, Christ-bearing race. How did that happen? It happened because you cannot restore that which is of the spirit with purely mechanical restoratives. Computers can

improve the record-keeping of a company, they can facilitate the flow of information, but they cannot provide the faith and hope that sustain a people. That was and is the fundamental mistake of the conservatives. They did not put Burke's assessment of the European people into their computers:

"The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines."

You can't leave incarnate Europe behind as an undemocratic relic of the past and replace it with a democratic, technologically savvy, modern civilization and hope to survive as a people, even if you do computerize your democracy. What difference does it make if Satan speaks to us through the older print media or through the modern internet media? It is still Satanism that is being disseminated.

I've noticed, since the liberals' internet crackdown, that many sites that were formerly aggressively pro-white have become much less so. They have censored themselves in order to survive on the liberal-dominated internet. I used to compare the dissenting internet sites to the samizdat publications in Soviet Russia. But I now see that was a poor comparison. In the samizdat publications the Soviet dissidents printed the truth. They did not write from within the Soviet system, relying on the Soviet government's belief in free speech to keep their publications in circulation as the American internet bloggers currently do. "But the Soviet regime did not permit free speech whereas our regime does permit free speech," you reply. Is that true? The American and the other Jacobin nations of Europe permit "free speech" so long as that free speech does not constitute a danger to liberalism. The liberals do not always get it right, they often censor right-wingers who do not constitute a real danger to liberalism, but they do try to keep their kingdom in order just as thoroughly as the Soviet leaders of communist Russia tried to keep their kingdom in order. And the American experiment has proven more successful than the Soviet experiment, because incremental Jacobinism is more long-lasting than instant Jacobinism: It weakens and destroys the spiritual substance of a people much more effectively than the "Jacobinism now" regimes of revolutionary France and Soviet Russia. None of the Russian communist regimes achieved the total ascendancy over their people that the incremental Jacobin regimes of the European nations of America and Europe have achieved. When a liberal government moves incrementally, the people accept Satanism while bragging about their freedoms. If Lady Macbeth feminism, gay rights, and negro worship had been immediately institutionalized after World War I, there would have been much more resistance to those evils than there is today, because the European people of that time were only one generation removed from believing Christians. They still retained a Christian ethos. It took time for the Christian hangover to disappear. Now, after over a century of incremental Jacobinism, the European people accept all the major precepts of liberalism. They are quite willing to give up their faith in their God and themselves, as a distinct people connected to God through pietas, in order to have a place in Liberaldom. "Be it ever so humble, please let us have a home in Liberaldom." But there can never be a place for white people in Liberaldom, because at the heart of Liberaldom is Satan. He will never allow white people into his earthly kingdom because of their Christian past. When they die, unrepentant of their liberalism, then Satan will welcome them into his kingdom, but not before their deaths. In this world, Satan will keep the white race at bay.

A few months ago I made reference to four public school teachers in New York City who were demoted or removed from their duties for "toxic whiteness." If, as the liberals assert, whiteness is a disease, then shouldn't we be told why whiteness is considered a disease? No, the liberals tell us, we need not be told, that is a given; and if we have to ask why whiteness is a disease, then it is proof we are toxically white.

The disease of whiteness was condemned long ago by Plato and by Caiaphas. Both men banned the poetic of life from their republics, because that which is poetical is not subject to the iron-clad logic of philosophy and theology. Are there depths to life that cannot be reached by the human mind? "No, there are not." Thus spoke Plato and Caiaphas. And thus speaks the devil. If there is a poetic heart to existence, if the mythic world is real and the material world is the unreality, then Christ is risen and the devil shall be defeated. The European people once defied the logic of the devil to proclaim the reality of the epic myth of Christ's victory over death. Now we have closed that epic chapter of our history and submitted to Satan, but Satan has not forgotten, nor will he ever forget, that white people once saw the poetic essence of life in Jesus Christ and proclaimed that truth to all the world. They mustn't ever be allowed to proclaim that truth again. That is why the liberals have made "toxic whiteness" a crime.

In every denomination of organized Christianity, throughout the history of the European people, there have always been clergymen and theologians who proclaimed that the hatred of humanity is the mark of a good Christian. They tell us that we must hate what is inside of a man in order to love God, but did original sin so deface His image in man that we must hate our humanity in order to love God? No, 'tis not so. Christ will build His kingdom on human hearts that love much: "Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or lo there! for behold, the kingdom of God is within you."

The liberals have taken the perverted theology of the anti-human faction of the organized Christian churches and made it their own theology, only the liberals have exempted the colored races and the illuminated whites. They are worthy of

redemption, but the unilluminated whites are totally depraved, they are damned. The churchmen do not oppose the liberals' anti-white, anti-Christian faith because it is in line with their theology of the greatness of God and the depravity of humanity. But why would God take the form of human flesh if humanity was totally depraved? "He didn't take flesh and dwell among us," the liberals tell us. Likewise the Jews and the Moslems also tell us that He did not take flesh and dwell among us. They face the contradiction that the perverted theologians are not willing to deal with: If we are too depraved for the kingdom of God to dwell in our hearts, then the Incarnation is a lie. And the intellectual Christians are acting as if it were all a lie by joining the liberals in their condemnation of the white pietas that sustained and animated the European people before white pietas became a disease.

If we cannot act on the love that we feel for our own, if we must hide our noblest and best instincts in order to show the liberals that we truly love the sacred gods of color, then we will perish from the earth and suffer the pains of hell in the next world, because we cannot be connected to Christ except through our humanity. We touch His sacred heart because we have human hearts. Once we become part of Liberalism, we renounce our humanity and our God.

By a tragic irony what the old hard-hearted theologians used to tell us, that man was filth and God was all, has become much closer to the truth than it was during the Christian European era of history. Liberals, having divested themselves of their humanity, do seem to be totally depraved creatures without one single spark of humanity. But we must remember a time when liberalism, not white pietas, was considered a disease. And we must remember that we belong to His Kingdom, the Kingdom of God that He has placed in our hearts, and not to the liberals' kingdom of evil, which was conceived by Satan and is consecrated to his unholy will.

There are no supports left for the Christian European. Everything Christian and European has been torn asunder. Only our hearts are left. Inside His Kingdom of the heart, we must find the strength to resist liberalism and cling to our European hearth fire. All is indeed cheerless, dark, and deadly – we have only our "trembling faith," and His promise that He will be with us "always, even unto the ending of the world." +

---

## **Doubt and Faith - August 3, 2019**

Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. – Matthew 5: 4

What are we to make of, "Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus"? When Jesus said that He intended to go into Judaea again, His disciples advised Him not to go there. "Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again?" When Jesus makes it clear that He will go back to Judaea, Thomas says to his fellow disciples, "Let us also go, that we may die with him." Is there any greater loyalty than that? Thomas knows Christ cannot hope to survive if He goes to Judaea, but nevertheless he decides to stand by Christ to the end. Yet that same Thomas, also called Didymus, declares, after the risen Lord appeared to the other disciples when Thomas was not present, "Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my fingers into the print of nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe." We know how that story ends:

And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed. John 20: 26-29

Through all the Christian centuries the label "doubting Thomas" has been applied to those who lack faith. Is the label unfair? Well, Thomas does doubt His Lord. But would any of the other apostles have fully believed in Christ's resurrection from the dead if they had not been present when He appeared to them in the flesh? There was one, and that one was John: "Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw and believed." Why John? Why did he see the empty tomb and believe? John saw and believed because he conquered his rationalism on the night of the last supper when he laid his head on Christ's sacred heart. Thomas was not a moral pariah like Judas Iscariot, he loved much; he was willing to die for Christ. But he couldn't completely believe till he saw the risen Lord. When he did see him in the flesh, he declared, "My Lord, and my God." He wanted to believe, but he needed help to overcome his rationalism, and our Lord had compassion on him and gave him the help he needed. And then He speaks to us and tells us that we shall be blessed if we believe without having seen what Thomas saw, the risen Lord.

I'm at the age where death is no longer a mere abstraction to me. I've seen it close up in the seemingly lifeless faces of loved ones. "Is this the promised end?" My rationalism tells me, 'yes' – that horrid monster death is the promised end for all things mortal. I, like Thomas, when the rational mind predominates over my heart, doubt the reality of the risen Lord. I am not John. But I do have that within which is part John; my heart says, "Lord, I believe, help my unbelief."

In Milton's *Samson Agonistes*, Samson, after he has been blinded by the Philistines, is visited by Delilah who offers him her body, telling him that there are still pleasures that a blind man can experience. Samson rejects the offer with a most striking vehemence. And he does so because he knows that the temptation of Delilah is the temptation he is the most susceptible to. All of us, the people of the 20th and 21st centuries, are born into the culture of rationalism. It is in our mother's milk and the bottled milk we feed upon; it has been woven, under the guise of theology, into our churches, and it has been woven into our culture under the guise of science. We must react with violence, the type of violence that taketh the Kingdom of Heaven by storm, against the culture of rationalism that presses down upon us in church and state.

The Holy Ghost resides in the human heart. He is the comforter that we need if we are to be like John: "He saw and believed." This is why we cannot, as the modern day conservatives suggest we do, combat the liberals' rationalism with what we believe to be the correct rationalism. There is no correct rationalism. Christ's resurrection from the dead is not rational. And we must believe that Christ rose from the dead. If we don't believe in that stunning, startling, unscientific conquest of dumb nature, there is no use continuing any further with the charade of life. I once saw a modern movie in which the hero tells his pregnant girlfriend to get an abortion, because, "This is a trashcan world." That cuts through all the liberal rhetoric about the brave new world of love, equality, and freedom – "This is a trashcan world." If Christ be not risen, we are maggots crawling on a trash heap. The love that once was there in Christian Europe, the Christian Europe that the liberals denounce and the church men tell us never existed, allows us to see the risen Lord. We see Christ without actually touching His side and His hands, because the people who believed without seeing Christ in the flesh did see Him in the love that once was there at their racial and familial hearth fires. Our fight for the European hearth fire is the fight for our Jesus, who tells us that even death, that horror of horrors, will not separate us from those we loved here on earth – in Him and through Him, by the power of the Holy Ghost, who dwells in hearts of flesh.

Robert Frost is often quoted by conservatives because he makes reference to God, but Frost did not take the road less traveled, he took the well-traveled road of a vague, impersonal God, who did not transcend the natural world. That well-traveled road, the road of Greek rationalism, leads us to a world of faithlessness. Christ chose Thomas as one of the twelve, because he had that within, "Let us go and die with him," which transcended rationalism. He couldn't quite believe, but he was willing to fight for a man who seemed more than man. He was like unto the followers of Odin: "It might be hopeless, but we will fight to the last man for our Lord and kinsman." It is that feeling of pietas our Lord builds on. He can enter human hearts, hearts that love, and turn rational minds inward to the Lord of human hearts. When that miracle occurs, the doubting Thomas says, "My Lord and my God."

Let us never forget that Greek rationalism led the great poet Homer to despair. His vision of the afterlife in *The Odyssey* is a vision of nothingness. And Sophocles, in *Oedipus Rex*, tells us that it is better to never have been born. Is that the 'vision' we want to build upon? Do I want that vision in my heart when I look at the seemingly lifeless faces of my loved ones who have died in this world? Is that the vision I want in my heart as I face my own death? Please God, send us the Comforter and give us the heart to conquer the rationalism within our own souls and the ever-encircling gloom of rationalism in the hostile liberal world around us.

In the "Grand Inquisitor" chapter of *The Brothers Karamazov*, Dostoyevsky accurately depicts the false path, the path of rationalism, which the organized Christian churches took into Satan's dark woods. The human heart seems to be a labyrinth in which a man can get lost. But that labyrinth is the only path to Christ, because the Holy Ghost dwells there. The easy road to God on the rationalist Celestial Railroad is a road that leads to hell. If we constantly stare at dumb nature, we will not see God, we will see a spiritual void which we will try to fill with nature's gods and nature's opiates. We must hold out for "all or nothing." Unamuno went back and forth from faith to doubt because he could never quite conquer his rationalism. We who are about to die cannot be rationalists. For the sake of our souls, for the sake of our loved ones, we must take the path less trodden on, the path of faith in a personal Savior who transcends reason.

In the late 1960s, the liberals made explicit what had been implicit in the European world since World War I ended – Rationalism, with its attendant worship of science and the noble savage was the new religion of the modern Europeans. One of the ugliest manifestations of that new religion was the development of death and dying courses in the universities. In those courses, the liberals taught young men and women that death was not something to be afraid of. Why did we no longer need to fear death? Was it because the old, old story of Jesus and His love was true? Of course not. The liberals told us that we did not have to fear death because human beings were mere creatures of nature. We were not sons and daughters of Christ who were not meant to die – we were just natural entities destined to return to the natural world. The atheism of the gypsy in Walter Scott's novel, *Quentin Durward*, became the mainstream faith of the ruling liberal elites in church and state:

"To be resolved into the elements," said the hardened atheist, pressing his fettered arms against his bosom; "my hope, trust, and expectation is that the mysterious frame of humanity shall melt into the general mass of nature, to be recompounded in the other forms with which she daily supplies those which daily disappear, and return under different

forms — the watery particles to streams and showers, the earthy parts to enrich their mother earth, the airy portions to wanton in the breeze, and those of fire to supply the blaze of Aldebaran and his brethren. — In this faith have I lived, and I will die in it! — Hence! begone! — disturb me no farther! — I have spoken the last word that mortal ears shall listen to.”

That new-old faith of the liberals is not my faith, nor can it ever be a genuine faith for a human being. How can we have a faith in nothingness? Dylan Thomas was right to rage against the dying of the light. And he was also right to drink himself into alcoholic oblivion when he could not believe in the light. We dare not look on Dylan Thomas from the Mt. Olympus of rationalism — “It’s a pity that he didn’t rest content with nature and nature’s gods as all rational men do.” No! The pity is that Dylan Thomas gave up on his rage against the dying of the light. He stopped raging and succumbed to the rational world of science and the noble savage. There is a light beyond this rational vale of tears. That light has a local habitation and a name. His home is the human heart, and His name is Jesus. +

---